



# MMORPG: REBIRTH OF THE LEGENDARY GUARDIAN

BOOK 01

*Flying Alone*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# MMORPG: Rebirth of the Legendary Guardian

(Wǎngyóu zhī zhàn yù tiānxià)

(网游之战御天下)

by

**Flying Alone**

(孤单地飞)

# Synopsis

---

The phoenix is a creature of legends, a wonder of the world, an imagery of life and destruction. This fabled creature signifies the rise of a hero in a virtual world where battles occur for the sake of honor and glory!

Zhang Yang was a professional gamer in the first and most fantastic game that revolutionized the world: God's Miracle. A game where traditional knowledge in RPGs did not matter anymore, players would have to manually target and evade attacks, giving rise to a significant gap in skill between a professional and an amateur gamer.

Zhang Yang's downfall came a little too soon. His girlfriend was snatched, his guild was harassed and disbanded, and he was even driven to commit suicide! Jumping off the top floor of a hotel, Zhang Yang seemed as though he was soaring like a phoenix. Little did he know that the end of his life also signified his rise from the ashes!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by EndlessFantasy Translation @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 1: Together In Death

---

8th of March, year 2039. Night. In a luxury suite on the 19th floor of the Tian Lun Pavilion Grand Hotel.

Even though the desire had died down, but the ambiguous feeling of it still lingered around. Zhang Yang sat in his bed with his top half naked watching the bare and empty pillow on his bed, his heart filled with the inconceivable.

He came to participate... no... perhaps in other words, he came here as a final resort to stop his girlfriend's wedding. Based on only one sole reason... that is, because he was not the groom!

He and Lin Yu met each other through an online game called 'God's Miracle'. Though they first started off as enemies, they eventually got to know each other and ultimately developed feelings towards each other. However, Lin Yu's family's background was worlds apart from his. Her family had reached a point where their assets had surpassed a massive number which was in the billions. So naturally, they would not hand over their only daughter to some unheard-of man such as him!

Even then, Zhang Yang was not a poor and miserable nobody. He had a luxurious home, a few branded cars, and a few hundred thousand in his bank account. In the eyes of regular women, he was what they would deem as a bachelor with exceeding qualifications. Still, as compared to the Lin Family, there still existed a huge gap between them.



With his efforts in vain, the elders of the Lin Family treated him just as coldly. They almost chased him out of the house! The only thing that Lin Yu could do was to shed her tears for him. She could not ever agree to leave this planned marriage for his own. She only resorted to one desperate request and that was to never see her again.

Zhang Yang knew that Lin Yu was a girl who obediently respects her elders. Her mother threatened to take her own life to compel Lin Yu to go along with their wishes. That was enough reason for Lin Yu to accept the hand in marriage between the equally wealthy Liu Family's only son, Liu Wei! In fact, the marriage should have been held 3 or 4 years back. It was only delayed because of Lin Yu's constant struggle. But right now, it was obvious that her struggle had come to an end.

Zhang Yang withdrew quietly from Lin Yu's wedding and went back to his hotel room. His heart fell into the depths of despair as he thought of his beloved who would become someone else's wife. He went to have a dull drink before retiring to his room completely drunk. In the midst of it, he received a call. He could not recall what he said but not long after that, a woman came into his room and laid on his bed.

Zhang Yang was so incredibly drunk that he instantly went into 'action' when the both of them embraced each other. As the situation developed, Zhang Yang sobered up and realized that he recognized the woman who he was entangled with. It was the person who taught him Chinese Studies back in university, Miss Yu Li!

Eventually, Yu Li too recognized Zhang Yang. They ended their 'session' as they were both unimaginably abashed. But as compared to him, Yu Li was more embarrassed than he was. She became a hostess but bumped into her old student. This made her feel ashamed, resulting in her bolting out of the room without even bothering to collect her payment.

With the mark left on his chest where Yu Li kissed him, Zhang Yang shook his head as he struggled to get the thoughts of this one night stand out of his mind.

But still, why would Yu Li give up her job as a teacher to sell herself to a hotel to become a hostess? There were many possibilities for her to do so. Perhaps a teacher's salary was insufficient, or perhaps she had bad luck in making acquaintances and was forced by her boyfriend or husband to do this. Or perhaps she needed the financial help to pay for her parent's illness...

Zhang Yang did not have much left in him to think about Yu Li because right now, while he was sober, he was being tortured by the pain in his heart. In his mind, there was only one person he could think of. Lin Yu.

'Bang!'

The sound of the door crashing was heard as two burly men wearing suits and dark sunglasses barged in. Their cold facial expressions and body builds carried a strong killing intent.

Trailing behind them, of average height and size, was a man who

walked in wearing a white formal suit and a pair of gold-framed glasses. He had the handsome face of a young man, yet he wore a careless smile on his face like a true gentleman.

“Liu Wei!” Zhang Yang immediately recognized that young man as he gritted his teeth.

One of the burly men grabbed a chair and Liu Wei immediately sat on it. He crossed his legs and said, “You must be wondering why I left my newly wedded wife to come here in the middle of the night.”

“Hmph, cut the bullshit!” said Zhang Yang coldly as he stared at his ‘rival’. Both he and Lin Yu knew that Liu Wei was adamant in marrying Lin Yu. However, this was not because of his feelings towards her, it was due to the Lin Family’s fortune. Both the Lin and Liu Families were heads of the business world. If they were to unite through marriage, then they could rule over a larger market together.

Liu Wei laughed but his facial expression contained no intentions of humor. He said, “Any women that belongs to me should not have any other men in their minds. And even if they do, I’d allow only the memories of a dead man! Do you understand now, Zhang Yang?”

Zhang Yang was astounded. He knew that this man, the only son of the Liu Family, would do something outrageous. But this is a hotel, a public place. It was just beyond imagination!



“There’s no need to be surprised! This state of Ji is under my family’s influence. Even if I put a hole in the sky, there would be someone to patch it up for me in my stead.” Liu Wei continued to speak as he laughed coldly, “That bitch actually delayed the wedding for 4 years because of you! Hmph! After I’m done with you, I shall go back and take really good care of her.”

Zhang Yang went into rage, fiercely did a backflip from the bed and onto his feet and shouted, “If you even dare to lay your hand on a strand of her hair, I’ll kill you!”

“Haha, not only will I be going to touch a strand of her hair, I will also be going to mess her up, mess her up really badly! That bitch actually slept with you for a number of times, did she not? That bitch actually made me out to be the bad person!” Liu Wei’s handsome countenance faded.

“Bastard!” Zhang Yang screamed and leaped towards Liu Wei.

Liu Wei scoffed and commanded the two burly men, “Throw him off the balcony!”

“Roger!” Answered the men instantly and simultaneously as they went into action.

Liu Wei had the highest of confidence in his experienced bodyguards and in a very relaxed manner he said, “A man broken by the lost of the love of his life, jumped off to end his life. How does that sound as the title of tomorrow’s newspaper headlines? I do wonder how that bitch would react to this. The face that she

would make would certainly be very amusing!”

Even so, Zhang Yang did not show any signs of fear. He lost both his parents when he was very young and had been rebellious ever since. Since then, there was no one who bothered to care about his brawls, and he eventually became some sort of the local’s little tyrant. Eventually he toned down after he enrolled in a university. He stopped getting into fights and instead joined a martial art’s society and had proper skill showdowns.

He was born with a naturally strong and agile body build. After joining the society for merely two years, he was said to have beaten the 9th National Martial Arts Competition’s Champion’s instructor. Through the years, he had never stopped his training and this led to his unparalleled strength.

These two men must have had a certain degree of skill to become Liu Wei’s bodyguard. But still, in Zhang Yang’s eyes, they were still nobodies.

‘Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!’

Zhang Yang’s fists were as fast as electric, flowing and dancing around. His feet moved like a snake and with a move called ‘False Steps Chaos Punch’, he beat them both until they had no chance of countering.

Liu Wei was both surprised and enraged. He never knew that Zhang Yang had such formidable skill. Without actually thinking things through, he pulled out a small firearm and fired at Zhang

Yang.

Zhang Yang was not curious about how a notorious family like the Lius could have gotten hold of a firearm. Instead he was surprised that Liu Wei would actually open fire at a public place! At the moment, his eyes were directed at the black hollow muzzle of Liu Wei's gun, he instinctively waved his arm and hit one of the bodyguards who staggered in front of him, blocking his front.

‘Pa!’

As the deafening sound of gunshots faded into the distance, a mark of fresh red blood appeared on the vest of the bodyguard. The man fell onto the ground before he could even let out any cries of pain.

Liu Wei did not stop there, even though he was stunned for a moment, he held his gun back up and aimed at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang, who was not afraid of getting a beating went to brawl with the other man. He then held the man as a meat shield and rushed towards Liu Wei.

The man saw that Liu Wei was aiming directly at him. Terrified, the man started to sweat as he screamed, “Please Master Liu, don’t shoot! Don’t shoo- “

‘Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!’

Being selfish and reckless, it was impossible for Liu Wei to listen to the cries of his own underlings. He then pulled the trigger repeatedly, letting 6 shots off as he emptied his magazine.

Within the smoke, bullet wounds could be seen on the dead bodyguard's abdomen, chest and head. He had died before death could come to him. Zhang Yang pushed the body aside and rushed forward so quickly that he hit Liu Wei as he reloaded his gun.

In a flash, Zhang Yang emerged from behind the dead man's body. He then powerfully lifted his hammer-like fists and punched Liu Wei's face firmly.

The punch was so powerful that it sent Liu Wei's gold-framed glasses flying off. A stream of blood came oozing out from a brand-new wound that he had just received.

Zhang Yang pulled Liu Wei out from under the man's body and immediately, another punch followed.

“Ah!”

He screamed continuously. Liu Wei was a man born with a silver spoon in his mouth, he had never and could never endure this level of pain. In the end, however, he was still a ruthless man. With eyes carrying ill intent, he glared at Zhang Yang and yelled, “You bastard. You dared to strike me! You're a dead man! Not only will I kill you, I'll mutilate your corpse and feed them to the dogs!”

No matter how well one could control his temper, under the circumstances of being shot for 7 rounds, one might still lose his nerves completely. Zhang Yang's rage was already well beyond comprehension. After listening to Liu Wei's endless taunting, his rage rose by yet another level as he delivered one more punch. With a 'Pa!' sound, Liu Wei's face was covered in his own blood and with 'Wa' sound, he spat out 7 to 8 pieces of his broken teeth.

'Master Liu! Master Liu!' several voices could be heard echoing through the hallway and more burly bodyguards came rushing into the room. Some of them had bulging waists, indicating that they were carrying weapons.

Liu Wei regained his composure and screamed shrilly, "Kill him! Kill him!"

'Qiang! Qiang! Qiang!'

The bodyguards who received the order rushed towards Zhang Yang. Some of them even pulled out their knives.

Zhang Yang's blood was dripping from his waist. Even though he had a meat shield to protect him, he still got shot in his abdomen. In just mere moments, he could feel the energy in him gradually seeping out. His vision blurred and he knew that he could faint at any time.

In a situation like this, staying conscious alone would be difficult, what more taking on those burly men.

Zhang Yang directed his gaze at Liu Wei and murmured, “Am I actually going to be doing the citizens a favor?”

With a burst of laughter, Zhang Yang grabbed onto Liu Wei and dashed towards the balcony. Gaining an unstoppable momentum, the two of them soared into the air before falling down from the 19th floor like two shooting stars.

## Chapter 2: Rebirth

---

“Hu!” Zhang Yang woke up all of a sudden. His breath was rapid as he could only feel the cold sweat around his body. He opened his eyes and looked around, dropping his jaw when he saw the scene in front of him.

What played out in front of him was a classroom. A room that was capable of fitting hundreds of people. Yet only 30 people occupied this space sparingly. A few of them were reading, chatting, or making a ruckus about who-knows-what. Every one of them were faces that he could doubtlessly recognize. They were all his university classmates!

Is this... university?

“Why I am here? I should be dead.” Zhang Yang’s mind was filled with an endless stream of questions of the unknown.

“Zhang Yang, what’s going on? Are you not feeling well?” somebody asked.

Zhang Yang turned his head and looked. He saw a sentimental face with a sincere smile. It was a familiar yet strange feeling. He was Li Shang Yuan, his class representative while he was in university. But... he died 3 years ago in a plane accident!

Zhang Yang nodded his head unconsciously, as if he was sleep-talking. “I am fine!” He reached out and pinched himself only to feel the lingering sting of the pain. Zhang Yang bared his teeth and



inhaled breath of cold air!

This is definitely not a dream!

That means I am not dead! And it seems that I have traveled a few years back in time! Zhang Yang took out his phone and saw that the date displayed on it was the year 2034, June 16th.

Five years!

God gave him a chance to alter his destiny!

In that moment, Zhang Yang felt anxious yet excited. He did not care how he rewound time by 5 years, he only knew that this was an opportunity for him to stage a comeback! For a 'dead person', nothing could be more precious than this.

This was his final year in university and in just another 7 or 8 days, he would have graduated and obtained a job. If everything followed its proper course, he would work in a software company and live an easy life without any notable achievements to his name.

It was only until 2 years later that he started to play the online game 'God's Miracle' that was introduced by a company colleague. At that time, 'God's Miracle' had been operational for more than 2 years. Initially, there were 4 million players connected simultaneously but the number spiked to billions playing online at any time of the day, only ever increasing for every day that passed!

As early as half a year after ‘God’s Miracle’ went online, Dream Technology, the team who developed ‘God’s Miracle’ set up an A-Class and S-Class Professional League, providing a stage for professional players to show off their skills.

Just like any e-Sports scene, the fame of the champions would bring about great advertising effect. Global corporations would then begin to invest in ‘God’s Miracle’, going so far as to sponsor teams to use their name as mascots to their brands. Some might even establish their own teams to participate. The income of a professional player was increasing steadily, no lower than that of a traditional sports celebrity.

Certainly, in the later stages of the game’s establishment, ‘God’s Miracle’ itself became highly valued in the industrial line. The amount of virtual transactions could even make global corporations feel envious! With each of these corporations building up their own elite team, they had entered into a commercial war of the virtual world.

Zhang Yang had been athletic since birth. In such a realistic virtual reality game that utilizes brain waves to operate, he could fully unleash his potential which was on par with professional players. He set up his own team and in the second year, he joined a B-Class amateur team. Eventually, one year later, he would then enter an A-Class Professional League!

After entering the A-Class League, Zhang Yang immediately received a substantial sponsorship from a large corporation which also included a considerable monthly income. In the meantime, he befriended Lin Yu whose in-game-name (IGN)<sup>1</sup> was Clear Perfume.

Through a minor conflict that got them acquainted, they began on bad terms as they occasionally fought each other but somehow ended up as good friends.

It was then that Lin Yu began to get involved with Liu Wei. In order to escape the fate of a pre-arranged marriage, she made a deal with her family. As long as she could build a successful career in 'God's Miracle' and share a portion of the glory and profits from the huge industrial chain, her family would no longer intervene in her marriage affairs. And thus, Zhang Yang and Lin Yu worked hard together to develop and strengthen the Clear Water guild in order to participate in the S-Class League.

Unfortunately, Clear Water was constantly pressured by Myth, a guild led by Liu Wei. Unable to surpass the expectations of their rank, Clear Water's position was indefinitely stuck as a second-rate guild. This inevitably led to stunted growth in terms of generating revenue for development.

Compared to other professional players, Zhang Yang joined the game a little too late as well, causing him to fall behind in terms of equipment and level. Even though he may have superior athletic skills, he was still unable to make up for such a huge gap! Furthermore, he had always been a loner and did not have reliable teammates which consequently led to his inability to break through the A-Class League.

During that time, Liu Wei implemented the Trojan Horse Strategy. He sent a mistress into Clear Water to court Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang and Lin Yu had yet to realize their feelings for each other. Thus, once the hot-blooded Zhang Yang got entangled with

the woman, he fell into their trap and almost caused the disbandment of Clear Water.

Fortunately, Zhang Yang still had a conscience as he felt guilty and lost. During the time he felt depressed, Lin Yu fought back against public complaints and fully supported Zhang Yang. Offering him boundless trust and support, they finally realized their feelings for each other and finally got together.

Unfortunately, Lin Yu's business in 'God's Miracle' completely fell through. The elders in the family arranged her marriage with Liu Wei despite her attempts to reject such a proposition. She fought valiantly against the political marriage, but there was nothing that could be done. The only result of her strenuous efforts was that it led to the postponement of her wedding. The events following that caused Zhang Yang to attend the wedding, eventually perishing together with Liu Wei.

'Hu!'

Zhang Yang forced out a breath. Now that he had one chance to do it all over again, he must not allow the same tragedy to repeat itself. If the sole reason the Lin Family would not accept Zhang Yang was because he was powerless, then all of his problems could be solved if he could just obtain status equivalent to the Lin Family. However, to obtain the same status as the Lin Family was not a walk in the park.

Although Zhang Yang had some fortune in his previous life, he was aware that he was not made for the business world. It was an impossible task for him to become a top entrepreneur nor a

successful businessman even if he had the knowledge of future development and trends for the following 5 years. Perhaps, after some of the events were recalled in his mind, he might be able to earn hundreds of thousands of dollars. Nevertheless, it would still be incomparable to them.

The field in which he was most familiar and proficient in would be 'Gods Miracle'!

According to the official statistics of 'God's Miracle' in the '5-years game review', One Sword Stroke was the S-Class League player with the highest income of up to 420 million dollars annually!

In the review, it was also mentioned that the entire virtual item microtransactions that transacted through the game platform over the 5 years would total up to a whopping 7.9 trillion dollars!

In reality, Zhang Yang was no prophet but he understood the entire game as a whole. The rise and fall of any materials' price, the strategy for any dungeon, the tactical strategy for the world boss, the pre-requisite conditions to trigger any hidden quest, all of these information was deeply imprinted inside Zhang Yang's brain.

His grand plan was to first set up his own guild to accumulate fame and reputation, preferably making it to the top of the China region, and eventually the top 8 globally. After that, through collecting and monopolizing materials, he could definitely earn a large sum of money. He knew very well that if he was alone, he would be powerless. However, as a guild, it was possible to earn

billions of dollars in this godlike game.

Eventually, the Lin Family would start to seek out alternatives to turn over their aging businesses. When the time is ripe, Zhang Yang would not need to do much and they would personally hand over Lin Yu to him to gain a share of the virtual industry's fortune!

As for Zhang Yang, he could achieve his dream of entering the S-Class Professional League to fight for the championship title of the World Team League!

‘Ta ta ta’

The clicking sound of the approaching high heels was shrouded by the ringing of the school bell. A beautiful woman walked into the classroom. A formal suit adorned the tall and slender figure. Her complexion spoke volumes of her age, which would be of about 23 to 24 years. She had her long hair tied up into a bun which made her look more or less quite mature.

“Students, you will all begin to tread your first steps into society and a job in less than 10 days. As your teacher, I bid you the best of fortunes in acquiring a splendid job...”

Zhang Yang was immersed in his memories, recalling the sweet smile of Lin Yu when the emotions which he suppressed deep within him suddenly erupted like a volcano! Despite it being in the middle of the class, he stood up and rushed out of the classroom. The students stared at his back with stunned eyes. As for the beautiful teacher, she was trembling with rage.

However, Zhang Yang halted his steps abruptly after exiting the classroom. Presently, he and Lin Yu did not know each other. He could not possibly just rush up to her and announce to her, “Hey, I am your future lover who died and came back in time... come on, let’s fall in love again!”

I would definitely be treated as a psycho. Bear with it!

According to ‘history’, Lin Yu would only join one year after ‘God’s Miracle’ began operations. Right now, the only choice he had was to wait. Zhang Yang sighed. Just when he wanted to turn around to return into the classroom, he saw the pretty teacher wearing a scary face with her hands on her hips, blocking the classroom door with her fearsome look.

“Zhang Yang!” She gritted her teeth as she called Zhang Yang’s name. Her two fists relaxed and clenched alternately.

It was only then that Zhang Yang noticed her. This pretty teacher was Yu Li, the person who he would have a one night stand with. He was drunk at that time and did not have much of an impression of that night. But right now, he could clearly recall that her body was sexually voluptuous! Hidden underneath the suit were the enticing curves of her bodyline!

By looking at her jade-white neck, his eyes stared instinctively at those well-covered peaks. As a student, Zhang Yang found it difficult to look at his teacher in ‘that way’. A fiery sensation came to him, as if the ‘fierce battle’ between them happened just not too



long ago. With that, even if he saw less at the moment, he seemed to be able to see even more clearly!

He smiled with his teeth wide open and said, “Teacher, I want to go to the restroom!”

Yu Li was about to go crazy!

This brat, not only had he rushed out the classroom during class hours without even asking for leave, he even dared to stare at her with those invasive eyes. It made her feel naked and defenseless, as if he could see through her formal attire.

Angry and abashed, Yu Li pointed towards the restroom and said, “Go!”

Zhang Yang nodded and dashed off like the wind. He returned to the classroom after loitering around for a while. He greeted Yu Li and sat in his seat. However, Zhang Yang gazed up only to notice that Yu Li was still angry. Although her expression was solemn, there was a hint of flirtatious flush on her jade-white skin.

Yu Li had always been an attractive woman. She had always been the target of obscenity among the boys. Currently, with such a vulnerable look, it only made all the boys slobber endlessly. Zhang Yang used to be one of those boys who secretly had a crush on Yu Li. But as time went by and more trouble arose, he began to leave behind his days of student romance.

He wondered. “Miss Yu is so beautiful, why would she work as a hostess? What a waste! If there is a chance, I would definitely help her!”

Yu Li announced the end of the class after the two-period class session concluded. Before she left the room, she threw a ferocious look at Zhang Yang.

The students began to make some noise the second the teacher left.

“Zhang Yang, what are you going to do after graduation?” Li Shang Yuan handed an address book to Zhang Yang. People usually jot down contact numbers when they approached graduation in order to keep in touch in the future.

Zhang Yang took the book and wrote his home phone number casually. He said, “Probably a professional gamer!”

“A professional gamer?” A fatty called Zhao Xiao Song squeezed over. His nickname was ‘Chubby Pole’. He said, “Can you earn money by playing games?”

“I am not sure about other games, but if it’s ‘God’s Miracle’, it is most definitely possible to earn a lot!” A thin and tall person called Zhou Xiang joined the discussion and continued, “I have a relative working at Dream Technology. According to him, the gaming helmet for ‘God’s Miracle’ had sold more than 500 million units!”

“What gaming helmet?” Some people came over and asked casually.

“Tch, don’t tell me you have not watched television or even surfed the web? Advertising for ‘God’s Miracle’ covers the entire globe. It’s the world’s first super virtual reality game in the history. Say goodbye to traditional games. Now you can access the game anywhere and anytime with just a helmet! It’s all thanks to Dream Technology that the game can finally operate this year after more than 10 years of beta testing!” One of the fans of the game spoke emotionally.

“If it’s really that fun, I will go buy one and try it out later.”

“Come, let’s do a head count, those who want to play ‘God’s Miracle’ please register. We’ll establish a guild and embark on ‘God’s Miracle’ together!”

## Chapter 3: Soul Brothers

---

Seven to eight days later, Zhang Yang went back to his house after receiving his graduation certificate. On his way home, he dropped by and bought himself a gaming helmet. Now that everything has been prepared, all he needed to do left was to wait for ‘God’s Miracle’ to start. According to the internet announcement, the game will start its servers globally on the 10th of this month.

‘Dong dong dong!’ Someone came knocking.

It was not that Zhang Yang did not have a doorbell, he did. It was just that the contraption had been decades old and as such, had broke down a few years back.

“Who is it?” Zhang Yang went to the door and peeked through the peephole. A sweating fatty was standing at his doorstep, repeatedly fanning himself with a paper fan. Zhang Yang got excited as he saw the familiar guy. He opened the door hastily and smiled as he said, “Long time no see Fatty Han!”

Han was shocked by Zhang Yang’s overly-excited reaction. He screamed, “Why are you so excited? It’s not like I owed you money. Hey, hey, hey! You’re not into homosexual stuff right?!”

Han Guang had been his soul brother before they could even put on their pants. The two of them went to junior school all the way up to high school together. Throughout the years, their relationship developed through their participation in street

brawls. Even though Zhang Yang eventually enrolled in university and Han Guang started work, their friendship had never been affected. Zhang Yang knew that in one year's time, Han Guang would get involved in a street fight and suffer a grievous injury. He would die before he could be sent to the hospital.

At that time, the incident left a scar on Zhang Yang. He could not even smile for half a year.

This time, he would not let any accident befall his soul brother. Zhang Yang swore in his heart as he revealed a calm and cheerful expression. As he calmed himself as if nothing had ever happened, he asked Fatty Han, "Today is not a holiday, what are you doing here?"

Subconsciously, Zhang Yang did not want anyone to know about his predicament. Even if he were to tell people about it, no one would believe him. Secondly, if his secret was exposed, he could be captured and subjected to experiments. In the end, he decided that he'd rather bring his secret to the grave.

Han Guang pursed his lips and said, "Holiday my ass, I quit my job! That bastard manager is a bloody animal. I always knew that he likes to harass the female employees. Yesterday, I caught him molesting a girl in the pantry. Because I couldn't endure it any longer, I ended up beating him. He was so enraged that he had the female employee and I fired!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "That employee, did she blame you for dragging her down with you?"

“Eh, how’d you guess it?” Han Guang exclaimed. “That b\*tch must have gotten her brain bashed out. Here I am, being a Samaritan trying to save the day, but all I got in return was nothing but blame. If I had not acted, that sh\*tty manager could have...”

Zhang Yang smiled inwardly, of course he could have guessed it. It was Han Guang himself who told him about this incident before. Zhang Yang patted his shoulder and said, “It’s a sh\*tty world we’re living in!”

Han Guang let out a sigh and said, “You are absolutely right, this is a d\*mn sh\*tty world we’re living in!”

After the two of them entered the house, Han Guang went to the fridge and helped himself to a bottle of beer. He then bit off the bottle cap with his teeth. In just two to three gulps, he finished the entire bottle of beer like a cow drinking water. After finishing a bottle, he wiped his mouth and yelled, “Awesome!”

Zhang Yang sat in front of him and asked, “What do you plan to do next? Find a new job?”

“That’s why I’m here today!” Han Guang whispered secretly, “Have you ever heard of ‘God’s Miracle’?”

“The one that is always advertised on the television?” said Zhang Yang snickering.

Han Guang got excited and said, “Yeah, that’s the one! I heard this from my cousin who sells the gaming helmets for the game. He said that there are many people who will be playing this game, and through it, you can earn a fortune!”

“Oh, how?” Zhang Yang vaguely recalled that Han Guang used this method to persuade him to join the game, yet he rejected his invitation. Now that he thought about it, if he had taken Han Guang’s advice and accepted his invitation to join the game on its release day, he might not have had that resulting wretched ending!

With a face as though he has had everything thought out, Han Guang said, “My cousin said that there is a way. Once you achieve level 20, you will unlock the ability to use the [Real-Money Trade \(RMT\) System](#). That service allows you to trade in-game currency for real-world currency. As long as we can farm enough gold, we could be rich.”

Real-Money Trade (RMT) refers to the practice of exchanging virtual currency, items, accounts or services for real-world cash. A good example of RMT would be the most expensive transaction for a virtual product which was Club Neverdie in Entropia Universe. According to online sources, Club Neverdie transacted for a total of \$635,000! Popular RMT services also include power-leveling a client’s character to the level cap, or providing a client with a huge amount of in-game currency.

“Ok, I’m up for it. I had wanted to play the game anyway,” said Zhang Yang, happily nodding away. He had many methods and strategies to amass fortune at the tip of his fingers. Even if he taught the fatty a way or two, it would still not affect his ability to



earn a lot. Naturally, for a friend, he would not be that stingy about it.

Han Guang was filled with happiness. “With us brothers working together against all obstacles, we would be able to defeat our enemies and become unstoppable! Right, Yang, what if we really did earn a fortune? How are we going to spend it? Are we going to fill a house with a bunch of bikini girls for me to ogle at all day?”

“Scram, you pervert!” Zhang Yang pretended to get incensed.

Han Guang grinned lecherously, revealing his bright white teeth. Ever since he was young, this fatty had always dreamed of establishing the world’s greatest harem. This was especially true after he had read the [manhua](#), ‘The King of the Harem’.

Manhua (漫画) actually directly translates to comics. However, due to the recent rise of different styles of comics which can normally be sub-categorized into products of different regions, readers have used manhua (Chinese), manga (Japanese) and manhwa (Korean) to identify them respectively. As such, this translation would be using manhua instead of comics to show that the characters are referring to a Chinese-style comic.

“Right, so...” Zhang Yang pretended to ask casually, “What race and class are you going to pick?”

“Elf Race, Thief!” Han Guang answered without hesitation. He must have had some level of understanding towards the game, otherwise he would not have uttered those words.

Zhang Yang could not recall what class Han Guang had picked in his previous life, but a Thief... Zhang Yang said, “I think you’d better pick another class. Hm... I think a Hunter should suit you well!”

“Why?” asked Han Guang.

“It is because of your big and bulky personality. It doesn’t even suit the requirements of a sneaky and agile Thief. In fact, it’s not just Thieves but every other type of melee attack classes would not suit you either! I think you’d better choose to be a Hunter... hm, a Beastmaster. With your pet engaging the enemy in front, you could stand your ground and attack. Isn’t this much safer?! For Beastmasters, they possess good dungeon raiding ability, decent damage output, and an overpowered skill called <Fake Death>’. It is an [aggro](#)-clearing skill, a powerful utility skill indeed!” Zhang Yang exclaimed.

Aggro is an internet and gaming lingo frequently used among players who participate in group battles in an online game. Aggro is somewhat similar to the enmity of an NPC towards any specific player. By performing certain actions that may be deemed to be threatening towards NPCs, players would accumulate aggro which would then lead the NPC to focus their attacks on the player with the highest aggro. Tank classes would normally have aggro-building skills to keep an NPC’s attacks focused on themselves, while certain classes may have aggro-clearing skills to prevent NPCs from targeting them.

Hang Guang nodded while deep in thought. He could not help but agree with Zhang Yang’s statement. “I would have never thought that you were so knowledgeable.”

Zhang Yang smiled as he tried to search for an excuse. “When I decided to play this game, I did my research on the forums.”

“Oh...” The innocent fatty immediately took his words as the truth. “In that case, I’ll try the Hunter for a change!”

“When you achieve level 5, buy a few bottles of [Porto Whiskey] and try to hand it over to an NPC called Ol’ Drunkard Si Wang.”

“Why?”

“I’ve read about it. That NPC will trigger a hidden class quest for the Hunter job!” Zhang Yang tried giving another excuse.

“Really?” said Han Guang suspiciously.

“Have I ever lied to you?” asked Zhang Yang.

“All the time.”

“F\*ck, this time it is real. Believe me!” Zhang Yang scratched his head, resisting the urge to smack someone.

He recalled that there was a Hunter above level 100 who encountered a bug when he completed the quest. Besides the Hunter who completed the quest, one of his party members also received the reward. It was Phoenix, a legendary pet.

Not only did the Phoenix have a high damage output, it could also be used as a mount. Imagine riding on the Phoenix, with that trail of blazing fire. What sort of awe would it inspire?! If both of them summoned their Phoenixes in the middle of the main city, how many players would have their jaws drop in wonder?

Unfortunately, the hidden quest had only one drawback. That was, beside the first two players who have received the reward, no other player can ever get their hands on a Phoenix. Non-Hunter classes can only deploy their mounts in the open world. They cannot summon their rides in a dungeon or the battle arena. Because the bug's effect on the game was not as damaging as the developers expected it to be, they decided to allow both the Hunter and his party member to retain their unique pets.

This time, it would be their turn to own this amazing pet! The Hunter and his party member who obtained them in Zhang Yang's past were Korean. Zhang Yang never did like the Koreans, so even if he snatched the unique pets back he would believe in the adage, 'Finders, Keepers'.

"Alright! I'll stake my trust on you once again!" Han Guang finally agreed to his proposal. "Did you buy a gaming helmet?"

"I have already prepared long ago. I'm just waiting for the servers to start!"

"Hey, hey. let's go to the restaurant across the road and have a few drinks! I tell you, there's this new girl there. She looks just like

a fairy. I think she has some feelings for me. Whenever I was around, she would send me flirtatious glances!”

“Didn’t you say that the last time?”

“You little brat, you dare to question the charms of this daddy! Ah right, what class will you be playing as?”

”You’ll know what it is when the time comes!”

“Tch! Why are you putting on airs for? I hope you get strike by lighting!”

A few days passed and the last day of June arrived.

At 8.45am, ‘God’s Miracle’ would begin simultaneously around the world, allowing players to register their accounts and create their characters. At 9am, the server for the world’s 8 regions would come online, signifying the integration of this futuristic and titanic digital system with the public’s lives.

Zhang Yang put on the helmet and felt a strange and unexplainable electric current travel across the skin of his head. Zhang Yang waited for 3 to 4 minutes before a bright light emerged, ringing a familiar sound.

“Welcome to the world of ‘God’s Miracle’!”

“Generating game account... please wait a moment!”

“Synchronizing your brainwaves and biometrics to your account. Please note that there is no need to input your password the next time you log in. The system will scan your brainwaves and automatically match you to your game account!”

“Please note that only one character can be created per person! If you wish to create another character, you must delete your current character before you can create a new one! Once you have created a new character, you cannot create a new one within the next 15 days and a new character cannot be deleted within its first 3 days!”

“Account creation successful! Welcome to the continent of Norlanda! Warrior, the Union is in need of your assistance!”

The soft voice of a girl echoed in his ears. A familiar scene played in front of him. Countless demons and spectres rained down from the heavens and crawled up from the earth with every intention of attacking the solitary city of humanity mercilessly.

The setting of ‘God’s Miracle’ was that the Humans had joined forces with the Elves, Beastmen, and Dwarves to fight off the invasion of the invading demons and spectres. Zhang Yang had seen this scene countless of times which led him to click on the ‘Skip’ button to jump to the character creation interface.

“Please pick your race!” said the soft, feminine voice of the system.

“Human!”

“Race selection, Human confirmed!” the soft voice continued.  
“Please select your class!”

“Warrior!”

“Class selection, Warrior confirmed! Please choose your specialization!”

For every class, there would be a choice of specialization. The specializations available to a Warrior was the Berserker and the Guardian.

“Guardian!” Zhang Yang let out a nostalgic smile.

In his previous life, he picked Guardian as his specialization. Zhang Yang picked the same class because of two reasons, the first being that he actually loved the class very much. The second reason was because he thoroughly understood the class. Every class possessed hidden quests that was related to it. These non-repeatable quests had luxurious rewards. Zhang Yang had finalized his decision because these quests were directly linked to the class and Zhang Yang fully understood the Warrior class.

“Specialization, Guardian confirmed!” the voice continued.  
“Please enter your character’s name!”

“[Zhan Yu](#)!”



Zhan Yu (战御) directly translates to Imperial War. However, as a character's name, Imperial War would be terrible especially since it is the protagonist's name which would appear very frequently. As such, I have decided to retain the Chinese pinyin of the name.

“Character name, Zhan Yu confirmed!”

As the system sound paused, the scene changed and a figure that was a mirror image of him appeared. “This is the character created based on your physical characteristics, you can modify and change the facial complexion by using the system's user interface!”

Even though adjustments could not be made for the body, since Zhang Yang had always focused on exercising, in addition to his height of 180cm, he had no complaints about his character's physical appearance. He thought for a while and did some modifications to his facial features. For better or worse, he only wanted to make it difficult for him to be recognized by others.

After he was done modifying his character, he selected ‘Confirm’.

“Character creation complete, please wait patiently for the connection to establish! While waiting, you may check your character's ability guide to ensure a more thorough understanding of your role for a better gaming experience! Good gaming!”

A character interface appeared in front of him. The character that he had just created was wearing a set of worn-out equipment and had a short sword strapped to his waist. As a Guardian, he did not even have a shield. He knew that only when his character has

reached level 5 and only after completing the required class quest, would he receive a Steel-grade shield.

Currently, he only had 3 pieces of equipment.

[Worn-out Chest Plate] (White-Wood, Armor)

Defense: +1

Level Requirement: 0

[Worn-out Shin Guard] (White-Wood, Armor)

Defense : +1

Level Requirement: 0

[Beginner's Short Sword] (White-Wood, One-handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 1-3

Attack Interval: 2 seconds

## Level Requirement: 0

Attack Interval determined the frequency or rate of attacks. After performing a normal attack, the period before another attack could be initiated would be the Attack Interval. Dagger weapons would have the shortest interval time, followed by one-handed weapons and ranged weapons. The longest attack interval would be the two-handed weapon type.

Wood-grade equipment were also known as White-tiered equipment. Only the defense attribute of a White-tiered equipment could be enhanced further. As for White-tiered weapons, they would possess extremely mediocre attack stats. The next step-up from White-Wood equipment would be Black-Steel, followed by Green-Copper, [Gray-Silver](#), Yellow-Gold, Violet-Platinum, Mythical, Ethereal, Holy, Ascended and finally, Celestial, the highest tiered and strongest equipment currently available in the game. Due to such distinction between equipment, the quality of the resultant stats provided by these equipment is also extremely wide. This forced players to continuously [grind](#) in order to placate their need for improvement.

Gray-Silver (白银, baiyin) should actually be translated into White-Silver. However, since the author uses the color/material names interchangeably, White-Silver might be confused with White-Wood. One example would be when the author uses White-tiered equipment. Is the author referring to White-Wood rarity, or White-Silver rarity? As such, I have taken the liberty of translating 'White' in White-Silver to 'Gray'. The tiers would then be as follows: White, Black, Green, Gray, Yellow, Violet.

Grind or grinding in gaming lingo is the act of continuously and

repetitively killing monsters or completing repeatable quests in the hopes of achieving a specific goal such as leveling up or farming certain item drops from the game.

Zhang Yang’s character attributes are as followed,

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level : 0

HP : 50/50

Rage : 0/100

Defense : 2

Vitality : 0

Strength : 4

Dexterity : 1

Intelligence : 0

Spirit : 0

Luck : 0

Melee Damage : 5-8

Attack Interval : 2 seconds

Ranged Attack : NIL

Vitality, Strength, Dexterity, Intelligence and Spirit are the 5 basic player attributes.

Vitality : Increases a character's Max HP. 10 HP will be added for every point invested.

Strength : Increases a character's physical damage. A certain amount of damage will be added for every 2 points invested.

Dexterity : Increases a character's movement speed and its physical attack's critical rate. Additionally, for Thieves and Hunters, it will increase skill damage.

Intelligence : Increases a character's spell damage, Max MP and its spell's critical rate. 10MP and a certain amount of damage will be added for every point invested.

Spirit : Reduces a character's casting time and increases its MP regeneration speed.

Luck was a special attribute that cannot be increased through equipment bonuses. It could be obtained as a reward for completing certain main quests or high-difficulty hidden quests. This attribute had many uses, such as potentially allowing the player to deal a triple-damage strike, called <Lucky Strike>.

Every new character would have a total of 5 points that had been automatically assigned to their basic attributes. Since Warriors do not require Intelligence or Spirit, these two attributes would begin with 0 points invested. Strength and Dexterity, on the other hand, would have more points allocated in them.

Rage was only possessed by Warrior classes. While out-of-combat, a Warrior's Rage would be reduced to 0. After entering combat, Rage would constantly accumulate by 1 point every second. Rage could also be increased depending on the damage output of regular attacks and a character's level. Utilizing skills would generally consume Rage and were often called Rage Discharge.

# Chapter 4: The Launching Of ‘God’s Miracle’

---

‘Ding!’

With a crisp ding, the notification signaled the official launch of the server. With a flash in his eyes, Zhang Yang had come to an ancient village square.

Within a short period of time, many new players spawned around him. As many more appeared rapidly, the square was filled instantly. Some of the players were forced to squeeze to the side as even more new players spawned.

As this was the first ever virtual reality online game in history, each and every player logged into the game were stunned motionless, appreciating the breathtaking yet vivid surroundings.

“I’m leaving now. This game is so realistic!”

“Damn, don’t block me, let me through!”

“What are you shoving around for? Are you rushing to be reincarnated?!”

“Bastard, where do you think you are placing your hands? Do I look like someone you can simply take advantage of?”

“Lady, with that look, even if you let me touch you, I would be

too frightened to!”

“And why are your hands still on my breasts?”

“Hehe, it’s too crowded, there is no space for my hands!”

“Oh God, you lewd dog and lecherous vixen, I can’t stand it! I’d rather go back and jerk off!”

“ ... ”

After some time, the players finally regained their senses and their conversations gradually turned chaotic. Veteran gamers or those who had read the introduction had all rushed off to receive quests from NPCs.

Many players began to swarm the outskirts of the village to hunt and kill various kinds of monsters. The horde of players made were like a swarm of locusts, devouring any monster almost as soon as it spawned through simultaneous attacks by 10 or more players from all sides. These sad monsters died miserably, turning into experience points for the players.

About 10 minutes after the initial launch of the servers, the new players’ spawning rate finally began to slow down to a stable rate of 1 player per minute. Dream Corporation had predicted that there would be a large number of players logging into the server during launch based on the sales of the gaming helmet. In order to accommodate such a scale, they had created tons of dungeons close



to the beginner villages in order to disperse the horde of players. This also served to help prevent a low monster-to-player ratio.

The first thing Zhang Yang did was to leave the spawning point. Because of the second opportunity given to him, he was definitely not going to progress through quests like most players would. He had already outlined his own level-up plans before logging in.

While heading to the village entrance, Zhang Yang opened his Skill List to check his current available skills.

A new Guardian was given two skills, <Charge> and <Force Strike>.

[Rush] : Charges toward a target, stunning the target for 2 seconds and gaining 10 Rage. Cooldown time: 30 seconds.

[Force Strike] (Level 1): Performs a powerful strike on the target immediately, dealing 100% of melee damage with a 5% chance to trigger an additional attack. Cost: 30 Rage. Cooldown time: 1 second. Requirement: Melee Weapon.

Skills with levels could be upgraded through allocating Skill Points into it, to a maximum of Level 10. When skills such as <Force Strike> was maxed, the chances of triggering an additional attack would be increased to 50%! However, Skill Points would

only be given every 10 levels. Even if one had reached the game's maximum level of 300, only 30 Skill Points would be accumulated, marking Skill Points as precious and rare. Nevertheless, bonus Skill Points could also be obtained through the completion of some Main Quests and Hidden Quests. Wild Elite Bosses would also have a fixed rate of dropping Skill Points, but the difficulty would then be extremely high.

“Those damn wolves killed another 3 villagers today! Are there any warriors who would help us eliminate these cruel beasts?” asked the snow-bearded village elder while pacing back and forth anxiously. If it were not for the ‘Village Elder Hu An’ tag above his head and a yellow exclamation mark, no one would have noticed the difference between him and a real person!

A yellow exclamation mark represented an NPC who had a quest to give.

The extremely lifelike virtual reality system was one of the most attractive aspects of the game, yet it was also the most controversial. Due to its true-to-life representation, players had actually begun pornography businesses, which eventually led the game company to add an additional patch specifically for this matter. Which eventually led the game to create a patch specifically for this matter - players were forbidden to remove their undergarments!

The funny thing was, some countries had actually requested Dream Technology to exclude them from this settings. They believed that allowing pornographic exchange in virtual reality would alleviate the severity of this particular issue in real life.

After Dream Technology complied, the rate of prostitution activities and rape cases significantly lowered in those countries. Amazed with the phenomena, additional countries had also sent their requests to remove this patch.

As a result, players with too much free time had even selected the world's 'Top 10 Prostitutes' in the eight servers. Quite obviously, some unfortunate and innocent female players were dragged into it. For example, Thousand Elegance, who ranked third in the China server was the only daughter of the chairman of Tian Nan Pharmaceutical in real life. With such wealth, why would she ever get involved in the sexual business? It was plainly ill-intentioned people slandering her and ignorant masses spreading the news which ultimately ruined her innocence in the end.

Of course, these were out of the topic.

Zhang Yang moved forward and said, "Dear respected village elder, I am willing to serve!"

The village elder was overjoyed and said, "Courageous young lad, your kindness will definitely be thanked with God's blessing!"

'Ding! You have received a quest: Eliminate the Wolves!'

Opening the quest log, Zhang Yang checked its description.



## [Eliminate the Wolves] (Difficulty Level: D)

Quest Description: You have accepted the request of the village elder. Go to the west of the village and kill 20 wolves to keep the village safe!

Progress: Wolves killed. (0/20)

There were 5 quest difficulty levels in 'God's Miracle', S, A, B, C, and D in descending order. The difficulty level was determined by 2 factors: first, the level difference between the player and the monster; second, the difficulty of the monster itself. As for Zhang Yang's quest, since the wolves he had to kill were only Level 1, thus the system had determined the difficulty level of the quest to be low and categorized it as Level D.

After receiving the quest, Zhang Yang then ran to the Blacksmith Shop on the outskirts of the village to learn <Smithing> and <Mining> from the blacksmith and the miner respectively. A pickaxe immediately appeared in his inventory.

Then, Zhang Yang went to the west of the village and arrived at the Western Wasteland where the wolves gathered.

Some thirty wolves were wandering around the wasteland, occasionally howling into the sky, their howls piercing and frightening.

Zhang Yang withdrew his Beginner Sword and charged towards a targeted wolf. Although his current damage was low, the wolf's HP was also similarly low, allowing him to kill one wolf with 7 or 8 hits.

In just a matter of minutes, 20 wolves had been slain by him.

Zhang Yang's body flashed in a golden light, boosting him to Level 2. All his attributes had increased by 1 point and he obtained 5 additional Attribute Points (AP).

Zhang Yang had simply distributed the extra AP to 4 Strength and 1 Dexterity, and resumed killing wolves only to stop grinding when he had collected 10 pieces of wolf pelt. At the same time, the novice army had neared and proceeded to occupy the Western Wasteland.

Zhang Yang had no intention to remain here. The most undesirable thing during a war of leveling was to have many players but too little mobs. He then decided to leave immediately.

Before leaving, however, he wandered around and was lucky enough to find an Iron Vein. He then took out his pickaxe, and began mining right away.

Ding! You have used <Mining> on an Iron Vein. You have picked up Iron Ore x3. You have gained 1 experience point in <Mining>!

Zhang Yang kept the Iron Ore into his inventory, turned, and left

the Western Wasteland. He then returned to village elder to complete the quest 'Eliminate the Wolves', obtaining a pair of White-tiered boots and 3000 experience points.

The village elder had still looked troubled, so Zhang Yang continued conversing with him and received a quest called 'Haunted Cemetery'.

[Haunted Cemetery] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Strange things have recently occurred in the cemetery located to the west of the village. Strange noises can be heard whenever night falls! Please find out what has happened!

Progress: Find the source of the haunting. (0/1)

Zhang Yang knew that the quest difficulty had increased because he was about to face a Level 4 monster. A monster relatively stronger compared to his level, resulting in the system categorizing it as Level C.

With the Beginner Sword in his hands, he ran all the way to the West Cemetery.

The tombstones were arranged well but the place was empty, as there were no monsters around. That would mean that no other

players were around either. The cold and silent atmosphere gave off an eerie feeling.

Zhang Yang found a tomb and went inside. Pressing on faintly glowing iron plate, a rumbling noise sounded and a tunnel that was only half a man's height appeared in front of him.

Bending his body, Zhang Yang proceeded into the tunnel towards an open space.

This was a huge underground catacomb, with a passage extending to places far away. Stone chambers lined both sides of the way and faint goosebumps-inducing growls could be heard.

Zhang Yang took a few steps forward and turned into the first stone chamber on the left. With the weak illumination from a torch fire, he was able to see 7 to 8 shabbily-clothed spectres wandering around inside. He took a slight step forward and had immediately entered the Trigger Range of the closest monster. The spectre let out a low cry and attacked Zhang Yang with his fangs and claws.

[Dead Villager] (Normal)

Level: 4

HP: 200

“-11!”

As Zhang Yang slashed with his sword, a white-colored text flickered above the monster's head. In 'God's Miracle', damage produced by normal attacks would be indicated with white text, while skill-inflicted damage was indicated with yellow text. Additionally, self-damage was indicated with red text, while healing with green text. Finally, critical hits or heals were displayed in magnified text.

A Level 4 mob had HP and Defense much higher than that of a Level 1 wolf. Even though a slash from Zhang Yang had caused 11 HP of damage, it was nothing in comparison to the monster's HP of 200!



# Chapter 5: Rapid Leveling

---

Slash!

Zhang Yang bent down and evaded the monster's attack.

If other players witnessed this, they would have yelled, "Impossible!" or something in a similar manner. In traditional gaming, the Evasion Rate was determined by the system. Even if the player could not move an inch, the evasion could still occur when an attack landed on the player.

But in 'God's Miracle', there was no Evasion Rate system. But this did not mean that the player could not evade attacks from monsters or players. The system entrusted this capability to the player, allowing them to make their own decisions.

If the player's reaction was quick enough, the Evasion Rate would also rise proportionately. However, reaction alone did not determine the Evasion Rate of a player. The other factors that contributed to increasing the evasion rate would be Movement Speed, which was subsequently affected by the Dexterity of the player. The higher the Dexterity, the faster the Movement Speed. That was why Zhang Yang's investment in Dexterity had not solely increased his Movement Speed but also his Critical Rate!

Currently, many players were not used to this change while some were even oblivious to it. It was only a month later when a battle recording was uploaded to the forum that the thought of Manual Evasion was gradually made known to these players.

Zhang Yang let out a soft huff. The Beginner Sword in his hands swung every 2 seconds, until his Rage was raised to 30. This led to Zhang Yang activating his <Force Strike>. Half a minute later, the specter transformed into a pillar of light, signaling its defeat.

'Ding! You have killed undead villagers. 200 EXP gained'

'Ding! You have obtained 5 Copper pieces! You've obtained Linen x2!'

He did not obtain a quest item, but it did not matter as he still had to collect more Linen anyway. And up until now, there were no other players that stole his kills! The worst kind of situation for those who aimed to boost their levels was a bad monster to player ratio. This place seemed a little too hellish but for Zhang Yang, it was a heavenly spot.

After he collected the loot, he continued luring monsters one-by-one to kill them. In a place where monsters were concentrated, Zhang Yang did not use the skill <Charge> as it would easily engage more than two monsters. Based on his capabilities, Zhang Yang could easily evade the simultaneous attacks from seventeen monsters at once. But because he did not possess any Area of Effect (AoE) attacks, he did not want to waste his efforts to do it.

Even though grinding Level 4 monsters was slow, the experience points given was high. In 10 minutes or so, he hit Level 3. After he invested his AP in the same manner as before, allocating 4 to Strength and 1 to Dexterity, he pulled out his sword and continued

on slashing.

'Ding! You have obtained Mysterious Black Box'

[Mysterious Black Box] (Quest Item)

Description: A complicated magic is engraved on this box. It carries an ancient and evil aura. Perhaps it is wise to bring it back to Village Elder Hu An to inspect!

Even with his quest completed, he did not want to leave the leveling ground. Now that other players have yet to discover this place, he quickened his pace and continued grinding.

There were a total of twelve chambers and each chamber had seven to eight monsters inside. He cleared each and every one of them. Alone, his killing speed could not keep up with the monster's spawn rate. Usually, after clearing the 3rd chamber, the 1st chamber would spawn new monsters. Zhang Yang trained and trained and only after he reached Level 4, did a second player finally arrive. Following closely, a third player arrived and no sooner, the fourth.

When he reached Level 5, the field had more than twenty players. The monster spawn rate could not keep up with this many players. Zhang Yang was satisfied. He looked around and noticed that the highest leveled player among them was 3. He had gained an enormous leading advantage.

Zhang Yang consolidated the Linen his inventory as he headed back to the village. 20 pieces a stack and he had 19 stacks and a half which could easily be sold for 18 Silver Coins.

In 'God's Miracle' 1 Gold Coin was worth 100 Silver Coins and 1 Silver Coin was worth 100 Copper Coins, similar to other traditional games.

Zhang Yang gained 3000 EXP and a pair of White-tiered gloves after he had surrendered the Mysterious Black Box to Village Elder Hu An. Normally, the Beginner Village quests would not award any good items. Of course, there were exceptions!

Zhang Yang arrived at a Tailor Shop and found Apprentice Tailor Annie. She had an exclamation mark on her head, indicating an available quest.

"Young adventurer! I need a lot of Linen to help increase my <Tailoring> skill. If it is not too much trouble, could you help me collect some Linen?" Annie looked shyly at Zhang Yang, as if she was embarrassed to ask him for his help. This super realistic feature made the Non-Player Characters (NPC) look as though they possessed a conscience. This was also one of the features that made 'God's Miracle' the greatest game in history.

'Ding! Annie has a quest for you: A Generous Gift. Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang smiled weakly and selected 'Accept'. He then took

out a stack of Linen and turned it over.

"Ah! Thank you so much! You're such a kind person! With these Linen, I will definitely improve my craft and become an official Master Tailor!" Annie replied excitedly.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: A Generous Gift. Gained 5000 EXP!'

"Young adventurer, to thank you for your generosity, I'm willing to sew you a cape! I am only able craft a Rough Wolf Pelt Cape, but it can boost your abilities!" Annie continued as an exclamation mark appeared on her head.

'Ding! Annie has a quest for you: Annie's Gratitude. Will you accept it?'

[Annie's Thanks] (Difficulty Level: D)

Quest Description: Your kindness and generosity moved Annie. She has decided to use her ability to make you a Wolf Pelt Cape. But you must gather 10 Wolf Pelts and 40 Linen as material. You can't make porridge without rice, right?

Progress: Wolf Pelt 10/10 Linen 40/40

This was the reason why Zhang Yang first completed the quest

'Clear the Wolves', to hunt for the 10 Wolf Pelts! As for the catacombs, his aim was not only to gather Linen but also to grind levels.

Annie's quests required the player to be Level 5 before it was available. If it was not Zhang Yang but a regular player, they would have sold their Wolf Pelt to an NPC. Even if they kept them, they would not have accumulated that much!

When they had achieved Level 5 and was given this quest, they would have to return to the previous location to kill more wolves. Furthermore, based on the ridiculous number of new players, it would be an impossible task. This was in addition to the fact that Linen was only dropped by humanoid-type monsters, and the spectres were the only humanoid monsters around the village...

Zhang Yang had suffered before, previously he had wasted so much time running up and down to complete this quest. Luckily, that was when the servers had been running for 2 years. The entire Beginner Village was bare and no one was there to compete with him.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Annie's Thanks. Gained 5000 EXP!'

'Ding! You have obtained Wolf Pelt Cape!'

A flashing black, shiny cape appeared in his inventory as he completed the quest. This was the reward for completing a quest, and also the first Black-Steel equipment any player could get from

a quest!

[Wolf Pelt Cape] (Black-Steel, Cape)

Vitality: +2

Strength: +1

Dexterity: + 1

Level Requirement: 5

Note: This cape was obviously made by an apprentice tailor. It is an uncommon, ragged and patchy cape! Is this cape even reliable at all?"

Usually, there was yellow text attached to an equipment which included lore for immersion. As for the lore on this cape, the developers must have been trolling to include such a funny description!

Zhang Yang looked at Annie again. This time, a blue-colored exclamation mark appeared on the shy girl's head! In the game, a blue exclamation mark indicated a repeatable quest.

'Young adventurer! I need a lot of Linen to help increase my

<Tailoring> skill. If it is not too much trouble, could you help me collect some Linen?

Zhang Yang turned over stacks of Linen, one stack a time.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: A Generous Gift. (Repeatable) Gained 5000 EXP!'

'Ding! You have completed the quest: A Generous Gift. (Repeatable) Gained 5000 EXP!'

'Ding! You have...'

With the system notifications appearing repeatedly, Zhang Yang achieved Level 6 when he turned over his twelfth stack of Linen. The exclamation mark on Annie's head finally disappeared.

This repeatable quest was only available for players at Level 5.

In less than half a minute, Zhang Yang leveled up. As of now, the other players should probably be struggling at Level 2 or 3. Even if luck was on their side, they could only be at Level 4. Well, since there were too many people, they were all competing with each other which led to everyone not being able to obtain sufficient monster kills.

Without stopping, Zhang Yang left the Tailor Shop and headed to the village hall. There, he found Warrior Class Instructor Farion.



"Ahh, this is sad. As a Guardian, you don't even have a shield? You embarrass me!" The instructor who looked like he was in his 30s said in contempt, almost spitting on the ground to emphasize his statement.

Well, it could not be helped. No matter what class a player was at Level 5, they would face this kind of embarrassing moment. For example, if a Berserker came up to him, the man would have said something like, "Ahh, this is sad. As a Berserker, you are actually holding on to a tattered weapon like that. Do you want to be a woodcutter instead?"

And this was the time when the player will receive their first Class Quest and the reward would be a class-specific Black-Steel weapon!

"In the name of the God of War and beyond, you must be tested. Only then would I consider instructing you!" Instructor Farion's face showed disdain, as he passed Zhang Yang a piece of paper. "Greenhorn, you are not to return to me unless you have completed the task listed on the paper!"

'Ding! You have accepted the quest: A Warrior's Trial.'

[A Warrior's Trial] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Fulfill Farion's demands! Greenhorn, you must become a true warrior!

Progress: Iron Ore 3/200

What came next would highly depend on luck! Iron Ores could be mined or bought from other players and the difficulty of this quest was due to the time required to complete it.

This kind of setting would have definitely irked anyone. As beginners, they did not want to have to waste too much time just to complete this. In the near future, the game developers would adjust the completion condition to only 20 Iron Ores.

But Zhang Yang did not have much time to idle, waiting for the adjustments to be implemented. With that much time, he could have possibly leveled up to Level 10 or even 20.

Additionally, there was a chance to trigger the Warrior class' hidden quest.

## Chapter 6: Black Panther King

---

While completing the quest of collecting 200 Iron Ores, the hidden quest could be triggered if there were more than 10 Refined Iron Ores in the inventory!

Refined Iron Ores were rarely found in Iron Veins, and the chances of harvesting it was very low. The probability was so low that when luck was bad, a single piece of Refined Iron Ore could not even be obtained after mining 1000 pieces of Iron Ores.

Naturally, that was not the case with Refined Iron Veins but they were rare and there would always be tough monsters protecting them.

With such low probability, this Warrior class' hidden quest was never triggered by any player until the third year since the game's launch. There was a mining fanatic who did nothing but mining whenever he logged on to the game. He had even stayed at the Beginner Village for half a year!

Coincidentally, this man had chosen Warrior as his class!

And so, this player who had 100 Refined Iron Ores in his inventory had successfully triggered the hidden quest. He then stumbled on his way, finally completing the quest to score an 'Average' and obtained 1 Skill Point as well as a <Horizontal Sweep> Skill Book.

Just the reward of a single Skill Point was enough to make people

jealous, but when he had posted the skill description of <Horizontal Sweep> on the forum, all the Warrior players were close to tears.

[Horizontal Sweep]: Attacks all nearby enemies, 100% melee damage to every target. Cost: 20 Rage. Cooldown time: 10 seconds. Requirement: Melee Weapon.

Such a powerful skill with AoE damage had fallen into the hands of a player who only mined every day – what a tragedy it was!

Soon, however, players realized that even with an ‘Average’ score, one had been rewarded so handsomely. What if ‘Excellent’ or even ‘Perfect’ scores were achieved? How attractive would the reward be? Unfortunately, hidden quests have one drawback, that there would never be a second quest of the same kind once it was completed.

There were 4 types of quest score – Bad, Average, Excellent and Perfect. Only quests with S-difficulty, however, had this quest scoring system.

Zhang Yang first went to the Alchemist Shop and sold all the junk items in his inventory. The amount of money he possessed consequently increased to 23 Silver Coins. Scrolling through the item tab of the Alchemist Shop, he found a Beginner Healing Potion commonly known as Red Pot and the Experimental Poison that was Beginner Village exclusive and could only be bought once per player.

[Beginner Healing Potion] (White, Consumable)

Use: Instantly restore 100 HP.

[Experimental Poison] (White, Consumable)

Use: Apply it on a weapon, lasts 60 minutes. Attacks have 30% chance to poison a target, causing 3 HP damage each second for 15 seconds. Can be stacked up to 5 times.

A Red Bottle cost 1 Silver Coin each while the Experimental Poison was more expensive, each costing 10 Silver Coins. Zhang Yang splurged and bought 10 Beginner Healing Potions and 1 Experimental Poison in one go. He then left the Beginner Village and moved towards the mountain region north of the village.

He remembered that there was a Refined Iron Vein spawn point somewhere in a corner of the mountains which refreshed every hour. Each harvesting could result up to 2 or 3 Refined Iron Ores. That was the only Refined Iron Vein spawn point in the entire Beginner Village and it so happened to also be the lair of the Black Panther King!

This was indeed the so called high risk high reward!

The journey was long. Zhang Yang spent more than half an hour to reach a valley surrounded by oddly-shaped rocks.

In the deepest pit of the valley, a mine vein glimmering with a bright silver glow had grabbed Zhang Yang's attention. That was exactly the only Refined Iron Vein spawn point that would be refreshed in the entire Beginner Village. Lying next to it, though, was a 2-men-tall and 6-men-long giant black panther!

This was the strongest boss in the Beginner Village – the Black Panther King!

[Black Panther King] (Black-Steel Boss)

Level: 15

HP: 45000

That frightening HP!

Zhang Yang took out the Experimental Poison and smeared it on the Beginner Sword. The rusty iron immediately shone with an emerald glow.

Poisons were supposed to be a unique attribute only available to players with the Thief class but the game producers had wanted to let other players experience the charm of Poison and so had placed

a limited amount of Experimental Poison in Beginner Village. As each player could only purchase one bottle, it would not affect the balance of the game.

This had become the key factor for Zhang Yang to slay the boss!

Zhang Yang adjusted himself before charging directly towards the Black Panther King.

Stunned (from <Charge>)!

Zhang Yang swung his sword and slashed the Black Panther King.

“-6!”

Due to the great level gap and extremely high defense of the boss-level monster, even when Zhang Yang had 36-38 points of basic damage, he had only inflicted a pathetic 6-point damage on the boss. Moreover, with the low damage output, only 3 Rage Points were obtained. Even with the addition of 10 Rage Points from the <Charge> attack, he was still far from casting a <Force Strike>!

Besides, <Force Strike> could not inflict much damage. The only way to kill this high level and high defense boss was to rely on the power of Poison.

After 2 seconds, the Black Panther King recovered from the momentary stun and waved its claws towards Zhang Yang, enraged.

Zhang Yang calmly dodged and evaded the monster's attack. At the same time, he made another swing of his sword and landed it on the Black Panther King's body.

“-8!”

“Ding! Your attack has caused Black Panther King to be affected by Experimental Poison (1 stack), losing 3 HP every second!”

Poisons were categorized as magic damage and the damage could only be reduced by magic resistance!

Zhang Yang showed a hint of joy. Although the effect of the poison was not too strong, as long as he could inflict another stack within 15 seconds from the first stack, he could slowly accumulate a total of 5 stacks and gain the full effect of the Poison!

The Black Panther King got more furious as its strike missed while in turn, was damaged numerous times by its enemy. It clawed fiercely towards Zhang Yang again.

Dodge!

Zhang Yang performed like a professional player, evading attacks by constantly moving and changing his position. He did not waste any chances to attack, slashing continuously as more damage was inflicted on the boss.



“Ding! Your attack has caused Black Panther King to be affected by Experimental Poison (2 stack), losing 6 HP every second!”

“Ding! Your attack...”

In no time at all, the Experimental Poison’s effect had stacked up to 5 times, causing the Black Panther King to lose 15 HP with each passing second. Although this was ridiculously slow compared to its long HP bar, the boss would eventually die from the poison after 50 minutes if Zhang Yang maintained his game.

Zhang Yang dared not be careless! His feeble HP could not afford even a light hit from the boss. It would have been a confirmed kill if he got hit even once.

1 minute, 2 minutes, 3 minutes... 45 minutes!

The HP of the Black Panther King decreased to around 10% and suddenly the creature flashed a blood-red glow. Its originally huge size now grew even larger gaining faster Attack Speed and higher frequency of attacks!

This was what players commonly identified as Berserk – a state where only strong monsters would enter whenever they were near death.

Zhang Yang’s nerves were high-strung, fully unleashing his athleticism to dodge the Black Panther King’s attacks again and again. At this moment, a character’s Movement Speed would

obviously be unable to keep up with his reflexes. Only by distributing more Attributes Points on Dexterity would it be possible for him to utilize his advantage to his best ability.

From this point-of-view, Zhang Yang would be more suited to play as a Thief!

Of course, towards the latter part of the game, along with the improvement of equipment quality, the character attributes would become less important and could eventually be ignored. A good equipment would be the better way to properly enhance one's capability.

“-15!”

“-15!”

“-6!”

Dodge!

“-15!”

“-15!”

“-7!”

The damage numbers kept appearing above the Black Panther King's head, Zhang Yang finally managed to drained its HP. As the last "-15" damage from the Experimental Poison flashed, a moan was heard from the Black Panther King as it fell on the ground, died and turned into a white light.

Finally, it was over. Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief. He felt exhausted after nearly an hour of fighting in this intense battle.

"Ding! You have killed the Black Panther King. Gained 90,000 Experience Points (Double Reward for Exceed Level Kill)!"

"Ding! Congratulations! You are the first player to kill a Black-Steel boss. Your glorious achievement will be recorded in history! Do you wish to announce your name so that the world can praise your might?"

Zhang Yang was surprised. Due to the fact that he had joined the game later than anyone else previously, he had missed all the first kill chances thus never encountering an event like this.

His immediate reaction was naturally picking "Yes". Spreading his name across the server and be admired by all, was this not the sole intention of every online gamer?

Moreover, it would ease his process in creating his guild, attracting more players to join him.

Then another thought came to his mind. He had nothing right

now. Besides Fatty Han whom he was still not able to contact, he was completely alone! What if within this period a strong guild had their eyes on him? He was powerless to reject had they sent an invitation. Once he had refused their recruitment, endless harassment and [ganking](#) would await him!

Ganking is a word commonly used in online games and was derived from the phrase 'ganging up on'. It can be used as a verb or a noun depending on context and sentence. E.g. Let's gank that idiot. (Verb) // That was a good gank. (Noun)

This needed no doubt! Zhang Yang remembered that there was a tanker called Endless Starlight previously, whose skills were fairly average. Although he was in a small guild, his dungeon achievements were qualified enough to challenge other large guilds! At first, some of those guilds sent their invitations to Endless Starlight in requests of a guild transfer. Endless Starlight had liked his guild so much that he had rejected all the invitations.

As a result, 3 big guilds had joined in alliance to attack Endless Starlight and his guild. Within 10 days, his guild members could not continue any longer and had chosen to quit the guild, thus leading to the disbandment of the small guild. Endless Starlight was extremely depressed and had opted to delete his account and protested in the official forum.

The officials had replied that they do not encourage private fights in 'God's Miracle', thus setting level drops and red titles as penalties. Those with the desire to PK, please go to the arena; those who had the wish to kill their enemies, please go to the battlefield; these would definitely not result in the dropping of levels nor equipment. You would have to pay the price for the grudges you had created.

Regardless of reasons, the officials would not partake in the personal grudges amongst players.

Zhang Yang was not only ‘playing’ the game, he had wanted to use the game to make money, to accumulate enough fortune to fight the Liu Clan and compare to the Lin Clan. He knew the trend of the game, knew when and what material would be valuable, though this item manipulation would require him to be among the leading player’s level.

For example, the hottest sale item among Level 20 players – the Beginner Anti-Dark Medicine. Its formula could only be obtained from a Gray-Silver rarity chest.

In order to get the formula, one must possess the capability of getting the Gray-Silver rarity chest! In addition, the formula must be obtained as early as possible. Otherwise, when the timing had passed and everyone had the formula to make the medicine, they would no longer be in demand.

For now, Zhang Yang needed an unhindered environment until he could set up a guild and possess the power to say “no”.

Eventually, Zhang Yang chose “Reject”!

Immediately, red text that specifically belong to the server announcement began popping up in the world channel.



“Server Announcement: Player (Name Hidden) has successfully killed the Black Panther King, Level 15 Black-Steel Boss (China Server). This achievement will be recorded in the Hall of Fame! Please celebrate and cheer for him!”

“Server Announcement: Player (Name Hidden) has successfully killed the Black Panther King, Level 15 Black-Steel Boss (China Server), obtaining 10 Gold Coins from the System Rewards!”

“Server Announcement: Player (Name Hidden) has successfully killed the Black Panther King, Level 15 Black-Steel Boss (China Server). 500 Reputation Points across all races in the league are awarded!”

A series of red messages filled the screen, the effect was absolutely amazing!

“Ding! You’ve received an extra reward: Luck +1!”

A Luck Attribute reward! Zhang Yang felt quite surprised. Luck was an attribute that could not be upgraded through any equipment, yet remained very important. This attribute could affect a monster’s drop rate as well as the success rate of upgrading equipment and rune weapons, and of course, the [proc rate](#) of Lucky Strike.

Proc is actually an acronym for a computer programming term, which had become popular through gaming culture. It stands for Programmed Random OCcurrence (the capitalized letters

highlighting where proc came from) and is usually used as a replacement for ‘activation’. E.g. “What is the proc rate (activation rate) for your Double Attack?” // “My Legendary Wand of the Almighty Garden has a whopping 99% proc rate to conjure garden shrubs around myself! How amazing is that?”

Looking at the 5 server announcements showing repetitively on the screen, even Zhang Yang had felt a little smug. He then averted his gaze from the announcement and looked towards the drops from the Black Panther King.

On the other side, the sudden server announcements had caused an uproar among players in the China region.

“What the f\*ck? I’ve been killing monsters for so long only to reach Level 5 and someone had actually killed a Level 15 boss?”

“Is this for real, a solo fight?”

“F\*cking server, I got distracted reading the server announcement and got myself killed by a monster!”

“F\*ck, it must be a hack. How could anyone perform a solo attack on a Black-Steel grade boss!”

“F\*cking GM, come out and face God!”

“Give it up, there is no GM in “God’s Miracle”, the only thing monitoring the server is a super computer. Fair and justified!”

“Fair my ass!”

“Justified my ass!”

“No more asses, speed leveling is more important!”

“How do we level when there are more players than monsters. As a Spellcaster, I haven’t even casted any spells. I’ve been hitting them with my wand the whole time!”

“The one above, let’s shake hands. I’m a Cleric and I don’t even dare cast spells. With a two-second delay, there would be no chance to even kill a monster!”

Soon after, someone posted on the forum saying he had deliberately searched for the Black Panther King and discovered that its HP was a shocking 45000. Only one hit to this person who was a Level 5 player had already inflicted around 230 points of damage. How could anyone initiate a solo fight? He then directed his complaint to the game company questioning them of the existence of hacks or bugs.

Almost immediately, the company replied to the post, “No hack could be used in ‘God’s Miracle’, while the case of bugs could never be completely fixed. Based on the playback data of the game, however, the first player to have killed the Black Panther King did not take advantage of any bug.”



No sooner, the forum had livened up. People were wondering and discussing how the player had killed the Black Panther King!

# Chapter 7: Crimson Rage

With just one touch, the Black Panther King’s loot entered Zhang Yang’s inventory.

[Black Panther King’s Shin Guard] (Black-Steel, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +3

Vitality: +7

Strength: +2

Dexterity: +1

Level Requirement: 10

[Black Panther King’s Chest Plate] (Black-Steel, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +3

Vitality: +6

Strength: +3

Dexterity: +1

Level Requirement: 10

[Black Panther King's Armguard] (Black-Steel, Leather Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +3

Dexterity: +2

Level Requirement: 10

Warrior and Knight classes wore heavy armor, Hunter and Thief classes wore leather armor while Spellcaster and Cleric classes wore cloth armor.

Of the 3 equipment Zhang Yang had looted, he could only use 2 of them. It was not too bad but he had to reach Level 10 before he was able to use them.

In 'God's Miracle', helmets, chest plates, and shin guards were the equipment that would add the most Attribute Points. Gloves,

boots, necklaces, capes, and rings added comparatively lower Attribute Points but necklaces and rings would usually have a special effect attribute.

A weapon would only increase physical or magical damage and would not possess any attributes, though some high-grade weapon would have special effects.

The next item loot was not an equipment but a bloody severed head of the panther.

[Bloody Skull] (Black-Steel, Special Item)

Description: This is the skull of the Black Panther King! Take it back and present it to Village Elder Hu An, he will definitely reward you for your contribution!

Bound.

A bound item would be an item that players cannot trade or give away, which meant that the rewards could only be claimed by Zhang Yang.

The corpse of the Black Panther King disappeared instantaneously as soon as Zhang Yang had finished collecting all his battle loots. He then proceeded to mine the Refined Iron Vein.

“Ding! You have used <Mining> on the Refined Iron Vein. You have obtained Refined Iron Ore x2. Your <Mining> skill has increased by 2 points!”

Zhang Yang grinned as he picked up the two shiny Refined Iron Ores. Due to the ore’s rarity, it had become a form of currency in the game. The ores were glowing with a silver gleam, the beautiful lustrous glow was a feast for the eyes!

He kept his pickaxe and left the valley, beginning to wander around in search of more Iron Ore to mine. The respawn rate of the Refined Iron Ore was 1 hour, so he recorded his time before he left. When the time arrived, he would return to mine again.

On the other hand, the respawn time of the Black Panther King was 24 hours. Zhang Yang would have had acquired enough Refined Iron Ores to even wait for the boss to respawn.

Zhang Yang would gladly be looking forward to battle more respawned bosses as he would not only acquire equipment but also EXP! One boss alone had given him enough EXP to fill up 80% of his experience bar. With just two kills, he could have leveled up. How easy!

Zhang Yang made a few rounds in the mountain for about 4 hours and had already mined the Refined Iron Vein for 5 times, obtaining 11 Refined Iron Ores. Without dilly-dallying, he was grinding and searching for ores. By then, he had reached Level 7 but only had 126 Iron Ores, still quite a distance from reaching 200.

Zhang Yang cursed the developers of the game as he resumed his search of Iron Veins. Checking his mini-map that showed a blinking point not too far from where he was, he rejuvenated and rushed over with the pickaxe in his hand – Upon the acquisition of the <Mining> skill, spawning points of Iron Veins around would automatically be indicated on the mini-map.

“Tang! Tang! Tang!”

Zhang Yang swung his pickaxe and began mining the Iron Vein.

A piece of pale silver metal came into view as he lifted the pickaxe. “Eh, looks like my luck is finally here. I’ve finally gotten an Immature Refined Iron Ore!” Zhang Yang exclaimed with mixed feelings. After mining 126 Iron Ores, this was the first time he had actually encountered an Immature Refined Iron Ore, leading him to question his luck.

At this very moment though, he would rather trade his precious Refined Iron Ores for Iron Ore. With the fierce competition to get to the highest level, he could not afford to waste too much time in completing just one quest. Just 10 Refined Iron Ores were enough!

Putting away the ores and his pickaxe, he turned, wanting to leave the place before hearing a clear female voice.

“Hold up mate!”

Zhang Yang was astonished and turned around. Two

exceptionally beautiful girls appeared from behind a large boulder.

Both of them did not look any older than 20. The girl on the left wore a dark red leather armor. Perhaps the developers of this game had a domination fetish for the leather armor which was extremely short and tight. The deep V-cut design was so low that almost more than half of both her round voluptuous mounds were exposed.

As she walked, the resulting bounce was definitely a scene that could cause massive nosebleed within seconds should the man not possess sufficient willpower. Her lower half was covered in a leather skirt, tightly wrapping her firm, shapely buttocks. Her legs were long and fair, hips swaying with each step she took.

The other girl wore a plain long dress in white. The dress was very loose and so it had completely hid her figure.

“Me?” Zhang Yang asked pointing at his nose.

The hot girl clad in leather armor asked with a pout, “Is there anyone else here besides you?” Her voice was coy and sweet as honey, sugary enough to disarm anyone.

Zhang Yang might have looked like he was in his 20s but he had gone through reincarnation, experiencing life and death, and thus had become calm and collected, unfazed by much. After he was done admiring the girl clad in leather armor, he averted his gaze to the girl dressed in white and asked, “What is it?”

Just like him, both of the girls had their character information hidden so Zhang Yang did not know how to address them.

“I’m White Orchid, a Cleric from the Crimson Rage Guild,” the girl introduced herself. “She is Thorny Rose, Crimson Rage’s Thief!”

Crimson Rage? Zhang Yang had some impression of this guild. That was because this was the only guild in ‘God’s Miracle’ to have an all-girls team! Their guild master, Thousand Seeker Snow, ranked 4th in the ‘Top 10 List of Godly Magicians’ in the China region. Crimson Team that was under her lead was also an S-Class professional clan league team.

“Oh!” Zhang Yang casually acknowledged and said, “Well, nice to meet you. See you then!”

“Hey, hey, hey!” Thorny Rose was a little upset seeing that Zhang Yang wanted to leave. In her eyes, men were animals who think with the lower part of their body. She had never encountered a man who had not flocked to her like bees around a honey pot. Even if she chased them away with a broom, there would still be people who would not leave, what more a man who initiated his leave.

Zhang Yang would be the first time Thorny Rose had met a man who brushed her off.

She ran up and held on to Zhang Yang. “We have some business to do with you!”



“What of it?” Zhang Yang knew he did not have much to do with anyone from Crimson Rage.

“We want to buy the Refined Iron Ores that you have just mined!” Thorny Rose huffed.

These two sure had sharp eyes! Not only that, they, too, possessed a knack for business!

Even though ‘God’s Miracle’ had countless players, those who actually did material gathering were of a scarce number. Supplies for materials such as herbs and ores would never keep up with the players’ demands! Now that this profession had yet to become popular, prices of all these materials were extremely high. Especially the rare materials, the price would still remain stable even as the game made progress, never once decreasing!

So far, most of the players only cared about leveling up, not yet realizing the value of these precious materials. Later on, hell would break loose simply over the right to own a spawn point of rare metal veins or herbs.

Yet now, these female players from Crimson Rage had actually begun collecting rare materials. Zhang Yang was quite impressed with their awareness ahead of time.

“Not selling!” Zhang Yang shook his head, denying their offer. The Refined Iron Ores would only cost a few Copper Coins if sold right now, not even close to 1% of its true value.

Thorny Rose could not help but be surprised that her offer was denied directly by Zhang Yang. She had thought that this man was playing hard to get in order to attract her attention but she was now completely certain that this man had no interest in her.

Since when did I lose my charm? Thorny Rose's competitive desire to overturn this situation came ablaze. "We can offer you a high price. How about 10 Silver Coins?"

Just as Zhang Yang wanted to reject her offer, he suddenly thought of something and said, "I will not sell them. But if you can trade them with Iron Ores, I might consider!"

White Orchid then replied, "How many Iron Ores do you plan to trade for one Refined Iron Ore?"

Since Zhang Yang was still lacking 72 ores, he said, "Hm. Let's make it 72 pieces!"

"72 pieces?" The girls looked at each other, pleasantly delighted. They knew the low rate of mining a Refined Iron Ore, mining over 200 to 300 Iron Ores only to come across one Refined Iron Ore. If luck was lacking, the rate could be even lower! It was an absolute worthy steal to trade 72 pieces of Iron Ores for one Refined Iron Ore.

"Is it not enough? How about an extra one?" Zhang Yang took out two Refined Iron Ores from his inventory and with a sincere smile on his face, "2 Refined Iron Ores for 72 pieces of Iron Ores, how about that?"

This man... was a complete idiot!

White Orchid and Thorny Rose shared a look. Without hesitation, they took out 72 pieces of Iron Ores and entered the trading interface to place them there. Once Zhang Yang had placed two of his Refined Iron Ores, White Orchid immediately pressed 'Confirm' to complete the transaction.

With a "Ding", the system notified them that their transaction was completed. The three of them looked at each other, smiling thinking that they had caught a good deal and bade each other farewell.

"Hehehe. And here I thought that stinking man is somewhat different. He was just a little more guarded. For a moment there, I thought I've lost my appeal!" Thorny Rose exclaimed with relief patting her pendulous chest after they had walked some distance.

On the other hand, White Orchid replied thoughtfully, "I still think that the man was... how do I put it, he should have been a little more cunning!"

"Hmph, these two pieces of Refined Iron Ores are not fake anyway!" Thorny Rose was nonchalant. "The shield blueprint Ying Ying managed to get her hands on requires 5 of these Refined Iron Ores to be able to craft a Black-Steel grade shield. Our guild will definitely be the first to make it and gain a huge advantage in the first dungeon war.

White Orchid thought about it and had to agree. No matter how hard she could think, these two pieces of Refined Iron Ores were definitely worth more than those Iron Ores!

“Di! Di! Di!” the game messenger rang.

White Orchid quickly answered the call and heard the voice of a woman speaking, “Sister Orchid, Sister Rose, the Guild Master has just ordered everyone to bring all the Iron Ores to the Village Hall!”

Thorny Rose and White Orchid exchanged a look and felt ominous.

“Xiao Qing, what does the Guild Master want the Iron Ores for?” White Orchid asked.

The person on the other end of the line had answered immediately, “The Warrior class quest requires 200 pieces of Iron Ores. Mei Mei is waiting for you!”

“Oh – No!” Both White Orchid and Thorny Rose cried at the same time.

“Ah that evil man, he actually dared to scam me! Don’t ever let me see him again. See if I will entice him with all my might and then send him off flying with a kick. If I didn’t make him cry and broken-hearted for at least a few years, I shall not be named Jiang!” Thorny Rose spat spitefully, hating Zhang Yang with a

burning passion. The thing was, she was actually more annoyed that her usually alluring charm did not work at all this time!

After a while of seething with anger, she began to feel thankful that she was not the only one deceived and said, “Sister Orchid, I’m all boobs and no brain. What’s your excuse?”

“ ... ”

# Chapter 8: Gathering Materials

---

Zhang Yang jogged all the way back to Beginner Village and found Warrior Class Instructor Farion. Panting for breath, he could not help but miss the teleport reagent that could only be bought after Level 10 in the Capital.

“Greenhorn, I’ve got to admit that I’ve underestimated you!” Farion was still wearing a smug face as he received the Iron Ores delivered by Zhang Yang. “But you’re still just a greenhorn! Here! Take your shield and get out!”

Farion threw over a shield gleaming with black luster to Zhang Yang.

“Ding! You have completed the Class Quest: A Warrior’s Test. Gained 5,000 Experience Points!”

[Thick Iron Shield] (Black-Steel, Shield)

Defense: +10

Vitality: +5

Level Requirement: 5

“Wait!” Farion’s smug expression had suddenly changed into a surprised one. “You actually have Refined Iron Ores?”

“That’s right, honorable great master!” Zhang Yang took out 10 Refined Iron Ores from his inventory and handed them to Farion, knowing full well that he had successfully triggered the hidden quest.

“What beautiful luster, it reminds me of the diamonds in Dofus Mountain!” Farion reveled, his gaze towards the Refined Iron Ores in his hands as indulgent as a lover’s.

Only after a short moment did Farion say, “I was once a blacksmith before I became a great warrior! Greenhorn, these Refined Iron Ores made my hands tingle. If you agree, I would like to use them to make an indestructible blade!”

“As you wish, honorable great master!” Zhang Yang immediately nodded and agreed.

“Very well!” Farion was delighted and said, “However, just these Refined Iron Ores are insufficient, you will also need to collect another 3 types of materials!”

“Ding! Farion has a quest for you: Materials to Craft a Blade (I). Will you accept it?”

“Accept!” Zhang Yang checked the quest log immediately after he had accepted the quest.

[Material to Craft a Blade (I)] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Farion needs the Incisors of the Ivory Fanged Boar as crafting material for the blade. It is said that these monsters appear in the Watermelon Farm south of the village.

Progress: Collect Incisors of Ivory Fanged Boar 0/10

Ivory Fanged Boar. That would be a Level 10 monster, would it not? Zhang Yang did not leave immediately. Instead, he talked to Farion again and learned Level 5 Warrior skills: <Block> and <Shield Bash>.

[Block] (Level 1): Raise your shield, blocking one frontal attack from the enemy for 1 second. After a successful block, it will cause 100% damage to the enemy, generating a huge amount of aggro. Builds some Rage. Cooldown time: 10 seconds. Requirement: Shield.

[Shield Bash]: Bash the target with your shield, dealing 200% damage and generating a huge amount of aggro. Can only be casted after a successful Block. Cost: 10 Rage Points. Requirement: Shield.



Block would definitely be a Guardian's most divine skill! When the cooldown time reduces to 1 second after leveling it up to Level 10, be it the immunity to offense or the burst damage that would come right after with a <Shield Bash>, its might would be utterly terrifying!

After equipping himself with the Thick Iron Shield, Zhang Yang went to Village Elder Hu An and handed him the Black Panther King's skull.

“Ahh! Is this – is this the skull of the Black Panther King? This damned beast which had killed so many of our villagers!” Elder Hu An was absolutely delighted, looking at Zhang Yang with elation, “Praise the Lord, you are indeed a brave and kind young man, all of the villagers will be so very grateful to you!”

“Ding! You have completed the quest: Removing the Villagers' Threat. Gained 10,000 Experience Points!”

“Ding! Your Human Race Reputation has increased by 200 points!”

200 Reputation Points! Zhang Yang pursed his lips. Reputation had been a confounded system in the game. Each race had their corresponding reputation divided into 7 levels in ascending order – Hostile, Unfriendly, Neutral, Friendly, Respect, Admire, and Worship. If a player's reputation level in a specific race is lower than Neutral, he would induce attacks from that specific race whenever he entered their territory; if the reputation level had

reached Friendly or higher, the player would be able to purchase items corresponding to their reputation level. Basically, the higher the reputation of a person towards that specific faction, the better the quality of items one would be able to purchase!

Zhang Yang arrived at the south of the village. There were wild boars everywhere gnawing watermelons in the 3 existing watermelon farms. To the side was a farmhouse and a white bearded man pacing around anxiously.

“Elder one, is there anything I can do for you?” Zhang Yang ran forward to strike a conversation as soon as he saw the yellow exclamation mark above the NPC’s head.

“Look at those damn wild boars trashing my watermelon farms! Kill them all and I will reward you!” the old man bellowed.

[Kill the Boars] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Kill those damn Ivory Fanged Boars!

Progress: Kill Ivory Fanged Boar 0/10

[Ivory Fanged Boar] (Normal)

Level: 10

HP: 500

There were another 4 or 5 player parties in the watermelon farms. As the Ivory Fanged Boar's level was slightly higher, most of the Level 5 players could not go solo when fighting the monsters and thus formed parties. Even so, the huge level gap had still made killing a single boar difficult for a team of 5.

These people showed no intention of leaving even with their slow pace. To them, at least this place still had monsters and was far better than places where a freshly spawned monster would instantly be stabbed by more than 10 swords simultaneously.

A few of them had started laughing when they saw Zhang Yang coming alone.

“Fool, are you seriously grinding here alone? A donkey must have kicked your brains out!”

“Haha, I wonder how many donkey kicks does it take to make one so stupid.”

“Let's just wait and see how he's gonna get his ass kicked by the wild boars!”

Of course, there were kind hearted players too.

“Buddy, the monsters around here are all Level 10. You can’t do it.”

“Our team’s Spellcaster is about to leave. There is a slot in our party, how about joining us?”

Most of them seemed to have overlooked the shield on Zhang Yang’s back. It would have been a reward received only after one had completed the Level 5’s Class Quest! While there were an incredible number of players who had already reached Level 5 currently, the number of players who had cleared the Class Quest could only be counted with less than one hand!

Zhang Yang smiled and rejected their party invitations. He gripped his Beginner Sword and moved towards the closest wild boar. He then activated the skill <Charge> when he was in its effective range.

Stunned!

“-30!”

Streams of blood gushed out as Zhang Yang swung his weapon and slashed the boar.

“Hu! Hu! Hu!” the Ivory Fanged Boar recovered and roared angrily. It stabbed towards Zhang Yang with both its sharp fangs.

Zhang Yang activated the skill <Block>.

“-27!” Successful block and counterattack!

“-64!” <Shield Bash>!

“-31!” Another normal attack!

“-29!” Rage increased to 30 points, <Force Strike>!

Dodge!

<Block> entered into cooldown. Zhang Yang easily evaded the attack of the wild boar with just a swift move – a Level 15 Black Panther King could not even come into contact with Zhang Yang, let alone a common Level 10 monster!

In just 4 to 5 seconds, Zhang Yang had delivered 181 damage points, decreasing one third of the boar’s HP. All of the players could only stare at him wide-eyed on the sideline as if they had seen a ghost. Those damage numbers were unbelievable! Was this dude really a Guardian?

Guardians actually had pretty good [nuking power](#). The keypoint was the skill <Block>! The timing for using <Block> would then be the key factor during the early stages to tell the difference between an outstanding Guardian and a regular Guardian!

Nuke (Nuking) is a term used by gamers to describe a massive amount of damage. Nuking an enemy would generally mean killing it in one go, usually to prevent them from reacting, whether by

healing, fleeing or retaliating. E.g. “I was nuked and died on the spot! I didn’t even know who did it!”

Characters would gain an additional effect after activating <Block>, allowing the player to block another attack for the following 1 second! Since the follow-up effect only lasted for one second, if the skill was activated too early and the attack had yet to come, the effect would have disappeared by then! And if the activation was too late...

<Block> would have been invalid, thus the devastating <Shield Bash> that followed could not have been activated.

Of course, when <Block> had reached Level 10, these restrictions would have been nulled so one could easily keep [spamming](#) the button.

Spam (Spamming) is a term used by gamers to describe repeated casting of a spell or usage of an item. It is somewhat similar to, but is not an abuse of the system to perform a specific task. Players could be dealing good damage by spamming their highest damage dealing skill, or spamming potions to heal while tanking a high damage-dealing enemy. E.g. “Stop spamming potions and fight me like a real man!”

Zhang Yang had been changing his position with ease until <Block>’s cooldown time had been fulfilled. He then activated another chain-skill. The Ivory Fanged Boar wailed and died with a white flash, granting Zhang Yang 500 EXP. His hands reached out and with luck, he had gotten an Incisor!

“F\*ck, this guy is mighty!”

“Yeah, he killed it so quickly and did not even suffer from a single drop of HP!”

“I just finally realized that you can evade a monster’s attack by moving around!”

“Eh, I thought it’s a given that a character depends on Evasion, Parry and Block to gain attack immunity?”

“Bro, this is a virtual reality game, not a traditional online game. Gotta learn more!”

“ ... ”

The surrounding players were having a heated conversation. Luckily, Zhang Yang had chosen to hide his name, otherwise he would have gotten famous here. Still, there were nosy players who had used the in-game recorder to record how Zhang Yang had fought the monster and posted it to the forum titling the post, ‘Unexpected Godly Player, Unscathed Killing’, raising a public commotion.

Everyone was but a beginner at this current stage of the game. How could they not be impressed when they saw Zhang Yang’s advanced skills that was at least 5 years ahead of the current game’s standard? Within a short period, countless players had turned Zhang Yang into their idol worshipping him.

Zhang Yang killed the wild boars consecutively. Although his killing speed was considerably slow compared to a 5-men party, he was killing without suffering from damages, and thus, there was no need for him to rest, increasing his efficiency.

About 7 or 8 minutes later, he had already slain 10 wild boars but had only collected 7 Incisors, requiring him to continue grinding.

Another 5 minutes had passed before Zhang Yang finally succeeded in collecting 10 Incisors. He first submitted the quest ‘Kill the Boars’ and rushed back to meet Farion. Behind him, the players had long been dumbfounded, their own fights long forgotten as they only cared about observing Zhang Yang’s fight.

“Well done. You can now start searching for the second material!” Farion granted Zhang Yang 5,000 EXP and continued instructing.

“Ding! Farion has a quest for you: Material to Craft a Blade (II). Will you accept it?”

A new entry was added to the quest log after Zhang Yang had accepted the quest.

[Material to Craft a Blade (II)] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: There is a pack of Fire Elementals



wandering in the Scorched Valley. Upon death, the Fire Elementals condense into potent Refined Fire Essences! It was said that the Scorched Valley is at the end of the road towards the west of the village.

Progress: Collect Refined Fire Essence 0/3

Towards the opposite direction!

Zhang Yang sighed and followed the quest instructions, going west from Beginner Village. After about half an hour, he finally arrived at the valley, ground burnt and fuming soot. Flaming red elemental monsters wandering around his destination.

[Fire Elemental] (Normal)

Level: 10

HP: 500

This place was too far from Beginner Village and no quest would have led anyone here, so there were no one around besides Zhang Yang.

Let the killing begin!

## Chapter 9: A Handsome Reward

---

This second quest had only asked for 3 Refined Fire Essences but that did not mean that this quest was easy to complete.

In fact, Zhang Yang had only managed to farm his first Refined Fire Essence after 20 minutes!

Farming the second Refined Fire Essence was rather quick, as it only took the following 5 minutes. The third one though, took him a whole hour.

“What luck!” Zhang Yang examined his hands as he walked back to the village.

He checked his EXP gauge and realized it had already reached 73%, not far from advancing to the next level. After all, he had been going beyond his level and grinding on Level 10 monsters. The EXP obtained were noticeably much more.

Returning to Farion to submit the quest, the man had rewarded him a handsome amount of 5,000 EXP and said, “Young warrior, you’ve completed the task I entrusted you with, again and again, leaving me an impression that you do have slight talent! Alright, this is the last material needed – The Frost Giant’s Soul! Different Frost Giants would have different power in their souls and of course, different strength levels. You may select the difficulty to challenge according to your own capability and courage!”

“Ding! You may choose one of the following difficulty levels to

complete for this quest. The higher the difficulty level, the better the reward! Please choose: Extremely Difficult, Hard, Average, Easy!”

“Extremely Difficult!” Zhang Yang decided without hesitation. Obviously, the chance of obtaining ‘Perfect’ score would only be available in this level of difficulty.

“Haha, a bold selection! I hope that you’re as what you’ve chosen to face, greenhorn!” Farion passed Zhang Yang a sparkling crystal-like rock. “Take this Frost Stone and place it in the center of the magic circle in the basement. The circle will be activated automatically and it will summon the Frost Giant!”

“Ding! You have accepted the quest: Materials to Craft a Blade (III)!”

“Ding! You have obtained the item, Frost Stone!”

[Materials to Craft a Blade (III)] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: To obtain the last material, you must use the Frost Stone to summon the Frost Giant, defeat it, collect its soul and pass it to Farion. This quest must be completed alone. The quest will fail automatically once a second player gains aggro from the Frost Giant.

Progress: Collect Frost Giant’s Soul 0/1

---

S-Level quest, it looked like the time to obtain the ultimate reward had finally arrived!

The basement was situated underneath the Village Hall. Zhang Yang spent 5 to 6 minutes to reach the base walking through a winding path. He had wondered about the purpose of this basement previously when he first played the game. He had finally gotten his answer now.

The basement was lit with torches all around and was very spacious. Right in the center was an intricately drawn magic circle. Zhang Yang took out the Frost Stone from his inventory and mounted it to the empty hollow within the circle.

“Hong!”

Endless white light emanated from the ground, dazzling and captivating! A low voice then echoed in the basement.

“Who...Who summons Malatog! Malatog was slumbering. Whoever awakes Malatog must receive a frosty punishment!”

“Hong!”

A giant with a height of 6 to 7 men appeared in the middle of the magic circle. Its entire body was a sky-blue color and it exuded penetrating chilliness, dropping the basement’s temperature by several degrees within seconds!

“You – a mere mortal, dares to disturb Malatog’s sweet dream! Malatog will crush you!” The blue giant immediately noticed Zhang Yang and threw its fist towards him.

[Malatog] (Elite)

Level : 10

HP : 5000

Zhang Yang stepped back and used <Charge> on it. In an instant, a starry effect appeared above Malatog’s head indicating it had been stunned.

“-18!”

He swung his sword only to inflict a pitiful 18-point damage! Such strong defense!

It was a shame that the effects of the Experimental Poison had long since disappeared and as the poison could only be bought once per player, Zhang Yang would have to rely on himself to slowly defeat it.

“Despicable ant, you’ve angered Malatog!” Malatog lifted his fist

and threw it at Zhang Yang again in rage.

“<Block>!”

“-17!”

“Such a thick-skinned creature!” Zhang Yang murmured, raising his shield as he activated <Shield Bash>.

“-54!”

Malatog let out a cry of pain and anger after receiving the blow. It then raised its big foot and took a step forward, wanting to stomp on Zhang Yang.

“-19!”

“-19!”

Although the resulting damage from one normal attack followed by a <Force Strike> was not much at all, it had instead made Malatog even angrier.

Battling someone as agile as Zhang Yang, it would seem like Malatog was playing a game of Whack-a-Mole. Even though he had the advantage with his outstanding strength, he could hardly land a hit on Zhang Yang but instead kept receiving damage.

“90%! 80%! 70%! 60% 50%!”

“Puny mortal! Taste the Frost God’s rage!” Malatog suddenly crouched and slammed the ground with both his fists. Immediately, countless spear-like ice spikes pierced up through the ground.

Zhang Yang had never encountered such a monster, so naturally he would not have known what kind of attacks it would use. Even though he was already cautious the moment it spoke, because he would never have known what to expect, how was he supposed to figure out his strategy to counter?!

In an instance, Zhang Yang had maximized his athletic skill to the best he could, skillfully dodging each icicle with grace.

“Ding! You have been attacked by an icicle. You have lost 30 HP!”

“Ding! You have been attacked by an icicle. You have lost 30 HP!”

“Ding...”

The system notification had rang 5 times consecutively in his ears. Even though Zhang Yang had pushed his speed to the limit, he was still unable to be at his best due to the character’s own agility constraint. As a result of it, he had received damage from 5 icicles and had his HP reduced tremendously.

And this was Zhang Yang. If it had been someone else, they

would have been completely annihilated by this monster's special skill.

Zhang Yang only had a total HP of 190 and it had been instantly reduced to 40. He tapped a bottle of Beginner Healing Potion. A "+100" green text floated across his head and his HP bar instantly went up again.

The Red Pot had a 30-second cooldown time, so it was fortunate that the move by Malatog did not appear frequently, otherwise the cooldown period would have been too long.

"Malatog will smash your bones to smithereens!" the Frost Giant stood up again and everything returned to how it was.

"40%! 30%! 20%! 10%!"

Zhang Yang began to feel anxious. There would be a chance for a monster to turn 'berserk' when its HP had fallen to 10%. Once they had entered the state, their attack activation rate would drastically increase, and that would be the most dangerous part of a battle. Even if Zhang Yang was highly skilled, he would not have been able to withstand 3 to 4 continuous waves of a boss' special attack.

Luckily, it did not turn red!

Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief and thought to himself. This quest could only be completed by a single player. The monster's skill was already capable of killing a player instantly, if it had



entered Berserk state, how would it be possible to clear?

“3%! 2%! 1%!”

“Despicable mortal! Malatog will return! Malatog will...!” As the last drop of HP vanished, Malatog was finally defeated. Its gigantic body fell with a thundering thud.

“Hu!” Zhang Yang exhaled a puff of air. He finally completed it!

The magic circle reactivated and the Frost Giant’s corpse began to shrink until it finally became a small blue marble the size of a regular fist.

“So this is the Frost Giant’s Soul?” Zhang Yang picked up the marble as he scanned the entire room. “F\*cking hell! How come there aren’t any drops when I’ve just killed a freaking boss!”

Zhang Yang returned from the basement annoyed and handed over the marble to Farion.

“Young man, you’ve proven your strength and ability. I have to admit, you would be an amazing Warrior in the future!” Farion waved his hand invitingly and said, “Come with me. Now that all the materials have been gathered, I will craft you an indestructible blade!”

“Ding! You’ve completed the quest : Materials to Craft a Blade (III). Gained 10,000EXP!”

Still, he had yet to receive the ultimate reward. Zhang Yang patiently followed Farion to the village's Blacksmith Shop.

Farion and the owner greeted each other and he took out all sorts of materials. "Dang! Dang! Dang!" Farion lifted the metal hammer and began to smith.

Fortunately since this was a game, everything progressed very quickly. Within half a minute, a shiny sharp sword had appeared in Farion's hands.

"Take this, young warrior. Let it be your most loyal companion and drink up your enemies' blood!" Farion tossed the sword to Zhang Yang and retrieved a red-colored book, "This is filled with skills I've learned in battles. Now, I shall give it to you!"

"Ding! You have obtained the item Refined Iron Sword!"

"Ding! You have obtained the skill book 'Horizontal Sweep'!"

"Ding! You have completed the Hidden Class Quest: Farion's Request. Quest Score: Perfect! Gained 20,000 EXP!"

"Ding! You have obtained the reward: 1 SP!"

"Ding! Congratulations on achieving Level 8. All attributes +1 and obtained 5 free AP!"

“Ding! Congratulations! You are the first player to complete a hidden quest and to obtain a ‘Perfect’ score. This achievement will be recorded in the Hall of Fame! Do you wish to announce your name so that the world can praise your mightiness?”

Announcing it again? Zhang Yang gave it some thought but eventually still decided on “Reject”.

In an instant, the neglected quiet world channel was once again filled with the server announcement’s red text!

“Server announcement: Player (Name Hidden) is the first to have successfully completed a hidden quest and obtained a ‘Perfect’ score (China Server). This achievement will be recorded in the Hall of Fame! Please celebrate and cheer for him!”

“Server announcement: Player (Name Hidden) is the first to have successfully completed a hidden quest and obtained a ‘Perfect’ score (China Server), obtaining 10 Gold Coins from the System Rewards!”

“Server announcement: Player (Name Hidden) is the first to have successfully completed a hidden quest and obtained a ‘Perfect’ score (China Server). 500 Reputation Points across all races in the league are awarded!”

“Ding! You’ve received an extra reward: Luck +1!”

Within a day, the server had flashed red twice, causing commotion among the players in the entire China region once again.

“That is just crazy! He actually completed a hidden quest?”

“God! He even got a ‘Perfect’ score! I saw a statement on the official website saying the difficulty setting in achieving a ‘Perfect’ score could only be completed by one in a million!”

“I wonder what the rewards are.”

“Fucking shit server, why have I not encountered a hidden quest?”

“Face problem!”

“Character problem!”

“Wash your hands after taking a dump!”

“Eh, just throwing it out there. Which hand do you use to wipe your ass after taking a shit?”

“Left hand!”

“Right hand!”

“Right hand!”

“I use toilet paper! You guys have a weird fetish!”

Just like that, the conversation took a rather interesting yet different turn very quickly.

Zhang Yang opened his inventory to check the rewards from this quest.

[Refined Iron Sword] (Black-Steel, One-Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 16 – 24

Attack Interval: 2 seconds

Level Requirement: 10

-- At present, most players were still grinding tirelessly to obtain rewarded weapons from completing the Level 5 Class Quest while Zhang Yang had already obtained a Level 10 Black –Steel rarity weapon! If word got out, those players who had been grinding relentlessly would definitely be devastated!

[Horizontal Sweep] (Skill Book)

Use: Grants the skill “Horizontal Sweep”

Bound.

Zhang Yang was a little furious. He had obviously gotten a ‘Perfect’ score yet his reward was similar to those of ‘Average’ score? This was ridiculous! Zhang Yang tapped the skill book against his body and a new skill appeared in his skill window after giving out a bright light.

[Horizontal Sweep]: Attacks all nearby enemies, dealing 200% melee damage to every target. Cost: 20 Rage. Cooldown time: 10 seconds. Requirement: Melee Weapon.

200% melee damage?!

Zhang Yang’s eyes glinted. He clearly remembered the <Horizontal Sweep> which the mining fanatic had gotten could only deal 100% melee damage!

Oh perfect! Now this reward would have been the right match for ‘Perfect’ score!

Hooray!

# Chapter 10: Rogue Clan

---

Zhang Yang had 2 upgradable skills now but the performance of a maximized <Force Strike> skill was low with only a 50% chance of triggering an additional attack. Without much hesitation, he added a valuable Skill Point on the divine <Block> skill.

[Block] (Level 2): Raise your shield, blocking one frontal attack from the enemy for 1 second. After a successful block, it will cause 100% damage to the enemy, generating a huge amount of aggro. Builds some Rage. Cooldown time: 9 seconds. Requirement: Shield.

The reduction in cooldown time of the skill <Block> had not only increased the attack immunity but more importantly, had also increased the usage frequency of <Shield Bash>. This was of utmost importance to Zhang Yang.

All the substantial quests in Beginner Village had already been completed. The next objective would be to level up to Level 10 and then proceed onwards to the Capital!

Zhang Yang had no other option now but to solely depend on grinding through monster killing. He had come to the Scorched Valley where there were the fewest players, intending to grind here until he reached Level 10. With <Horizontal Sweep>, his current grinding ability had risen to a whole different level, making it harder for other players to catch up!



Before entering the valley, Zhang Yang was surprised to see that there were now more than 10 players at the mouth of the valley. All of them did not hide their names and shared the same name tags of 'So-and-So, Rogue Clan' above their heads, most of them appearing to be Level 5 – 6 players.

“Rogue Clan!” Zhang Yang could not help but grit his teeth.

Rogue Clan was a guild. There were Guild Master Rogue Bunny, Vice Guild Master Bunny Bro Two, and following their seniority ranks, it would be Bunny Bro Three and Bunny Bro Four... In short they were all bunny brothers! This guild was very popular in Zhang Yang's previous life but it was not because their guild was strong, it was because everyone in this guild was a hooligan!

Guild Master Rogue Bunny was said to be a gangster too in real life. The people in his guild were originally his gang members and were regularly involved in organized crime such as cheating, abducting and bullying. This rogue guild had never changed its objective even upon entering the game. As long as it was beneficial to them, they were willing to do anything, making up whatever scoundrels tricks they could think of along the way!

When the guild Clear Water was going against Liu Wei's guild, Myth, Liu Wei had hired Rogue Clan to bash members of Clear Water. Those rogues had spammed deliberate messages of insults and slanders in the Capital every day, using words which were extremely derogatory and vile that would even disgust one to nausea!

Rogue Bunny had even personally led dozens of men and

stationed themselves at the entrance of the Clear Water Guild. Whenever a female player came out, they would take off their pants, slap their asses and talk dirty, an absolute demonstration of the absence of their ethics!

The frustrating part was that the Clear Water Guild was not powerful enough, and thus could only set up their base in the Capital's zone instead of freely picking their own base outside. This was primarily because PK among players was restricted in the Capital.

Unable to do anything, Zhang Yang and the others could only watch these scoundrels behave the way they were! During that time, the situation had caused hundreds of female players to not go online for days, indirectly affecting the morale of male players.

Zhang Yang had hated these guys for a while now. Just as he wanted to draw his sword and PK, he aborted this idea reluctantly.

--Beginner Village was also protected by the system; players were unable to engage one another in a PK.

“Rogue Clan is camping this field. Other players leave the field immediately or we will kill you back to Level 0!” a player with the name Bunny Bro Nine spoke arrogantly when he saw Zhang Yang walking towards them.

Ah the arrogance! With just a few Level 5 or 6 players, they had wanted to take over the entire field!

“Boss, there is really a boss inside! I think it’s called Firebender Barr, a Black-Steel Boss! But there is a player fighting it now!” a Thief player appeared suddenly from <Sneak> mode and said excitedly.

“Boss is indeed Boss, knowing there is a boss inside even before entering, awesome!” one of his subordinate pandered.

“Haha!” Rogue Bunny laughed, all conceited and superior, “Let us have this boss killed and have the system issue an announcement! By then, the Rogue Clan will be renowned across the world. We can then recruit thousands of brothers and become rich!”

“As expected of Boss, brilliant, valiant and prophetic! You made us all sell our things to buy these gaming helmets and play the game as a group. No one but Boss would have been so bold!” another man sang his praise.

“However, Boss, I’ve heard that the server only makes announcements for being the first to kill a Black-Steel Boss...” one of his men stated.

“Nonsense! You dare doubt Boss’ words, was your head kicked by a donkey?” Bunny Bro Eight lectured him immediately.

Rogue Bunny threw out a kick and sent that player who objected flying, “If you were so smart, you wouldn’t need me as your boss now, would you?”

“That’s right, Boss is brilliant!”

“Peerless, handsome Boss!”

“Almighty Boss!”

Rogue Bunny shifted his gaze and saw Zhang Yang watching their little show by the side. He then angrily said, “You there, fool, why are you still here? Do you want to be killed back to Level 0?”

These people did not seem to know that the Beginner Village had PK restrictions. An idea came to Zhang Yang’s mind and he grinned, “Kill me back to Level 0? Hehe, come and try, I am insusceptible to damage!”

“Haha, insusceptible to damage, in your dreams!” Bunny Bro Four raised his sword to slash towards Zhang Yang’s head.

Zhang Yang did not move nor evade but welcomed the sword with a smile!

“Sha!”

The Beginner Sword cut right through Zhang Yang’s head but it had seemed to be cutting through a shadow. Zhang Yang was completely unaffected.

-- With the protection of ‘System God’, every player was the

same.

Bunny Bro Four was incredulous, he waved his sword a few more times but it was the same, the system had nullified the attack.

Rogue Bunny and his gang gasped in shock, their eyes staring wide as saucers.

“Boss! He really is insusceptible to damage!” Bunny Bro Five shouted.

Rogue Bunny immediately replaced his overbearing and arrogant expression with a smile and said, “Friend, I... I am Rogue Bunny, Guild Master of Rogue Clan. Brother, let’s be friends!”

“Get out of my way! I’m gonna go f\*ck the boss!” Zhang Yang said with an intentional rough tone.

“Wait, brother, wait!” Rogue Bunny stopped Zhang Yang at once, his face wearing a smile of flattery, “Don’t be so spiteful!”

Zhang Yang sneered and said, “You want in on my indestructible body?”

“Brother, how did you get this indestructible body? Is there any secret?” Rogue Bunny asked in earnest.

Zhang Yang looked as though he was so very contented. He

seemed like he wanted to share it with them, yet had to hold himself back, all while looking at Rogue Bunny and smiling.

Rogue Bunny was restless, “Brother, bro, our acquaintance is fate. Don’t be so selfish!”

Zhang Yang put up a mysterious front, carefully peeking around. Rogue Bunny and his followers came nearer and surrounded him, wearing the same expression.

“Actually this secret is very simple. All you need to do is to chant the spell!” Zhang Yang exposed his ‘secret’.

“What spell?” more than 10 people asked simultaneously.

“Wee-Aar-Ol-Stew-Pee!” Zhang Yang lowered his voice and said.

“Really?”

“If you don’t believe it, try it out!” Zhang Yang shrugged.

Rogue Bunny randomly pointed at one of his men and said, “Come, chop me!”

That man eagerly picked up his weapon and wanted to swing it—

“Wait!” Rogue Bunny quickly shouted, “I haven’t chanted the

spell!”

He adjusted his expression and chanted loudly: “Wee-Aar-Ol-Stew-Pee!”

“Come on!”

“Here I come!”

That man, too, roared before he gave a chop with his sword.

Null!

Rogue Bunny was delighted, he immediately laughed out loud and said, “It really worked! Haha, indestructible body!”

“Boss, now that we have this secret, we can kill any boss we want and wipe out anyone we wish?”

Rogue Bunny waved his arm mightily and said, “Let’s go, follow me and let’s kill the boss!”

“Wait!” Zhang Yang quickly said, “The duration of the spell is very short, so you have to keep chanting. It may also not work if your voice is not loud enough!”

“OK, we got it! You can fuck off!” Rogue Bunny resumed his

wretched character, burning the bridge after he had crossed the river. He laughed maniacally and led his men towards the valley.

More than 10 players rampaged without a care and gained the aggro of 7 to 8 Fire Elementals shortly.

These people were fearless. Each of them loudly chanted “Wee-Aar-Ol-Stew-Pee” and started to fight the monsters.

Players of Level 5-6 versus Level 10 monsters. As a result...

Complete annihilation!

Some ten minutes later, these people resurrected and came back running.

“Boss, why is it not working?” Bunny Bro Eight complained.

Rogue Bunny thought about it and said, “Maybe we didn’t chant loud enough? Let’s try it again!”

“Wee-Aar-Ol-Stew-Pee!”

“Go!”

Again, all of them got completely wiped out.



Another 10 minutes later, the Rogue Clan members ran back after resurrecting.

“Boss, I think we have been fooled! Doesn’t the spell sound like ‘we are all stupid’?” a man voiced his suspicion.

“F\*ck you! You are the stupid one!” Rogue Bunny was mad, “Chant it louder, go!”

“We are all stupid!”

They went on in batches.

Zhang Yang watched them for a while in a hidden spot at the mouth of the valley, laughing until his belly ached. He waved his Beginner Sword and began his grinding journey.

The first time he had come here to collect Refined Fire Essences, he was alone. So before he could even enter one-tenth of the valley, monsters had already spawned behind him. Therefore he did not have to continue moving inwards.

Recalling that the members of Rogue Clan had said that there was a boss in the valley, Zhang Yang got excited and made his way in as he grinded.

As he reached the middle of the valley, Zhang Yang came across a sacrificial altar that took up a lot of space. Complicated magic circles were engraved in the middle of the altar, with white rays

flowing out of it.

In the center of the sacrificial altar, a crimson-colored Fire Elemental was fighting an elf girl cladded in a snow-white sorcerer’s robe. The other Fire Elementals were far away from the altar.

The Fire Elemental currently engaged in the battle was significantly bigger than the other ordinary Fire Elementals. Its color was also much deeper. Each attack delivered by the Fire Elemental carried a dazzling fire glow. That elf girl was obviously in a disadvantageous position. She kept dodging but was still cornered and attacked. Her HP bar reaching an alarming level!

[Firebender Barr] (Black-Steel Boss)

Level: 10

HP: 2286/5000

[Calina] (Normal)

Level: 10

HP: 537/2000

# Chapter 11: Main Story Quest

---

Rogue Clan, those bloody idiots!

Zhang Yang could not help but curse. This was not some PvE fight, it was obviously two NPCs fighting against each other.

“Young warrior, please help me!” The elf girl Calina cried for help when she had noticed Zhang Yang’s presence.

“Thou shan't believe this devil, mortal!” Firebender Barr commanded with a low voice. “Leave! I command thee!”

Zhang Yang unsheathed his Beginner Sword and used <Charge> towards his target – Firebender Barr!

The reason was as plain as daylight: Calina’s name was green, belonging to the ‘Friendly’ category that could not be attacked. On the other hand, Firebender Barr had a red name, a confirmed monster! There were no choices in this matter!

Stunned!

After stunning Barr, Zhang Yang swung his sword and began a series of attack against it.

Firebender Barr recovered from the stun and furiously roared, “Foolish mortal! Thou shall pay for thy actions!” Barr made a

fierce turn and gave up his attack on Calina, instead starting his attack on Zhang Yang.

He must have triggered a quest in the game's storyline. Otherwise Barr would not have simply changed his course from Calina who had dealt more damage, to him who had only just begun attacking. This obviously did not match the aggro value!

Zhang Yang knew it was the system's settings that had allowed only attacks towards Barr and so, there was no other way around!

While evading and counterattacking, he thought to himself, "Calina, this name seems very familiar. Where have I heard of it?"

This elf NPC must have a back story. It is impossible for an average Level 10 NPC to possess 2,000 HP and manage to deal almost 3,000 damage against a boss while only losing less than 1,500 HP herself. Her attacks must have been stronger than the boss!

Even as Zhang Yang pondered, his actions showed no signs of slowing down as he continued to deal damage to Firebender Barr.

"Mortal! That's enough! Stand down now and I shall forgive thy insolence!"

Combined attacks from Zhang Yang and Calina had managed to bring down Barr's HP to a mere 10%.

“There is no other way, the plot requires your death and there’s nothing I can do about it!” Zhang Yang murmured as he continued dishing out attacks.

“Damn you, mortal! Curse you! You’ve released a demon. The blood of the innocent will be in your hands!” Barr cried as it turned into a lump of ash amidst the white light. Yet, its voice echoed in the air, “Calina, the God of the Fire shall incinerate your soul!”

“Hahaha!” Calina let out a pleased and relieved laughter, “It’s been 3,000 years! 3,000 years! I, Calina, am finally free from this damned seal!”

Clumps of black fog emerged from all corners as Calina absorbed them into her body. The once delicate face of a young girl morphed into a ferocious one filled with evil aura.

“Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!”

The sound of snapping chains rang around him, yet Zhang Yang did not see anything but the slowly widening grin on Calina’s face. Her eyes that had radiated with white rays gradually darkened and sank into an abyss.

“Hong!”

With a loud and devastating explosion, the entire sacrificial altar came crashing down. As the dust settled, Calina emerged completely different. A pair of black, bat-like wings stemmed from

her back. Each wing had the length of 5 men, flapping to allow her to glide freely in the air!

“Si!”

The white sorcerer’s robe that she had been wearing began to tear itself apart, replacing itself with a half-cupped chest plate, exposing most of her breasts. Her lower half was an unbelievably short metallic skirt. Hanging on her back was a Dragon’s Bone Longbow taller than her!

The bright and lively elf girl had morphed into a devilish and sexy fallen angel in an instant!

These game designers... such fetish!

Witnessing Calina’s current appearance, Zhang Yang remembered a name. He then checked the name above her head and noticed that it had changed as well.

[Demon Lord, Calina the Fallen Wind Ranger] (God Class Boss)

Level: ???

HP: ???

A God Class Boss! The highest-ranked monster in the game!

It was her!

The background setting of 'God's Miracle' was the invasion of demons and spectres with each race uniting to protect their homeland! The highest-ranked demons were the Demon Lords. There was a total of 9 generals and Calina was ranked 7th on the list!

According to the official introduction page, Calina was originally an elf hero, bearing the name 'Wind Ranger'. In one of her battles, she was betrayed by an allied force and became filled with wrath, the Wind Ranger was lured into the dark force by the Demon King, thus falling from grace and turning into a Demon Lord.

After she had turned into a Demon Lord, she had went up against her previous brethren and war comrades, killing them mercilessly. She was eventually sealed away by the God of Fire.

Zhang Yang could only laugh. Amidst his bemusement, he had actually released a God Class Boss! This damned game company, they actually placed such a powerful boss in the Beginner Village! Were they not scared that this would escalate into a bloody mess?

With the ability of a God Class Boss, if it had unleashed just one special skill, the entire Beginner Village could have been completely annihilated!

“Puny mortal, you’ve helped me escape. Should I just kill you to thank you?” Calina flapped her wings, gliding in the air as she looked at Zhang Yang like she was looking at an ant.

“Or perhaps I should just let you suffer in regret and misery your whole life, that may be a better reward! Farewell, mortal! Enjoy your last moments in life for I, Calina, shall completely destroy this world!” Calina seemed to be thinking about something as she flapped her wings promptly and flew high into the sky, disappearing in an instant.

Hu, for the sake of the storyline, he had actually spent half a day and ended up empty-handed. Zhang Yang let out a sigh of disappointment.

“Ah, you imbecile! What have you done?!” a small, red-bearded dwarf who had sprung up out of nowhere grabbed Zhang Yang by his collar and bellowed, spraying his spittle everywhere.

[Traveler Aran Pillar] (Normal)

Level: 1

HP: 100

Green name NPC, a Friendly!



Although Zhang Yang would very much like to have this NPC slashed, it could only remain as a passing thought. He pushed the dwarf aside and did not utter a single word. This was obviously part of the plot progression but he had no interest in arguing with a system-controlled NPC.

Aran furiously pushed Zhang Yang aside and said, “Human! Absolute imbecile of a human! Did you know that you have just released a demon? One that could have brought extermination to the whole world at that!”

“She was already sealed, how did she manage to escape?”

“Ignorant mortal! Calina, she was once an elf hero, a Wind Ranger! Her bow and arrows could shoot down the stars in the night sky! An existence that rivaled God! Even the God of Fire could not kill her and could only seal her up! But her power proved to be stronger. Even with her physical body sealed, she had managed to manifest herself into an indestructible spiritual form to engage in a never-ending battle against the Fire Elementals who guarded the seal, attempting to destroy the seal to gain her freedom!” Aran sighed.

As expected from a God Class Boss, a mere thought would have already had such prowess!

“You, human! You have to fix this!” said the dwarf. “You must make haste to White Jade Castle and report this matter to Grand Magus Anthony Faylon to allow them to prepare for the impending

disaster!”

“Ding! Aran Pillar has a quest for you: Disastrous News. Will you accept it? This is a Main Story Quest. Complete the quest to receive a handsome reward!”

### Main Story Quest!

In comparison to a Hidden Quest, triggering a Main Story Quest was much easier. However, it was exactly because the trigger was easier that the completion difficulty was extremely high! Initially, you may be required to just run around a little and kill a few monsters but the last step or even last few steps would always require you to fight a super boss. It would be a near impossible task even with tens of thousands of players engaged!

Zhang Yang was psyched. Even though he had managed to accidentally trigger a few Hidden Quests in his previous life but because he had joined the game a little too late, he had naturally never encountered a single Main Story Quest! Yet this main quest right now, if he was eventually required to overthrow Calina, he would have to find tens of thousands players above Level 200 to join him, otherwise it would just be sending them straight to their deaths!

To achieve Level 200... it would take at least 5 years! Zhang Yang had only managed to get to Level 179 after grinding for 3 years in his previous character!

“Accept!” Zhang Yang accepted the quest. Since he did not know

how long he would take before arriving at the last plot step, he might as well take it easy.

After announcing the quest, Aran promptly left the place. Zhang Yang wondered how a Level 1 NPC could roam around the field filled with Level 10 monsters so freely. Zhang Yang continued on and grinded. After half an hour, he bathed in a golden light and reached Level 9. Checking the time, he noticed that it was already past 9 PM. Zhang Yang gave it some thought and decided to reach Level 10 before disconnecting to rest.

The altar did not respawn after it was destroyed. Instead, many Fire Elementals had appeared. Main Story Quests were exclusively singular, and so, the situation where he had helped Calina escape her seal would not reoccur to other players.

Zhang Yang spent another 4 hours grinding and had finally achieved Level 10. Then, he opened his inventory and changed into the 3 Black-Steel equipment that had long sat there unused. His HP and Weapon Attack increased by a certain degree.

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 10

HP: 350

Defense: 16

Strength: 60

Melee Damage: 76 – 84

Attack Interval: 2 seconds

For a tank, this amount of HP was under expectations but his Weapon Attack was absolutely wonderful, capable of generating massive aggro!

He then invested his SP gained from achieving Level 10 into the skill <Block> and the skill's cooldown time had reduced to 8 seconds.

Zhang Yang went to the Beginner Village's teleportation portal and was beamed to White Jade Castle as a white light. He then disconnected.

Taking off the gaming helmet, Zhang Yang made himself some supper and took a bath after finishing his meal. He then went to bed and fell into a deep sleep.

The next morning, Zhang Yang woke up at around 6 AM and worked out for an hour. He took a shower and went outside to grab some [youtiao](#) from a local breakfast stall. He got back home and ate it with milk.

[youtiao](#) is a traditional Chinese deep-fried breadstick that is made

entirely of dough. This dough, which is usually in the shape of a pair of long sticks, is deep-fried. It is quite fun and also a norm to tear the pair of sticks apart before eating each of them individually or sharing the other half with the people eating together. Youtiao is also often eaten with congee, while some prefer dipping them in soymilk or black coffee. A Google-ed description of youtiao would be the Chinese cruller, Chinese oil stick or Chinese doughnut. Another popular name for youtiao would be the Cantonese version, yauzhaguai, which could also be directly translated into oil-fried-devil.

After his breakfast, Zhang Yang was preparing to enter the game when he heard his phone ring.

“Hello–”

“Little Yang! You’re indeed amazing!” Zhang Yang could only get a hello out before his words were drowned by the caller. “I followed your instructions and picked the Hunter class! First, I killed the wolves, collected 10 pelts and later moved to the catacombs to kill some monsters. Once I reached Level 5, I handed over the coats. Haha. I burnt the midnight oil and got to Level 10!”

“Who are you?”

“Damn, you can’t even recognize your fatty bro’s voice?” Han Guang scolded jokingly. “I even took the Hunter’s Hidden Job Quest but I can’t even complete ‘Extremely Difficult’ and ‘Hard’, so I only took the ‘Average’ difficulty level and got an ‘Average’ score, obtaining a Skill Book called <Precise Shot>. Haha, this skill is totally off the charts! Still, some guy had actually gotten a ‘Perfect’

score! I felt so jealous after seeing the server announcement! I really don't know how he did it!"

Zhang Yang smiled a little as he listened to Han Guang's excited tone, "Alright, you should have reached the Capital by now right? Let us both go and raid a dungeon later!"

"Ugh. I've been playing the whole night. I can't take it anymore, I'm going to sleep for a few hours! Little Yang, I'll join you later in the afternoon. Wait for me! Ah right, my IGN is called 'Slim and Handsome', don't forget to add me into your Friend List."

Han Guang hung up before Zhang Yang could even reply.

"Slim and Handsome?" Zhang Yang recalled Han Guang's size that could compare to that of two average men standing side-by-side and felt a shiver run down his spine.

# Chapter 12: Ranking

---

Before he had disconnected yesterday, Zhang Yang's rank among China region's players might not have been first but he had definitely been in the top 10! After one night though, mad level grinders had taken advantage of the fact that there were less players in the middle of the night and grinded up their levels.

Zhang Yang left the teleportation portal and reached the home of warriors. Along his way, he had spotted more than tens of Level 10 players.

Upon entering the Capital, a new feature was added to the game interface: Ranking.

There were a lot of rankings such as Player Level Ranking, Hall of Fame Ranking, First Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raid Ranking, Fastest Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raid Level Clearance Ranking and so on.

The rankings were based on regions.

'God's Miracle' had divided its global players into 8 regions: China, Japan & South Korea, India, Europe, Africa, South America, North America, and Australia region. The Australian server had included a few other Asian countries such as Indonesia, Singapore and so on.

Each region had one server and each server had only one ranking. The servers of these 8 regions shared data so cross-

regional wars could be implemented, resulting in an integrated gaming environment.

Currently, most of the rankings were empty. The rankings that had grabbed more attention would be the Player Level Ranking and Hall of Fame Ranking.

[Hall of Fame Ranking] (China Region)

1. Player (Name Hidden) was the first to kill a Level 15 Black-Steel Boss, the Black Panther King, in the field (Continent Calendar 9287, August 23rd).
2. Player (Name Hidden) was the first to complete the Hidden Quest with a ‘Perfect’ score (Continent Calendar 9287, August 23rd).

Zhang Yang then swiped out the Player Level Ranking and checked the current levels of the expert grinders.

[Player Level Ranking] (China Region)

1. Powerful Priest, Troll, Cryomancer, Level 11
2. Humble Gentleman, Human, Cryomancer, Level 11



3. Hunt the World, Troll, Sniper, Level 11
4. Slender Waist, Elf, Pyromancer, Level 10
5. Overlord Orders Chicken, Orc, Berserker, Level 10
6. Floating Fireball, Human, Pyromancer, Level 10
7. Frost Night, Elf, Assassin, Level 10
8. Sky Shaman, Dwarf, Guardian, Level 10
9. Don't Hit My Face, Dwarf, Defender, Level 10
10. King of Assassin, Orc, Bandit, Level 10

As expected of Spellcasters, the master grinders in traditional games. There were already 4 of them among the top 10 Player Level Ranking! Of course, professions picked in the early stages of the game did not matter as much. The key to leveling fast was the duration spent online or having a strong support at your back. For example, a guild could have all its members deal damage to a monster until its last drop of HP then reserving the last hit for its designated player!

According to the settings of 'God's Miracle', player under non-

party mode who made the last hit on the monster would gain 50% EXP. Therefore, if the guild had been willing to sacrifice the interest of a portion of its players, it could easily boost the level of one or more players. Rich players could also hire others to push their levels faster.

If a guild could cultivate a high-level player who could enter the rankings, it would be advantageous to the guild's image, achieving effective advertisement.

Zhang Yang sighed, his level was a little behind! However, it was not compulsory for him to be the top 1 in Player Level Ranking, as long as he had remained in the list. What was more important to him was the progress of the Fastest Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raid Level Clearance Ranking!

To assess the strength of a guild in 'God's Miracle', the most important standard was the guild's speed in hardcore dungeon raids. After all, there were only a few bosses in the field, and their respawning period took several days up to a whole month! The competition was fierce since there were limited bosses but numerous players. The equipment loot would never have been sufficient to go around!

A dungeon would be different. As long as players were capable, they had equal chances to defeat bosses and acquire better equipment! The chances of obtaining stronger equipment would drastically increase if a player had joined a speedy dungeon raiding guild. To most players, their decision on which guild to join would have been obvious.

Zhang Yang's plans were: first, to use his familiarity of the game's future trend to hoard materials and sell them to earn a fortune! Second, to strive to be the first to clear most of the hardcore mode dungeon raids, boosting his reputation to form a super guild. Third, to look for outstanding teammates and establish his own team to dominate the S-Class League, achieving his previous life's goal!

Currently though, he did not possess much capital and thus was unable to hoard much materials to profiteer of market monopolization. That was why he had now set his eyes on dungeon clearing, the Hardcore Mode of Bangar Crypt.

Bangar Crypt was the game's first dungeon with a Level 10 – 15 range recommendation, allowing a maximum of 10 players. All dungeons in 'God's Miracle' had consisted of 3 modes: Normal, Difficult and Hardcore.

Normal Mode was fairly simple. A little grinding in the raid would have cleared the level. Obviously, the drops would be of average quality, a grade lower than those in Difficult Mode. However, it would allow common players to enjoy the excitement of fighting the boss, making it the main choice of casual players.

Difficult Mode lived up to its name of being very difficult. Even for teams in which players were already familiar with one another and had great teamwork, they would still have a hard time grinding before they were able to clear the dungeon! Going into Difficult Mode with temporarily formed party could very well equate to seeking your own death.

Hardcore Mode was even more vicious, where a minor mistake could lead the whole team to an instant death. However, the rewards were equally great. Dropped equipment were of the highest grade, Hidden Bosses that could only be found in this mode, too, had chances of dropping various Profession Recipes.

These 3 modes were not connected, that would mean that there was no need to clear Normal Mode or Difficult Mode before accessing Hardcore Mode. As long as the pre-requisite quest for the dungeon raid was completed, players could freely choose between the dungeon's modes.

The first party to clear the Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raid would enter the First Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raid Ranking and have the news announced to the world through the server. It would have been a glorious feat. Regardless of it being an individual player or an entire guild, this announcement would still be a great declaration of valor and fame.

Fastest Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raid Ranking would then be unlocked. Record breaking players would be listed in the ranking and the server would issue a global announcement as well. There was a rule in Speed Raiding Ranking though, that if the level of any particular player in the clearing team had exceeded the dungeon level's upper limit, the result would not be taken into account. Otherwise, it would have been meaningless to have several Level 100 players breaking the record of a Level 10 dungeon.

First Clear and Fastest Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raid would have been the core competition for all guilds in the future, bearing utmost importance!

Zhang Yang had his eyes set on the Hidden Boss of the Hardcore Mode Bangar Crypt – Momoermo. There was a chance for this boss to drop the Metal Caster's Shield Recipe. The shield would be of Green-Copper rarity, the best-one-to-date for both Guardians and Defenders before Level 20!

He wanted to earn his first pot of gold using this recipe to accumulate even more wealth. He could then snowball his wealth into greater proportions!

Zhang Yang found a female NPC with the name tag, 'Ani, Warrior Instructor' at the warrior settlement. Blonde hair, blue eyes, large breasts and voluptuous hips. She was wearing a sparkling gold armor designed so sexily that it had only barely covered her chest and buttocks, revealing her alluring snow white skin.

Although all of them knew well enough that this character was an NPC, many male players had still stared lustfully at her, drooling.

Zhang Yang, too, felt that it was much more pleasing to the eye looking at this pretty lady in front of him as compared to the sharp-tongued, middle-aged Farion. He started a conversation with the NPC and learned the Level 10 Guardian skills <Shield Oath> and <Provoke>.

[Shield Oath (Passive)]: Increases Defense by using a Shield,

reducing all damage by 20%. 1 Rage increase each second while in combat. All aggro points generated by your attacks increase by 20%. Requirement: Shield.

[Provoke]: Provokes a target and forces it to attack you, lasts for 2 seconds. Cooldown time: 10 seconds.

Recalling the main quest in his quest log, Zhang Yang decided to first complete the quest and see what would follow. Zhang Yang asked an NPC guard about the whereabouts of Grand Magus Anthony Faylon and went to the Magician Tower in the center of the capital.

“Warrior, you do not belong here!” 2 NPCs with sorcerer’s robes had blocked Zhang Yang’s way.

Zhang Yang said, “I have an important message for Master Anthony Faylon!”

“Is that so?” the 2 NPCs hesitated before one of them said, “Alright, Master Faylon is at the top of the Magician Tower!”

He guessed that these 2 NPCs would not have let him pass if he did not have the main quest in his quest log. Zhang Yang thought about it while he entered the Magician Tower. He went along the staircase and soon reached the top of the tower – the ninth floor.

An old man with chest-length beard was deeply engrossed in looking at a crystal ball, his back hunched and faced Zhang Yang. Speaking before Zhang Yang could even open his mouth, “Young man, I have already known the purpose of your visit!”

[The Grand Magus Anthony Faylon] (God Class Boss)

Level: ???

Hp: ???

In ‘God’s Miracle’, every capital was safeguarded by a God Class Boss. This white bearded old man would be the strongest person in White Jade Castle. In his previous life, Zhang Yang had witnessed how the old man had unleashed a formidable skill during the Demon Siege War and wiped out millions of demons, a scene that was both terrifying and impressive!

Unfortunately, this powerful grand magus would be assassinated by a demon’s assassin as part of the storyline. As he was a God Class Boss, he would never respawn after his death.

“Master Faylon, what should we do now?” Zhang Yang simply replied to keep the plot going in order to unlock the follow-up quest.

“Aih—” Faylon sighed and turned around. His face filled with

despair and sympathy. “Calina was once a great hero, but... she was betrayed by the people she had sworn to protect with her life. Her soul had been suffering from the torment of betrayal, I can feel it!”

He paused before saying, “Perhaps, there is still some hope to free her soul!”

Zhang Yang’s eyes lit up. As long as he was not required to kill the God Class Boss Calina, the main quest should be much easier to complete!

“Young man, I need you to collect 3 items! After you’ve collected them, I shall be able to create a relic capable of purifying the dark force casted by the Demon King and revive Calina’s soul!” Faylon spoke in a deep voice, “This mission is very difficult. Are you willing to take on this responsibility?”

Did he even have an option? Zhang Yang nodded his head and replied immediately, “Yes master, I am willing!”

“Ding! You have accepted the quest: The Crafting Materials of a Relic! This is a Main Story Quest. Complete the quest to receive a luxurious reward!”

[The Crafting Materials of a Relic] (Difficulty: S)

Quest Description: Faylon needs you to collect 3 materials to



create a powerful relic in order to purify the dark force affecting Calina! These 3 materials are the Heart of the Black Dragon, the Horn of the Mythical Unicorn, and the Book of the Damned from the spectre race.

Progress: Collect the Heart of the Black Dragon 0/1, the Horn of the Mythical Unicorn 0/1, and the Book of the Damned 0/1.

Shit, I might as well fight Calina directly! Zhang Yang cursed when he saw the materials he was required to collect.

# Chapter 13: Entering The Dungeon

---

The Black Dragon and the Mystical Unicorn were both Level 150 Field Bosses and also the strongest among monsters of their own level tier. While killing them would be hard, it would still be easier then actually trying to fight Calina.

What got Zhang Yang mad was the Book of the Damned!

Book of the Damned was the spectre race's totem, hidden well within the Evil Spirit Tower that resided in the sacred land of the spectres. Not only was it heavily guarded by a strong defense force, in the tower also sat the strongest among the 7 Witch Kings in the spectre realm 'Witch King of the Undead', a God Class Boss above Level 200, Madevitch. To acquire the Book of the Damned under his nose...

Still, he would consider all these to be fine. All he had to do was to acquire the Book of the Damned, and not defeat Madevitch, Witch King of the Undead.

Now though, as there was absolutely no way for him to proceed with this quest, he could only set it aside for now.

Zhang Yang first accepted the quest 'Traces of the Gnomes', the pre-requisite quest to enter the Bangar Crypt dungeon. The quest was simple, to eliminate 20 gnomes. After completing the mission, he met up with Sorr the Army Captain. This middle-aged man was shocked and could not believe that there had been gnomes around the White Jade Castle!

This NPC then gave out a subsequent quest, ‘Find Their Lair’. Zhang Yang followed the quest instructions and arrived at the entrance of the Bangar Crypt dungeon. Upon completion and submission of the quest, he then received Sorr’s final quest called ‘The Raid’ and obtained the permission to enter Bangar Crypt dungeon.

[The Raid] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: You have found the lair of the gnomes. Find their leader, Dadaerda. Initiate the raid and slay these horrid creatures!

Progress: Kill Dadaerda 0/1

This quest did not set any required specific difficulty level to kill Dadaerda, so even if the boss was killed in Hardcore Mode, the end reward of the quest would have been the same as those in Normal Mode.

Zhang Yang returned to the dungeon entrance once again and saw a 9-man party waiting outside the dungeon. As they saw Zhang Yang walk towards them with a shield on his back, one of the players had immediately private messaged him, “Bangar Crypt Normal Mode! We have a main tank! We’re in need of another off-tank, would you join us?”

Only Guardians and Defenders could wield a shield in the game, so the player could easily identify Zhang Yang's class even with his profile hidden.

Difficult Mode and Hardcore Mode could only be attempted once a day but Normal Mode did not have any limit to its entry. Zhang Yang had to keep his dungeon entry until Fatty Han came online to go with him, so he could only do Normal Mode with this party now. He thought about it and replied, "Invite me!"

"Ding! Player Floral Shorts invites you to join his party. Will you accept his invitation?"

"Accept!" Zhang Yang tapped 'Confirm'.

"Ding! You have joined the party. Party leader: Floral Shorts. Distribution mode: Roll the Dice."

Distribution mode referred to the distribution method when items of white grade and above dropped. Roll the Dice mode was the most common party choice where the item would automatically go to the player who had rolled the highest number.

Besides Roll the Dice, there were also Leader's Distribution (party leader would decide who would receive the loot) and Individual Loot (finders, keepers).

Zhang Yang noticed that of the 9 players, Floral Shorts and 3 others belonged to the guild Pride, while another 2 were in

different guilds themselves while the remaining three were guildless like Zhang Yang.

“F\*ck, this off-tank has only 350 HP. He is useless! Floral, kick him out!” A Spellcaster by the name of Prideful Precepts scorned when he saw Zhang Yang’s HP value.

“Ding! You have been expelled from the party!” Zhang Yang received a notification as soon as he was expelled.

Zhang Yang could not help but become surprised. Members of this Pride Guild were so domineering, expelling someone without a second thought! Rage simmered in him but he shook his head at once. Why be petty and degrade himself to the same level as those imbecile players?

Just as he was about to leave, Zhang Yang’s sight was glued to a player who had not hid his name, “Hundred Shots, Male Dwarf, Beast Hunter, Level 10”.

It was him!

Zhang Yang vividly remembered that this Beast Hunter had been an impressive character in his previous life, and was ranked first in the top 10 Beast Hunter list! Just by looking at his skills, he may not be the best. However, his luck was extremely good that he had managed to get a Baby Red Dragon as his pet!

Dragons, as one of the most powerful monsters in ‘God’s

Miracle', even if it was downgraded to a player's pet and lost its devastating killing skill, was still remarkably strong! With the help of his pet dragon, Hundred Shots had managed to squeeze into the top ten ranking and eventually took the first spot. Players dubbed him as 'The Dragon Hunter', and even players who had gotten phoenixes as pets were considered inferior to him!

As for how Hundred Shots got his hands on the pet dragon, he had always been secretive about it and had never revealed anything. Thereafter, Beast Hunters had kept attempting to figure out the method to obtain such a pet but had never managed to even come up with a clue. The Dragon Hunter, it had always been just him!

Yet now, this future hotshot was still a long way from his fame. By his side stood a pet pig that kept wiggling its butt. His current expression was without the confident flair after he had gotten famous, looking just like any other common player.

Never had Zhang Yang thought that he would meet this future hotshot on the second day of his game. He was stirred. If he could get Hundred Shots to join him, he would be taking a large step forward towards his dream of conquering the S-Class League.

Furthermore, Hundred Shots was still a common player now, this would be the best time to get close to him!

"Hey, we're still lacking one member. Take it as a favor. We'll bring you in as a good deed!" Floral Shorts suddenly sent him a private message. Along with it, an invitation to join his party.

Zhang Yang's first reaction was to reject the invitation, but as he saw that Hundred Shots was also in the party, he changed his mind immediately and chose 'Accept'.

Returning to the party, Zhang Yang took his time and looked through the party's structure: A Defender (Main Tank), a Sacred Knight (Healer), 2 Hunters (DPS), 2 Thieves (DPS), 2 Mages (DPS), and 1 Priest (Healer).

The main tank Defender's HP was very high, totaling a whopping 700 HP. However, with 3 gaming years' worth of eyesight, Zhang Yang could easily tell with a glance that only the shield worn by this Pride guild player, Kindling Chest Hair, was of Black-Steel rarity. The rest of his equipment were only of White-Wood rarity!

Since White-Wood rarity equipment, other than its armor, would not add any Attribute bonus, this Defender's HP would have had been completely increased by his given AP. This had also meant that the 50 AP gained on his way to Level 10 were all invested in Vitality. In addition to the Attribute increase when he leveled up plus the default 50 HP at Level 1, it would total up to 650 HP.

Lastly, with 5 points of Vitality bonus from the Black-Steel rarity shield, they would all add up to exactly 700 HP maxed.

This kind of Vitality investment was also known as the Bull's Blood investment. Since the beginner equipment was weak, the AP gained during leveling up would be the main support of increasing a tank's Attributes. However, starting from Green-Copper rarity

and above, the bonus Attribute provided would be enough to match the AP; from Gray-Silver rarity and beyond, the bonus Attributes would exceed the character's own AP, thus equipment would become more crucial as the game progressed.

Nevertheless, as a tank, one had to be able to defend attacks in addition to withstanding a monster's aggro. Otherwise, the boss would have wiped out all the other players, so even with such high HP, how would one compare to the boss?

This tank's weapon was a White grade one-handed hammer bought at Level 10, possibly having 7 – 13 Weapon Attack Range, but since he had added all of his AP with the Bull's Blood method, his maximum would have only reached 15 Strength and melee damage of around 22 – 28 points.

A regular Level 10 monster would have 10 defense points, while an Elite would have 15, and a Boss would have 20. If he could only inflict 7 – 13 damage on an Elite, it would have meant that he could only ditch out 2 – 8 damage to a Boss. It would be close to impossible to pull any aggro at all!

In comparison, Zhang Yang's sword alone would have already dealt 16 – 24 damage. Adding 60 points on Strength attribute meant that his melee damage could reach a terrifying 76 – 84 points!

“Hey useless Guardian, just watch and learn later. We're doing you a favor here. Don't mess up and cause us all to die!” blabbered Proudful Precepts.



“Pay no heed to them. These guys have a stinky mouth. It’s not worth to pick a fight with them!” Zhang Yang received a private message, looking at the sender: Hundred Shots.

Zhang Yang smiled, he was just thinking of approaching him and quickly sent a reply, “Mm, I’m just going to treat it as them farting!”

“Haha, you’re absolutely right! They’re just a bunch of stinky kiddos!” Hundred Shots instantly replied.

“Alright, now that we’re all gathered, let’s go into the dungeon. Time waits for no man!” Floral Shorts announced in the party channel. “Speed! Haste!”

All 10 players entered the dungeon one by one. A sudden change flashed and they had arrived at a scarcely lit underground cave. Just some distance away stood 6 green and oddly-shaped gnomes. They had no eyes on their face but their ears were exceptionally large.

[Gnome Soldier] (Elite)

Level: 10

HP: 5000

“Hairy, go!” said Floral Shorts in the party channel. “Guardian, be prepared. If someone OTs, be sure to handle it! Priest! Sacred Knight! You two focus on healing the tank!”

[OT](#) referred to the moment when someone had caused an aggro value that exceeded the monster’s current target, typically the tank, causing the monster to switch its attacking target.

OT stands for off-tank or off-tanking. It is often used interchangeably as a noun or a verb. OT also has multiple meanings depending on the context of the sentence. For instance, as a noun: We need an OT to tank the boss. This sentence means that two tanks are needed, the first being the Main Tank (MT) and the second being the Off-tank or (OT). The other meaning for OT could be used when someone ‘pulls’ the aggro of a monster off the tank. In this case, you could say that the player has ‘OT-ed’ and it could also mean that the situation has turned dire, as DPSers and healers should usually not be receiving any attention from the boss at all in an optimized dungeon run.

Even though both Guardians and Defenders were considered as tank, these two classes had totally different attacking styles.

Defenders would have more AoE attacking skills, making them suitable for fields where there were many smaller monsters. His spell-immunity skill was better too, giving him an advantage when faced with a magic-type boss. On the other hand, Guardians had a stronger single-target aggro pulling ability, suitable for dealing with single physical-type bosses.

Carrying a shield on his left hand and a war hammer on his right, Kindling Chest Hair walked a few steps forward and furiously

threw his shield out.

That was not showing off at all but actually activating the Defender's skill called <Shield Toss>. A skill that would attack 3 targets at once, causing 100% physical damage to each one.

## Chapter 14: Who Is The Noob?

---

“-1!”

“-1!”

“-1!”

3 pathetic damage figures floated across the 3 Gnome Soldiers' heads. 6 monsters roared at the same time and charged towards Kindling Chest Hair.

Kindling Chest Hair remained rooted and activated the skill <Devotion>. A white light flashed beneath his feet while a magic circle with a radius of 2 meters appeared. The moment those Gnome Soldiers entered the circle, “-1” and “-2” damage texts flashed above their heads with each passing second.

[Devotion]: Deals 100% Holy damage to all targets within 10 seconds. Holy damage is categorized as magic damage and is unaffected by Defense.

<Shield Toss> and <Devotion> were both very powerful skills. Unfortunately, they would require a significantly higher Strength value to properly deal decent damage. Since Kindling Chest Hair used a pure tank build, he had completely ruined these 2 skills.

“Alright, everyone start attacking! No one is allowed to slack! I will put out the damage statistics when we’re done! No equipment for the lowest damage dealt!” said Flowery Pants in the party channel as he dashed forward wielding two swords – a Bandit.

Zhang Yang was an off tank, meaning he was to hold aggro onto monsters and avoid competing with the main tank’s enmity. He had waited until Kindling Chest Hair took on all 6 Gnome Soldiers before rushing forward to take one on.

“-62!”

With just one normal attack from Zhang Yang, the monster had immediately turned its head and thrust the spear raised in its hand towards Zhang Yang.

Yup, definitely OT! Luckily he was also a tank!

Kindling Chest Hair was furious and scolded, “Noob, don’t use <Provoke> to pull monsters, do you even know how to play?” He was too self-confident, thinking he had already established a lot of aggro. He thought that the monster had turned around only because Zhang Yang had used <Provoke>.

“That’s right! If you use <Provoke> too many times, the monster will become immune to it! You f\*cking noob!” Prideful Precepts followed.

These two idiots were hopeless but there was no need to explain

his actions as only the truth would prevail!

The damage dealing team had begun their attack, as fireballs and frost arrows filled the space. All Gnome Soldiers except the one Zhang Yang was luring had ignored Kindling Chest Hair and had made their way towards the attacking team.

Floral Shorts showed no responsibility as a party leader, abandoning everything after yelling attack, and had only swung both his swords, relishing in the joy of stabbing the monsters' back. Everyone was attacking their own monster with no intention to draw their attacks together to kill one monster at a time; Kindling Chest Hair's enmity grabbing skills was too low, causing 5 monsters to go after the OT at the same time!

"F\*ck, the f\*ck is our Defender doing? Pull them properly!" A mage who was in the middle of casting a fireball stopped his action and shouted in bewilderment.

Kindling Chest Hair was terrible at holding aggro though his skills in refuting was not bad at all, arguing back immediately, "F\*ck! You OT the monster and dared to complain? Noob! Get the f\*ck out!"

"You're the noob! If I'm the only one who OT-ed the monster, then it would be fine! But now 5 monsters OT-ed simultaneously! Only you can achieve this sort of wonderful work!" the mage shot back.

Zhang Yang used <Charge> and managed to keep up with the

monsters that had lost control. He swung his sword and activated <Horizontal Sweep>, yellow damage text floated across the heads of those 5 monsters at once.

“-137!”

“-148!”

“-145!”

“-298!”

“-139!”

There was an unexpected Critical Strike!

One monster was stunned from <Charge> while the remaining four monsters turned back and attacked Zhang Yang.

“Block!”

Zhang Yang raised his shield, successfully blocking 4 monsters' attacks at the same time!

According to <Block>'s skill description, each use could only block one attack. However, Zhang Yang had wittingly adjusted his position, causing the setup of 4 simultaneous attacks from the

monsters. Since the attack gap was too short, the system had considered them as one attack, allowing <Block> to successfully ward off all incoming attacks!

It was unsure if this was considered a bug. The gaming company had long since realized about this but had not removed or patched it. They instead claimed that this particular moment was difficult to master, and so if someone could pull it off they should consider it as a bonus from the system!

“-45!”

“-45!”

“-45!”

“-45!”

<Block> reflected the damage, as 4 yellow damage text flashed accordingly.

Zhang Yang raised his shield, aimed towards the stunned monster and bashed it.

“-105!” <Shield Bash>!

At this point, the stunned monster had recovered and the monster Zhang Yang had been pulling initially had also charged



forward. Remaining calm, Zhang Yang evaded all 6 monsters' attacks with a side step, while gathering all the monsters onto a mound through his strategic movement.

Dodged!

Dodged!

Dodged again!

Zhang Yang's HP remained untouched since the beginning, easing through the monsters' bombarding attacks.

"Expert!" The other five party members who were not from Pride cried in astonishment

.

"Oh my God, such high damage, is he really a tank?"

"No wonder his HP is low. All his AP were added to Strength!"

"He could only allocate AP in such a way because he was so skillful. Can't you see that he hasn't received any damage?"

Jealousy stemmed from the fear of comparison!

Kindling Chest Hair could not hold it in any longer. Holding his war hammer, he ran up to Zhang Yang and used <Justice Defense>, pulling 3 monsters to himself.

[Justice Defense] was a Defender's provoking skill. Each activation could only provoke 3 monsters, forcing them to attack the caster for 2 seconds. This would be why a tanking Defender was much more suitable to pull monsters in a group.

Kindling Chest Hair unleashed all of his high enmity skills on those 3 monsters, earnestly hoping to pull aggro, but after 2 seconds, the monsters had returned to attack Zhang Yang immediately, completely ignoring Kindling Chest Hair!

Kindling Chest Hair was both embarrassed and angry. He casted <Justice Defense> once again, right after the 10 seconds cooldown time, only to receive the same result.

“Defender! Stop pulling! Each time the monster attacks you, your HP drops rapidly. You're putting a load on the healers!”

Prideful Babysitter, a Priest from Pride, and the guildless Sacred Knight Ocean Despair were unhappy but it was the latter who complained. Prideful Babysitter had not voiced out due to being in the same guild as Kindling Chest Hair.

Kindling Chest Hair was infuriated, mentally blocking off the complaints. <Justice Defense> was activated once again after 10 seconds, annoying Ocean Despair to the point of being speechless.

Zhang Yang marked one of the Gnome Soldiers and said, “Focus and kill the marked monster!”

Everyone was cooperative, changing their target and switching to attack the one Zhang Yang had marked. Unfortunately, Floral Shorts and Prideful Precepts had ignored his words and continued to deal damage to their own targeted monster.

“Pa! Pa!”

Half a minute later, 2 Gnome Soldiers had fallen under the focus fire.

Kindling Chest Hair’s face turned sour. As he activated <Justice Defense> for the fourth time, none of the monsters were affected. – If <Provoke> was used against a monster for too many times in a short period, the monsters would develop an immunity against it.

“Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!”

One by one, the monsters fell and soon after the last was killed, everyone was withdrawn from Combat Mode.

Zhang Yang frowned as he checked the damage statistics.

[Damage Statistics]

1. Zhan Yu, 12354 damage, 41%
2. Hundred Shots, 4509 damage, 15%
3. Snowy Death, 3313 damage, 11%
4. Defiant Monk, 3051 damage, 10%
5. Flame Emperor, 2422 damage, 8%
6. Prideful Precepts, 2102 damage, 7%
7. Floral Shorts, 1893 damage, 6%
8. Kindling Chest Hair, 1287 damage, 4%

It was astonishing that Zhang Yang had ranked first in dealing damage. <Horizontal Sweep>'s AoE was devastating! The counter attack damage after <Block> was also substantial – of course, only a professional player like him could have utilized this skill to also deal AoE damage.

“Very good. No one died. Hair, you’ve done well!” Floral Shorts blatantly lied, singing praises of Kindling Chest Hair.

Flame Emperor chuckled unamused and posted the damage

statistics in the party channel.

There was a moment of silence.

“F\*ck! What is this shit! A Guardian is the top DPS? What a joke! There must be a problem with the system!” Prideful Precepts jumped to his feet and said. How embarrassing, those Pride members, other than the Priest, the other three were the lowest in the damage statistics!

“Go on! Go on!” Floral Shorts diverted the topic and urged everyone to move forward. Kindling Chest Hair had a grave look and periodically stared at Zhang Yang, his eyes filled with hostility.

The second wave had much fewer monsters. There were only 2, guarding the corner of a passageway.

“Noob Warrior! Keep your eyes on me! I’ll teach you how to properly pull a monster!” Kindling Chest Hair had thought that while he might be unable to pull 6 monsters, but since there were only 2 now, it should not be a problem!

Prideful Precepts chimed in, “Noob, just stand there and don’t move!”

Zhang Yang lightly smiled and as they had wished, stood still and watched Kindling Chest Hair rush towards the 2 monsters while wielding his war hammer.

[Executioner Gnome] (Elite)

Level: 12

HP: 6000

In ‘God’s Miracle’, monsters which guarded entrances were known as ‘Gate Gods’, their most notable characteristic being their extraordinary attack power! Killing tanks within seconds was a common feat.

Prideful Precepts and his gang did not know about this but Zhang Yang understood this piece of information thoroughly. Since Kindling Chest Hair had wanted to send himself straight to death, why should he stop him?

“Such a pity though, that being killed by monsters would not reduce their levels but would only damage their equipment durability or inflict a very small chance of dropping their equipment. If only it could be the same as PK where death would cost a drop in player’s level!” Zhang Yang thought regrettably.

Kindling Chest Hair walked a few steps forward and casted <Shield Toss> on the Executioner Gnome.

After being attacked, both ‘Gate Gods’ furiously dashed towards

Kindling Chest Hair. This time, everyone had learned from their experience and did not engage, as they had the knowledge that a certain someone's aggro holding could not be trusted.

“-105!”

“-97!”

Both monsters stabbed Kindling Chest Hair with their spears, delivering a significantly high damage, removing a third of Kindling Chest Hair's HP immediately.

Kindling Chest Hair was startled. Before he could even react, two more damage texts floated over his head.

“-99!”

“-102!”

“Ding! Executioner Gnome uses <Immolation Assault>!”

“Ding! Executioner Gnome uses <Immolation Assault>!”

“-200!”

“-200!”

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has died!”

Instant kill! F\*ck yeah!



# Chapter 15: The Black Claw

---

Kindling Chest Hair died a little too fast, and that was even before other players had even entered combat! After killing Kindling Chest Hair, the two monsters quickly headed back to their original positions, surprising Zhang Yang who was waiting to intercept the aggro.

“Shit! What’s going on with you healers? Why didn’t you guys heal me?” yelled Kindling Chest Hair angrily.

Ocean Despair did not want to debate with this idiot anymore, and so, his own guild mate Prideful Babysitter replied, “You died too fast, I couldn’t react in time!”

Truthfully, Kindling Chest Hair was not killed within seconds. There was still a short moment of time for them to heal. It was just that they had never met this kind of monster so no one had the awareness for danger. A slight distraction and they would not be in time anymore.

Kindling Chest Hair kept quiet for a moment then said, “Revive me!”

Prideful Babysitter said, “Can’t do it!”

“Sacred Knight?” Kindling Chest Hair asked as he turned to Ocean Despair.

“Nope!”

“Fuck! How can you be a babysitter when you don’t even have a reviving skill?!” Kindling Chest Hair scolded again. He released his corpse and returned from the spawning point to where he died.

Ocean Despair was being ridiculed again, his expression turning even more sour.

[Resurrection] could be used to revive a fallen player who died out of combat, saving him the time and effort to return from the starting or spawning point. It was a useful and practical skill that could be learned by both Priests and Defenders. However, this skill could not be obtained from a class instructor and could only be attained from skill books found in monster’s loot.

<Resurrection>’s drop rate had always been low. Even 5 years after the game server had been launched, the <Resurrection> skill book was still in high demand and could be sold at the exorbitant price of several thousand Gold Coins. As of now, the people who possessed this skill would most likely be the main healers of large guilds.

Before the game had launched, the officials had wanted to help the players understand each profession clearer and had released introductions of skills attainable by each profession in their website including the functions and effects of skills, as well as the method of attaining said skills. However, the officials had kept quiet regarding skills attainable through hidden quests, allowing the players to figure out a way themselves.

Floral Shorts thought for a little while and said, “When the Defender comes back, the two tanks will each pull one monster. Healers stay alert. These two monsters seem fierce!”

Zhang Yang’s attention was not on this dungeon anymore. He had taken the chance to have a casual conversation in private messages with Hundred Shots. Even though Zhang Yang had already known about this guy’s future accomplishments, he would not pick his teammate solely based on skills. A player’s moral character would be of greater importance!

7 to 8 minutes later, Kindling Chest Hair had revived and stood once again amongst the party members.

“Hairy, recover your condition!” Floral Shorts said as he marked the two monsters with different symbols. “Defender, you’re to handle the monster marked with a star. Guardian, yours is the one with a sun mark. Go!”

Kindling Chest Hair consumed a piece of cake and had his HP and MP fully recovered. He then took out his war hammer and shield, going straight for the monsters.

“<Shield Toss>!”

Zhang Yang, too, used <Charge> and dashed towards the monster with a sun mark. With a swing of his sword, a damage text with the figure “-62” emerged above the monster’s head.

The 'sun monster' had recovered quickly and stabbed towards Zhang Yang with its spear.

“<Block>!”

“-42!” <Block> reflected damage.

“-102!” <Shield Bash>!

“-140!” <Horizontal Sweep>!

The aggro value was established in an instant.

The other teammates had unanimously picked Zhang Yang's target as their attack target. Swords slashed and spells flew all at once.

Kindling Chest Hair was furious because even his own guildmates, Floral Shorts and Prideful Precepts did not dare to attack the monster he had pulled. How embarrassing!

“Ding! Executioner Gnome uses <Immolation Assault>!”

Zhang Yang reacted swiftly and slid back, leaving the monster's melee attack range and caused <Immolation Assault> to hit nothing but air.

On the other side of the battle, Kindling Chest Hair was suffering major damage, causing Prideful Babysitter to spam cast his healing skills while reminding Kindling Chest Hair to use his own health recovery potion. Ocean Despair had long since given up on him.

After about 40 seconds, the 'sun monster' let out a wail, collapsing in its own pool of blood. The party turned and attacked the 'star monster' Kindling Chest Hair was pulling.

After 10 seconds or so, the monster let out an enraged cry and ignored Kindling Chest Hair, charging towards Hundred Shots!

"He's been pulling aggro for over a minute and still managed to get OT. It's really a wonder of wonders!" Flame Emperor was more than shocked.

<Charge>!

Zhang Yang quickly chased after the 'star monster'. He was not competing for aggro with Kindling Chest Hair, so he naturally had full Rage as he did not use any Rage consuming skills. Zhang Yang used <Horizontal Sweep> followed by a normal attack and then continued with 3 <Force Strike>, causing a large amount of damage and aggro.

Once the 'star monster' recovered, Zhang Yang used <Provoke> and forced the monster to attack him for 2 seconds.

“<Block>!”

“-42!”

“<Shield Bash>!”

“-102!”

Hundred Shots’ performance was commendable. He had stopped attacking and had waited for Zhang Yang to hold the monster’s aggro. After the 2 seconds ended, the ‘star monster’ was still attacking Zhang Yang, confirming its complete aggro lock on Zhang Yang.

Kindling Chest Hair kept his mouth shut. With this situation in hand, however shameless he was, remaining silent would be his best course of action. If he had quibbled, he would only be setting himself up as a joke – not like he was not one already.

In due course, the ‘star monster’ had died.

The party progressed and after clearing 5 waves of monsters, they had finally encountered the first boss. It was a black colossal hound the size of a public bus, its fur a shining black. The boss was currently sleeping on the floor, snoring thunderously loud and drooling all over.

[Black Claw, Guardian Beast of the Crypt Entrance] (Black-

Metal Boss)

Level: 12

HP: 36000

There was only a lone boss in this overly large cave and no minions around.

“What’s the plan?” Snowy Death asked in the party channel while staring at the fearsome monstrous beast.

“Easy! Tanks pull, damage dealers attack and healers heal! It’s simple!” Prideful Precepts said with ease.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “This boss has two skills the first being <Death Stare>. It’s a skill that causes the player with the highest aggro to receive extra damage. The target will receive an extra 100% damage when attacked and this skill can be stacked indefinitely. In this case, theoretically, this boss requires 2 tanks. When one tank has accumulated high stacks of <Death Stare>, the other tank takes over. When the debuff ends, the first tank will replace the second tank once again! Of course, if the DPSers are strong enough, we could still do this with only one tank, killing the boss in the shortest amount of time.”

The players looked at each other, neither of them trusting Kindling Chest Hair to hold aggro. To believe that he could do it

would be would be more unlikely than to believe that all prostitutes are virgins! The only way to do it was to go all out on dealing damage and to kill it forcefully.

“The second skill is <Venom Spit>. It will target players at random and cause around 200 basic damage in Normal Mode. The cast rate is very high so there will be substantial healing pressure.” Zhang Yang continued.

Prideful Precepts gave a skeptic look and asked, “How did you know? You’re not making this up just for the sake of bragging, are you?”

Zhang Yang had cleared this dungeon numerous times in his previous life, how could he not know?! Zhang Yang smiled and said, “There are a lot of dungeon information on the official forum, I saw it in passing.”

Everyone believed him without a doubt.

“Hairy, which of you two would be the main tank?” Floral Shorts still had faith in Kindling Chest Hair.

“Of course it would be me! He won’t survive a hit from the boss with that petty HP!” Kindling Chest Hair had yet to realize the difference in ability between him and Zhang Yang. He had a big hat but no cattle.

Ocean Despair could not help but chuckle.



Kindling Chest Hair had been displeased with him for a while, and yelled, “What are you laughing for? Was I wrong?”

Ocean Despair remained silent but posted the ‘Heal Received Statistics’ in the channel.

[Heal Received Statistics]

1. Kindling Chest Hair, 57632, 92%
2. Snowy Death, 1579, 3%
3. Flowery Pants, 1553, 3%
4. Zhan Yu, 1422, 2 %

“Is this for real?” Everyone looked at the list and was beyond surprised.

What did it mean?

Zhang Yang had not only locked a monster’s aggro, his attack evasion was on another level!

He did have less HP compared to Kindling Chest Hair but based solely on his skills, monsters' attacks could barely graze him! If so, why does it matter whether he had high or low HP in the first place?

The pitiful Kindling Chest Hair was still unable to grasp the overall picture and had laughed egoistically after looking at the statistics, "Now you guys know my pain! I've pulled so many monsters, of course they would attack me!"

Ocean Despair smirked, "Pain your ass! Healing you is the real pain!"

Kindling Chest Hair was livid. Just as he had wanted to refute Ocean Despair's comment, he was flooded by blames from the rest of the party, criticizing his weak ability in locking aggro, as whoever was supposed to deal damage to his monster would definitely OT. Feeling overwhelmed, he wanted to find the other 3 Pride guildmates as support but saw them intentionally turn their heads away, pretending to miss the conversation.

"Alright, alright. The two of you go together. Whoever holds the aggro will tank it!" Floral Shorts finally decided, an attempt to help Kindling Chest Hair but everybody had known that this was just for show. Let's not compare Kindling Chest Hair's aggro to Zhang Yang. Perhaps, even healers' could build higher aggro than him!

"Go!"

Zhang Yang unsheathed his Refined Iron Sword and dashed towards Black Claw. Not wanting to be outshone, Kindling Chest Hair also rushed towards the boss.

“<Charge>!”

“<Shield Toss>!”

Zhang Yang dashed towards the boss like a train, arriving right in front of Black Claw almost immediately. He swung his sword and slashed the boss.

“-52!”

The damage was reduced by roughly 20 points due to the boss' high defense.

At this time, Kindling Chest Hair had also arrived and smashed his war hammer furiously.

“-1!”

Tragedy. He could not break its defense and had only caused 1 point of damage.

At the same time, Kindling Chest Hair activated <Devotion>. A glowing golden light appeared beneath his feet and another “-1” damage text appeared above the boss's head.

2 seconds later, the boss had recovered from the stun and clawed at Zhang Yang.

“<Block>!”

“-36!”

“<Shield Bash>!”

“-96!”

“<Horizontal Sweep>!”

“-136!”

“Start the attack!” Zhang Yang announced in the party channel.

# Chapter 16: Barbarians And Their Barbaric Ways

---

“<Justice Defense>!”

Realizing that he could not beat Zhang Yang, Kindling Chest Hair had immediately provoked the boss to temporarily pull Black Claw's aggro over.

“Ding! You are affected by <Death Stare> (Stack 1). All damage received increased by 100%, lasts for 12 seconds!”

Kindling Chest Hair really had the worst luck. Just as he provoked the boss, Black Claw had activated <Death Stare>. His body flashed in a crimson glow and a debuff appeared above his avatar.

This skill could not be dodged or blocked.

The provoke effect had worn off after 2 seconds and Black Claw returned to attack Zhang Yang.

“Fire up the [DPS](#)!” Zhang Yang said in the party channel. He was not worried about being instantly killed under the stacking effect of <Death Stare> but more so that the longer they took to kill the boss, the more Black Claw would cast <Venom Spit>, ultimately wrecking the party when the healers became overwhelmed.

DPS in this case refers to the original term of the term DPS which means damage per second. In most cases, DPS, like many other

gaming terminology, can be used interchangeably. DPS could also mean a type of class or role that focuses on dealing as much damage as possible. E.g. “We need another 3 DPSers to fill our party! PM for invite plez

Of course, in this Normal Mode he could easily solo kill the boss alone!

After a while, Black Claw turned around and took aim at Prideful Precepts, spitting black spittle on him.

“F\*ck, is that how you pull the monster, noob warrior! How could you let the boss attack me?” Prideful Precepts rebuked and then hollered at the same time, “Heal me!” He had a total of 300HP but 200 was gone instantly.

“You’re the f\*cking noob! That’s the boss’ <Venom Spit>. Zhan Yu had explained it very clearly just now, it randomly targets a player! What are you barking at?” Defiant Monk could not hold his anger anymore and finally exploded.

Grunting, Prideful Precepts remained displeased and begrudged but did not fight back.

10 seconds later, Kindling Chest Hair initiated another provoke and temporarily pulled Black Claw’s aggro over again.

“Ding! You are affected by <Death Stare> (Stack 2). All damage received increased by 200%, lasts for 12 seconds!”

Poor thing, he had just drew the boss over and was immediately stacked with another <Death Stare>.

Zhang Yang exclaimed internally, who said this guy was a noob, he's been provoking precisely when the boss casts <Death Stare>! Such a genius!

After beating up Kindling Chest Hair, Black Claw turned again and Zhang Yang took over the aggro.

After some time, Black Claw stopped his actions and aimed at Snowy Death, casting <Venom Spit> and dealing 200 HP of damage to him.

Kindling Chest Hair casted the third provoke on the boss after <Justice Defense>'s cooldown had completed.

“Ding! You are affected by <Death Stare> (Stack 3). All damage received increased by 300%, lasts for 12 seconds!”

Black Claw's <Death Stare> was casted every 10 seconds, coincidentally the same as the cooldown time of <Justice Defense>. This was the reason Kindling Chest Hair had been the receiver of <Death Stare> each time he had provoked the boss.

“-528!”

Black Claw's normal attack damage was already around 150 points usually and since Kindling Chest Hair had 3 stacks of <Death Stare> on him, his basic damage had reached an approximate 600 points! Deducting the Defender's passive 15% damage reduction and character defense, the damage had still amounted to 500 plus points!

Reduced to almost nothing from a total of 700 HP in an instant, Kindling Chest Hair panicked and screamed, "Heal me!"

" +76!"

" +73!"

" +100!"

Three green numbers floated across Kindling Chest Hair's head. They were the healing done by Prideful Babysitter, Ocean Despair, and his own ingested bottle of red pot respectively, raising his HP to 421 points. Although Ocean Despair had hated Kindling Chest Hair, he had still dutifully healed him at such a critical moment.

" -509!"

Black Claw made another blow in an instant and the hit landed on Kindling Chest Hair.

"Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has died!"



Black Claw turned and continued attacking Zhang Yang.

Unable to contain it anymore, Flame Emperor laughed and said in the party channel, “It seems that the Defender does have some contribution! He’d endured three times of <Death Stare> for Zhan Yu! Your death was not in vain!”

“Yeah, a hero!”

“You can rest in peace!”

Players that were not from Pride were talking merrily in the party channel, their words causing Kindling Chest Hair to fume with anger. His intention was not even to help Zhang Yang, he merely wanted to throw a tantrum. Who would have known that he would be triple stacked with <Death Stare> which allowed him to be instantly killed by the boss!

He had dug his own grave, provoking the boss continuously to have Black Claw become immune to the effects. Zhang Yang could not have saved him even if he wanted to! Of course, Zhang Yang had no interest in saving such a foolish and arrogant guy even without the provoke immunity. He was not that kind!

“Speed up the DPS!” Zhang Yang said in the party channel.

“OK!” the crowd replied. Zhang Yang won their respect with his capabilities.

Without Kindling Chest Hair ‘snagging’ <Death Stare>, Zhang Yang had quickly gotten stacked with many levels of the <Death Stare> debuff. Death would be an absolute certainty had the boss even touched him lightly. However, Zhang Yang had maneuvered himself with such agility, moving and dodging, not giving Black Claw a single opening to land a strike!

While <Venom Spit> had caused a certain degree of burden to the healers, because they did not need to heal their tank, a lot of MP was conserved and they had more than enough to heal the other players. The party had not lost any more members.

“80%! 70%!”

Under the constant attacks the party, the boss’ HP had decreased steadily. Nearly 3 minutes later, Black Claw’s HP was left with a mere 10%.

“Ding! Party Leader Floral Shorts has changed Group Looting Parameters to Master Loot!” A system notification popped up suddenly to indicate the change of distribution method.

“Floral Shorts! What are you doing?” Defiant Monk quickly questioned.

“I’m afraid that people will mess up the loot, so I’ll split it myself!” Floral Shorts said in a self-righteous tone.

Everyone kept mum and continued attacking the boss.

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Black Claw! Obtained 3,650 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

Black Claw fell to the ground and dropped 3 to 4 equipment and a heap of gold coins.

“Let’s see what the drops are!” Equipment was every player’s main motivation to enter dungeons. When the boss had died, everyone had automatically surrounded the loot. However, due to the Master Loot Mode, they could only look at the equipment dropped but were unable to pick them up.

[Black Claw] (Black-Steel, Fist Gloves)

Weapon Attack: 7 – 13

Attack Interval: 1.9 seconds

Level Requirement: 5

[Heavy Chest Plate] (Black-Steel, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +3

Strength: +1

Level Requirement: 5

[Black Leather Boots] (Black-Steel, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +1

Vitality: +2

Intelligence: +1

Level Requirement: 5

According to the dungeon setting, equipment dropped from Hardcore Mode would be one grade higher than Difficult Mode; and equipment dropped from Difficult Mode would be another grade higher than Normal Mode. Since Bangar Crypt was the lowest level dungeon in the game, only Hardcore Mode would drop Green-Copper equipment. If it had been according to the setting, the equipment dropped in Normal mode should only be White-tiered!

However, the game company had taken into consideration that if the first dungeon had only dropped White-tiered equipment, it would have discouraged the players! Compromising, they decided that Normal Mode would also drop Black-Steel equipment but its level requirement was reduced to Level 5 while Difficult Mode and Hardcore Mode continued dropping Level 10 Black-Steel and Green-Copper equipment respectively.

“Ding! Player Floral Shorts has obtained Black Claw!”

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has obtained Heavy Chest Plate!”

“Ding! Player Prideful Precepts has obtained Black Leather Boots!”

“Ding! You have been distributed with 96 copper coins!”

A series of system notifications rang. Party leader Floral Shorts had distributed all the equipment in a flash while simultaneously obtaining the gold coins and distributing them to each party member through the system.

This had caused a wave of disapproval among the party members.

“What the f\*ck? How can you distribute the equipment without asking!”

“F\*ck, barbarians hijacking equipment!”

“What did you think we were? Your workers?”

Floral Shorts snorted and said, “I am the party leader, of course I have the priority for equipment! Hairy is the main tank, if it wasn’t for him tanking the boss’ <Death Stare>, we wouldn’t have beaten the boss, and he died twice. Is it wrong to prioritize him in equipment distribution? As for Precepts... he dealt the highest DPS among those who wore robes!”

“F\*ck you! You can’t even command as a leader and had zero contribution to the party! How dare you put yourself as priority?”

“The Defender is a complete joke! There’s no difference to our party with or without him around! Zhan Yu got stacked with 13 stacks of <Death Stare> and he was alright. What difference would 3 stacks make?”

“Look at the damage statistics yourself! If you’re not blind, Precepts was much worse than Flame Emperor!”

Prideful Magus replied immediately, “The damage statistics is not even accurate. How is it possible that our Guardian ranks first every single time? I’ve been attacking all the time, I might as well commit suicide if my attack is lower than a tank!”

The rest of the players got even more enraged listening to his

self-righteous argument.

“Let’s go on, let’s go on. It’s just a few equipment, everyone can get them after a few more rounds!” Prideful Babysitter pacified the party.

“Change the party leader or we’ll quit!” Hundred Shots said.

“Yeah, change the leader!” the others followed.

“Ding! Player Floral Shorts has made player Prideful Precepts the Party Leader!”

Is this showcasing the lowest level of one’s IQ?

“F\*ck! You are all shameless!” Defiant Monk was rendered speechless by these Pride members’ scoundrel ways.

“Either change the leader to Zhan Yu or disband!” Hundred Shots said while the others agreed immediately.

The four Pride members were at a loss.

“Ding! Player Prideful Precepts has made player Zhan Yu the Party Leader!”

Zhang Yang had encountered plenty of barbarians in his previous

life but those who could compete with the Pride members were indeed few! These men should have joined the Rogue Clan! He smiled lightly and changed the Group Looting Parameters to Roll-the-Dice Mode and said “Let’s continue!”

He did not care for the loot from Normal Mode, there would be more good stuff waiting in Difficult Mode and Hardcore Mode!

He had wanted to kick the four Prideful players out but had quickly changed his mind. Expelling them was not the best way to punish them. The best way to release his anger was letting them know that this party had the ability to clear Difficult and even Hardcore Mode so these selfish, greedy guys should have tried to snatch better equipment, then kick the others out at that time to drive them mad with jealousy and regret!



# Chapter 17: The Second Boss

---

The players continued along their way. After killing five waves of minions, they reached the second boss.

A 3-man tall, green-skinned gnome was sitting in front of a large metal door napping, a sharp spear in its arms. The atmosphere was completely silent, as no other minions were around.

[Babarerba the Sleepyhead] (Black-Steel Boss)

Level: 13

HP: 39,000

“How do we fight it?” the party’s sight had settled on Zhang Yang. Unknowingly, he had become the party’s core.

Zhang Yang recalled and said, “This boss has only 2 skills: first, <Curse of Water and Fire>, it will cast a water curse on a random melee player who is not holding the most aggro and cast a fire curse on a random ranged player. These two cursed players will keep losing HP but once both of them are together, the curse will be removed.”

“In that case, we can all fight in melee range distance. This way, there is no need to move everywhere, no?” Hundred Shots had

thought of an idea.

Zhang Yang laughed, “If everyone did melee attacks, the boss will only cast the water curse. Two players will then keep losing HP and there’ll be no way to dispel it!”

“Oh!” the crowd nodded uniformly.

Zhang Yang began distributing responsibilities, “Later when we start the fight, ranged players stand together, remember to stand at least 10 meters away from the boss, that’d be around this line. I will position the boss later, ranged attackers do not cross this line or else the boss will consider it as melee range distance. Melee players attack from the left side, whoever gets cursed should run to the center. Respond as quickly as possible, otherwise it’ll be a burden to the healers. After the curse is removed, return immediately to your original positions!”

“Understood!”

Zhang Yang continued, “The boss’ second skill is to summon a puppet to aid him in battle at every 25% HP loss. The puppet’s HP is low, and should be around 3,000 HP in Normal Mode but its damage is sky-high! That is why we must nuke it the moment the puppet is summoned! You guys don’t have to worry about aggro, I’ll be the first to pull it!”

Everyone instinctively looked at Kindling Chest Hair. Usually the main tank would pull the boss’ aggro while the off-tank would pull the minions’. Things would then work out flawlessly. Obviously,

Kindling Chest Hair was completely undependable. If he were to pull minions, those minions could end up flying everywhere!

Kindling Chest Hair was annoyed to the point of rage by the team's stare, "What are you looking at?!"

"Pay attention. Even when the puppet is summoned, the boss will still cast <Curse of Water and Fire>, so always remember to run to the center to dispel the curse!" Zhang Yang reminded.

"Understood!" the crowd nodded again.

"Alright! Start the fight!" Zhang Yang waved his sword and did a <Charge> towards the boss.

"-78!" Normal attack.

"-138!" <Horizontal Sweep>.

Babarerba recovered quickly and with a deafening shriek, it had thrust towards Zhang Yang with its spear.

"<Block>!"

"-34!" <Block> reflected damage.

"-99!" <Shield Bash>.

“-55!” Normal attack.

“Attack now!” Zhang Yang commanded in the party channel.

The crowd moved onwards, melee fighters stood together, ranged fighters gathered on their end as well.

In just a matter of time, Babarerba had casted <Curse of Water and Fire>.

“Ding! Player Snowy Death has been affected by <Curse of Water>, losing 70 HP per second. Effect will remain until player’s death!”

“Ding! Player Hundred Shots has been affected by <Curse of Fire>, losing 70 HP per second. Effect will remain until player’s death!”

Without waiting for Zhang Yang’s reminder, these two players had come out of their formation and headed towards each other. They got together quickly and split up instantly, returning to their positions and resumed their attack on the boss. The healers had also healed them, quickly restoring their HP.

“Well done! That’s it!” Zhang Yang complimented as encouragement.

About 15 seconds later, Babarerba casted yet another <Curse of Water and Fire>, its targets this time were Floral Shorts and Ocean Despair.

Ocean Despair had quickly gone to the center but Floral Shorts remained attacking the boss.

“Floral Shorts, quickly head to the center!” Zhang Yang frowned as he yelled.

“Run faster noob Knight, I’m still attacking here!” said Floral Shorts without a care.

“Bloody idiot!” Ocean Despair ran towards Floral Shorts in an instant. The moment the two of them were near each other, the spell was removed. Since Floral Shorts did not cooperate fully, they had taken a bit more time, causing them to lose over 200 HP. That was two-thirds worth of their HP value!

Ocean Despair then ran back to his position and self-casted 3 times of <Holy Light>. Only then did he manage to recover his lost HP, his expression vicious.

Babarerba’s HP had been lowered to the 75% mark soon after.

“Damned intruders, all of you must die!” Babarerba raised its spear and began to chant a spell, “Come forth demon from the depth of the abyss, bring evil with you into this realm!”

“Ding! Babarerba has summoned Demon Puppet Tasair!”

A hexagram magic circle appeared underneath Babarerba’s feet. As a dim light flickered, a red demon only half a man’s height had appeared by its side, the demon’s long tail extended from its hip. It had sharp teeth, and deep green-colored eyes.

[Tasair, Babarerba’s Demon Puppet] (Elite)

Level: 13

HP: 3,000

This was a minor demon, also known as an ‘imp’, the lowest ranked among the demons.

“Tasair needs a sacrifice!” The demon shrieked and set its sight on Prideful Babysitter, leaping towards him.

“<Charge>!”

Zhang Yang dashed towards Tasair and landed a slash on it with his sword.

“-62!” Normal attack.

“-142!” <Horizontal Sweep>.

“Target the imp! Nuke it!”

Tasair recovered from the stun and leaped towards Zhang Yang to attack him.

“<Block>!”

“-39!” <Block> reflected damage.

“-98!” <Shield Bash>.

Zhang Yang lured Tasair towards Babarerba and when both the monsters were together, he crouched, evading both their attacks, and returned to his original position.

Tasair’s HP was very low and it was immediately killed under the crowd’s combined attacks. After that, the party refocused their attacks on Babarerba.

It did not take long for Babarerba’s HP to hit the 50% mark.

“Intruders! Your attacks have hurt Babarerba! Babarerba is angry now!” Babarerba raised its spear again and began his chant, “Come forth demon from the depth of the abyss, bring evil with you into this realm!”

A hexagram magic circle appeared once again underneath Babarerba's feet. This time, a blue fat demon appeared by his side. It had no legs, but there was a black malicious cloud floating under it. There were faces with only eyes on both the front and back of the demon.

[Gluttony, Babarerba's Demon Puppet] (Elite)

Level: 13

HP: 3,000

This floating demon, due to its blue-colored body and fat shape, was also called "Blue Fatty" by the players. This demon was one rank higher than the previous one but both monsters' attacks and HP were similar here in the Normal Mode dungeon raid, only differing in their appearance.

"Anbaratumargutton!" Gluttony let out a weird low noise and floated towards Snowy Death.

"<Provoke>!"

Zhang Yang immediately took over and did a blow, "-59" damage text floating from the top of Gluttony's head.

"<Block>!"



“-39!” <Block> reflected damage.

“-98!” <Shield Bash>.

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has been affected by <Curse of Water>, losing 70 HP per second. Effect will remain until player’s death!”

“Ding! Player Prideful Precepts has been affected by <Curse of Fire>, losing 70 HP per second. Effect will remain until player’s death!”

Babarerba had taken the chance to cast <Curse of Water and Fire> during the chaos.

“Move quickly!” Zhang Yang frowned as he reminded them.

Kindling Chest Hair went on clashing with the boss like he had not heard a thing...

Prideful Precepts remained unmoving, shooting Frost Arrows...

“F\*ck me, you two better start moving now. Your fucking HP is dropping too fast, I can’t keep up!” Ocean Despair shouted angrily.

“Bullshit, I’m attacking! Healing is supposed to be you healers’ job! Why else do we need you to raid the dungeon with huh?!”

Prideful Precepts answered arrogantly.

“Fine! Fine! Do it your way. I’m not going to heal anymore!” Ocean Despair stopped his actions.

Prideful Babysitter was desperately healing but even if he were to heal one-to-one, he would not be able to keep going. What else could he do when there were two? He then said, “Precepts, Hairy, you two better get going now, I really can’t keep this up anymore!”

Only then did the two of them stop what they were doing unwillingly, looked around and then ran towards each other.

After a few steps, Prideful Precepts’ HP had dropped to rock-bottom, Prideful Babysitter was nearly done casting his healing spell but Prideful Magus had then died from <Curse of Fire>.

“Ding! Player Prideful Magus has died!”

“Sh\*tty noob Knight! F\*ck you!” Prideful Magus cussed, “How the f\*ck are you a healer? What the f\*ck were you doing not healing?”

“If I ever f\*cking heal you dogs with even another single drop of HP, I really am a shitty noob Knight!” Ocean Despair scolded back.

Without <Curse of Fire>, Kindling Chest Hair could not dispel the <Curse of Water>. He was barely alive from his vast vitality, as he shouted, “Shut the f\*ck up and start healing me!”

Ocean Despair did absolutely nothing, determined to turn against everyone in Pride.

Prideful Babysitter had been healing Kindling Chest Hair constantly but how could he heal in time, especially when he was alone? Kindling Chest Hair's HP loss was much faster than his healing speed. Within seconds, Kindling Chest Hair died as well.

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has died!”

“You f\*cking noob Knight! F\*ck your entire family!” Kindling Chest Hair too cussed.

“Ding! Player Prideful Magus was expelled from the party!”

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair was expelled from the party!”

Zhang Yang smiled faintly as two notifications rang out, “Too noisy, it's disturbing the fight!”

Floral Shorts had wanted to rebuke but he held back and said, “OK, just add them back when the battle is over.”

Gluttony was killed promptly, and the battle's rhythm returned to its normal pace.

Countering <Curse of Water and Fire> was actually not difficult,

they were in Normal Mode after all. With the absence of both of Pride's barbarians, the party's efficiency had significantly increased with each player running towards each other almost instantly once they were cursed. The pace lasted until well after Babarerba summoned its third demon, as they finished killing the boss rather quickly.

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Babarerba! Obtained 4,924 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

# Chapter 18: Nuked?

---

“Ding! Player Prideful Precepts has joined the party!”

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has joined the party!”

After the battle, Floral Shorts had been urging Zhang Yang to reinvite the other two players into the party or they would have lost the chance to bid for an equipment once somebody had touched the boss' corpse.

Zhang Yang gave a slight smile and sent the party invitation to the two of them. Before they could even start arguing, Zhang Yang preemptively said, “All of you Pride members, no one speak from now on! I will kick anyone who can't keep their mouth shut. If all four of you can't keep your mouth shut, I'll kick all four out! We don't even need that many players in Normal Mode!”

Stunned by Zhang Yang's authoritative assertion, even though the four Pride players held a grudging look, no one dared make a noise. If these words were to come from Zhang Yang had they first started the dungeon raid, they would have treated it as a passing joke. After experiencing 2 boss battles though, they knew that Zhang Yang was a pro player, someone much more skillful than them!

Other party members smiled, their anger subsiding. They began to think even more highly of Zhang Yang.

“Touch the corpse!” Zhang Yang said casually.

Although Floral Shorts had stayed silent, his reaction was incredibly fast, rushing to the boss' side and with a touch, 3 equipment and a Roll-the-Dice window had appeared in front of everyone.

In Roll-the-Dice Mode, for items higher than White tier dropped by the boss, each player in the party could roll should they desire it. The system would then randomly generate a number between 1 – 100; the player who had the highest roll would obtain the item they had rolled for. Of course, if there was no need for the item, one could pass.

[Bloodstained Hat] (Black-Steel, Cloth Armor)

Armor: +1

Vitality: +3

Intelligence: +1

Level Requirement: 5

Zhang Yang had chosen to pass and the others were quick in making a choice. A total of 5 players rolled for the equipment.

Prideful Precepts, 36 points.

Flame Emperor, 87 points.

Prideful Babysitter, 76 points.

Floral Shorts, 27 points.

Kindling Chest Hair, 92 points.

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has obtained Bloodstained Hat!”

The party boiled with anger again.

“Why the hell did you roll for a cloth armor when you’re not even cloth classed, motherf\*cker! Where did this barbaric Pride Guild come from? All barbarians!”

Those from Pride kept mum, be it due to having qualms about Zhang Yang’s warning or their arrogance which was keeping them from arguing. What was clear though, was that they were determined to be barbarous to the end. It did not matter whether the other two equipment fit them, they had chosen to roll for them anyway.

Zhang Yang sent a private message to the other party members one by one saying, “Level 5 Black-Steel equipment are not much

better than White-Wood rarity ones. Let them “[Need](#)” roll! Let us clear the Difficult and Hardcore Modes later and show them what real loot is. Make them jealous, that’s the best payback!”

In Roll-the-Dice Mode, the options a player is given is normally either Need, Greed, or Pass. Players who rolled Need will be given the highest priority, and so if you rolled a ‘1’ when you chose Need, it did not matter if someone rolled ‘100’ as Greed. You would still be the final winner of the item. In most cases, the game’s system would prevent a player from rolling Need if the item could not be used by the player’s character. However, this does not seem to be the case for ‘God’s Miracle’.

The players were thrilled. This would mean that Zhang Yang had intended on leading them to raid both Difficult and Hardcore Modes! After battling two bosses with him, they already had no doubts regarding Zhang Yang’s capabilities. Perhaps Hardcore Mode could be a problem, Difficult Mode though, there would be a big chance that they could clear it!

Receiving such a promise, the party calmed down. To be honest, Level 5 Black-Steel equipment would have been insignificant to Level 10 players. It would have been discarded after a few levels of use. The players from Pride had humiliated themselves for temporary benefits and had also lost their chance to raid the Difficult and Hardcore Modes with Zhang Yang. It was obvious whether they had benefited or suffered a loss.

[Hard Leather Chest Plate] (Black-Steel, Leather Armor)

Armor: +2



Vitality: +2

Dexterity: +2

Level Requirement: 5

The rest of the party had fought back mercilessly in dealing with the Pride players' shameless act. All the players besides Zhang Yang had joined the roll, Ocean Despair ended up obtaining the equipment. He then passed the equipment to the leather armor classed player, Defiant Monk, who had the second highest roll. Defiant Monk was utterly grateful.

[Hard Leather Gloves] (Black-Steel, Leather Armor)

Armor: +2

Vitality: +1

Dexterity: +1

Level Requirement: 10

This equipment, however, had fallen to one of the Pride

members. The four of them had looked as contented as winning a 500 million dollar grand prize. The others had already adjusted their emotions and had treated them as a joke. Only scornful smiles appeared at the corners of their lips, none of them saying anything.

The Pride Quad thought they had put a halt to the other party members' momentum, feeling all the more pleased with themselves.

“Let's move forward!” Zhang Yang said calmly after the equipment distribution.

Bangar Crypt had a total of 3 bosses and another 7 waves of minions along their way to the last boss. The party had spent 20 minutes clearing the minions and had finally reached the ultimate boss after passing through a long tunnel.

[Gnome Leader Dadarerdá] (Black-Steel Boss)

Level: 14

HP: 42,000

Dadarerdá was a 5-meter tall giant gnome sitting on a plain throne. By his side, 2 guards in duty were guarding seriously.

[Royal Guard] (Elite)

Level: 13

HP: 6,500

Zhang Yang set his mind straight and began to explain the strategy, “This boss’ battle is divided into 2 parts. First, eliminate the 2 guards. I will grab ahold of their aggro when we begin. Target the ‘star-marked’ one first and then the ‘sun-marked’ next. Then we follow-up with the boss.”

“The boss has two skills. He will randomly place fire pits on the ground for the first skill. I think it should be about 10 to 15 pits. You have to pay attention and avoid the pits, because each step will cost you 100 points of damage.”

“The boss will spin and spew a cone-shaped flame for his second skill, and 300 HP will be taken once you’re burned! However, there’s a 2 seconds casting delay that can’t be interrupted but can be used as an indication of attack. The boss does not spin very fast, so as long as you follow its rotation, you’d be able to avoid the flame. What you need to pay attention though is that you’ll have to also focus on the fire pits as you evade the spewed flame. Keep your eyes on both dangers!”

Zhang Yang paused and asked, “Is everyone clear? If you don’t understand, ask me now. I can repeat the strategy again.”

Everyone remained quiet.

“Very well, we shall start now!” Zhang Yang wielded his sword and ran forward. When he was within the casting range, Zhang Yang used <Charge> and stunned Dadarerda, slashing it at the same time. “-52” damage text then floated across the boss’ head.

When the battle began, the gate to the passageway would be closed automatically and would not open again unless the battle had ended.

Both the royal guards immediately shrieked in their strange voice and charged towards Zhang Yang.

“<Block>!”

“-32!” <Block> reflected damage.

“-92!” Zhang Yang used <Shield Bash> on the ‘star-marked’ monster.

“-136!”

“-142!”

“-129!”

Zhang Yang immediately chained <Horizontal Sweep> with his previous attack, causing yellow damage numbers to drift across all three monsters' heads.

Without further instruction from Zhang Yang, the party had initiated their attack on the 'star-marked' monster at once.

“Ding! Dadarerda used <Lava Pit>. Lasts for 60 seconds!”

10 fire rings with 1 meter diameter each then appeared randomly on the battlefield. Some had appeared right beneath the players' feet while some had appeared randomly across the battlefield.

“Beware of your steps!” Zhang Yang reminded.

Evading 10 pits was fairly easy. Everyone resumed attacking the 'star-marked' monster, killing it in just a short amount of time.

“Ding! The party you are in has killed a Royal Guard! Obtained 700 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

“Next target! Continue!” Zhang Yang commanded.

“Ding! Dadarerda used <Lava Pit>. Lasts for 60 seconds!”

Another 10 fire pits appeared on the field and everyone started becoming busy evading the pits.

Suddenly, Dadarerda stopped attacking and raised its hands. A progress bar appeared on its head as it began chanting in a weird language.

“Get ready! The boss is going to spit fire! Be on your feet!” Zhang Yang turned and moved away from the boss’ front, pulling the ‘sun-marked’ monster with him.

“Ding! Dadarerda used <Flamethrower!>”

Dadarerda opened his mouth and a flame more than 30 meters long was spat. He then slowly twirled and began his rotating attack.

“Take note of where you’re stepping!” Zhang Yang pulled the ‘sun-marked’ monster’s aggro while moving along with the boss, hiding by his side the whole time.

Even with Zhang Yang’s reminder, a few players had forgotten about the <Lava Pit> beneath their feet as they evaded <Flamethrower>, causing damage text to float from their heads one by one.

“Ding! Player Floral Shorts has died!”

“Ding! Player Prideful Magus has died!”

“Ding! Player Prideful Babysitter has died!”

“Ding! Player Flame Emperor has died!”

Good job, 4 members had died in an instant! On the other hand, if it were not for Kindling Chest Hair’s 700 HP accommodating his damage from <Lava Pit>, he would have turned into a corpse already.

“Continue the attack!” Zhang Yang did not want to criticize anyone. After all, since this had been everyone’s virgin battle against this boss, progressing in any way was inevitable. Furthermore, the boss would cast <Lava Pit> every 10 seconds. Since the fire pits would last for 60 seconds, it meant that there would have been a total of 60 fire pits on the field later on, making things even more chaotic.

And this was only in Normal Mode. The fire pits in Difficult Mode would have lasted for 90 seconds with an extra 30 pits while Hardcore Mode’s would last for 120 seconds, covering almost the entire field with fire pits.

“Ding! Dadarerda used <Lava Pit>. Lasts for 60 seconds!”

30 seconds later, there were 30 pits on the field. Fortunately, <Flamethrower>’s activation rate was less frequent.

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Royal Guard! Obtained 700 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

‘Sun monster’ kept it up for a while but had eventually succumbed to the party’s nuke.

“Hurry up and attack the boss!” Zhang Yang hollered softly.

“Ding! Dadarerda used <Lava Pit>. Lasts for 60 seconds!”

Almost simultaneously, Dadarerda stopped his attack and a progress bar appeared on its head once again.

“Ding! Babarerba used <Flamethrower>!”

With 40 fire pits on the ground, all hell broke loose.

“Ding! Player Snowy Death has died!”

“Ding! Player Defiant Monk has died!”

“Ding! Player Kindling Chest Hair has died!”

“Ding! Player Hundred Shots has died!”

“Ding! Player Ocean Despair has died!”

Amidst the raging flame, Zhang Yang became the sole survivor in



his party!

# Chapter 19: Solo Kill

---

“Zhan Yu, give it up!” Hundred Shots advised when he saw Dadarerda’s HP had only dropped by 9%. “Let’s do it one more time. We’ve all experienced it now, surely we’ll last longer!”

Zhang Yang gave a slight smile and said, “Let me try!”

“Try your ass! Do you think you’re God, that you can solo kill a boss?” Prideful Precepts scolded. “I’ll kowtow to you thrice and call you grandfather every single time I see you if you could solo kill it!”

“Hmph! I’m not that blessed to be your grandfather, I don’t want to die of being infuriated by you!” Zhang Yang avoided the boss’ attacks agilely while delivering substantial damage to it. Technically, his damaging power was the highest in the team anyway. If he were to do it alone, it would only prolong the battle duration by 2 to 3 times more.

“Noob tank! Don’t waste any more of our time okay?” Floral Shorts joined in. “Each minute you take to fight it while 9 of us lay here is equivalent to 9 minutes wasted. You can’t possibly compensate us for the time lost!”

“Hey! Don’t assume you represent all of us!” yelled Snowy Death. “I have full confidence in our Guardian. I don’t mind laying here for a while! If you’re afraid of wasting time, you can always resurrect yourself immediately!”

“I also have no problems laying here for a little while more!” Hundred Shots, too, had expressed his support for Zhang Yang.

“Bunch of motherf\*ckers!” Kindling Chest Hair could only cuss lowly.

Even though the Pride Quad kept throwing insults, none of them had released their bodies! In ‘God’s Miracle’, if you had released your body before a dungeon raid ended, you would not be able to resurrect to rejoin the dungeon as well and you would also be forgoing your ability to participate in the roll for battle loot.

Whatever had been going on in their minds, even though the Pride Quad had no faith in Zhang Yang’s ability to solo kill the boss, none of them had released their bodies, fearing the possibility of an upset! That said, even if they had released their bodies, they could not reenter the dungeon, so they might as well lay back and watch!

“Ding! Dadarerda used <Lava Pit>. Lasts for 60 seconds!”

....

“Ding! Dadarerda used <Lava Pit>. Lasts for 60 seconds!”

Finally, the field had achieved the maximum number of fire pits. With 60 <Lava Pit> on the field, it was a sight to behold! The field was fully enveloped in bright, fiery light! The pits had covered almost half of the entire landscape in such a huge cave!

“Ding! Dadarerba used <Flamethrower>!”

Dadarerda began to spit fire again.

After <Lava Pit> had reached its maximum number of uses in the field, <Flamethrower> became the biggest threat, forcing the player to move around. The current field filled with lava pits would have been the worst scenario for the players!

Only one-third of Zhang Yang’s athleticism was required to cope with the current situation. This was just a joke for him. If this situation had required his full capabilities, how could he aim to clear Difficult and Hardcore Mode later on?

Dadarerba’s HP dropped consistently, decreasing from 91% to 66% after 3 minutes!

Zhang Yang’s HP had remained a solid 100%, moving at a comfortable pace in his evasion of the boss’ attacks. He then swung his sword, chopping away at the boss’ HP.

“Pro! A real pro!” Everyone stared in disbelief.

Though they had already known of Zhang Yang’s exceptional skills, nobody had any idea how high his standard was! With the scene in front of them then, they clearly understood a pro’s realm!

Solo kill a boss!

This dude could totally solo kill a boss!

No! Not only this boss, he could completely raid this entire Normal Mode Bangar Crypt dungeon on his own! The only difference would be that a party would take approximately 1 hour while he would have taken 3 hours!

Was this dude even human?

Flame Emperor immediately searched for a name on his Friend List and sent a private message and said, “Guild Leader, I have something to tell you!”

A reply came back soon after, “Is it important? I’m in the middle of Difficult Mode Bangar Crypt party raid!”

Flame Emperor turned on the recorder and filmed Zhang Yang fighting the boss. He then sent the recording over and said, “Leader, this is of utmost importance! You must see the video I’d just sent you!”

“Haha, you little rascal. You wouldn’t be sending me another porno right?” The other side replied instantly, either he had killed the boss or they were completely wiped out.

“Guild Leader...” Flame Emperor expressed his innocence.

“Eh?” The player on the other end turned on his voice chat, his surprised tone could clearly be heard, “Hey! Quiet for a second, I’m talking to Flame here!” He paused for a moment and asked, “Flame, what’s the man’s IGN?”

“Zhan Yu!” Flame Emperor turned off the party channel and began voice chatting with his leader.

“Extraordinary! He never got hit once. There are so many pits on the ground yet never once did he step on them! Pro, an absolute pro! Even if this was only Normal Mode, it’s still very impressive! When we did it previously, we actually got wiped out twice by this third boss and had only managed to clear it on the third try!” The person on the other end of the line kept quiet for a while and said, “This player, he’s not in a guild?”

“Yeah. Otherwise I wouldn’t have called you!” Flame Emperor replied.

“Try to approach him later, ask him if he’s interested to join our Lost Paradise, I’ll loosen the conditions a little! Hmm, give him an Officer position and a spot in our guild’s first explorers team!”

“Okay, I got it! Oh right! Leader, he told us that he’ll clear Difficult Mode with us later. Would you like to join us?” said Flame Emperor.

“Hmm... I’ve yet to clear the first boss here so I haven’t used any of my entrance counts. Basically, I could still join you guys! Right,

isn't your party full already?"

"There are 4 shitty Pride members here, we'll kick them out after clearing Normal Mode!"

"That's good, reserve 4 spots for us from Zhan Yu. I'll bring Sky and the rest to join you guys! Hold up about recruiting him, let me talk to him personally when I've come over!"

"Sure!" Flame Emperor agreed simply.

On the other side, Dadarerda's HP had dropped to 21% yet Zhang Yang still had his HP untouched! At this point, no one had any doubts, Zhang Yang could totally solo kill the boss!

"15%!"

"10%!"

"7%!"

"4%!"

"3%!"

"2%!"

“1%!”

“Ding! The party you are in has killed Dadarerda! Obtained 42,050 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!”

Zhang Yang had obtained all the EXP since dead characters could not be awarded with any EXP. This had exponentially increased his EXP bar so much that one could visually witness the surge.

“He did it! He really did it!” The other 9 players mumbled to themselves as if they were dreaming.

“Go resurrect yourselves! I’ll wait for you guys to loot the corpse!” Zhang Yang said grinning.

Prideful Precepts though, had interpreted Zhang Yang’s intention with a crooked point of view and said, “Loot now! We’ll resurrect after equipment distribution. We can just revive at the entrance, no need to run all the way here!”

If drops were looted amidst resurrection, players outside of the dungeon would not be able to roll for the loot.

Zhang Yang smiled and crouched to touch the corpse.

[Heavy Hammer] (Black-Steel, One-handed Hammer)



Magic Attack: 8 – 12

Level Requirement: 5

[Lord’s Hat] (Black-Steel, Leather Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +3

Dexterity: +1

Level Requirement: 5

[Linen Pants] (Black-Steel, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +1

Vitality: +2

Intelligence: +1

Spirit: +1

Level Requirement: 5

The party began rolling and Ocean Despair had managed to get the Heavy Hammer, while Snowy Death had obtained Lord's Hat, and finally Flame Emperor had gotten Linen Pants. None of the Pride Quad had obtained anything!

This obviously made everyone happy, smiles etched on their faces except the Pride members whose expressions were awful. They then released their bodies and resurrected themselves at the spawn point.

“Hm, we shall challenge Difficult Mode after reviving. If anyone has anything else to do, you can leave!” said Zhang Yang casually. He actually had not much care for Difficult Mode's equipment but this party's current equipment was too basic. It would be extremely tough for them in Hardcore Mode if they did not loot some proper equipment from Difficult Mode.

The Pride Quad's eyes lighted up thinking about Level 10 Black-Steel equipment dropped in Difficult Mode! In comparison, Normal Mode's drops had been complete trash!

The party was quiet, no one had any indication of leaving.

“Pride members, you guys can leave yourselves!” Zhang Yang said.

“Why do we have to leave?” Kindling Chest Hair immediately shouted. Zhang Yang was obviously a pro player. As long as they followed him around, they would definitely have access to good equipment!

“No reason, I just don’t like your faces!” Zhang Yang kicked them all out without further ado.

“F\*ck! Add us back now or else I’ll kill you every time I see you! I’ll make sure to kill you back to Level 0!” Prideful Precepts had sent Zhang Yang a private message instantly.

“Bro, we’ve done you a favor by taking you in back then. You can’t just kick us out like that right?” Floral Shorts tried to guilt trip Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang did not waste any effort talking to them, immediately blacklisting the Pride Quad. From now on, he would not be receiving any more private messages from them.

He opened the Character Search Window and tried searching for “Slim and Handsome” to see if Fatty Han had connected. Coincidentally, the result had shown that his character was online. Zhang Yang hurriedly sent a private message saying, “Fatty Shit, I’m Zhang Yang!” Attached along with the message was a friend request.

Instantly, the request was approved and Fatty Han sent back a reply, “Oh, I’ve just slept for about 2 hours and you’ve already

reached Level 10?”

Zhang Yang scoffed and said, “Enough chit chat, go complete the pre-requisite quest for Bangar Crypt dungeon quickly! Big brother here will bring you to raid Difficult Mode!”

“Little Yang, you’d better not forget that you were born 2 months later than your Fatty Big Bro!” Fatty Han refuted and said, “Alright! I’ll go do the quest now!”

“Pro, now that we’re short of 4 players, I have some guild members who would like to join, let me invite them over, is that alright?” Flame Emperor asked in a private message to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, “I have a friend joining, he’s doing the pre-requisite quest now so you can only invite 3 players!”

“Sure!” Flame Emperor gladly replied.

Zhang Yang passed over the Party Leader position to Flame Emperor and without much delay, he had added 3 players into the party.

“Ding! Player Crimson Fire has joined the party!”

“Ding! Player Phantom Day has joined the party!”

“Ding! Player Silky Snow has joined the party!”

## Chapter 20: Difficult Mode

---

Flame Emperor had returned the leader position to Zhang Yang right after he had finished adding members with his invitations.

“Hi everyone!” Crimson Fire greeted with a smile as soon as he had entered party.

Zhang Yang was still exiting the dungeon when he said, “Those releasing their bodies would resurrect themselves at the entrance. Right, Crimson Fire, where are you guys? How soon can you be here?”

“We’re in a dungeon raid now. After we leave the original party, we’ll be sent to the entrance automatically, much faster than all of you!” said Crimson Fire with a smile.

Zhang Yang nodded and sent a message to Fatty Han, “Hurry up or you’ll miss the first boss!”

“F\*ck, your fatty bro is on his way, wait for me!” Fatty Han replied immediately.

Zhang Yang smiled, of course he would have waited for Fatty Han before starting the boss fight. He as a human being would always have a little selfishness.

Very soon, the dead characters had resurrected at the dungeon entrance while Zhang Yang had also exited the dungeon, and all 9

of them gathered.

“Wow, we even have a beautiful lady!” Among the 9 players, 8 were male and Silky Snow was the only female player. This was a norm in any game, where the male player population would always be much higher than that of the female player population. ‘God’s Miracle’ had only attracted a large number of female players after a few months due to its realistic game interface.

Silky Snow had selected elf as her race, wearing a milky white long dress and a golden floral headpiece. She had a slender body, waist slim and long legs with round perky breasts. Her almond-shaped face oozed a mature seductive aura, and while it was not peerless, she was outstanding and would definitely make heads turn.

Silky Snow, Female Elf, Priest, Lost Paradise, Level 10.

Crimson Fire, Male Dwarf, Bandit, Lost Paradise, Level 10.

Phantom Day, Male Orc, Berserker, Lost Paradise, Level 10.

These 3 people had the ‘Lost Paradise’ guild tag above their heads just like Flame Emperor. Before this, it was the Pride Quad; and now, it was the Lost Paradise Quad. Once bitten, twice shy; the other 4 party members inspected the Lost Paradise members with a cautious gaze.

Zhang Yang set the dungeon difficulty to Difficult Mode and said,

“Let’s go!” His eyes scanned around and saw that the Pride Quad had revived, looking at him and the party with eyes filled with vengeance.

“Ding! You have entered Bangar Crypt (Difficult Mode)!”

“Why are we still short of one player?” Phantom Day asked frowning.

“He’s still doing the pre-requisite quest. He will arrive soon though. It’s fine, we can go ahead!” Zhang Yang replied. The number of monsters had remained the same in Difficult Mode but their HP and attack damage would have increased exponentially.

[Gnome Soldier] (Elite)

Level: 10

HP: 7,500

Their HP had increased by 50% compared to Normal Mode!

Zhang Yang marked one of the monsters and said, “Focus your attack on the marked monster later. We’ll take them out one by one!”



Phantom Day had once again voiced his opinion, “Can you hold so many monsters just by yourself? Should we get a Defender first then swap your friend in after we’ve got to the first boss?”

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “It’s fine, I should be able to hold it!”

Phantom Day kept quiet after that. They had known before they came that this trip was to observe Zhang Yang’s capabilities and then decide what conditions to offer him in recruiting him to the guild’s first explorers team. That way why even if Phantom Day had not believed that Zhang Yang could pull 6 monsters, he remained quiet.

Zhang Yang moved forward wielding his sword. Before he could start the fight, his body suddenly flashed with a white light and a translucent shield appeared!

“Ding! Player Silky Snow has casted <Holy Shield> on you! 80 damage points will be absorbed. Lasts for 30 seconds!”

<Holy Shield> was a skill exclusive to Priests. It was very practical but it could only be obtained from skill books looted from monsters’ drops. Seeing that Silky Snow was able to attain this skill, it would seem that Lost Paradise should have some capable players in their guild!

Zhang Yang had thought about it as he picked a monster and did a <Charge>.

“-64!”

11 Rage was generated from the normal attack and 10 more Rage had come from <Charge>, raising Zhang Yang’s Rage to 21 at once.

“-146!”

“-152!”

“-304!”

“-149!”

“-144!”

“-153!”

6 damage texts popped up at the same time from using <Horizontal Sweep>, one of them had even been a critical strike, a pleasing sight to those watching.

“F\*ck you, what devastating damage!” Phantom Day yelled. While he was slashing monsters, he asked, “Zhan Yu, what skill of yours is that? How could it be so powerful?”

Zhang Yang continued pulling aggro while posting the skill <Horizontal Sweep>.

“What the f\*ck, how could such a godly skill exist?! 200% melee attack damage and it’s even an AOE! This is wicked! Big brother Zhan Yu, where did you get this skill book from?” Phantom Day had admired the power of <Horizontal Sweep> so much that he had even addressed him as big brother.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “I coincidentally completed a Hidden Quest. This was the reward!”

After hearing that, disappointment greeted Phantom Day.

If the skill book was dropped by a monster, there would be a chance to obtain it no matter how rare it was! A Hidden Quest’s rewards though, could only be unique! There could only be one in existence!

Zhang Yang used <Block> and reflected a significant amount of damage to all monsters. 8 seconds later, <Horizontal Sweep>’s cooldown time had ended so he gave the monsters another blow, bringing about another 6 horrifying damage texts. He then said, “Berserkers can learn <Tornado Cleave> at Level 20, it’s also an AoE attack!”

[Tornado Cleave]: Waves the weapon in your hands like a tornado. Causes 80% melee damage to surrounding targets. Cost: 20 Rage. Cooldown time: 10 Seconds. Requirement: Melee Weapon.

It seemed like a power-shrunk version of <Horizontal Sweep> but a Berserker could wield two one-handed weapons or a two-handed

weapon. Its 80% melee damage would not have been any worse than a Guardian's <Horizontal Sweep>, of course, provided that both of their equipment were on the same level.

Phantom Day sighed and said, "But I'll have to wait till Level 20! And the damage is much lower than <Horizontal Sweep>!"

Before Level 20, no other class would have any AoE skills other than the Defender. Even Zhang Yang had only obtained one because of a Hidden Quest!

While the two of them were talking, the Gnome Soldiers fell one by one. Although these monsters' HP and attack were a lot higher than those in Normal Mode, it was still useless if they could not even land a hit! A higher HP had only meant that they took a longer time to kill them!

Few minutes later and 6 monsters had fallen.

"Zhan Yu, would you like to join our Lost Paradise?" Crimson Fire sent an invitation to Zhan Yu and said, "Our guild is sponsored by 'Dragon Century Corporation'. Every core member will have a fixed salary! If you join us, I can offer you an officer position and a spot in our first explorers team. The monthly salary will not be any lower than 10 thousand!"

A typical white-collar would have a salary of around 10 thousand each month. What Crimson Fire had offered was indeed not bad!

If it had been in his previous life, Zhang Yang who had just entered the game would have succumbed to this temptation and agreed immediately. However, a mere 10 thousand could not strike his interest any longer! Zhang Yang smiled and said, “Currently, I do not have any intentions to join any guild!”

“What a pity!” Crimson Fire said regretfully. He then turned his head and gave a look to Silky Snow.

The vixen subtly nodded her head and began to chat with Zhang Yang.

The beauty trap?

Zhang Yang shook his head with indifference. In his previous life, he would probably have been blinded by beauty. He was currently living a second life though, and that made Zhang Yang much more resiliently firm and steady. He regarded Silky Snow’s advances with impartiality while leading the party forward.

“Little Yang, add me into the party, I’ve completed the prerequisite quest!” A message had finally come from Fatty Han after the party had cleared their second last wave of minions.

Zhang Yang immediately sent a party invitation and an elf hunter called ‘Slim and Handsome’ appeared in the party list.

“Hurry up and come over or I’ll start the boss without you!” Zhang Yang said in the party channel.

“Don’t! Wait for me!” Fatty Han cried.

Some 7 or 8 minutes later, a jumbo-sized elf came running from the back, by his side was a black wolf.

According to the official introduction, elves were all tall and slim but ‘Slim and Handsome’ had completely destroyed the image of the noble and elegant elves. His bucket-shaped waist was already frightening to look at.

“I’m not late right?” Fatty Han scanned the party and his eyes shone when he saw Silky Snow. He ran over to her in his glorious jiggling ass and said, “Hi beautiful! I’m Slim and Handsome, the greatest hunter in the future, the one and only!”

Zhang Yang took the King Panther’s Armlet he had obtained from slaying the Black Panther King and handed it to Fatty Han. Fatty Han took it naturally without faking courtesy. Giving him a smile, he equipped himself with the armlet.

Zhang Yang said, “Alright, it’s the boss battle soon. Quiet down, I’ll explain the strategy!”

“The boss still only has 2 skills. <Death Stare>’s effect remains unchanged but <Venom Spit>’s damage has increased by 50%, and every hit could deal 300 damage. Those who have less than 300 HP would definitely be killed within seconds! Silky Snow, please make sure you cast <Holy Shield> on everyone who has less than 300 HP in order to prevent member reduction!”

In the party, a total of 4 people had less than 300 HP – Crimson Fire, Phantom Day, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots. It would seem like they have distributed their AP on damage instead of their HP.

Of course, Fatty Han's AP distribution was completely influenced by Zhang Yang. It would be meaningless if he had high HP since he would have a pet in the frontlines after Level 5 anyway.

“Is one tank really enough?” Crimson Fire expressed his worry and said, “The party I've led before had been wiped out for 7 or 8 times by this boss. It was all because the tank had accumulated too many stacks of <Death Stare> and was then killed instantly by the boss!”

“There's no need to worry, our pro brother here had accumulated over 10 stacks of <Death Stare> in Normal Mode but the boss couldn't even touch him!” Snowy Death praised earnestly, he had long since become a fan of Zhang Yang.

Crimson Fire still had his doubts but said, “Let's try it out then!” He had kept another sentence unsaid, “The boss' attack speed in Difficult Mode is much faster than in Normal Mode! Even if Zhang Yang could evade its attack in Normal Mode, that did not mean that he could do the same in Difficult Mode!”

“Let's start!” Zhang Yang took a deep breath and went to the boss wielding his sword.

“<Charge>!”

“-57!”

“-141!”

Zhang Yang chained <Horizontal Sweep> after a normal attack, causing a huge amount of damage in a short time.

“Begin the attack!”



# Chapter 21: A Piece Of Cake

---

Once Zhang Yang gave his order to attack, everyone started to deal damage with all their might.

‘Ding! You are affected by <Death Stare> (Stack 1). All damage received increased by 100%, lasts for 12 seconds!’

Not long after their attacks begun, Zhang Yang had received a debuff effect enveloping his entire body with a dark gas. Zhang Yang did not mind it but Crimson Fire was panicking internally, thinking, “The boss already has a high attack. Adding this stack of debuff means Zhang Yang would be instantly killed in just one strike!”

However, it was proven that his worries were irrelevant! Zhang Yang was dodging and attacking repeatedly without any sign of panic as he moved around agilely under the boss’ brutal attacks. The scene would have led people to believe that he was just having a stroll in his garden!

Oh come on, this is a Hard Mode boss! Crimson Fire shouted in his heart. His own guild had formed a [so-called elite dungeon explorers team](#) but they were wiped several times facing this first boss. If it had not been to witness Zhang Yang’s capabilities and to recruit him, he would have remained at the first boss, repeating the round endlessly.

How could he just dodge the boss’ attacks that easily? Crimson Fire could not comprehend it, as he had observed that Zhang Yang

had not spent much effort at all – a slide to the right, a dodge to the left, how relaxed! How was it that the two tanks from his guild became ruthlessly crushed by the boss even though they had given their all?

“As expected of brother expert!” said Snowy Death with a look of extreme pride on his face, as if he was the one fighting the boss now instead of Zhang Yang.

As Crimson Fire unrelentingly attacked the boss, his gaze towards Zhang Yang became filled with a burning passion and his desire to recruit Zhang Yang into his guild grew stronger!

The ease Zhang Yang had in dodging the boss’ attacks was, in fact, built upon his 5 years of experience of metagaming! Based on his instincts, each time the monster had made slight jerk, Zhang Yang would have been noted of where the next attack would come from and could dodge correspondingly in advance. This was all experience and metagame knowledge!

Suddenly, Black Claw stopped its attacks and turned. With a ‘ptui’, a black spit shot towards Defiant Monk.

A red damage text with ‘-300’ then floated across Defiant Monk’s head immediately. Luckily his own HP was high enough to withstand the attack. After deducting the 300 points of damage, he was still left with a mere 40 HP. With several heals from both Ocean Despair and Silky Snow, the party returned to its original attacking momentum.

To be honest, this boss' key difficulty lay with the tank!

Due to <Death Stare>, the party would usually have two tanks. These two tanks would need to coordinate the aggro to prevent the tank's death from over stacking <Death Stare> on one of them. Once one of the two tanks died, the other tank would surely end up with the same fate – unless the party was strong enough to have killed the boss before any tank had fallen.

However, Zhang Yang was an exception! Having 5 years of superior metagaming experience, dodging the boss' fierce attacks was a piece of cake – effortless! He had speculated that even if it were a boss from Hardcore Mode, he could also still perform a 90% and above dodge rate!

Now that he had solved the issue of the tank's death, this boss would definitely be a piece of cake!

90%, 80%, 70%, ...10%!

Black Claw's HP ran low and hit rock-bottom in an instance. With one last <Shield Bash> from Zhang Yang, Black Claw let out a loud growl and fell, popping equipment and gold coins on the ground.

“It's over?” Crimson Fire thought he was dreaming. This boss that had taken his guild several hours to defeat was so easily killed by a pub party in just one try?

How conflicted he was! On one hand, he had wanted Zhang Yang to kill the boss to prove his worth in being recruited; and on the other hand, he did not want the battle to end so soon, as it would only prove that his guild's elite dungeon explorers team was just a lousy piece of...

“How was it? I told you brother expert is the greatest!” Both being Bandits, Snowy Death had instinctively felt closer to Crimson Fire, patting his shoulder with a pride-filled face. Crimson Fire could not help but curse internally at him boasting about Zhang Yang's achievement like it was his.

“Litte Yang, I'm the 'Lucky Hand', let me touch the corpse!” said Fatty Han as he went over immediately to loot the corpse.

According to an official statement by 'God's Miracle', loots from monsters were determined by players who did the last strike. However, most of the players were still superstitious, choosing to believe that loots would depend on the luck of players who touched the corpse, thus the birth and existence of the terms Lucky Hand and Unlucky Hand.

Fatty Han touched the corpse and a Roll-the-Dice window for the 3 equipment immediately appeared in front of everyone.

[Black Claw Rage Fist] (Black-Steel, Fist Gloves)

Weapon Attack: 15 – 23

Attack Interval: 1.9 seconds

Level Requirement: 10

Both were fist gloves but compared to the pair in Normal Mode, this pair's Weapon Attack was obviously higher!

Both Bandits had chosen to roll while the rest of the party passed. Even though both Zhang Yang and Phantom Day could also equip themselves with fist gloves, one had already owned a Level 10 Black-Steel weapon while the other preferred two-handed weapons, so none of them rolled along with the Bandits. In the end, Snowy Death had rolled 87 and won over Crimson Fire's 82, obtaining the fist gloves.

Snowy Death happily changed into his newly obtained weapon while flaunting it to Crimson Fire. The players who were not from Lost Paradise had somewhat felt that they were much closer to Zhang Yang, subconsciously ostracizing those from said guild as they felt that Lost Paradise players seemed to have joined for convenience.

[Dog-faced Helm] (Black-Steel, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +3

Vitality: +6

Strength: +3

Dexterity: +1

Level Requirement: 10

Both Knight and Warrior classes could wear heavy armor but Ocean Despair was a healer and the helm had physical attack attributes so he voluntarily passed.

Zhang Yang, 47 points.

Phantom Day, 33 points.

“Ugh! Unlucky hands!” Phantom Day shook his head in disappointment.

Zhang Yang put on the helm and his entire face was promptly hidden behind a dog head. At a glance, he looked like an actual standing dog!

Everyone burst into laughter once they saw him.

“Little Yang! Wow! You’re so handsome right now!” Fatty Han guffawed.

Fortunately the game had the option to hide the helm and Zhang Yang checked the option immediately. Only then did the dog face disappear but the party was still holding in their snickers, the corners of their mouths twitching whenever they looked at Zhang Yang's face.

[Shiny Heavy Boots] (Black-Steel, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +3

Vitality: +5

Intelligence: +4

Spirit: +1

Level Requirement: 10

This was obviously a Sacred Knight's equipment, so everyone passed to allow Ocean Despair to obtain it without any hesitation.

‘Ding! You have received 1 silver coin and 30 copper coins in distribution!’

After distributing the equipment, the money was collected. This

boss was a stingy one, only dropping 13 silver coins.

The currency control in ‘God’s Miracle’ was fairly strict. Currency inflation was never a problem even in the later stages of the game.

“Let’s take a look at the damage statistics!” said Phantom Day excitedly. For a lot of players, raiding dungeons provided them with two pleasures in life: first, getting equipment; second, comparing damage!

When everyone checked the statistics, they were dumbfounded.

[Damage Statistics]

- 1. Zhan Yu, Total Damage 11,345, 21%
- 2. Slim and Handsome, Total Damage 8,647, 16%
- 3. Phantom Day, Total Damage 7,566, 14%
- 4. Crimson Fire, Total Damage 7,027, 13%
- 5. Hundred Shots, Total Damage 5,401, 10%
- 6. Snowy Death, Total Damage 4,863, 9%



7. Defiant Monk, Total Damage 4,861, 9%

8. Flame Emperor, Total Damage 4,328, 8%

“Zhan Yu! Are you actually a Guardian or a Berserker?” Phantom Day exclaimed. He was so confident that he would place first in dealing damage but he had never guessed that not only could he not place first, he was not even ranked second!

Fatty Han immediately agreed with him, “Yeah! That’s right! I should’ve been at the top of the list!”

This fat f\*ck had completed a Hidden Class Quest and had obtained <Precise Shot>. Even though it was only an ‘Average’ score reward skill, he still possessed an additional skill and extra AP compared to his peers. With everyone’s mediocre equipment, the advantage of having a skill would have been magnified.

Crimson Fire’s eyes burned with passion, he was even more eager to recruit such a talent now! His glinting pair of eyes was as like that of a sex-deprived widower, scaring Snowy Death who had caught a glimpse and had immediately created some distance from him, thinking that the man might have a different orientation in some aspects!

“Let us continue then!” Zhang Yang swung his sword, leading the team forward.

He had established an absolute authority, no one had any objection. After around 10 minutes of killing minions with utmost ease, the party had reached the second boss.

Compared to Normal Mode, this boss had much higher HP and damage, <Curse of Water and Fire> dealt more damage and summoned demon puppets were also more powerful. However, Zhang Yang's party had also swapped in 3 Lost Paradise elites, boosting their battle power significantly.

Therefore, Zhang Yang did not care to explain much since the boss' skills were the same. They only had to follow the same strategy as the one in Normal Mode.

With an attack command, Zhang Yang led the party and bashed the boss. Within just 4 to 5 minutes, the second boss wailed upon its death and had equipment scattered all over the ground.

Upon looting the corpse, there were only 1 leather armor and 2 cloth armor with no heavy armor in sight, annoying Phantom Day to the extent of him calling Fatty Han 'Unlucky Hands' and declaring that he was not allowed to loot the corpse the next time.

The party chatted merrily. After they had distributed the equipment, they moved on and had killed the last boss after clearing waves of minions.

Ever since defeating the first boss Black Claw, no one had any more doubts in clearing Hard Mode! Zhang Yang was ridiculously

strong. Everyone had felt that he only had to bring along a healer... no, there was probably no need for a healer, just him alone could have cleared the entire Hard Mode!

Their challenge now laid within Hardcore Mode!

A team formed to explore an uncleared dungeon to discover and understand the mechanics of the run. This will aid the top team of a guild in clearing the dungeon with record time.

## Chapter 22: Hardcore Mode

---

“Brother expert, are we still doing Hardcore Mode?” Snowy Death gazed hopefully at Zhang Yang, he was afraid that the latter might say no. It was not just him, the rest of the party was also staring at Zhang Yang with puppy eyes.

Zhang Yang had proven himself to be capable of challenging, perhaps even clearing Hardcore Mode! As for gamers like them, there was no better glory than having the server announcements spam their names.

Just imagining the rows of red text from the server announcement hovering was enough to fill one with mind-numbing excitement!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “Of course!”

Hearing his promise, the rest of the party all had delighted smiles.

“But I need to say something first!” Zhang Yang claimed, “I will need a Smithing recipe that would only be dropped by Hardcore Mode’s hidden boss, Momorermo. If anyone has any objection, speak up now so it won’t be awkward later!”

“Brother expert, I’m fine with it even if you want to claim all the equipment that dropped, let alone a recipe!” Snowy Death said excitedly.

A red text server announcement! That would have been much more enticing than any equipment!

“No problem!” the crowd replied.

“Alright, let’s go to Hardcore Mode!” Zhang Yang adjusted the dungeon difficulty and said, “Let’s go!”

One by one, all ten of them stepped through the dungeon entrance of Bangar Crypt for the third time.

‘Ding! You have entered Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode)!’

“Tsk tsk tsk, Hardcore Mode. Just the announcement alone fills one with gusto!” Defiant Monk laughed as he said, “Are we the first party to challenge Bangar Crypt in Hardcore Mode?”

“It must be so!” Ocean Despair, too, boasted uncharacteristically.

“Brother Zhan Yu, how confident are you in clearing Hardcore Mode?” Laced with Crimson Fire’s casual tone of asking was his immense anticipation. As a guildmaster, he was more desperate than anyone else to be announced as the first to clear Hardcore Mode. It would be of tremendous help in spreading the name of his guild!

At first, Crimson Fire had only wanted to observe Zhang Yang’s

capabilities personally to decide what conditions to offer in recruiting him to his guild. However, Zhang Yang's performance in Hard Mode had already amazed him. If he could also clear Hardcore Mode, this would be an unexpected surprise for Crimson Fire!

“Bangar Crypt is the game's first dungeon, so even if it's Hardcore Mode, it's not impossibly difficult. As long as we play according to tactics, chances of clearing the dungeon is still very high!” Zhang Yang remained reserved in his speech.

Crimson Fire, though, was delightfully surprised, “Both Sky High and The Dominators are clearing Hardcore Mode's first boss, I've heard that they have been wiped for over ten times. Can we really surpass them?”

Sky High and The Dominators were both long standing guilds in games in the China region. Their distinguished existence had been undeniable in past online games, boasting impressive dungeon records! Since ‘God's Miracle’ was launched, the guilds had also sent their main members into the game. Although Lost Paradise was also a sponsored semi-professional guild, they would only be a lightweight contender in comparison to Sky High and The Dominators.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “We should be okay!”

“I believe in brother expert!” Snowy Death had immediately expressed his trust in Zhang Yang, his faith solid as a rock.

Zhang Yang straightened up his sword and said, “Well, get ready to fight! Fully utilize your potions if you can, the monsters in Hardcore Mode are very fierce and we’ll need to maximize our DPS!” He stepped forward and used <Charge> towards the 6 monsters that were standing at the entrance. ‘-70’, a normal attack landed on one of the monsters.

His Rage rose to 21 points and Zhang Yang used <Horizontal Sweep>.

“-144!”

“-159!”

“-143!”

“-900!”

“-153!”

“-148!”

“D\*mn!” Phantom Day could not help but cursed as he witnessed a huge “-900” damage text appeared above the monster’s head. It was not just him, the rest were as bewildered!

Zhang Yang was surprised too. The reason behind such devastating damage was a complete coincidental superimposition

of a <Critical Strike> with a <Lucky Strike>, resulting in a total increase of 600%!

<Lucky Strike> dealt 3 times more than a regular attack, its trigger rate determined by the Luck attribute.

Due to the monster's high defense, classes like Thieves and Hunters who rely on the Dexterity attribute could only deal mediocre damage because a normal attack was a mere 10 or so damage. They could only deal greater damage by casting skills but even then, it would only be 30-50 points of damage at the most. Witnessing such a ridiculously high damage of 900, not a single soul was spared from being dumbfounded.

“Zhan Yu, now I'm actually glad that you're not a Berserker! If you had used a two-handed weapon with <Horizontal Sweep> just now, that damage would have reached 1,500!” Phantom Day patted his chest in relief, he had long since given up the idea of comparing damage output with Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “Amp up the DPS! The faster we clear this, the quicker we get to wrap things up!”

Zhang Yang had kept something unsaid, which would be the implementation of an ‘Inheritance Patch’ in the future. Once it was released, each class would have an opportunity to obtain an ‘Inheritance’. For example, a Warrior would have the Spirit Swordsman, Barbarian, God of War and so on for Inheritance; a Spirit Swordsman would have a 30% damage increase when sword-typed weapons were used in attacks.



The most powerful of all was the God of War Inheritance, it would be a unique inheritance where only one person in the whole world could obtain! One of God of War Inheritance's effects was to grant a Guardian or a Berserker the ability to equip two-handed weapons, dual wield one-handed weapons, or a shield in off-hand slot!

This meant that as long as Zhang Yang obtained the God of War Inheritance, he could still use two-handed weapons or dual wield one-handed weapons simultaneously! However, the patch would only be launched when players have reached Level 100. That would be at least a year later!

Everyone was motivated when they had witnessed Zhang Yang's damage power. There was no one who did not deal their damage to the best of their ability. They knew that they could never be on the same level as this madman but they did not want to lose to everyone else at the very least!

With this setup, waves after waves of minions were wiped and very soon, the party had arrived at the first boss, Black Claw.

This was the third time seeing that familiar dog face!

[Black Claw, Guarding Beast of Crypt Entrance] (Green-Copper Boss)

Level: 12

HP: 72,000

Compared to Normal Mode, the HP was doubled while the rarity had risen from Black-Steel to Green-Copper!

“F\*ck this, that’s over 70,000 HP! It’s crazy!” Fatty Han wiped his saliva and looked at his poor little white pig’s pitiful 300 HP. He could not help but cry. “Little Yang, can I make this boss my pet?”

“What do you think?” Zhang Yang rolled his eyes at Fatty and said, “This boss still isn’t difficult, it just has higher attack, <Venom Spit> can now cause over 400 damage. Let’s just hope that it targets our healers less frequently!”

Zhang Yang’s HP had reached 410 points from obtaining the ‘dog head’. Other than him, only Flame Emperor and Snowy Death had above 400 HP. That would mean once the rest of the party members were in contact with <Venom Spit>, they would be wiped.

Zhang Yang pondered and said, “Silky, by all means, make sure everyone with 320 HP and above has <Holy Shield>. Give up on those with lower HP!”

Since <Holy Shield> could absorb 80 points of damage, those with 320 HP and above could still barely survive after receiving <Venom Spit> with the shield. However, those with less than 320 HP would die from an attack even with <Holy Shield>. Using <Holy Shield>

on them would only be a waste of MP.

“Let’s go!” Zhang Yang walked a few steps forward and used <Charge> towards Black Claw.

‘-57!’

A sword slashed and the white damage text floated above the boss’ head.

Black Claw had recovered quickly and let out a fierce growl, swinging its claws to attack Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang hurriedly evaded while swinging the sword in his hand, using another normal attack.

‘-60!’

As his Rage rose to 29, Zhang Yang used <Horizontal Sweep>.

‘-145!’

Zhang Yang held back from using <Block> because the boss’ attack speed in Hardcore Mode was incredibly fast. Even Zhang Yang could not ensure a 100% evasion rate, so he would only activate <Block> when he could not evade the attack in time to keep himself from harm’s way.

‘Ding! You are affected by <Death Stare> (Stack 1). All damage received increased by 100%. Lasts for 12 seconds!’

Very soon, Zhang Yang was stacked with a number of <Death Stare>s.

The others had already started their attacks on the boss as soon as Zhang Yang had pulled the boss.

“Ding! You are affected by <Death Stare> (Stack 2). All damage received increased by 200%. Lasts for 12 seconds!”

20 seconds later, Zhang Yang was targeted with the second stack of <Death Stare>! Black Claw’s melee attacks was around 200 in Hardcore Mode and so, along with the debuff, Zhang Yang would have suffered from a 600 points damage which would instantly kill him in just a single attack even with the 20% damage reduction passive skill.

“Easy?! How could this boss have such rapid attack speed!” Phantom Day exclaimed. In his opinion, he was amazing if he could have dodged just one out of a hundred of the boss’ attacks. But it seemed like the faster the boss attacked, the quicker Zhang Yang’s reflexes became, almost as if the limit for his upgrade in technique and skill was the sky!

Truthfully, Zhang Yang was far from unleashing his full potential but with the limitation of equipment and insufficient Dexterity, he could only perform to this level!

Excluding Zhang Yang, the rest of the party members were extremely anxious that he would be wiped out by the boss at any given moment. Their tension was similar to that of tightrope walking, where a slight carelessness would spell doom!

To err is to be human. Zhang Yang was not a robot, and he eventually made a small mistake. He was just half a step slower!

A fatal half step!

Watching the unavoidable massive claw heading inevitably towards Zhang Yang led the party to feel disappointed. However, they had actually let out a sigh of relief in their subconscious minds – To err is to be human, otherwise they would have been God!

‘Ding! You have blocked Black Claw’s attack!’

‘-39!’ <Block> reflected damage.

‘-204!’ <Shield Bash> succeeded in dealing a <Critical Strike>.

Under disbelieving gazes, Zhang Yang had displayed an absolute counter. The <Block> that he had been saving all this time had ultimately become 1, resolutely unraveling the devastating strike!

“Is that even possible?” Crimson Fire was stunned! He was certain that the 2 tanks in his guild would not have enough time to activate <Block> in the event that they failed to dodge an attack!

After a while of madly attacking Zhang Yang, Black Claw turned his head and spat black venom targeting Hundred Shots.

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots has died!’

Hundred Shots was instantly killed with a devastating 400 damage.

“Carry on the attack! Or else we’ll all die!” Zhang Yang shouted. He brandished his sword and continued to attack the beast.

90%, 80%... Black Claw’s HP was slowly reducing.

‘Ding! Player Phantom Day has died!’

...

70%!

‘Ding! Player Ocean Despair has died!’

...

10%!

‘Ding! Player Crimson Fire has died!’

When Black Claw’s HP was at its final 10%, Zhang Yang’s party was also at its final 3 players, him, Fatty Han and Silky Snow!

“Come on!” The 7 players who had fallen cheered.

8%, 7%, 6%, 5%!

‘Ding! Player Slim and Handsome has died!’

“Go all out, Silky, forget shielding and healing, let’s attack together!” Zhang Yang shouted. If he was the sole survivor, the boss’ <Venom Spit> would definitely target him too. He was sure he could dodge this in Normal or even Hard Mode but the boss’ skill activation speed was too fast in Hardcore Mode. Furthermore, the distance between the two of them was too short, and it would be impossible to dodge!

Silky Snow complied and immediately began casting <Holy Ray>.

4%, 3%!

‘Ding! Player Silky Snow has died!’

“Come on!”

“Kill it!”

“Pro, you can do it!”

Fatty Han and the others got excited, shouting as loud as they could. None of them was willing to let all that they had done end in vain at 1%.

2%!

1%!

Suddenly, Black Claw’s attacks paused and the black venom was spat!

“F\*ck!” Everyone cried in their hearts.

Zhang Yang remained calm and continued slashing with the sword in his hand, dealing another 2 attacks.

‘-62!’ Normal Attack.

‘-840!’ <Horizontal Sweep>, <Critical Strike> on top of <Lucky Strike>!

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu has died!’



‘Ding! The party you are in has killed Black Claw!’

The two system notifications rang. Zhang Yang and Black Claw fell at the same time!

# Chapter 23: Close Call

---

“Is it over?”

“It’s over!”

Everyone went from hesitance to surprise and then to cheering with glee. If it was not for their characters being dead, they would all be hugging each other in celebration.

Especially for Crimson Fire. maybe normal players like Snowy Death could not fully grasp the actual difficulty of Hardcore Mode but he had full comprehension! Even super guilds like Sky High and The Dominators had died repeatedly in their attempts at the first boss. Under Zhang Yang’s lead though, they had actually cleared the first boss with just one try. If it was said to be sheer luck, Crimson Fire would disagree!

This man, Zhan Yu, he was certainly impressive!

“Revive and run back! We will distribute the loot!” Zhang Yang was the first to release his body and return to the start of the dungeon in his soul form.

Ever since his rebirth, this would be his first time experiencing the soul form. Looking at the monochrome surrounding, Zhang Yang felt a surge of dizziness and ran to resurrect himself at the dungeon entrance disarrayed. Within a flash, the colors returned and only then did he regain his train of thoughts.

The rest of the party had revived one by one and all ten of them stood before Black Claw's massive corpse soon after. The crowd was still excited as ever. They would have believed they were in a dream if not for the corpse that laid in front of them! Fatty Han had even tried to hug Silky Snow but she had pushed Phantom Day into his embrace instead.

“Pro bro, loot the corpse!” Everyone turned their gaze to Zhang Yang. Before this, they could never have seen themselves defeating a Hardcore Mode boss! They were all grateful to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang patted Fatty Han's shoulder and said, “Fat f\*ck, go loot the corpse!”

Fatty Han let out a joyful laugh and touched the corpse with his plump hand.

[Fang] (Green-Copper, Dagger)

Weapon Attack: 24 – 32

Attack Interval: 1.4 seconds

Level Requirement: 10

Green-Copper equipment! This was by far the highest grade of equipment!

Both Thief and Warrior classes could use daggers but only a Thief specialized in Assassination could bring out the full potential of a dagger! The party had two Thieves but both of them were Bandits, that had only meant that no one in the party was suitable for this weapon.

“Warriors, Thieves, just roll for it if you want!” Zhang Yang nodded his head.

Being courteous, after Zhang Yang had passed, Phantom Day followed suit. Only Crimson Fire and Snowy Death rolled for the weapon.

This time round, Crimson Fire had rolled a 98, winning over Snowy Death.

“Such a pity. If only it were a one-handed sword, axe, or even hammer, it would have been the best!” Crimson Fire sighed disappointedly as he equipped the dagger to his offhand slot.

“It’s still not bad! Even though offhand weapon does not affect skill damage, just looking at DPS, this dagger’s DPS has reached 20, much better than Black-Steel equipment!” said Snowy Death enviously. To every profession in the game, weapons played the major role in dealing the most damage!

“Fatty Bro! Continue looting!” said Defiant Monk. Fatty Han was a social butterfly, he could bullshit and banter, and had been the best of friends with the party members.

Fatty Han looted with his fat hand again and another equipment popped out.

[Shiny Chest Plate] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +10

Strength: +3

Dexterity: +7

Level Requirement: 10

“Great item!” Fatty Han was gleeful, “I do have ‘Red Hand’!”

The 3 Hunters and Snowy Death had rolled. Crimson Fire had consciously passed since he had already obtained a weapon. In the end, Hundred Shots had gotten the equipment with 85 points.

“Sigh, I do have ‘Red Hand’ but why is my roll so unlucky?” Fatty Han shook in head for show and looted the corpse again for the last equipment.

[Refined Metal Gauntlet] (Green-Copper, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +6

Strength: +3

Dexterity: +1

Level Requirement: 10

As all the players saw that the equipment was of use to Zhang Yang, they had passed without a sound from Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang did not feigned courtesy as well, with a “thanks” he equipped the gauntlet at once, increasing his HP to 470 and attack damage from 82 to 90!

“Ding! You have received 5 silver coins and 20 copper coins after distribution!”

After collecting all the loots, the corpse began to disappear. The system was obviously very stingy as it had only awarded 52 silver coins even after defeating a Hardcore Mode boss.

“Next target, the second boss!”

The party went on their way to the second boss Babarerba in high spirits.

This first dungeon was indeed easy!

Zhang Yang could not help but think after clearing the last wave of minions. Minions from the second dungeon Marzerway's Lair and onwards would have been much tougher to handle. They would either have tricky skills or they would know <Sneak>, lurking in the shadows until players were within their aggro affective range then jumping out to ambush!

Of course, the trickiest would still be the bosses. The bosses in Bangar Crypt were so much easier compared to the upcoming dungeons. This Hardcore Mode could only be considered as a trial version!

[Babarerba the Sleepyhead] (Black-Steel Boss)

Level: 13

HP: 78000

“Little Yang! Same old tactic?” asked Fatty Han quietly, fearing that he might wake the boss up.

“Same old!” Zhang Yang nodded. He then frowned and said, “But those cursed with <Curse of Water and Fire> will lose 140 damage per second. So not only do you need to react faster, move to position and take a red pot at once, healers must also be quick on healing!”

140 damage per second was enough to wipe out most of the party members under 3 to 4 seconds.

Zhang Yang took a second to think and said, “Let’s change the strategy up a bit for this round. Don’t bother to attack the summoned puppets, focus your attacks on the boss solely. I’ll hold onto the puppets’ aggro! The healers won’t be able to handle this massive amount of healing so we can’t afford to drag this on. Kill the boss quickly!”

“Understood!” the crowd nodded.

“Alright, once I start attacking the boss, all of you attack instantly, go all out!” Zhang Yang took a deep breath and walked towards Babarerba’s aggro range.

Babarerba woke up at once. It took its spear and dashed towards Zhang Yang yelling, “Foul mortal, you’ve awoken Babarerba! Babaerba will kill you!”



Zhang Yang stunned Babarerba with a <Charge>.

“-60!” Normal attack.

“-152!” <Horizontal Sweep>.

At the same time, the entire party launched their attacks.

Babarerba had recovered quickly and thrusted its spear towards Zhang Yang.

“<Block>!”

“-40!” <Block> reflected damage.

“-106!” <Shield Bash>.

This time, Zhang Yang did not hold back on using <Block>. Firstly, the boss did not have any debuffing skills, even if he had accidentally been attacked, he would not be instantly killed. Secondly, this boss' DPS was too strong, Zhang Yang had to maximize his own attack power!

Babarerba was enraged, its eyes grew crimson and casted its skill.

“Ding! Player Phantom Day has been affected by <Curse of

Water>, losing 140 HP per second. Effect will remain until player's death!"

"Ding! Player Defiant Monk has been affected by <Curse of Fire>, losing 140 HP per second. Effect will remain until player's death!"

"Don't be adamant on attacking, run now!" Zhang Yang commanded lowly.

Phantom Day and Defiant Monk were team players, both of them ran towards each other promptly while the two healers did their work, doing everything they could to make sure the two cursed players survived.

Within 2 seconds, the curse was dispelled as the two of them quickly got together.

"Good job! Return to your position and attack!" Zhang Yang commanded while evading the boss' attacks. "Healers drink your blue pots if you need to, don't try to save on those!"

After 15 seconds, Babarerba had casted <Curse of Fire and Water> again. Thankfully the party had already formed a certain degree of tacit understanding after grinding together in Hard Mode. Adding Zhang Yang's authoritative stance, once he had prompted, they ran to position without hesitating; plus the hard work from the healers, there was no sign of losing players.

Slowly and steadily, Babarerba's HP had dropped to 75%!

“You despicable vermin! Babarerba is angry!” It then stabbed its spear into the ground and raised both its arms chanting a spell, “Come forth demon from the depth of the abyss, bring evil with you into this realm!”

A hexagram magic circle appeared beneath Babarerba’s feet and a red imp appeared by his side. This was the second time the party had met Tasair.

[Tasair, Babarerba’s Demon Puppet] (Elite)

Level: 13

HP: 6000

Without further delay, Zhang Yang used <Provoke> before Tasair could do anything.

“!#\$\$% (demonic language)!” Tasair shrieked and waved its claw towards Zhang Yang.

“<Block>!”

“-46!”

“-40!” Two <Block> reflected damage text appeared together.

“-160!”

“-150!” <Horizontal Sweep>.

Zhang Yang jerked his hand, his sturdy shield bashed Babarerba’s face, “Ignore the imp! Focus on the boss!”

“-106!” <Shield Bash>.

Pained by Zhang Yang’s continuous attacks, Babarerba picked up the spear stabbed into the ground and thrust it towards Zhang Yang. At the same time, it casted <Curse of Fire and Water>.

Both cursed ones moved instantly, dispelling the curse just as their HP bars were almost emptied.

“Zhan Yu, I only have half MP left!” said Silky Snow.

“I only have slightly more than half too!” Ocean Despair echoed.

“I got it!” Zhang Yang frowned. Hardcore Mode had required players to have decent equipment before raiding! According to the official guide: spend two days to raid Hard Mode then Hardcore Mode. A strong team may defeat the first boss then spend another two days raiding and collecting equipment before trying out the second boss. The final boss had always been the hardest. Without 4

to 5 days of dungeon exploring, it would be undefeatable!

If it had not been for Zhang Yang, this party would never have been able to clear Hard Mode, their basic equipment was pathetic as evident in raiding Hardcore Mode: insufficient DPS and healing ability!

Zhang Yang had left this issue in the hands of god now since he would not be able to do anything about it.

Since the party did not have to change their attack target, it was as if dealing damage on a wooden dummy, reducing the boss' HP to 50% quickly!

“Foolish mortals, I will crush your bones to make my goblet!” Babarerba had so many programmed lines. He threw his spear aside once again and started to summon the second puppet.

A hexagram magic circle appeared and another imp joined the battle.

[Gluttony, Babarerba's Demon Puppet] (Elite)

Level: 13

HP: 6000

Zhang Yang was ready with his <Horizontal Sweep>. After casting <Provoke>, he had quickly chained <Horizontal Sweep>.

The floating creature turned immediately and waved its plump limbs towards Zhang Yang.

“Hey Fatty! Looks like this guy is much fatter than you!” Zhang Yang joked, an attempt to humor the current stressful atmosphere.

“Oh f\*ck off!”

Fatty Han puffed angrily and said, “I’m fatter than it!”

In his opinion, being fat was a sign of strength. He would never take second to anyone or anything!

## Chapter 24: Jubilant March

---

The importance of a good leader to a team could be seen from Zhang Yang's [pub party](#)!

Pub party is a gaming community lingo for public party. These are parties formed by recruiting players in public, and their efficiency can be quite inconsistent, since more experienced players would normally choose to venture into dungeons or quests with pre-made parties with their guild members or own social circles. For achievement-related objectives like First Clear and Speedruns, players would generally choose to avoid pub parties due to their unreliability.

Under Zhang Yang's timely reminder, those afflicted with <Curse of Water and Fire> had instantly moved positions to dispel the curse. They had not lost anyone as of yet! If it had been another party, they would have been disoriented by the chaotic situation, and would have repeatedly wiped out for several times now!

“Despicable mortals! Babarerba has underestimated you, Babarerba will be serious now!” As its HP fell to 25%, Babarerba began its third summon, “Come forth demon from the depth of the abyss...”

The hexagram magic circle flashed again, and a sensual woman appeared beside Babarerba. It had two long horns on the top of its head and a long tail behind its back. Its hand was holding a whip, and its legs were a pair of hoofs!

Its outfit was exceptionally skimpy, its upper body was only covered by a small leopard-skinned bra, revealing most of its skin

while its lower body was clad in a lace mini skirt. Truly a seductive feast for one's eyes.

[Alice, Babarerba's Demon Puppet] (Elite)

Level: 13

HP: 6,000

Succubus, a demon ranked higher than the imp and floating demon but considering the fact that it was brought in as a summoned puppet in this dungeon, it did not have any specific skill set.

“Slap!” Alice struck with its whip, its hips swaying as she posed lewdly, “Mm... My dear master, you've summoned Alice, do you wish to do something naughty?”

“F\*ck me, is this for real?” Fatty Han wiped his saliva, “Little Yang, can I get her as a pet? Just seeing her beside me every day will definitely boost my mood a hundred fold!”

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “Change your class to Priest or Spellcaster and you might have a chance to get the Summoner Inheritance when the Inheritance Patch is launched. You'd then be able to summon a variety of demons, including this succubus!”



Fatty Han looked longingly at Alice with heart-shaped eyes and finally said unwillingly, “Fine! I’ll remain a Hunter, a class with a confirmed future!”

“Zhan Yu, my blue pot is out!” said Silky Snow.

Ocean Despair followed, “I can probably heal another 2 more times!”

Truthfully, it had been lucky that the 2 of them had held up till now! In a dungeon raid, a tank would usually receive most of the healing. However, since Zhang Yang had an exceptionally high damage evasion capability, he basically had not drained any of the healers’ MP. That was why these two could manage to hold on till now! Otherwise, if they were to heal another tank with their current equipment configuration, they would have depleted their MP much earlier.

“Healers ran out of blue pots. Everyone get ready with your own red pots, don’t be stingy on those! Move even faster if you’re cursed with <Curse of Water and Fire>, don’t wait for my reminder!” said Zhang Yang in the party channel.

“Roger!”

The players attacked with all their might since the healers had completely exhausted their blue pots. The boss would never stop casting <Curse of Water and Fire> just because they had no more blue pots. If the fight dragged on, they would all be annihilated!

22%, 19%, 16%!

‘Ding! Player Snowy Death has died!’

‘Ding! Player Defiant Monk has died!’

The boss had casted <Curse of Water and Fire> again. Since Snowy Death and Defiant Monk only had 200 HP left and their red pots were still on cooldown, they died from the curse after taking just 2 steps despite reacting in time.

“Keep up with the attacks!” Zhang Yang’s sword slashed. He was evading 4 monsters’ attacks while dealing significant damage at the same time, “Silky, Ocean! Come to the melee range!”

Silky Snow and Ocean Despair were confused yet they did not hesitate and immediately ran to the boss’ side. They had nothing to do anyway, so they took out their weapons and began attacking the boss, dealing a stream of ‘-1’ attacks.

14%, 11%, 9%!

‘Ding! Player Silky Snow has died!’

‘Ding! Player Flame Emperor has died!’

“Phantom Day and Crimson Fire are the main DPS. And they’re the only two players at melee position. If no one came to fill the

space up, they will definitely be nuked!” Zhang Yang casually explained.

“Damn, Little Yang, how could you be so sly! You sacrificed our lovely Silky just like that?” Fatty Han complained in Silky Snow’s stead while checking out her body lying on the floor, cussing in his heart that her skirt could have been lifted higher so he could peek more clearly.

“I’m happy that I could at least be of use till the end!” Silky Snow sent a smiley face in the party channel.

Fatty Han teased immediately, “Lovely Silky! I’ve been in love with you all along! You’ve better not have a change of heart and fall for Little Yang! Let Fatty Bro tell you, that guy could go 3 months without showering even once. You can smell his foul odor even from 3 kilometers away!”

Silky Snow smiled bashfully and ignored Fatty Han.

7%, 6%, 4%!

‘Ding! Player Crimson Fire has died!’

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots has died!’

“Come on, almost there!” the fallen players cried, thinking if it would be a close call just like the battle against Black Claw.

Zhang Yang thought and said, “Ocean, you move to the ranged position!” 3 of them were in melee position right now while Fatty Han was the only one in a ranged position. If there was no adjustment, Fatty Han would definitely die! Fatty Han was currently the second highest DPS output and Zhang Yang needed him to survive until the end. He could only depend on luck now to see who the boss would target!

3%! 2%!

‘Ding! Player Phantom Day has died!’

‘Ding! Player Ocean Despair has died!’

“Yeah!” Everyone cheered when the boss had targeted Ocean Despair instead of Fatty Han, making Ocean Despair feel miserable. “It’s not like I had offended any of you. Do you guys have to be so happy about this?”

1%!

0%!

With the last drop of HP drained, Babarerba fell with a shriek.

‘Ding! The party you are in has killed Babarerba! Obtained 39,050 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!’

“We did it! We did it again!” the party applauded endlessly. Before this, who would have thought that a pub party like theirs could take out 2 bosses in a row as though it was a piece of cake!

“Wow, so much EXP!” Fatty Han exclaimed.

Zhang Yang brandished his sword to continue dealing damage to the 3 remaining demons and said indifferently, “If you had died, I would have gained more EXP!” He paused and said, “Everyone don’t release your bodies yet, there should be an achievement!”

Fatty Han ordered his pet to attack while drawing his bow and asked, “Little Yang, what achievement?”

“Some superficial shit, it’s just to show off what you have accomplished without actually rewarding anything!” Zhang Yang replied casually.

Even though all 3 demon puppets had 6,000 HP each, they still did not last long under the combined attacks of Zhang Yang and Fatty Han. Quickly, they died one by one.

‘Ding! You have obtained the achievement, I Can 1V4!’

“What is this stuff?” Fatty Han said.

Zhang Yang explained, “This Achievement System is usually

available in Hardcore Mode dungeons and it's usually used to encourage a more difficult killing method. For example, we've completely ignored the summoned puppets and only targeted the boss. The system has identified this as a harder method and rewarded us with this achievement title!"

Only then did everyone understand. However, what they knew better was the fact that they could not have gotten their hands on this achievement if it were not for Zhang Yang's capabilities! Why couldn't their equipment be better to allow them to kill the boss normally?

"Revive yourselves!"

8 of them released their bodies. While running back they asked, "Zhan Yu, are there any other achievements outside of the dungeons?"

"There are, and many more so. You probably couldn't obtain all of them even after playing for 10 years!" Zhang Yang organized his thoughts and said, "For example, if you get killed by the same person for 100 times, you'll get an achievement called 'I Hate You'! If you get killed 1,000 times by the same person, you'll get 'I Hate You to the Core'!"

"..."

When everyone had returned from resurrection, Zhang Yang told Fatty Han, "Go loot the corpse!"

Fatty Han had been waiting impatiently, this was the moment he had been waiting for after such a long battle with the boss!

“Behold! Fatty Bro’s big Lucky Hand!” Fatty Han extended his fat hand towards the boss’ corpse.

“Brother Han, wash that hand first!” Snowy Death shouted.

[Lightning Spear] (Green-Copper, Two-handed Spear)

Weapon Attack: 85 – 113

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 26

Level Requirement: 10

“G-good stuff!” Phantom Day began to drool, his eyes radiating desire.

Aside from him, the rest of the party had automatically passed. The equipment went straight into Phantom Day’s inventory.

“Thank you everyone, thank you!” Phantom Day equipped the

spear at once, bowing in appreciation to everyone, “Especially Big Bro Zhan Yu!”

Fatty Han got angry and said, “Phantom Day, I was the one who’d looted the corpse! Why didn’t you thank me?”

“Thank you Fatty Bro!” Phantom Day was slaphappy with euphoria, quickly bowing to Fatty and causing everyone to laugh.

[Heavy Boots] (Green-Copper, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +5

Strength: +4

Dexterity: +1

Level Requirement: 10

‘Sha’, the moment the Roll-the-Dice window appeared, 9 of them passed, giving Zhang Yang an unconditional win on the equipment dropped.



“Thank you everyone!” Zhang Yang courteously thanked the party and equipped the boots. His character’s attributes increased immediately.

HP: 520, Strength: 70, Armor: 31, Attack Damage: 86 – 94.

[Babarerba’s Secretly Stashed Succubus Mini Skirt] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Aarmor: +2

Vitality: +10

Intelligent: +7

Spirit: +3

Level Requirement: 10

Once this equipment came up, everyone was dumbfounded. All of them had clearly remembered it to be the same mini skirt the succubus had been wearing just now. If a female player were to wear it... that would definitely cause nosebleeds!

“Damn, that boss was too depraved! Despicable!” Fatty Han claimed, full of righteousness. Despite saying that, his eyes went back and forth between the skirt and Silky Snow, not bothering to hide his own lustful intentions!

“Together. we request this equipment to be given to Silky babe!” Snowy Death yelled.

Only 2 players were able to equip cloth armor – Silky Snow and Flame Emperor. As long as Flame Emperor passed, the equipment would belong to Silky Snow.

Flame Emperor laughed and unhesitatingly chose to pass. Since they were both from the same guild, it would belong to the same stash no matter who had it. Moreover, he was a male character. Wearing a skirt would be too much for the eyes to take in. He would have never dared to wear something like that, unless it were Celestial equipment.

Silky Snow’s face flushed with embarrassment.

## Chapter 25: The Undefeatable Boss

---

“Lovely Silky, you must put on the skirt to increase the party’s morale!” said Fatty Han righteously even though he was drooling.

“Yeah! Yeah!” A bunch of wolves started to cheer.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “Even if she does put it on, you guys won’t have a chance to see it. Can’t you guys see that she is wearing a dress?”

The animals were disappointed when they heard it.

Fatty Han straightened his collars and said, “Well then, Fatty Bro must continue to work harder, I’ll definitely loot a cloth armor top from the next boss!”

“Alright, settle down. Let’s move on to the last boss!” Zhang Yang swung his sword around.

“Zhan Yu! Now that I have a new weapon, my damage output will definitely not lose to you!” Phantom Day said confidently.

Weapons played a major role in increasing damage output. Phantom Day was using a Level 5 Black-Steel two-handed sword obtained from a Class Quest. Now that he had swapped it with a Level 10 Green-Copper two-handed spear, his attack power had increased significantly, as did his confidence!

Zhang Yang smiled a little and said, “Okay! Let’s fight for it!”

The party went forward and cleared the minions, finally arriving at the final boss after going through a small passageway.

Before engaging, Phantom Day checked the damage statistics and felt down once again. Even though his damage output had surpassed Fatty Han, he was still immensely behind Zhang Yang, their difference a total landslide.

If it compared damage done on single targets, Phantom Day would catch up and quite possibly even surpass Zhang Yang after equipping himself with the new weapon. However, facing waves of minions which led to there being multiple targets, Phantom Day who was without any AoE1 skills would still lose to Zhang Yang because of his <Horizontal Sweep>.

“I’ve never thought that we could actually come this far!” Crimson Fire exclaimed as they stood together facing the final boss. To think that 2 hours ago, he was still dying repeatedly at Hard Mode’s first boss yet now here he stood before the final boss of Hardcore Mode.

The passion to recruit Zhang Yang burned even stronger. Of course, he also wanted Fatty Han whose damage output was incredibly high. The best case scenario would be recruiting them both. Crimson Fire sent a private message to Silky Snow saying, “How are you doing? Do you think you could get a hold on Zhan Yu?”

“That guy seems like he won’t buy anything I try!” Silky Snow replied quickly.

Crimson Fire replied, “I believe in you! You’re our Lost Paradise’s ultimate babe! As long as you put in more effort, even the strongest of steel will melt into cotton fluff.”

“Sigh, I’ll need to be a honeypot again!”

“It’s not so bad. This is just a game anyway, you don’t even have to do the real deed! Give him a little bait to entice him, isn’t that the best trick up your sleeve?”

“Hmph, let me put out my disclaimer first. I’m all for baiting Zhan Yu, he’s hot anyway. But that fatty is an eyesore, don’t even try to ask me to do anything!” said Silky Snow.

“Sure. Do your best, you must bring Zhan Yu into our guild! You’ve also seen what he can do! If he joined us, our Lost Paradise will surely be among the strongest guilds in ‘God’s Miracle’! And when that happens, our sponsorship will increase by at least 10 folds!” Crimson Fire was worried that Silky Snow would not give her best so he had quickly explained the stakes involved.

“I got it! He’s sure to fall for me with just a flick of my fingers!” said Silky Snow confidently.

...

“The final boss is a problematic one!” Zhang Yang stopped at the entrance of the boss’ field and hesitated. “This boss has two skills. There’s one that spews fire which causes around 500 damage. Most players would be killed with just one strike! The other skill with the fire pits has its duration increased to 120 seconds. After 2 minutes into the battle, there will literally be no spots to stand on. The damage by the pits are around 200 points, you’ll die quickly if you remain in there!”

Dadarerda in Hardcore Mode had been dubbed one of the most frustrating bosses ever by players in his previous life! Due to the many fire pits in addition to the boss’ flame spits, there would technically be nowhere to evade it. Death was certain, be it from <Flamethrower> or <Lava Pit>!

The First Kill of this boss had only been achieved by a party which had depended on their level and equipment when its players had achieved an average of Level 30. That was how overwhelming the two skills were!

However, somebody had discovered later on that there was a terrain bug in Hardcore Mode boss’ field. The boss would not cast fire pits on that specific spot. With this, there was finally a possibility to defeat this boss provided one had reached a certain level of skill.

Once the bug tactic was leaked, the boss became much easier to kill. The developers did not issue any penalty nor attempt to fix the terrain bug. Instead, they had recognized this tactic as a battle strategy. With regards to this issue, the developers had explained: When the boss was designed, they had ‘slightly’ underestimated

the effect of <Lava Pit>, causing the boss to be overly strong. Since there were players who had discovered the bug tactic, even if it had violated the game's original intention, they would have to let bygones be bygones.

Zhang Yang knew very well that without the bug, the party's level and equipment would have never been enough to nuke the boss within 2 minutes! If they had not been able to do that, then they could only be burnt to their deaths by the fire pits!

However, he could not think of an acceptable reason to reveal the method! "I read it on the internet!" seemed to be quite acceptable but how could it be possible to have found every single detail online!

He then decided to have the party to first try it out normally before revealing the bug tactic.

The party had killed two bosses in a row, thus all of them were bearing much confidence and were eager to take on this boss. They did not perceive the boss to be as difficult as they had thought of before.

Zhang Yang shook his head, thinking of how he would be nuked for once.

"Same old plan, kill the star-marked first followed by the sun-marked!" Said Zhang Yang as he tagged the two monsters with the marks and dashed over with his sword.

<Charge>!

‘-71!’ Normal attack.

‘-167!’

‘146!’ <Horizontal Sweep>.

Dadarerda and its two guards rushed towards Zhang Yang growling. Within a short while, the field was filled with sounds of sword clashing.

Everyone had nailed their teamwork, attacking the star-marked monster without waiting for Zhang Yang’s instructions.

‘Ding! Dadarerda used <Lava Pit>. Lasts for 120 seconds!’

Dadarerda spread its arms. With a flash of red light, 10 blazing pits appeared and spread all over the field.

The party swiftly moved, avoiding the pits and continuing their attacks on the star-marked target.

‘Ding! The party you are in has killed a Royal Guard! Obtained 650 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!’

The star-marked monster was nuked by the party in an instant.



Dadarerda growled and a progress bar appeared on its head.

‘Ding! Dadarerda has used <Flamethrower>!’

“Prepare to evade!” said Zhang Yang as he pulled the sun-marked monster around Dadarerda.

When the boss’ <Flamethrower> had ended, the sun-marked monster only had less than 25% HP remaining – the team’s damage power had indeed increased after Phantom Day had equipped a new weapon.

‘Ding! Dadarerda used <Lava Pit>. Lasts for 120 seconds!’

‘Ding! The party you are in has killed a Royal Guard! Obtained 650 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!’

The party then focused their attacks on the boss once both guards had been defeated. With the boss’ high HP of 84,000 though, their progress to bring it down was extremely slow.

‘Ding! Dadarerda used <Lava Pit>. Lasts for 120 seconds!’

...

‘Ding! Dadarerda used <Lava Pit>. Lasts for 120 seconds!’

In just 1 minute, the entire field had a total of 60 <Lava Pit>s. When the boss had casted <Flamethrower> again, the entire party was a mess but since they had experience from both Normal and Hard Mode, they had somewhat managed to endure the chaos.

By the time the number of <Lava Pit>s had reached 80, the number of surviving players started to drop and when the number of <Lava Pit>s reached 100, everyone had died except for Zhang Yang! Eventually, there were 120 <Lava Pit>s and the field was a sea of fire for as far as the eyes could see; nowhere was safe.

Everyone's skyrocketed confidence had plummeted back to their original state. How would one evade a sea of fire?

If there were no boss, Zhang Yang might still be able to find his way out of the <Lava Pit>s. However, he had to dodge the boss' attacks and evade the <Lava Pit>s beneath his steps simultaneously. Even Zhang Yang could not pull off such a feat!

Of course Zhang Yang had not intended to solo kill the Hardcore Mode boss, what he had wanted to do was to 'reasonably' stumble upon the terrain bug!

He led the boss to move around with him and withdrew to a crack that could fit exactly one person! He stood at the crack and continued attacking the boss.

Even though he was not damaged by <Lava Pit>, he could not evade properly as he was stuck in the crack and he died after

receiving numerous attacks from the boss.

The party, with their blind faith on Zhang Yang, had expected to witness another great counterattack of his solo fight with the boss. Seeing that he had actually failed and died, they were at a loss.

Zhang Yang released his body as he laughed, “Did you guys really think that I could defeat the boss alone?”

Everyone was embarrassed.

Reviving themselves, the party gathered again at the boss’ field.

“Zhan Yu, how about we call it a day?” Even though Crimson Fire, too, had wanted to defeat the boss, as a guildmaster his judgement of a situation would certainly be better than everyone else! This boss was obviously still out of their league!

“I agree. Look at the sea of fire, there’s literally no place for us to hide! The developers must not have wanted anyone to clear this boss!” said Phantom Day as he nodded in agreement.

The others still had their faith in Zhang Yang but after Phantom Day’s analysis, they could not help but agree.

“Brother expert, it’s already amazing that we could even set foot on this stage! Clearing one less boss only means fewer equipment. We’ll defeat it together after getting stronger!” said Snowy Death.

The few of them had only wanted to raid Normal Mode at the beginning. After tagging along with Zhang Yang, they had actually managed to conquer Hard Mode and even cleared 2 bosses in Hardcore Mode! What more was there for them to ask for!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “When I was pulling the boss around the place just now, I’ve found a place where there isn’t any fire pits. I think we can make our stand there and fight back!”

## Chapter 26: Hardcore Mode, First Clear!

---

The crowd's eyes radiated simultaneously after having heard what Zhang Yang said!

Although they mentioned that they were willing to give up their intent of clearing the dungeon, but if there was a slight possibility of clearing it, each and every one of them would naturally tag along given the chance! As long as they could defeat this boss, they would obtain the 'First Clear' server announcement for Bangar Crypt. Having the entire server channel flooded with red messages about you, wouldn't that be the greatest glory any player could ever receive?

Zhang Yang said, "Look over there, can you see a crack in the wall? After I initiate the battle, I need all of you to continue with the original strategy and clear the 2 minions. All ranged characters including the healers will then hide inside the crack while I defend the frontlines! I tried it just now and found out that the position where the crack is would not have any <Lava Pit>s and the boss' <Flamethrower> would only hit me alone. Healers, just focus your healing on me!"

"How about us?" Phantom Day, Crimson Fire and Snowy Death awkwardly said.

"As for you all... Every man for himself!" Zhang Yang said casually.

"Big brother, that's cold-blooded!" Snowy Death complained

deliberately.

“Zhan Yu, you are despicable! You do realize my weapon attack is better, how could you just ditch me aside. Wuu wuu wuu, Silky Snow, please allow me to enter and be mine!” Phantom Day cried out.

Zhang Yang did some calculations. He found out that the base damage of <Flamethrower> is 500 and with the Guardian passive skill deducting 20% receiving damage, he would only receive 400 damage from the skill. Currently his HP was 520 points, and as long as the healers did their job to ensure his HP was always in its best condition, this boss would be as good as being in the bag.

“Let’s give it a try!” Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and marked 2 Royal Guards with the star and sun icons.

“Here I go!” Zhang Yang stepped forward.

<Charge!>

When <Horizontal Sweep> was activated and Zhang Yang managed to establish the aggro, he cried out, signaling the initiative to attack like a war horn.

After a brief moment, the two minions were defeated.

“Good job! Now, ranged attackers and healers! Quickly enter the hole!” Zhang Yang shouted.

“Hehe. Quickly enter the hole! I like that very much!” Fatty Han smiled depravedly while the other male players joined in to let out a perverted giggle.

The comment was treated as a mere passing joke and the team quickly headed into the crack one by one.

Zhang Yang relocated his character to the front of crack and shielded the players behind him. Fatty Han laughed and said, “To the 3 guys out there, may God bless you!”

“Healers! Keep your heals focused only on me. The people inside will take no damage and you can ignore the other 3 outside! My HP will be dropping very quickly because I can only use <Block> to gain attack immunity. Healers, pay attention to the timing and drink blue pots. We will be wiped if your blue pots ran out before the boss dies!” Zhang Yang paused for a while and said, “Silky, do not cast <Holy Shield> and only use it when I tell you to!”

“Ok!” Silky Snow promised.

“Alright. Ranged attackers, deal as much damage as you can! As for the 3 players outside, try to contribute a little before you die by dishing out as much damage as you possibly can!” Zhang Yang twirled his sword and slashed the boss. Because Zhang Yang needed to remain in front of the crack, he could not evade much due to the limited space, fully utilizing the only defensive skill he had, <Block>. Even though he had 31 points of Defense, it was not enough to withstand the boss’ 200 Attack, so he had to absorb

them all, resulting in his health dropping like a waterfall.

It was fortunate that the healers listened to his instructions and did not heal the others, only focusing on restoring Zhang Yang's depleting HP. There was nothing to fear if the healers did not heal excessively.

‘Ding! Dadarerda had used <Lava Pit>, lasts for 120 seconds!’

Fortunately, there was only one pit on the boss' left side, while the rest spawned far from the melee attackers. As long as the melee attackers remained vigilant, they would not be damaged.

“Silky! Shield now!” Zhang Yang commanded instantly when he noticed the boss pause his attacks while a progress bar appeared over its head.

Immediately, Silky Snow waved her tiny hands and a semi-transparent barrier covered Zhang Yang. <Holy Shield> was an instantaneous spell and there was no delay in casting!

‘Hong!’ Dadarerda opened its mouth wide and spat out a trail of flame.

‘-320!’ A huge, red text floated over Zhang Yang's head indicating that he received damage. His initial HP of 389 immediately dropped to 69 HP. <Flamethrower>'s base damage was 500 points. The damage reduced to 320 points. 20% was deducted by Zhang Yang's passive skill and 80 damage was absorbed by <Holy Shield>.



With Zhang Yang acting as the barrier in the front, the rest of the party was safe and sound. However, things were completely different for the other 3 outside.

The boss was leaning against the wall and since the game did not have a function that allowed one to phase through the walls, the 3 of them were pushed against the wall. With nowhere else to run, they had to receive the brunt of the boss's attack head on.

‘Ding! Player Snowy Death had died!’

‘Ding! Player Crimson Fire had died!’

‘Ding! Player Phantom Day had died!’

“Wuu wuu wuu, how miserable!” Phantom Day cried in the party, “Silky Snow, please soothe me!”

Silky Snow merely replied with a smiling emoticon in the party channel.

Zhang Yang smiled wryly. This ‘flirtatious’ exchanges between Phantom Day and Silky Snow probably had a hidden motives. It was as though they were intentionally attempting to invoke Zhang Yang’s feelings of superiority so that he would try and wrestle for Silky Snow’s attention. Zhang Yang pondered about this while his hands showed no sign of slowing down. His sword waved relentlessly and the boss’ HP was plummeting!

Due to the terrain bug, the initially impossible boss fight had become extremely simple. Although the room was filled with <Lava Pit>, no one got hurt in the crack. Fatty Han and the others only needed to mindlessly attack, attack and only attack!

80%, 70%... the boss HP fell swiftly.

Zhang Yang checked the MP of Ocean Despair and Silky Snow, and his heart calmed. It should be enough to hold on until the boss was defeated.

60%, 50%... 10%, there was hope!

“Brother Zhan Yu, let’s make a deal. After the boss is defeated, is it possible to use the name ‘Lost Paradise’ for the party name in the announcement? Of course, it wouldn’t be for naught. We will transfer 100 thousand to your account as payment, how about it?” Crimson Fire sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

Using 100 thousand dollars to buy a server announcement sounded ridiculous. But if Zhang Yang agreed, Crimson Fire would be the one profiting.

At that time, ‘God’s Miracle’ had over 4 million online users, and out of that, 2 million users were solely based in China. That was no small amount. A server announcement would be a great advertisement for Lost Paradise. Just think of how many members they would be able to recruit after such an advertisement?

Additionally, the guild was a sponsored one. There would definitely be a reward waiting for them if they could get themselves a server announcement, and the amount would definitely exceed 1 million!

Who else but Crimson Fire could have thought of such a profitable trade?

Zhang Yang thought and said, “I don’t want money. I want ten thousand gold pieces!”

Currently, there was no exchange service between gold pieces and real life currency. However, there were private in-game currency traders! As the players’ level were still relatively low and the in-game currency generation is even lower, one gold piece was valued at 10 to 13 dollars. Which means 10 thousand gold pieces would be worth about 100,000 dollars.

Crimson Fire did not hesitate and replied, “Deal! But currently the gold piece production is very low. I would need several days to collect 10 thousand gold pieces!”

“Okay, deal!” Zhang Yang accepted and assigned the party leader to Crimson Fire. The battle was near its climax and the crowd heard the system notifications but did not respond.

Even though Zhang Yang agreed to the deal, he did have a few considerations to think off before he could accept it. First, the dungeon’s first completion was not all that fair. Second, he wanted

to lay low and not attract too much attention. Third, he needed to collect a large amount of gold pieces to start stockpiling for his future plans!

Crimson Fire was surprised at Zhang Yang's instant reaction. He said, "You were quick at passing the leader to me. Aren't you afraid of me cheating you?"

"Keh keh, I can trust you!" Zhang Yang only said things that others would like to hear. In fact, he believed that a smart person like Crimson Fire would not want to make an enemy out of him for just 10 thousand gold pieces.

5%, 4%, 3%, 2%, 1%!

Hundred Shots fired his last attack and Dadarerda let out its last loud growl before falling.

'Ding! You and your party have killed Dadarerda! Obtained 12,050 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!'

'Ding! Congratulations, you have obtained the First Clear of the Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode)!'

'Ding! As a party leader, please name your party to be enlisted in the List of Hardcore Dungeon First Clear!'

An input box appeared in Crimson Fire's interface. Naturally, he did not hesitate to key in 'Lost Paradise'. Immediately, red

notifications began to flood the server's chat channel.

“Server Announcement: The party ‘Lost Paradise’ has successfully conquered the Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode), obtaining the First Clear server announcement (China Server)! Their names will be eternally etched in the Hardcore Mode First Clear Achievement Board!”

“Server Announcement: Player Crimson Fire (Party Leader) has obtained the reward for being the first to clear (China Server) Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode)! Obtained system reward of 10 gold pieces, 1 Skill Point, and all races' reputation points increased by 500 points!

“Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Party Member) has obtained the reward for being the first to clear (China Server) Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode)! Obtained system reward of 10 gold pieces, 1 Skill Point, and all races' reputation points increased by 500 points!

“Server announcement...”

A huge uproar was triggered when the server's chat channel was filled with the announcements.

“Seriously? I haven't even passed Normal Mode and now someone even claimed the First Clear for Hardcore Mode?”

“I haven’t even left the beginner village!”

“Where did these strong players come from? This is only the second day and the First Clear of Hardcore Mode had already been taken!”

“Lost Paradise. Anyone heard of them before?”

“Haha, Lost Paradise is our guild! Our guild has experience in management and possesses proper reward and punishment regulation. All of you had just witnessed the strength of our guild, and right now we are still recruiting players! A Level 1 guild can only hold 10 thousand players. Slots were limited so it’s on a first-come-first-serve basis. Please do not miss this opportunity!”

“Request for babysitting!”

“Request for carrying!”

“Request for hugging!”

Under Crimson Fire’s management, his guild members traveled all over the place since the server announcement, taking advantage of this moment to scour everywhere in hopes of recruiting more skilled players.

## Chapter 27: Analyze

---

‘Ding! You and your party have killed Black Claw. Obtained 24,050 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!’

“Wah, its finally over!” Screams of joy filled the air, Sky Shaman smiled proudly as he saw 9 of his party members celebrating after defeating the first boss. Sky Shaman then switched to the guild channel and announced, “Hardcore Mode. First boss, Black Claw. Defeated!”

“Oh yeah!” the guild channel was filled with cheering.

“As expected of the master! The official China’s number 1 tank! It hasn’t even been a day and you have already conquered the first boss of Hardcore Mode!”

“Haha. Our guild Sky High is really the strongest!”

“Those guys from The Dominators must be crying by now!”

“Guildmaster bro, bring me along when you enter Hard Mode please! I’m still wearing a lot of White-Wood equipment!”

“...”

Everyone in the guild was discussing and chatting passionately, and Sky Shaman could not help but smile proudly. He asked

casually, “How are The Dominators doing over that side?”

“Their elite team was wiped not longer than 5 minutes ago according to their members. They are still stuck at the first boss!” said a Hunter with a longbow hanging on his back. A tag on his head stating, ‘World Pursuer, Sky High’.

“Very well, we’re one step ahead of them!” Sky Shaman let out a smile. “However, we mustn’t let our guard down just yet! The Dominators has always been our archrival, which means they are strong! We must never stop improving ourselves! We must get the second and last boss to obtain the global announcement for our First Clear achievement and let everyone know that our guild, Sky High, is the strongest in every single game there is!”

“We will get the First Clear server announcement for the China server! But we will not stop there! We must also get the World’s Top 8 server announcement too!”

“We are the strongest!”

“Hurrah!”

4 of the team members were touched by Sky Shaman’s speech, their faces flushed with excitement!

“Server Announcement: The party ‘Lost Paradise’ has successfully conquered the Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode),



obtaining the First Clear server announcement (China Server)! Their names will be eternally etched in the Hardcore Mode First Clear Achievement Board!”

“Server Announcement: Player Crimson Fire (Party Leader) has obtained the reward for being the first to clear (China Server) Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode)! Obtained system reward of 10 gold pieces, 1 Skill Point, and all races’ reputation points increased by 500 points!

“Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Party Member) has obtained the reward for being the first to clear (China Server) Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode)! Obtained system reward of 10 gold pieces, 1 Skill Point, and all races’ reputation points increased by 500 points!

“Server announcement…….”

The server announcement channel began to flood with announcements.

“What!? Impossible!” Sky Shaman’s faced changed instantly. His legs went limp, almost to the point where he could fall down at any time.

In his face! Right in his red, shameful face!

At that moment, the entire guild channel turned dead silent.

Once the Achievement Board was open, Lost Paradise's party name could be clearly seen.

[Hardcore Mode First Clear Achievement] (China Server)

1. Bangar Crypt

First Clear Party: Lost Paradise.

Party Leader: Crimson Fire, Bandit, Lost Paradise.

Party Members: Zhan Yu, Guardian, No Affiliation.

Ocean Despair, Sacred Knight, No Affiliation.

Phantom Day, Berserker, Lost Paradise.

Defiant Monk, Sniper, Lone Desert Smoke

Hundred Shots, Beastmaster, No Affiliation.

Slim and Handsome, Beastmaster, No Affiliation.

Snowy Death, Bandit, No Affiliation.

Flame Emperor, Pyromancer, Lost Paradise.

Silky Snow, Priest, Lost Paradise.

“Guildmaster...” The 9 party member’s face turned bitter as they looked at Sky Shaman. The First Clear achievement for Hardcore Mode had been claimed and therefore all of them lost their will to continue.

As a guildmaster of a top-tier guild, Sky Shaman had a natural ability to judge and analyze a situation calmly. He began his analysis and said, “This party has 4 members from Lost Paradise. Even their party name is Lost Paradise. However, they have 5 non-affiliated members and a Hunter that belongs to another guild. If I guessed it right, this should be a pub party!”

“Pub party? Master, can pubs even raid Hardcore Mode?” asked the party members. If party that was comprised mostly of pubs could successfully conquer the Hardcore Mode, then what were the top-tier guilds’ elite teams doing?”

“Look at the composition of the party. There is only one tank!” Sky Shaman narrowed his sight, revealing a surprised and disbelieving expression.

“It’s real! There is only one Guardian. The other Warriors are of the Berserker and Sacred Knight specializations!”

Sky Shaman took a deep breath and exhaled. He was a Guardian himself. He knew the boss' difficulty in the Hardcore Mode better than anyone else. Even the most recent Black Claw that they had just defeated could only be done because he and the other tank had been cooperating in other games, forming an unspoken bond between them. Only then were they able to solve the issue of the <Death Stare> stacking that would normally cause entire parties to fail.

But that party only had one Guardian. How did he endure the <Death Stare> throughout the battle and survived?

“If I’m not wrong, the secret to their success lies in that party’s tank! Pursuer, try your best to obtain information on each member of this party, especially the Guardian, Zhan Yu!” Sky Shaman’s expression cleared and said, “Disband the party. We have lost Bangar Crypt, but in the next dungeon, we will fight to regain our honor! In these coming days, I want all of you to keep to a strict training schedule! Even if you were able to, you are not to allow your names to be listed in the Level Ranking Board. I’m giving all of you 7 days. After 7 days, all of you must reach Level 20. We will be the first guild to claim Marzerway’s Lair!”

Somewhere else - The Dominators’ raiding team.

“Boss, our brother in Sky High said that their elite team has defeated the first boss!” said Circular Piglet hurriedly. It was not a strange thing, as both Sky High and The Dominators were rivals. They had always been at each other’s throats in almost any other MMOs. They had always been fighting endlessly to be China’s best

guild. And now, their skirmishes had also brought them to ‘God’s Miracle’.

Humble Gentleman was calm. He said, “Don’t be so agitated. Being one step ahead doesn’t assure a guaranteed victory. It’s still going to be a battle to determine who would have the last laugh!”

“Hey, hey!” Circular Piglet shyly scratched his head, “It is still not a good feeling to lose to them!”

“If you don’t feel good losing to them, then get your sh\*t together, you stupid swine! If it wasn’t because of your careless mistake, we wouldn’t have been completely wiped in the last fight now, would we?” lectured Humbly Gentleman as he laughed.

“Aw, come on boss. Don’t remind me of my past mistakes. I’d already apologized for that a hundred times. I thought there was an earthquake, and that’s why I disconnected!” explained Circular Piglet.

“And? Was it really an earthquake?”

“No... it was my pet cat. It jumped on top of my head!”

“You stupid little pig. Remember! You’re our tank. You’re the wall that protects us! Before you are allowed to fall, you must always prevent the boss from attacking us at all costs! Understood?!”

“Understood!”

“Hm. If there really was an earthquake, you better stay strong. Do not worry about a tiny earthquake. If push comes to shove, I’ll personally dig you out from your house!”

Everyone was laughing at Humble Gentleman’s joke. The atmosphere lightened up and no one felt depressed for losing the fight.

“Server Announcement: The party ‘Lost Paradise’ has successfully conquered the Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode), obtaining the First Clear server announcement (China Server)! Their names will be eternally etched in the Hardcore Mode First Clear Achievement Board!”

“Server announcement...”

The atmosphere turned silent!

“F\*ck, who are these people? They actually managed to conquer Hardcore Mode!?”

“Is it Sky High?”

“No. These people do not belong to Sky High’s elite team. Just look at the Achievement Board... Holy cow! Lost Paradise? From

which hole did this low-tier guild dig out of?”

“Since when was a low-tier guild this strong?”

The Dominators guild channel was suddenly bursting with talks and discussion.

“Boss...” Circular Piglet showed a bitter face. As if they had lost something that they did not even know, the members shared the same bitter expression. They were full of desire, trying to get their hands on the First Clear server announcement. But just when they were about to start their battle, the announcement was taken away from them. What else could they feel? To make matters worse, they lost to an unknown, low-tier guild!

Shame! Such a huge shame!

Humble Gentleman took a deep breath, laughing as he said, “Well, at least it wasn’t anyone from Sky High right? Think about it from their perspective. They thought they had the upper hand against us. Who knew they were only scooping water with a straw basket! They’re surely feeling much more despair!”

Circular Piglet and the rest of them laughed, some of them sounded forced but at least it was better than the worst case scenario.

“Do a little background check on those people. Especially that warrior called Zhan Yu. To be able to endure Hardcore Mode

bosses is no easy feat. He must be a pro among pros! Heh. To think that a person like this remains unaffiliated with any guild! Zhang Lan, go and make contact with him! Get him into our guild! Oh yeah, try and get the rest of the unaffiliated players from that party to join us as well. If they could survive that mode, they would naturally prove to be quite extraordinary themselves.”

Similar reactions and conversations occurred simultaneously amongst the top-tier guilds throughout the entire China server.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang and the rest of the party were indulging in their own version of excitement.

‘Ding! You have obtained the title, Crypt Slaughterer!’

The titles themselves were useless, as they do not possess any addition to the Attributes nor provide any special effects. However, to have a rare title hanging over your head could attract quite some attention. The Crypt Slaughterer title could only be obtained by players who obtained the First Clear achievement. Naturally, it is extremely rare!

Zhang Yang turned off and disabled the friend request and stranger private messaging function to avoid being disturbed endlessly. After the excitement wore off, he would turn it back on again.

“We really did it!” If the ever-calm Crimson Fire was filled with excitement, the others were already bursting from it.



Zhang Yang ran over to the back of Dadarerda's throne. He took out the pickaxe and started mining a glowing golden vein.

‘Ding! You have used <Mining> on Plain Copper Vein. You have obtained Plain Copper Ore x3, Moonstone x2. Your Mining skill has increased by 2 points!’

This Plain Copper Vein will only spawn here in Hardcore Mode, after the death of Dadarerda!

Zhang Yang eyes glowed. Plain Copper Ore itself was already a rare vein and the Moonstone was part of the possible loot from mining the Plain Copper Vein. This is a rarity among rarities. Truly priceless!

“Wah Zhan Yu bro. You're too mean. You could have at least left me one of those veins to mine! At least I could increase my <Mining> skills!” said Phantom Days as he walked over, laughing as he spoke. Fortunately, he did not see the items Zhang Yang had excavated, otherwise there would be a hard time for Zhang Yang to talk his way out.

Zhang Yang laughed and shifted his attention to Fatty Han. “Fatty, time to loot the corpse and get our equipment!”

# Chapter 28: Hidden Boss

---

The fickle-minded Fatty Han had only felt excited for a short moment when the server announcements flashed. He wiggled happily towards the corpse when Zhang Yang told him to loot it, ignoring the announcements, because his mind was already distracted by the thought of looting a cloth armor top just so he could witness the glorious sight of Silky Snow wearing the miniskirt!

[Heavy Crossbow] (Green-Copper, Ranged Weapon)

Weapon Attack: 42 – 54

Attack Interval: 2.4 seconds

DPS: 20

Level Requirement: 10

Ranged weapon. That would be a Hunter’s weapon! Fatty Han’s eyes shone, “I won’t be giving in this time. I’ll roll 100 points and grab this!”

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “Alright, Hunters roll for the weapon!”

All 3 Hunters wanted the weapon seeing it would be the first Green-Copper ranged weapon in the server at this stage of the game. It was definitely going to be an attention grabber if they could get their hands on it and show it off in the city.

Hundred Shots, 98 points.

Defiant Monk, 99 points.

“F\*ck you all!” Fatty Han prayed to all things divine at once before he pressed the roll button. “Abracadabra!”

Slim and Handsome, 100 points!

“Ah, haha!” Fatty Han was surprised at first before letting his laughter follow. The item had automatically entered his inventory.

“D\*mn, Fatty, I’m going to report you for using hacks!” Defiant Monk cried.

“Haha, you should’ve known who I am!” Fatty Han flipped his hair in sass and continued to loot the corpse.

[Light Coat] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +8

Intelligent: +8

Spirit: +4

Level Requirement: 10

“It really came out!” Snowy Death was shocked.

“Flame-using magus, if you dare to roll, I’ll definitely wreck your ass!” Fatty Han said murderously to Flame Emperor.

As perverted as Fatty Han looked, he was like Zhang Yang. They grew up getting involved in fights and had a dangerous aura. Flame Emperor jumped and had actually selected to pass obediently. None would ever find out if it was because Flame Emperor was being pressured into it or because he had also wanted to see Silky Snow in the miniskirt.

Although Silky Snow had only rolled 15 points, the coat had naturally gone to her since there was no competition.

“Hurry up and change into it!” a group of lusty wolves cheered.

Silky Snow twisted and turned, reluctant to put on the coat.

Zhang Yang then added oil to the fire and said, “There’s still a Hidden Boss, so it’s best to power up however you can!”

Since Zhang Yang had already said so, Silky Snow could only change from the long dress she was wearing into the light coat. The sexy miniskirt was then unveiled to the crowd, showcasing her slender milky legs and just barely, her pink undergarments!

“Hallelujah!” Fatty Han wiped his saliva and looted the last piece of equipment distractedly.

[Lord’s Shin Guard] (Green-Copper, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +10

Strength: +7

Dexterity: +3

Level Requirement: 10

Phantom Day and Ocean Despair had both chosen to pass and the equipment went straight into Zhang Yang’s inventory.

‘Ding! You have received 9 silver coins after distribution!’

Dadarerda’s corpse then disappeared and the coins on the ground were looted too.

“Brother expert, where is this Hidden Boss?” Snowy Death looked around.

Zhang Yang pointed to a corner of the room and said, “After Dadarerda has been defeated, an extra door will appear in the field and there will be a passageway that leads to the Hidden Boss!”

“Zhan Yu, how do you even know about this?” Crimson Fire asked suddenly, “Don’t tell me that you’ve gotten it from the internet, I won’t believe it!”

“Yeah, me too!” the others expressed their doubts as well.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, “Actually... I’m the Terminator and I’ve traveled 5 years back in time!”

“Boo!” the crowd jeered.

“Alright, alright. I’ve participated in the game’s beta version!” Zhang Yang shrugged.

“Hmm!” The crowd bought it.

“Brother expert, what is the Hidden Boss’ loot? Gray-Silver equipment?” Snowy Death asked.

“It’s nothing that exaggerated. Gray-Silver equipment is only available in Level 20 dungeons!” Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “Have you guys realized? Have the bosses dropped any necklaces or rings before?”

“No!”

“Exactly, necklaces and rings are only available as loot from Hidden Boss in Hardcore Mode other than being rewards from certain quests!” Zhang Yang explained.

“Wow, in that case we must go for it!” Defiant Monk said excitedly.

Zhang Yang had given life to too many miracles. Their doubts on their abilities to defeat the boss had long since vanished!

“Let’s go!” Zhang Yang waved his sword and walked to a corner of the room. Pressing on a protruding stone after feeling about, a stone door appeared and opened in front of them with a thud.

“Use the skill point awarded by the system just now as it’s better to strengthen yourselves even if it is just a little!” Zhang Yang then assigned the new skill point to <Block>, reducing its cooldown time to 7 seconds.

The others nodded and agreed.

Behind the stone door was a long passageway extending all the way down with both its sides lighted with torches.

Fortunately, there were no minions around. The passageway took them about a minute to traverse before they finally arrived at the entrance of a large stone chamber.

“Don’t go inside just yet!” Zhang Yang stopped at the entrance and said, “Let me explain the strategy!”

In the middle of the stone chamber laid a gigantic gnome. Different from other green-skinned gnomes, its whole body was in crimson red, leaking out a murderous aura. Its feet were shackled with a heavy chain with the other end locked into the walls.

[Demonized Momorermo] (Green-Copper Elite)

Level: 15

HP: 90000

“D\*mn, its level is higher than the final boss!” Flame Emperor exclaimed in a hushed voice.



“Hidden Bosses have always been the hardest to defeat in dungeons!” Zhang Yang said. Of course, the badly designed Dadarerda was not included.

“This boss has 3 skills. The first is a [DoT](#) aura effect. As long as you’re within 30 meters of it, your HP will be drop continuously. It’s a magic effect! If I’m not mistaken, I think it is a Shadow element DoT which can reduce your HP by 30 for every 3 seconds! Priests, please remember to cast and maintain <Regeneration> on everyone.”

“The second skill is demonization. The boss will randomly pick a player to demonize. The demonized player would then be controlled to attack everyone else. Regardless of whether you are melee or ranged now, you would automatically use melee attacks once demonized. A demonized character has 3,000 HP and each attack can deal 1,000 damage! The advantage is that a demonized character’s speed is extremely slow!”

“It’s very easy to dispel this effect. All you have to do is to deplete the demonized player’s HP and the control would return to the player, while restoring the player’s HP to its original state! However, demonization has one more negative effect – the player could still receive damage from party members for as long as 10 seconds after demonization vanishes. So once the effect is gone, you need to stop attacking immediately or else you might kill your own members! Dispelling demonization must be done quickly as once there are two or more demonized players, we’ll be as good as wiped.”

Zhang Yang paused to give them some time to digest the load of

information and continued, “As for the third skill, every time the boss loses 25% HP, it will cast a special skill. I’ve forgotten the skill name but it’s an AoE skill and the range is 200 meters, it also does 1,000 attack damage!”

“1,000 damage AoE, shouldn’t we just give up then?” Crimson Fire frowned and asked.

“Not really. During the battle, the Energy Crystal will randomly spawn around the field. A barrier will appear after shattering it, granting immunity to all attacks! The crystal has 1,000 HP and its barrier lasts for 10 seconds.” Zhang Yang had intended to explain further but after seeing everyone’s confused faces, he sighed and said, “Just do according to what I say. Attack what I tell you to, and move where I tell you to!”

“Roger!”

“Little Yang, you should’ve just said that earlier, it’s much simpler!” Fatty Han said mercilessly.

Zhang Yang thought for a moment and said, “Fatty, you’ll be responsible for breaking the Energy Crystal. It’s a crystal pillar half the height of a man. It’s very easy to spot but the location is not fixed so once it has spawned, you must remember its location. When I give you the signal to attack, ignore everything else and put in all your effort to break the crystal, got it?”

“You can count on me!” Fatty Han patted his chest in earnest.

“Alright, after we start, ranged classes including healers should stand 5 meters away from each other. If a ranged character is demonized then everyone should get away from him, while the other ranged characters should deplete his HP immediately! Melees just focus your attacks on the boss. If you get demonized, I’ll pull the boss away, while ranged characters concentrate on depleting the demonized melee character’s HP!”

Zhang Yang raised his sword and said, “Let’s give it a go!”

He moved a few steps forward and a red damage text “-24” immediately popped up above his head. At the same time, the system notification rang.

‘Ding! You are affected by <Dark Halo>. Lose 30 HP every 3 seconds (Shadow DoT) until you leave the aura’s area of effect!’

He had a passive skill with 20% damage reduction.

“Ogagaga! Here comes some little bugs to kill Momorermo’s boredom!” Once Zhang Yang entered the boss’ aggro range, Momorermo immediately jumped to its feet, grabbing the chain shackling itself and actually twisted the arm-thick chain off with sheer brute force!

“Momorermo is going to drink all your blood!” The ugly red-skinned gnome dashed forward and stretched its long arms, waving it towards Zhang Yang. Its hands were like the sharp claws of a beast, shining viciously.

Zhang Yang used <Charge> and stunned the boss. He then raised his sword and slashed its head, spraying blood everywhere.

“Begin the attack!”

Upon Zhang Yang’s signal began the final battle.

DoT stands for Damage over Time which refers to an effect that causes smaller amounts of damage over a period of time. This damage is usually calculated per ‘tick’, which happens at regular intervals depending on the effect of the skill or item. The total damage dealt could be calculated as such,  $[\text{Duration of Effect (s)} / \text{Interval for Each Tick (s)}] \times [\text{Damage Per Tick}]$ .

## Chapter 29: All Clear

---

“Ranged classes including healers, be aware of your surroundings! Make sure that there’s at least 5 meters of distance between each other!” Zhang Yang commanded as he pulled aggro, “The 3 melee attackers! Snowy Death, you stand on boss’ left and Phantom Day on its right. Crimson Fire, you’ll attack from behind it! F\*ck, Snowy Death, can’t you differentiate left from right? Go to the other side!”

“Alright! All out, ramp up the DPS! The aura effect might seem to cause only a little DoT but every 3 seconds drains away 30 HP per character which would lead to 300 HP in total. Healers might not be able to handle that much healing once it’s dragged on!” said Zhang Yang.

The party nodded in agreement. Everyone performed at their best and attacked the boss with all their might.

All 6 bosses from Hard and Hardcore Mode had given Zhang Yang and the party a total of 18 equipment, which was about 2 equipment per player on average. Compared to when they had first started the dungeon raid, it was a huge improvement! Especially those who had obtained new weapons, their damage dealing capabilities had increased by leaps and bounds.

With both Phantom Day and Fatty Han already in possession of strong damaging power, their attack power had risen to a whole new level after swapping in new weapons, enough to allow them to be on par with Zhang Yang!

“Zhan Yu, check out the stats, I’ve already caught up to you!” said Phantom Day delightedly.

It was true. According to the damage statistics, Zhang Yang, Phantom Day and Fatty Han were in a rat race for the top 3 places in the list. With their miniscule difference in damage output, any first strike would have allowed that player to place first.

Zhang Yang laughed, “Aren’t you a little shameless to be competing damage output with a Guardian?”

“F\*ck! Are you really a Guardian?” Phantom Day bemoaned.

‘Ding! Demonized Momorermo has demonized player Defiant Monk!’

During the intense fight, the boss had suddenly turned its head around as he directed a blood-red mist towards Defiant Monk! The mist flew at such an incredible speed that Defiant Monk was not able to react in time. His entire body suddenly shone with a crimson glow, expanding to at least double of his original size while his HP increased to 3,000 points!

“Ranged players including healers, quickly get away from Defiant Monk and nuke his HP!” commanded Zhang Yang.

Hundred Shots and the rest of the ranged players switched their targets immediately and fired towards Defiant Monk.

Being controlled by the boss, Defiant Monk had lost control over his own character and could only watch helplessly as his character proceeded slowly towards Silky Snow who was the closest to him.

‘-52!’

‘-47!’

A chain of damage figures landed on Defiant Monk and his HP was briskly reduced to 0. His body then returned to its normal size and his HP rewound to its original value.

“Stop! Resume attacking the boss!” Zhang Yang multitasked while maintaining his watch on the situation with Defiant Monk all along.

Still, Hundred Shots and the rest of the ranged attackers were a little slow in reacting, allowing their fireballs and arrows free rein and damaging half of Defiant Monk’s 300+ HP!

“You beasts! Couldn’t you guys be a little gentler?” Defiant Monk hurriedly consumed a red pot to reduce the healer’s load.

Another 10 seconds or so had passed.

‘Ding! Demonized Momorermo has demonized player Phantom Day!’

Zhang Yang swiftly took off and pulled the boss away. “Ranged, attack Phantom Day. Melees, don’t even try. You’d be wiped out instantly!”

“Shitty boss, why the hell would you pick me?! Did I ever offend you?” Phantom Day was pissed, as his damage output was a close tie against Zhang Yang’s and Fatty Han’s but now that he was demonized, he could only watch as his name plummeted down the damage statistics.

“My fellow comrades, fire upon me!” Phantom Day shouted, “Kill me! Hurry!”

With their initial experience, the ranged attackers became quicker in halting their attacks after depleting Phantom Day’s HP. It was fortunate that they did it in time as he would have been killed by his own teammates with his measly HP that was less than 300.

“Fatty, have you seen the crystal yet?” Zhang Yang asked Fatty Han just as he saw the boss’ HP drop to 80%.

“Mm, I saw it!” Fatty Han replied just as quickly.

“Okay, don’t hit it yet! Wait for a little longer!” Zhang Yang said as his eye locked onto the boss’ HP bar.

79%, 78%, 77%...



“Fatty! Unleash your attacks upon the crystal!”

“Alright!” Fatty Han changed his target immediately, firing his arrows toward the crystal that was half a person in height.

76%!

‘Crack!’

The crystal broke and a blue, translucent, hemispheric light shield about 3 meters long in diameter appeared in its place.

75%!

“Momorermo is going to show you the real demon!” Momorermo had suddenly stopped attacking to chant something in an odd language, a progress bar appearing on its head.

“Everyone stop and follow me!” Zhang Yang turned and dashed towards the light shield. “This boss’ skill has a 3-second cast time! Make haste, everyone!”

The party members had formed some sort of spontaneous reaction to Zhang Yang’s order and had ran with him into the light shield.

“Flame Emperor! Snowy Death! The both of you are too slow! Hurry up and run!” As he got into the shield, Zhang Yang turned

and saw both Flame Emperor and Snowy Death being left behind. Even with Zhang Yang leading the party, each player's response speed still varied.

‘Ding! Momorermo has casted <Shadow Blast>!’

A dark light with Momorermo as its core blasted out, its range reaching more than 200 meters!

‘Ding! Player Flame Emperor has died!’

‘Ding! Player Snowy Death has died!’

Two enormous ‘-1,000’ damage text appeared on their heads as both Flame Emperor and Snowy Death succumbed to the blast.

“Get out of this shield and go back to your original positions! Continue the attack!” Zhang Yang rushed out of the shield and used <Charge> on the boss, stunning it.

The shield then faded after a few seconds.

Everyone spread back out to their positions and resumed the original attacking momentum but the loss of two members had greatly reduced their attacking power. Luckily the two who died were not the main damage outputs so the impact was not as disastrous. Since two of the players died, the healers also had a lighter load in healing the remaining team members.

“Hundred Shots, be my slave!” Demonized Momorermo let out a deafening growl and flung a blood-red mist towards Hundred Shots.

‘Ding! Demonized Momorermo has demonized player Hundred Shots!’

“Ranged attackers, fire towards Hundred Shots!” Zhang Yang instantly commanded.

Under Zhang Yang’s instructions, the battle progressed smoothly.

‘Ding! Demonized Momorermo has demonized player Slim and Handsome!’

Less than a minute later, the boss had turned and threw the mist towards Fatty Han.

“Melees stop what you’re doing! Ranged, nuke Fatty Han back to our side!” Zhang Yang commanded swiftly. The boss had 53% HP currently. If they had dropped it to 50%, <Shadow Blast> would be triggered and with the demonized players still on the field, it would have been extremely chaotic, resulting in more deaths!

Once Fatty Han was released from demonization, Zhang Yang said quickly, “Fatty, quickly break the crystal!”

“Got it!” Fatty Han hurriedly fired at the crystal.

52%!

51%!

‘Crack!’ With the crystal broken, the blue, translucent shield reappeared.

50%!

“Haha, Momorermo will show you the real demon once more!” Momorermo stopped its attacks and began casting <Shadow Blast>.

“Sprint your way to the shield! Don’t insist on attacking! Only living players can deal damage!” said Zhang Yang as he sprinted towards the light shield.

‘Ding! Momorermo has used <Shadow Blast>!’

A wave of dark light pulsed through the entire field.

“Carry on the attack!” Zhang Yang dashed towards the boss and brandished his sword, dealing significant damage.

“Silky! Ocean! How’s your MP?” Zhang Yang’s main concern was still the healers’ healing endurance due to <Dark Halo>’s existence

which would drop everyone's HP to their deaths once the healers ran out of MP.

"I still have 40% MP but my blue pot cooldown is almost done!" said Ocean Despair.

"I only have 30%. I just consumed one MP pot!" Silky Snow had also hurriedly replied.

Silky Snow had expended her MP much faster than Ocean Despair as she had to make sure everyone had <Regeneration> on them.

[Regeneration]: Restores target's HP to the equivalent of 200% Magic Attack every 3 seconds over 15 seconds.

The boss still had 50% HP, this would be a little difficult!

"Keep up the effort! We can do this!" said Zhang Yang.

40%, 35%, 30%... the boss' HP continuously dropped.

"Stand strong! Just one more <Shadow Blast> and there'll be hope for us to clear this!" Zhang Yang encouraged the entire party. "Fatty! You can break the crystal now!"

“Roger that!” Fatty Han immediately drew his bow to shoot the crystal. After a chain of attacks, the crystal shattered and the blue, translucent light shield appeared once again.

‘Ding! Momorermo has used <Shadow Blast>!’

“Zhan Yu! My blue pots are out!” declared Silky Snow.

“I can do a few more!” Ocean Despair reported.

“Mm, got it!” Zhang Yang used <Charge> on the boss and said, “Fatty! When the next crystal spawns, break it right away!”

“Okay!”

22%, 19%, 16%...

Without Silky Snow's <Regeneration>, the entire team's HP began to drop significantly, leading Ocean Despair to frantically spam <Holy Light>. His MP bar that did not have much to begin with flashed in alert.

“Little Yang! The crystal has spawned!” Fatty Han yelled and immediately fired.

Zhang Yang scanned the area and located the crystal's location, hastily making his way towards it while pulling the boss. "Everyone gather at the shield!"

“What about the boss’ random demonization?”

“The shield makes us immune to it, no fear!”

‘Crack!’ Again, the crystal broke and the hemisphere appeared.

Zhang Yang withdrew himself to the very border of the shield and had the boss blocked outside of it. This way, he was immune to damage yet it allowed him to continue dealing damage to the boss.

“Ocean! Silky! How long till you can consume another blue pot?”

“24 seconds.”

“14 seconds.”

“Alright, after you consume the blue pots, focus your healings only on Fatty, Phantom Day and me. Ignore the rest of the team!” [Beginner Mana Potion] could only restore 100 MP, forcing Zhang Yang to make sacrifices.

15%, 14%, 13%, 12%. Just as quickly as it appeared, the shield vanished and everyone began to lose 30 HP every 3 seconds once again.

“Ocean Despair, become my slave!” With the boss’ demonization, Ocean Despair’s body expanded and he became the boss’ underling.

“Don’t mind him! Focus on the boss! Just half a minute more and we’re through!”

Zhang Yang dragged Momorermo away from Ocean Despair.

“What a waste! If only he could consume one more blue pot to heal us for a little longer before being demonized!” Fatty Han murmured.

11%, 10%, 9%, 8%!

Silky Snow kept her eyes on the blue pot’s cooldown time. Once the time was up, she quickly consumed one and her MP went up by 100 points.

Immediately, she casted <Regeneration> on Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, and Phantom Day, expending her MP. A ‘-30’ red damage text floated across her head, depleting her last drop of HP and killing her.

‘Ding! Player Silky Snow has died!’

7%!

‘Ding! Player Crimson Fire has died!’

6%!



‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots has died!’

‘Ding! Player Defiant Monk has died!’

5%!

4%!

3%!

‘Ding! Player Phantom Day has died!’

2%!

‘Ding! Player Slim and Handsome has died!’

Momoreremo still had 1,747 HP left but Zhang Yang only had 124!

“You can do it!” everyone cheered.

Just in the nick of time, a crystal spawned!

Zhang Yang was thrilled, using <Charge> towards it and slashed his sword repeatedly against it.

Even though the crystal pillar had 1,000 HP but since it had 0 defense value, its HP had dropped rapidly.

The boss came up to him!

“<Block>!”

Zhang Yang swiftly activated <Shield Bash> on the pillar, depleting its remaining HP. He jumped right into the shield as soon as it had appeared, stopping his HP from dropping further at a worrying 4 points remaining. He then immediately turned and attacked the boss!

1%!

0%!

With a loud, enraged growl, the red-skinned monster had finally fallen.

‘Ding! The party you are in has killed Demonized Momorermo. Obtained 45,050 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!’

“We did it!” everyone shouted in celebration.

## Chapter 30: Jumbo Loot

---

Ocean Despair had immediately recovered after the boss had been defeated.

“Brother expert, you’re my idol from now on! You do not know how much I admire you!” Snowy Death shouted in the party channel.

Zhang Yang said, “Don’t release your bodies yet. I’ll be looting the corpse so that all of you can revive at the dungeon entrance after that to save time!”

“Okay!” the crowd agreed.

“Holy Spirits Abracadabra, please give me the shield recipe!” Zhang Yang rubbed his hands together and went towards the boss’ corpse.

[Resurrection] (Skill Book)

Use: You will learn <Resurrection>.

Class Requirement: Sacred Knight, Priest.

“Wow brother, you have the Lucky Hand!” Phantom Day yelled.

“Have a talk with the Sacred Knight, we must get our hands on this skill book!” Crimson Fire quickly sent a private message to Silky Snow. <Resurrection> would be extremely useful in dungeon raids, greatly reducing the time consumed to revive oneself and therefore boosting the efficiency of dungeon raids!

“Okay!” Silky Snow replied and sent a private message to Ocean Despair, “Ocean, can you let me have this <Resurrection> skill book first? I can pay you. How about 100 gold coins?”

After a while, Ocean Despair replied, “I want to learn this skill too, let’s roll together and see our luck!”

Silky Snow was in the middle of persuading Ocean Despair when Zhang Yang said, “Both healers roll for it!”

Silky Snow thought about it and decided to roll first. If her roll was higher then she could save herself the trouble of persuading a hard headed person. Even if she had rolled a lower number, it was still not too late to strike a deal with Ocean Despair.

The rest of the party had passed, leaving both healers to roll.

Silky Snow, 86 points.

Ocean Despair, 91 points.

The skill book immediately went into Ocean Despair's inventory. Without hesitation, he immediately patted the skill book on his body and gained the <Resurrection> skill. Silky Snow had still wanted to private message him, but who could have guessed that Ocean Despair had acted so quickly?

“Ocean, you can use your new skill to save them now. I'll continue to loot the corpse!” Zhang Yang laughed and said.

With a hum from Ocean Despair, he began chanting to resurrect the party members.

[Smithing Recipe: Earthen Round Shield] (Smithing Recipe)

Use: You will learn to smith Earthen Round Shield.

Requirement: Beginner Smithing Skill.

“That's it!” Zhang Yang's eyes radiated and said, “Everyone, I won't be courteous now!”

They had a deal previously, that if a smithing recipe dropped, it would be given to Zhang Yang. The entire party had passed on rolling and Zhang Yang patted the recipe on his body at once. A golden light flashed, adding Earthen Round Shield to the initially empty smithing list.

[Earthen Round Shield] (Green-Copper, Shield)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +20

Level Requirement: 10

Holy cow! The shield alone had provided 200 HP and 40 defense points. Even if the boss had high attack, it could reduce an ample amount of physical damage, significantly boosting one's survivability! Furthermore, most players only had White-Wood equipment now and they were definitely going to be unable to break past this 40 points of defense!

“Big bro Zhan Yu, post the shield description, let us witness its power too!” Phantom Day could not help but ask when he saw Zhang Yang's foolish grin.

Zhang Yang smiled and posted the shield's description to the party channel.

“Wow, such high defense! I object! Objection! High dexterity and low strength classes like us Thieves would definitely be unable to break your defense with just normal attacks!” Snowy Death was shocked.

“Brother Zhan Yu, please smith a few more for us if you have enough materials. Our guild will buy them from you!” Crimson Fire sent a private message to Zhang Yang. He could imagine that with tanks equipping this shield, their survivability would definitely be raised to another level!

“Okay!” His main purpose in obtaining this recipe was to sell the shields for money anyway, so Zhang Yang had agreed readily, “500 gold coins each!”

“Damn, you have no mercy!”

“Haha, your guild is so wealthy that a mere 500 gold coins is nothing for you!”

Crimson Fire hesitated a while before saying, “Okay, I’ll book one for now. Mail it to me via cash on delivery when you’re done!”

“Okay, pleased to be working with you, big boss!” Zhang Yang laughed. The primary materials to smith this shield were [Iron Bar] and [Rare Copper Bar]. [Iron Bar] could made from [Iron Ore] which was worthless, while [Plain Copper Bar] came from [Plain Copper Ore] where a spawn point was available at the third boss. Each time Hardcore Mode Bangar Crypt was cleared, he could collect 2 to 4 Plain Copper Ores. Basically, he was doing a zero capital business!

“Little Yang, hurry up and loot the corpse, I can’t wait any longer!” Fatty Han expressed his impatience.

Zhang Yang laughed and extended his arm to loot again.

[Shiny Silver Pendant] (Green-Copper, Necklace)

Physical: +3

Intelligent: +2

Equipped Effect: Target receives an additional buff of <Magic Shield> each time a healing spell is casted. Shield disappears after absorbing 20 points damage or after 30 seconds. Shield effect cannot be stacked.

Level Requirement: 10

“Wow! Even though the attributes are nothing much, there’s a special effect!” Phantom Day exclaimed.

“All necklaces and rings have special effects. That’s why the drop rates are so low!” Zhang Yang nodded and said, “Healers, roll for it!”

Ocean Despair and Silky Snow helped themselves and rolled, Ocean Despair winning the roll at the end.



[Shadow Collar] (Green-Copper, Necklace)

Vitality: +3

Strength: +1

Dexterity: +1

Equipped Effect: Each attack on the target will inflict 1 stack of <Shadow Wrath>. When 3 stacks of <Shadow Wrath> are achieved, 20 points shadow damage will be inflicted onto the target.

Level Requirement: 10

“All physical attack classes can roll for it. Let’s roll together, no need to give it up to anyone. Let’s see our luck!” Zhang Yang said laughing as he rolled first.

Those who had initially wanted to give up their rolls changed their decisions and tried their luck after hearing what Zhang Yang had said. Even if they could not get it, it was still for the fun of it.

As a result, Zhang Yang overshadowed everyone with a mere 76-point roll.

“Haha, what sh\*tty luck you guys have!” Zhang Yang shook his

head and equipped the necklace.

[Archer's Ring] (Green-Copper, Ring)

Vitality: +2

Dexterity: +3

Equipped Effect: Ranged attacks have a fixed rate of activating <Wind's Blessing> effect. Effect increases attack speed by 10% for 10 seconds. This effect cannot be stacked.

Level Requirement: 10

“Hunters, roll for it!” Zhang Yang selected to pass.

“Oh yeah!” Defiant Monk was very lucky to have rolled 100 points, instantly winning Hundred Shots and Fatty Han.

[Amber Ring] (Green-Copper, Ring)

Vitality: +3

Strength: +1

Equipped Effect: Each successful dodge of attack have a fixed rate of increasing 20 points Strength for 10 seconds. This effect cannot be stacked.

Level Requirement: 10

“D\*mn, why is the trigger condition by dodging and not attacking?” Phantom Day was angry. This effect would be useful in PK or solo grinding but for dungeon raids, he would have no chances of evading attacks as a damage dealer!

“Fine if you don’t want it!” Zhang Yang laughed as he said.

“Who says I don’t want it! Come on, let’s roll!” Phantom Day said quickly and tapped the roll button.

Zhang Yang was aware that he had gotten more than enough and decided to pass. The result was Crimson Fire winning the roll.

“D\*mn, guildmaster, you a thief class need dexterity, not strength! Don’t snatch it from me!” Phantom Day cried.

“F\*ck, more nonsense and I’ll throw you out!” Crimson Fire laughed as he said. Phantom Day immediately went speechless.

Zhang Yang looted again but there were only gold coins left.

However, they had hauled 4 equipment, a skill book, and a recipe, it could already be considered as a jumbo loot!

“Ding! You have received 10 silver coins after distribution!”

After every item was distributed, Momorermo’s corpse too had disappeared.

“Alright, all done. Everyone can now go back to the capital and complete the quest. There should still be a Black-Steel equipment reward!” Zhang Yang took a Teleportation Reagent from his inventory and asked Fatty Han, “Fatty, you have Teleportation Reagent?”

“Teleportation Reagent? What is that?” Fatty Han returned Zhang Yang a lost sheep expression.

Zhang Yang shook his head and traded a Teleportation Reagent over and said, “This will teleport you to the nearest friendly town, saves you the journey!”

“There’s such a thing?” Fatty Han quickly confirmed the trade, “Little Yang, don’t be so stingy, give me a few more!”

“F\*ck, this thing costs 1 gold coin each! It’s expensive!” Despite his complaint, Zhang Yang had still traded a few more reagents with Fatty Han. He still had 20 plus gold coins anyway and Crimson Fire had still owed him 10 thousand more!

“Brother Zhan Yu, why not reserve your dungeon entry tomorrow for our guild? I’ll hire you, what do you think of 1000 gold coins per Hardcore Mode raid? And if the equipment looted are of use to you, you’ll have the highest priority!” Crimson Fire sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang pondered, leading dungeon raids would undoubtedly be a good way to earn a fortune. Not only could he get equipment, he could also earn lots of gold coins! It would only be for now though. When he had finally established his own guild, he would not need to work for others anymore!

“Okay, tomorrow morning at 9 am. We’ll gather at the dungeon entrance!” Zhang Yang quickly sent back a private message, “But I want to reserve an attacker spot for Fatty!”

“Deal! See you tomorrow!” Crimson Fire agreed readily.

“Big brother, please approve as friend!” said Snowy Death as he sent a friend request.

Snowy Death had acted as a prompt for the rest of the party and they too had sent friend requests to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang smiled and approved each friend request. Ripping Teleportation Reagent, a magic circle glowing with a white light appeared under his feet. With that, he quit the party and said, “Goodbye everyone, see you!”

“Big brother, bye!”

“See you!”

Since Teleportation Reagent was overly expensive, the others were not willing to spend it. Other than Fatty Han who had also torn one of the reagents, the rest of the party members went by foot.

10 seconds later, the magic circle was formed completely and a white light enveloped Zhang Yang. With a flash, the white light dissipated and Zhang Yang had appeared in the portal of White Jade Castle.

Another white light flashed and Fatty Han too had appeared next to Zhang Yang.

“Little Yang, since when did you become so powerful?” Fatty Han had been Zhang Yang’s buddy but his outstanding performance made him felt like Zhang Yang was a complete stranger.

“Since when was I not outstanding?” Zhang Yang laughed.

“F\*ck!” Fatty Han booed but did not ask further. Regardless of what had happened, Zhang Yang would always be his brother and that was enough for him!

# Chapter 31: Pride Quad

---

“Let’s go, it’s time to complete the quest!” Zhang Yang dragged Fatty Han in search of Army Captain Soren and completed ‘The Raid’ quest, obtaining a Black-Steel ring.

[Soren’s Appreciation Ring] (Black-Steel, Ring)

Vitality: +2

Strength: +3

Equipped Effect: Each attack triggers a fixed rate in healing your HP. Recovery rate will be 1% of the damage.

Level Requirement: 10

This would be the first equipment in the game that possessed the <Life Steal> effect. It’s too bad that the recovery rate was too low, and so was the trigger rate! It could not be helped since this was a General Quest’s reward; a ring as a reward was considered satisfactory and it’s always better than receiving nothing at all!

Hong!

A flash of golden radiance illuminated the area and Zhang Yang

had risen to Level 11 with the 10,000 EXP reward from his quest.

He had thought that he would enter the Player Level Ranking but after he checked the board, he found out that those who were still Level 10 that morning had all reached Level 11. He was not in the ranking but thankfully the player who had ranked first was still Level 11.

“Fatty, I’m going to make the shield. Go level up yourself!” said Zhang Yang.

Fatty Han yawned and said, “I’ve only slept for 3 to 4 hours. I’m feeling sleepy again so I guess I’m going to get some sleep first!”

Zhang Yang peeked at the system clock and said, “F\*ck! It’s going to be 6 pm! What sleep? Go have your dinner and come back online to play for a while more. Rest well at night and don’t burn the midnight oil anymore! You’re playing for such a long time everyday anyway, why would you stay up late?”

“Hmm, makes sense. Well then, I shall go kill some mobs now that I’ve just gotten these new weapons! Eh? Hold up! Someone just private messaged me!” He paused for a brief second and his face had immediately morphed into a perverted one. “Little Yang, a pretty babe wants to chat with me, so I’m not gonna bullshit with you anymore!”

Zhang Yang smiled and left for the Auction House.



To make an [Earthen Round Shield], he would need 100 [Iron Bar]s and 1 [Plain Copper Bar]. Zhang Yang did not have any [Iron Bar] in his inventory so he had to buy them from the Auction House.

The Auction House was where players trade, buy or sell items in the game. Every city would have them but different cities would not share the goods. Simply said, items put on auction in White Jade Castle's Auction House could only be bought from the house itself, and players from other cities would have to travel all the way here if they wanted that particular item.

Once Zhang Yang entered Auction House, he loaded the search window and keyed in the keywords "Iron Ore, Iron Bar". Tapping the search button, a whole page of results appeared.

Since the game was still in its early stage, all sorts of prices were set. Zhang Yang did a simple price comparison and auctioned for 15 stacks of [Iron Bar]s that had costed 50 silver coins for each stack, buying a total of 300 bars.

He then went to the mailbox and collected the [Iron Bar]s that were sent by the Auction House. After that, he went to the Smithery and placed 100 [Iron Bar]s and 1 [Plain Copper Bar] onto the cast. He then opened the crafting window and selected the [Earthen Round Shield] and tapped 'Craft'. His character then moved on its own and picked up a hammer, a progress bar appearing below his avatar.

After 30 seconds.

‘Ding! You have crafted [Earthen Round Shield]. Your Crafting Skill has increased by 1 point!’

In ‘God’s Miracle’, crafting level could be categorized into Beginner, Amateur, Advanced, Professional, Specialist, Master and Grandmaster. Each level up required 1000 crafting points. NPCs would not teach players to craft any items and all of the items could only be learnt through recipes found by players.

The lower ranked recipes were easier to obtain but once a player had reached the Professional level and beyond, it would be extremely hard to obtain even one recipe that corresponded to the level. Furthermore, going from Professional to Specialist would require a player to craft items from Professional-ranked recipes. Nothing could be done if there was no recipe of that rank.

That was why even after 5 years in the game in his previous life, far too few players had managed to become a Grandmaster of Crafting.

Zhang Yang stroked the shield lovingly and swapped the old shield to equip it, raising his attributes by heaps.

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 11

HP: 790

Defense: 64

Strength: 86

Dexterity: 32

Luck: 2

Melee Damage: 102 – 110

Attack Interval: 2 seconds

64 Defense! Zhang Yang laughed. With such a high Defense value, not many players would be able to penetrate his defense at the moment! His 790 HP could allow him to stand still and it would still take half a day for someone to kill him!

He then proceeded to utilize all his materials and crafted two more shields. After that, he went to the mailbox and mailed one of the shields to Crimson Fire via cash-on-delivery. He then put the other shield up with a minimum bid of 400 gold coins and without a buyout price for a day on the Auction House anonymously.

It was about 6.30 pm when he had wanted to log off and have his dinner but he was interrupted by a private message notification

sound.

“Buddy, I have a lot more [Iron Ore]s here. If you would like to buy more of them, you can contact me directly and I can give you a lower price!”

Zhang Yang checked and saw that the message was sent by someone named ‘Professional Miner’. He immediately recalled that it was the person whom he had bought the [Iron Plate]s from in the Auction House. Auction Houses would usually charge a 10% service fee, so most players would want to establish direct transactions with regular customers to cut their cost.

Realizing that he would need a large amount of [Iron Plate]s to craft shields, he would indeed need a stable supplier. Zhang Yang then replied the message saying, “Eh, I would require 10 to 20 stacks of [Iron Plate]s daily. Can you guarantee the constant supply?”

“Haha, My name is Professional Miner. 10 to 20? If you want several times more than that amount, I could also dig them up for you!” Professional Miner replied smugly.

“Very well. What’s the price?”

“It depends on how many you want.”

“Um, let’s make it 100 stacks for now!” Zhang Yang simply gave a number. That amount would allow him to produce only 20 shields

anyway so it was not that much.

“Sheesh! What’s with that amount!” Professional Miner drew in a shaky breath.

“Haha, you said you could do it!” Zhang Yang laughed as he replied.

“Hehe, 100 stacks are too much. I only have 30 stacks for now!”

“Okay, 30 stacks it is! Name your price!”

“Um, how about 48 silver coins per stack?”

Professional Miner had auctioned a stack for 50 silver coins in the Auction House and the 10% service fee would have cost him 5 silver coins. Therefore, the price offered now was cheaper by 2 silver coins which Zhang Yang thought was acceptable.

Zhang Yang replied instantly, “Very well, mail them to me via COD. I’ll be logging off to have dinner now!”

“OK, let’s be friends. It’s easier to keep in touch!”

Zhang Yang easily accepted the friend request and logged off.

Taking off his gaming helmet, Zhang Yang let out a long breath.

After laying down for such a long period of time, his body felt rather stiff. He stretched in his room for a bit before heading to the kitchen to prepare his dinner. He logged back in after having a simple meal.

The email notification indicated that he had new mails so Zhang Yang went to the mailbox and retrieved them. The first one was about the [Iron Ore]s from Professional Miner. 14 gold coins were deducted after Zhang Yang selected 'Accept' as the transaction was via COD. 30 stacks of [Iron Ore]s were then added into his inventory. The second mail contained 500 gold coins that the system had sent over after Crimson Fire retrieved the shield.

Zhang Yang sent a message to Fatty Han, asking him to complete a quest together but Fatty Han rejected him saying that he wanted to chat with the pretty girl and did not have time for him.

“Hoes before bros, what a douche!” Zhang Yang shook his head, he had wanted to bring Fatty Han along for a special quest but since that fatty could not be counted upon, Zhang Yang would just ignore him.

Going out of the city and heading eastward, he was blocked by 4 players who prevented him from walking further.

Floral Shorts, Prideful Precepts, Prideful Babysitter and Kindling Chest Hair – the Pride Quad.

“F\*ck you, noob Warrior! I’ve said it before. If you didn’t add us back into the party, I’ll kill you back to Level 0!” Prideful Precepts

glared at Zhang Yang, gritting his teeth.

Oh, how infuriated they were after Zhang Yang had kicked them out of the party! They then discussed and decided that they would not let this matter rest and must make Zhang Yang pay for his arrogance! Therefore, they had waited at the dungeon entrance to gang up and beat Zhang Yang up once he came out.

However, what had greeted them after waiting for so long was the red-text laden server announcement!

They had felt angrier after seeing that! If Zhang Yang had not kicked them out from the party, they would have been part of the glorious feat! These 4 players had not even reflected on the reason of their expulsion but had piled all their fury and blamed it on Zhang Yang. This had further steeled their will to ‘punish’ Zhang Yang.

After Snowy Death and the rest of the party had exited the dungeon, they had waited for another period of time yet Zhang Yang was nowhere to be found. Prideful Precepts then realized that Zhang Yang must have used a Teleportation Reagent! They then rushed hurriedly back to the city and with such coincidence, stumbled upon Zhang Yang in their journey!

Zhang Yang smirked, “With just you bunch of useless douches?”

“Useless your ass! Why are we still talking shit with him?! Wreck the guy!” Kindling Chest Hair held his hammer tightly with his eyes locked on Zhang Yang.

“Yes, roll him over! If he’s not killed back to Level 0 today, I can’t stomach this insult!” Floral Shorts said as he used <Stealth>, disappearing from their sight.

Prideful Precepts had started to cast a <Fireball> while Kindling Chest Hair had wielded his hammer and rushed towards Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang waited patiently with his arms crossed, sneering.

“Noob Warrior! Just die!” said Kindling Chest Hair as he dashed over, swinging his shield and tossing it towards Zhang Yang.

“<Shield Toss>!”

‘Pah!’ A damage text floated above Zhang Yang’s head, ‘-1!’.

‘Ding! You are under attack by Floral Shorts and his party. You have 10 minutes to counterattack!’

After the system notification rang in his ears, Zhang Yang’s gaze turned cold, revealing his lethal aura.

According to the game’s rules, whenever a fight occurred between players, the first to attack would be identified as the challenger by the system and marked with a red name tag. The other party would then be given 10 minutes to counterattack



unrestrictedly. A red-tagged player would drop 2 levels if they were killed regardless of whether the deed was done by players, monsters, or even NPCs!

Zhang Yang had not initiated the attack solely because he had wanted the system to identify them as red-tagged challengers!

At the same time, Floral Shorts had emerged from his stealth mode and appeared behind Zhang Yang, slashing him with two swords.

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

Unable to penetrate Zhang Yang’s 64 points of Defense, Floral Shorts could only cause a pitiful 1 damage.

“Shit! How is this noob Warrior’s skin so thick!” Floral Shorts asked surprised.

‘Dang!’ Kindling Chest Hair’s hammer landed on Zhang Yang yet he too could only deal a pathetic ‘-1’ damage.

‘-36!’

Prideful Precepts’ fireball had also landed on Zhang Yang and had finally dealt damage that was not too shabby.

Defense could only reduce physical damage, it would be ineffective against magical damage.

Zhang Yang scoffed and used <Charge> towards Prideful Precepts, stunning and slashing him with his sword, causing a devastating ‘-103’ damage that was one-fourth of his HP in an instance.

“F\*ck me! How is his damage so high?!” screamed Prideful Precepts. “Babysitter, heal me!”

At this time, both Floral Shorts and Kindling Chest Hair had come back, raising their weapons to attack Zhang Yang.

“<Block>!”

‘-70!’

‘-82!’

<Block> reflected damage text floated across Kindling Chest Hair and Floral Shorts’ heads simultaneously.

‘-204!’

‘-210!’

‘-209!’

‘-190!’

‘-20!’

The <Horizontal Sweep> had caused high damage on the Pride Quad and triggered the necklace’s <Shadow Rage>, reflecting on Zhang Yang’s current target, Prideful Precepts.

“What the hell, this guy isn’t human at all!”

“Babysitter, heal me!”

“F\*ck off, me first!”

‘-166!’

Zhang Yang flicked his wrist and bashed his shield on Prideful Precepts. <Shield Bash> dealing incredible damage, sent Prideful Precepts whose HP was not even 100 points, straight to resurrection spawn point. He did not even give Prideful Babysitter any opportunity to heal him.

‘Ding! You have killed Prideful Precepts!’

‘-99!’

Zhang Yang swung his sword and slashed Prideful Babysitter, simultaneously activating <Force Strike> and dealing ‘-101’ damage.

‘Ding! You have killed Prideful Babysitter!’

In an instant, only Floral Shorts and Kindling Chest Hair with their 146 HP and 428 HP were left!

## Chapter 32: Spawn Camping

---

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

‘-1!’

Floral Shorts and Kindling Chest Hair had used all their brute strength in attacking Zhang Yang but were unable to penetrate his defense, their faces paling in shock.

‘God’s Miracle’ was designed really well. Even a player’s inner feelings could be expressed so realistically! Zhang Yang applauded internally and then dealt a horizontal blow towards Kindling Chest Hair.

“-92!”

“Damn, this guy must be using hacks! How can a f\*cking Guardian deal such high damage?!” cried Floral Shorts. He had thought that they could take Zhang Yang easily by outnumbering him 4 to 1 but unexpectedly the situation was reversed. How could they not feel embarrassed?

“Fucking [GM](#) and shitty game. Why didn’t they do anything about the hacks? What the f\*ck, f\*ck you and your ancestors!” Kindling Chest Hair cussed immediately.

Zhang Yang raised the shield immediately after <Block>'s cooldown completed.

‘-70!’

‘-80!’

2 <Block> reflected damage texts popped up while Zhang Yang conveniently activated <Shield Bash>.

‘-156!’

Kindling Chest Hair huffed in pain and exclaimed, “Floral, let’s withdraw quickly!”

“Trying to run?” sneered Zhang Yang as he drew his sword again and launched another <Horizontal Sweep>.

‘-202!’

‘-20!’

‘-208!’

‘+2!’ <Life Steal> from the ring was triggered.

Floral Shorts and Kindling Chest Hair did not even manage to

turn around before they both fell and died. Kindling Chest Hair had actually dropped an equipment. It was the [Heavy Chest Plate] he had obtained from their Normal Mode Bangar Crypt run together.

‘Ding, you have killed Floral Shorts!’

‘Ding, you have killed Kindling Chest Hair!’

Zhang Yang picked up the equipment and stored it in his inventory without a second thought. Although he did not need it, it could be sold for a few gold coins if he auctioned it at the Auction House. He was in need of money so every penny counts!

Some 10 minutes later, Floral Shorts and his friends had revived themselves by returning their ‘spirits’ to their bodies.

‘Sha!’

Suddenly, a shadow sprang out from the bushes by the road and charged towards Prideful Precepts, causing rotating stars which symbolized the ‘Stun’ status effect to immediately appear on his head.

“Crap! That noob Guardian is spawn camping!” Floral Shorts yelled in surprise.

‘-106!’

Zhang Yang waved his sword and a huge damage text floated across Prideful Precepts' head. How could Prideful Percepts who had just revived with only 20% HP withstand such a blow? Thus, a white light flashed and he was sent to sign his attendance at the graveyard once again!

When his Rage rose to 25 points, Zhang Yang wielded his sword and used <Horizontal Sweep>!

‘-198!’

‘-205!’

‘-208!’

‘-20!’

Kindling Chest Hair and the 2 others who stood close to each other were then sent off to meet the Resurrection Goddess in a stream of white light.

“F\*ck! F\*ck!” cried Prideful Precepts in his spirit form as he appeared at the graveyard. Not long after, he received notice of Floral Shorts and the others' deaths. All of them were dropped to Level 6 from dying twice under red-tagged names.

“That guy... could he still be camping our bodies?” said Prideful



Babysitter with a tone of fear in his voice.

“Let’s run back to our bodies but not resurrect ourselves yet. We’ll wait!” said Floral Shorts.

The 4 of them returned to their bodies and waited patiently.

One hour later.

“He should be gone by now right?” said Floral Shorts with uncertainty in his voice.

“Yeah. It’s been so long now. He shouldn’t have such patience!” said Prideful Precepts, “I’ll count to 3 and let’s resurrect together!”

“1!”

“2!”

“3!”

A gust of wind blew by and all 4 souls were still there standing.

“F\*ck, why didn’t you guys resurrect?” scolded Prideful Precepts.

“Damn, why didn’t you resurrect?” Floral Shorts argued back as well.

“Stop, stop, stop! Stop quarrelling, we’re all a family! Let’s do this again, whoever doesn’t resurrect this time is a noob bastard. His son will be born without an asshole and his daughter cursed to forever remain flat-chested!” said Prideful Babysitter.

“1!”

“2!”

“3!”

4 of them resurrected together.

‘Sha!’ A flash of sword went by and four bodies laid dead on the floor.

“I... Crap...” Prideful Precepts was filled with tears.

The other 3 looked at each other speechlessly. They had wanted to kill Zhang Yang back to Level 0 initially but looking at their own pathetic states now, they have already dropped to Level 4! If they were killed another two more times then all of them would really end up hitting Level 0!

“... Let’s resurrect here!” Floral Shorts finally said after a long time.

Resurrecting directly at the graveyard would incur additional penalties: dropping 1 level and decreasing all attributes for 80% for an hour!

...

Zhang Yang leisurely laid by the bush and played with a stalk of grass, glancing at the 4 bodies by the road occasionally. Suddenly, all 4 bodies turned transparent and eventually disappeared.

“Hehe, they’ve resurrected directly at the graveyard huh?!” Zhang Yang patted his butt and stood up. The nearest graveyard was in the Capital and it was prohibited for players to fight there, so there was no chance for him to kill the Pride Quad back to Level 0!

Zhang Yang had been an absolute dictator since he was young! The title ‘Li’l Overlord of Octagonal Alley’ was not bullshit, it was in fact a title he had earned through sweat and blood! The despicable Pride Quad had dared ambush him and even threatened to kill him back to Level 0. Naturally, he had needed to remind them to engrave this lesson into their hearts!

Checking the time, he realized he had actually wasted 2 hours on the Pride Quad! Zhang Yang thought about it and chose to log off immediately. The place he had intended to travel to was not nearby and he would have to go to bed by the time he arrived and killed only a few mobs. In addition, he had a dungeon raid at 9am tomorrow. Running back and forth would be such a pain!

Theoretically, a player could only get a mount at Level 40 and a flying mount at Level 100. How Zhang Yang missed the days in his previous life where he could roam the world on his Stormhawk!

Just as Zhang Yang had logged off, he recalled that he had forgotten to inform Fatty Han about the next morning's dungeon raid. Inevitably, he had to log back on to send the fatty a private message, telling him to wait at the dungeon entrance at 9 am the next morning.

Fatty Han seemed like he was still chatting with a certain pretty girl and had only acknowledged the message after some time before completely ignoring Zhang Yang once again.

Logging off and laying on his bed, Zhang Yang took out his diary and scribbled what he could remember from the game's trend in his previous life.

According to his memory, the final boss Marzerway in the Level 20 dungeon, Marzerway's Lair, was a magic-type monster. Its <Shadow Ball> had been extraordinary! Currently, nobody possessed much magic-resistant equipment and could only achieve high magic resistance with the aid of potions!

There was an <Alchemy> recipe that could produce a potion called [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. Upon consumption, it would increase a player's Shadow resistance by 100 for 1 minute. This would be an absolutely necessity to clear Marzerway's Lair!

Zhang Yang's next stage of his get-rich-quick scheme would be to

sell this potion, it would definitely rake in massive profit!

After he receive Crimson Fire's gold coins tomorrow, Zhang Yang plans on hoarding [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower], the two main ingredients in crafting [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion].

Zhang Yang strategized for a while and went to bed.

The next day, Zhang Yang woke up at around 6 in the morning and spent an hour exercising. After having his breakfast as well as a short break, it was already around 8.30 am.

He put on his game helmet and logged on!

'Ding! Player Crimson Fire invites you to join his party. Will you accept his invitation?'

The moment Zhang Yang went online, he received a party invitation. He accepted it since they had made an agreement the previous day.

'Ding! You have joined a party! Party leader: Crimson Fire, Group Looting Parameters: Master Loot!'

He checked the party list and well, there were already 10 players. It was just lacking him.

He already knew half of the party members: Crimson Fire,

Phantom Day, Silky Snow, and Fatty Han; the other 5 were unfamiliar faces but he guessed that they would probably be the elites of Lost Paradise!

Royal Pardon, Dwarf, Beastmaster, Level 10.

Love Lonely, Human, Pyromancer, Level 10.

Absolute Defense, Human, Defender, Level 11.

Favorite Orange, Elf, Cryomancer, Level 10.

Little Demon, Human, Sacred Knight, Level 10.

Immediately, Phantom Day and the others had greeted Zhang Yang enthusiastically.

“So early?” Zhang Yang asked in the party channel as he laughed.

“Yeah, you’re the last one. Hurry over! We can begin once everyone’s here!” replied Crimson Fire.

“OK, I’m coming!” Zhang Yang had logged off midway yesterday so it would only take him roughly 10 minutes to walk over to Bangar Crypt.

“Hmph, how stuck-up! 9 of us have waited for such a long time

for you!” Absolute Defense suddenly said.

Zhang Yang was surprised and thought to himself, “It’s already said that the dungeon raid starts at 9 am. I looked at the time before coming and it wouldn’t have passed 9 am when I reach the dungeon anyway. What a temper this bro has!”

“F\*ck, don’t play if you don’t want to wait! F\*cker, who do you think you are!” Fatty Han had a far shorter temper than Zhang Yang, turning angry immediately when he heard people complaining about his brother.

Crimson Fire hurriedly pacified them and said, “Absolute, stop your nonsense!”

10 minutes later, Zhang Yang arrived at the dungeon entrance.

Differing from yesterday’s deserted state, the valley was filled with people as most players had reached Level 10 and wanted to try raiding the dungeon. Lone players were searching for pub parties while parties were finding players they lacked. All sorts of messages flooded the open channel as though it was a market.

Among the crowd, tanks and healers were undoubtedly scarce. Although Zhang Yang had hidden his profile information, people could still recognize him as a tank because of the shield he was carrying on his back. He had received no less than 30 private messages asking him to join their parties.

“Let’s enter the dungeon!” commanded Crimson Fire.

‘Ding! You have entered Bangar Crypt (Hardcore Mode)!’

All 10 players appeared at the entrance one by one. Zhang Yang glanced at Fatty Han and was surprised. “Why are you in a guild?”

As coy as Fatty Han was, he would never hide his profile information. “Slim and Handsome, Crypt Slaughterer, Level 10.” “Blazing City” were the two rows of text above his head.

“Hehe. Yesterday I met this pretty chick who really fancies Fatty! So I’ve decided to temporarily join her guild and give her an opportunity to further understand her idol!” Fatty Han said shamelessly. “Oh yeah, why don’t you join in as well? I’ll be bolder if you’re with me!”

Zhang Yang frowned and said, “We’ll talk about it later!”

1 GM stands for gamemaster, game moderator or game manager. This is sort of the admin/go-to person hired by an MMO developer to cater to the masses of people playing an online game. GMs generally help ensure the stability of the server and usually have various kinds of jobs as long as they are related to the game server.



## Chapter 33: A Small Obstacle

---

“Brother Zhan Yu, I’ve gathered all the elites in the guild here, do you think we have a shot at the Fastest Hardcore Clearance Ranking?” Crimson Fire sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh, “Aren’t you being a little greedy? Just 1 thousand gold coins and you want me to help you get on the ranking?”

Crimson Fire smiled awkwardly, “If we really did get on the ranking, I’ll add on another ten thousand gold coins!”

How could a mere ten thousand gold coins be compared to a server announcement spam?!

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “You have no idea how it works to be on the speed ranking, right?”

“Eh? Isn’t it just breaking the previous record?” Crimson Fire replied earnestly.

“It’s divided into two conditions. First, like you’ve said, if the ranking already has records, you would only have to break the previous ones. Second, if the ranking is empty, like it currently is, then you would have to fulfill two conditions in order to be ranked.”

Zhang Yang continued, “The first condition is to beat the record

time taken by the first clearance, and the second is to beat the system's own allotted time!”

“What? There's a system allotted time?” Crimson Fire really did not know.

“Of course! Otherwise you could spend the whole day for your first clearance then beat the record by improving just one minute each time, and that would have let you spam your name all over the ranking! You must know, each record breaker of Fastest Hardcore Clearance Ranking will be rewarded with items like Runes, Gems and so on. Do you think that the system would really be this easy and nice?”

“Oh!” Crimson Fire finally understood.

“That's why the system has to set such a high bar. You need to fulfill these conditions before the system recognizes your result to qualify you for the ranking! As for Bangar Crypt, the speed limit set to be ranked is 30 minutes!”

“Sh\*t! That fast?” Even if Crimson Fire bore the title of guildmaster, he still could not help but cursed.

Zhang Yang laughed, “That's the case, so it'd be better to just raid for the equipment. When everyone has reached Level 15 and has mostly Green-Copper equipment on, you might be able to consider trying to do a [speedrun](#)!”

With Zhang Yang's explanation, Crimson Fire abandoned his idea, giving up on his hope to rank on the Fastest Hardcore Clearance Ranking anytime soon.

“Guildmaster, can we start now?” Absolute Defense said smugly, taking off the shield from his back and the hammer from his waist, his gaze on Zhang Yang filled with hostility.

Zhang Yang was puzzled. When did he ever offend this man?! However, he was not the kind of man to be afraid of rocking the boat. He did not have to endure this so he had immediately rolled his eyes back at Absolute Defense.

Absolute Defense felt so wronged!

He was Lost Paradise's MT (main tank), there was not a single person in the guild who had not politely addressed him “Brother Absolute”! No one could match his monster pulling skills nor his reaction rate! He had received many poaching attempts with high salaries from large guilds when he was still in other games to sway him to switch guilds. If it had not been for him liking Silky Snow, he would have left this tiny Lost Paradise!

However, he felt that he had been humiliated yesterday!

Their guildmaster had actually abandoned him to join a pub party for a dungeon raid, saying things about discovering a powerful tank and wanting to check him out!

What was that? Lost Paradise already had him, the universe's strongest tank, so why would they need another tank?

Furthermore, what happened in the end had angered him even more! Not only had the pub party cleared Hard Mode, they had also managed to take down Hardcore Mode!

Absolute Defense was furious! How could he not be involved in such a valiant event! He would never acknowledge that his standard was lower than that pub tank's. He felt that luck was merely on his side and that was all!

Last night, Crimson Fire gave him a shield and had insisted that he raided Hardcore Mode the next day together with the party.

Absolute Defense was completely dumbfounded once he had inspected the shield. It was a Green-Copper equipment! The best shield in the game so far! He did not have to put much thought into it to know that the shield must have been obtained from Hardcore Mode Bangar Crypt!

Why did that pub party's Guardian, this Zhan Yu guy, not claim the shield? As a tank, shields would have been the most valuable defense equipment. He could not have let this go!

The only reason he could think of was that Zhan Yu must have been an additional supporting cast in the party and not worthy of the shield. That would explain why the guildmaster had held on to the shield and gave it to him!

The more Absolute Defense thought of it, the more sense it made for him. When Crimson Fire had said to raid Hardcore Mode together with Zhan Yu, he had personally decided to properly humiliate that lucky bastard! To think that the brat had managed to tag along with his guildmaster and obtain the first clearance of Hardcore Mode which even he did not get!

Absolute Defense equipped and unequipped his [Earthen Round Shield] repeatedly to try and provoke Zhang Yang as if he was saying, “Look here, this shield belongs to me! Who do you think you are huh? Take a look, take a good look and be envious!”

Zhang Yang could not comprehend one bit. Why on earth was this guy showing off the shield he had crafted? What could it mean? Hmm, he definitely had a loose screw! Never mind, no use wasting time on a dimwit!

“I’m going now, keep those heals on me Silky!” Absolute Defense dashed towards the mobs with flair, not forgetting to give another despising look at Zhang Yang before he left.

“Your guild’s tank, this one. Is his brain still working properly?” Zhang Yang could not help but send a private message to Crimson Fire.

“...”

Still, Absolute Defense must be of a certain level to be Lost Paradise’s MT. Defenders were a natural at pulling groups of mobs and those 6 monsters had completely locked onto Absolute

Defense's aggro with no signs of swaying to other targets. Even then, Absolute Defense was no Zhang Yang. He had fully depended on his defense and skills to absorb the damage. Hardcore Mode monsters were expected to be ferocious and Absolute Defense's HP shot up and down like a rollercoaster ride, putting a load on the healers.

Zhang Yang stood by one side and watched. They were only minions. There was no need to put up such a big fight.

Elites were indeed elites, the monster killing rate was completely incomparable to the pub party yesterday. The minions were quickly killed without Zhang Yang moving an inch. However, the healers had completely drained their MP and had to rest and consume some food to recover their MP.

"Zhan Yu, can you complete a quest together with me later?" Silky Snow had quickly refilled her MP and skipped over to Zhang Yang to ask him sweetly.

"Silky, what quest is it? I can go with you!" Absolute Defense jumped to his feet immediately. His feelings for Silky Snow was not something recent.

Zhang Yang shrugged, trying to indicate that since there was someone for you, we should not waste more time. Although there was such a saying "you are only young once", Zhang Yang had experienced the uncertainties of life and was now fully determined to strengthen his own capabilities in order to be Lin Yu's dependable rock. There was simply no time for flings!

Silky Snow felt agitated, turning to glare at Absolute Defense.

Absolute Defense had no idea of her hidden agenda and had gotten angrier instead, “Not only is that little rascal a bastard, he dares to flirt with my girl! Unforgivable!”

With totally no intention to, Zhang Yang had leapt from being a bastard to someone’s love rival.

“Moving on!” Crimson Fire led the party forward without realizing the conflict that had occurred between Zhang Yang and Absolute Defense.

The Gatekeeper.

“Zhan Yu, you and Absolute Defense take one each!” Even though Crimson Fire knew perfectly well that Zhang Yang alone could tank the entire Hardcore Mode but since he had already brought along his guild’s tank, it would be a humiliation to Lost Paradise if he had just sat aside.

“Hmph. Guildmaster, I can do this alone!” Absolute Defense was utterly confident ever since he had equipped the shield, and mere mortals would not be able to stop his panache.

Zhang Yang only gestured for Absolute Defense to welcome him to give the fight a try.

Absolute Defense scoffed again and went ahead with his hammer.

“Pa! Pa! Pa!” After a moment of chaos, Crimson Fire hurriedly asked for help, “Zhan Yu! Go quick! Absolute is gonna fall! Hurry, healers increase the healing speed!”

Fatty Han laughed watching the scene.

Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and used <Charge>, stunning one of the monsters and began dealing damage. After the monster had recovered, Zhang Yang used <Provoke> and had stabilized the aggro once the 2-second provoke effect wore off.

When Absolute Defense had noticed the same shield on Zhang Yang’s left hand, he was befuddled. How could he have one too?

To save time, Zhang Yang refrained from quibbling with Absolute Defense and cleared all the minions along the way so they had arrived at the entrance of the first boss quickly. Having witnessed Zhang Yang’s capabilities and his astounding ability to pull aggro, it had made Absolute Defense felt like a total extra.

When Black Claw had been defeated, he was even more surprised! Stacking over 10 stacks of <Death Stare>, Zhang Yang was not hit even once by the boss. His manipulation of movement and timing had opened Absolute Defense’s eyes, he had not known that a tank could actually reach this level! From then on, he was completely listless, attacking monsters without making a sound.



Since the party was stronger than yesterday's and Zhang Yang's equipment had a major upgrade, the party had not been wiped even after defeating the hidden boss, though some deaths were inevitable.

According to the deal made, Zhang Yang would be prioritized for any equipment that would be of use to him. Zhang Yang had then accepted 4 Green-Copper equipment without hesitation.

[Lord's Helm] (Green-Copper, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +12

Strength: +6

Dexterity: +2

Level Requirement: 10

[Bloodied Cape] (Green-Copper, Cape)

Vitality: +3

Strength: +2

Level Requirement: 10

[Warrior’s Chest Plate] (Green-Copper, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +12

Strength: +8

Level Requirement: 10

[Amber Ring] (Green-Copper, Ring)

Vitality: +3

Strength: +2

Equipped Effect: Each successful evasion has a fixed rate of increasing 20 points Strength for 10 seconds. Effect cannot be stacked.

Level Requirement: 10

“47 minutes!” Crimson Fire had timed their progress. “Zhan Yu, do you think we could get the time down to within 30 minutes if we upgrade our equipment and master our battle strategy a little better?”

“Mm, there’s hope for it.” said Zhang Yang as he equipped his new gears.

“Hehe. We’ll continue to raid Hard Mode and not take any more of a professional’s time!” said Crimson Fire. With equipment obtained from Hardcore Mode, it would be a humiliation to not pass Hard Mode.

“Okay. Bye bye then!” Both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han quit the party.

Speedrun is a style/strategy for running a dungeon/instance/raid in games where the highest priority of every member should be the completion of the run in the shortest duration possible. This strategy generally forgoes item loots, experience, hidden bosses, etc and the party composition would generally try to include as many DPS-ers as possible. Common tactics used in speedruns include a full DPS party, or kiting many monsters together for AoE classes to nuke at once.

## Chapter 34: Physician's Friend

---

“Fatty, let’s go, there’s this special quest I want you to do with me!” said Zhang Yang to Fatty Han after leaving the dungeon.

“What’s the reward?”

“Increase the effect of using Bandage by 100%!”

“Psh, pointless!” Fatty Han said impatiently, “Fatty here is a Hunter. My baby will block attacks for me, I need no bandages! Little Yang, the pretty babe came to chat with me again. You’re on your own, I’m not following you!”

“D\*mn!” Zhang Yang made a disdainful gesture.

Since Fatty Han had refused to join him, Zhang Yang could only go on his own. After Zhang Yang left the dungeon, he made his way out of the valley and proceeded eastward. He went through several forests and finally arrived at a small village.

He went ahead to meet the Village Elder and accepted the quest “Missing Livestock”. Zhang Yang then left the village and arrived at a huge lake. The monsters here were all Level 15 and above while players were generally around Level 10 so they were either raiding Bangar Crypt or grinding on Level 11 or 12 Wild Boars at the Wild Boar Mountain. The site had remained empty with no players present aside from him.

Under the shade of an obscure big tree, Zhang Yang found an old man wearing a white medical coat, his eyebrows and beard were snow-white. He had “Deckard the Head Physician” in a tag above his head.

“Old man, why are you here?” Zhang Yang started a conversation with the NPC.

“Adventurer, I’m the physician of White Jade Castle! I’m currently developing an antidote and need a large amount of [Python Gall]. Can you collect some for me?” said Deckard.

“Ding! Deckard the Head Physician has a quest for you: Collect [Python Gall]. Will you accept it?”

Of course he would!

“Adventurer, those pythons are venomous. It is very dangerous, you must be cautious!” Deckard voiced his concern.

Zhang Yang remembered very clearly that this NPC would send a follow-up quest with an ultimate reward of the title “Physician’s Friend”. When <First Aid> was used, the Bandage healing effect would increase by 100%!

<First Aid> was categorized as a supportive skill that has no relation with class skills. Any player could learn it from the First Aid Trainer when they had achieved Level 20. <First Aid> would allow a player to create a variety of bandages, different kinds

healing different amounts of HP. This was an alternative recovery skill aside from potions for non-healer professions.

In order to trigger the follow-up quest, 2 conditions were to be fulfilled: first, the player must not have learnt <First Aid> in the Capital. Second, the player must repeatedly complete the prerequisite quest “Collect Python Gall”. According to a player who had completed the quest in Zhang Yang’s previous life, he had to complete this repetitive prerequisite quest for 99 times!

After the follow-up quest had been completed, Deckard would return to the Capital one day later, which theoretically meant that there was a possibility that all players could obtain the reward.

Of course, Zhang Yang had not only come for the reward alone! A Gray-Silver chest would randomly spawn around this lake and there was a very small chance that the chest would contain the [Recipe: Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. This was his main purpose!

[Collect Python Gall] (Difficulty: C)

Quest Description: Deckard the Head Physician needs your help to collect 20 [Python Gall]s to develop an antidote. Those monsters should be in the Tranquil Lake.

Progress: Collect [Python Gall] 0/20

[Missing Livestock] (Difficulty: C)

Quest Description: Those pythons in Tranquil Lake were dreadful. They have eaten a lot of the livestock in the village. Go, kill them!

Progress: Kill Gold Venomous Python 0/40

These 2 quests could be done at the same time coincidentally!

“Take this. This should aid you in your quest!” Deckard handed over a bottle of potion to Zhang Yang.

“Ding! You have obtained item [Diving Potion]!”

[Diving Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Allows you to breathe underwater for 1 hour.

Level Requirement: 10

Zhang Yang consumed the potion and a buff icon appeared on his head, enabling him to breathe underwater.

“Toong!” He dived into the lake.

A dark golden flash sparked on Zhang Yang’s left and a “-14” damage text floated across his head at the same time.

Zhang Yang dived in the water, gaining an underwater vision of the lake.

A 2-meter long golden-lined snake as thick as an arm had stretched its mouth wide and glided towards Zhang Yang.

If it had been on land, Zhang Yang was sure he could dodge this attack. However, his movements were restricted while underwater, so how could he have kept up with the python’s agility?!

‘Ding! You are affected by <Gold Python Venom> (Stack 1). Reduces 10 HP every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds!’

Zhang Yang’s face turned dark as a debuff icon appeared on his avatar.

[Gold Venomous Python] (Normal)

Level: 15

HP: 750



---

Zhang Yang's defense was high so the physical damage received was very minimal. However, the python's venom was magic damage so it would be troublesome if he stacked too much of them!

Zhang Yang grabbed his sword and began attacking these monsters as fast as he could.

His damage output had already been high since the beginning and with the 4 new Green-Copper equipment that he had gotten today, his HP increased to 950 points while his attack damage had reached 115 – 123. Truly remarkable!

Only 3 – 4 strikes were enough to kill the python. Zhang Yang stretched his hand and easily looted the gall and with luck, 2 [Venomous Python Fangs]. They were White-tiered '[Etc](#)' items that were to be sold for money.

The lake was full of Gold Venomous Pythons. Zhang Yang had no idea where the chest could have spawned so he could only make rounds to explore the whole lake.

An hour later, he had collected 23 [Python Gall]s while the quest "Missing Livestock" had long since been completed. He had already killed over 100 pythons!

Since the [Diving Potion]'s buff had worn off, Zhang Yang could only go back to Deckard to complete the quest.

“Brave adventurer, citizens of White Jade Castle will never forget your good deed!” Deckard praised Zhang Yang generously but did not reward him with any actual item. “Adventurer, are you willing to help me again?”

Could he not ‘willingly’ accept it? Zhang Yang sighed and accepted the same quest once again.

He went back to where he had come out from the lake and jumped in again, hunting for [Python Gall]s while searching for the chest.

Zhang Yang had already forgotten how many times he had completed the quest and how many times he had taken the [Diving Potion] for he had been killing pythons to the point of sickening monotony when his eyes suddenly gleamed as he spotted a silver chest on a rock at the bottom of the lake!

He had finally found it! This f\*cking lake was ridiculously huge! He had swam for so long only to have searched two-thirds of the place.

However, there were 4 pythons guarding the chest but they were all normal mobs, not bosses or even elites.

Zhang Yang took aim at one of the pythons and launched <Charge>, dashing towards it.

“-105!”

The other 3 venomous pythons immediately swam over in attempt to attack Zhang Yang with their bloodied fangs.

“<Block>!”

“-84!”

“-84!”

“-84!” <Block> reflected damage.

“-183!” <Shield Bash>!

“-224!”

“-215!”

“-231!”

“-222!”

“-20!”

<Horizontal Sweep> had caused 4 damage texts and had simultaneously triggered the necklace’s <Shadow Wrath>.

2 seconds later, all 4 pythons charged towards Zhang Yang again.

‘Ding! You are affected by <Gold Python Venom> (Stack 1). Reduces 10 HP every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds!’

‘Ding! You are affected by <Gold Python Venom> (Stack 2). Reduces 20 HP every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds!’

‘Ding! You are affected by <Gold Python Venom> (Stack 3). Reduces 30 HP every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds!’

‘Ding! You are affected by <Gold Python Venom> (Stack 4). Reduces 40 HP every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds!’

These pythons were truly cumbersome!

Zhang Yang focused his attacks on a python and killed one instantly, the second following.

Zhang Yang had already stacked 5 stacks of <Gold Python Venom> by the time he had cleared all 4 pythons. His HP had reduced to 358 points when the python’s venom effect had disappeared. That was more than half of his HP!

Monsters with DoT effects are not something you could just ignore! Zhang Yang sighed as he opened the chest.

DoT, Damage over Time, a continuous damage effect over a fixed duration such as the python's venom as described above and <Curse of Water and Fire> by the second boss in Bangar Crypt.

10%, 20%, 30%, ... 100%!

'Tsst'. The chest opened.

Zhang Yang looted and –

[Undine's Lungs]: Special Item. Allows you to breathe underwater without equipment. A must-have for leisure travel and killing people!

Meh, even though it had taken a slot in the inventory, at least he would not have to find Deckard after every one hour.

[Treasure Map Piece (2)] (Gray-Silver)

Use: Put together all 3 pieces of the treasure map and obtain a [Complete Treasure Map].

A [Treasure Map Piece]!

Zhang Yang's eyes glinted. There were numerous treasure spots in 'God's Miracle' but it could only be dug when a [Complete Treasure Map] had been obtained. Naturally, different grades of treasure maps would lead to corresponding treasure spots!

What a pity, there was only one piece, another 2 more to go!

Again!

[Recipe: Silk Belt] (Leather Work Recipe)

Use: You learn how to craft [Silk Belt].

Requirement: Beginner Leather Work

“Ding! You have obtained 50 silver coins!”

The chest became transparent and eventually disappeared.

“No more?” Zhang Yang sighed, the obtained recipe was not the one he had wanted!

Continue grinding!

Zhang Yang began to grind non-stop. With [Undine's Lungs], he

did not need to leave the lake for air so he grinded until all 40 slots of his inventory were filled. He then got out from the water and completed the quest for [Python Gall]s.

At the end of the day, Zhang Yang logged out at 12 am. He had completed “Collect Python Gall” quest for a total of 14 times. It was still a long way to go compared to the 99 times the player had mentioned! However, Zhang Yang had gained a level but he was still not enlisted on the Player Level Ranking. He wondered if those ranked lunatics had ever logged off to actually sleep!

Fortunately, he was still motivated because the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] recipe had still not been found. Otherwise, he would definitely lose his patience grinding on those crappy snake again and again!

Gray-Silver Chests would only be spawned once every 3 days, and that meant that he could only spiritlessly grind mobs tomorrow.

Etc/Misc. – A category which stands of etcetera or miscellaneous loot. These are loot that have no other purpose in the game (not for crafting/quests/equipment) and can only be sold off to NPCs for a small amount of money.

# Chapter 35: Final Quest

---

A new day had arrived. Zhang Yang went online at 8.30 am and did a Hardcore Mode Bangar Crypt run with Crimson Fire and his party as per yesterday's arrangement and went straight to Tranquil Lake after that to resume his endless farming of [Python Gall]s.

It was around 3 pm when Zhang Yang's body flashed a golden ray after he killed yet another Gold Venomous Python.

‘Ding! Congratulations! You have achieved Level 13. All attributes +1. Obtained 5 SP!’

‘Ding! Your level has fulfilled the conditions to enter the Player Level Ranking. Would you like to be enlisted in the ranking?’

Zhang Yang had not expected that there was an additional option other than the usual level up system notification.

“I can be enlisted?” Zhang Yang was stumped, he did not realize that he had been gaining experience so quickly as he had been focused on killing the pythons! Then again, it was expected. Zhang Yang's high attack power was undeniable and nothing else was on his mind as he had been grinding the whole day, thus his level had risen so quickly!

He checked the Player Level Ranking and saw that all top 9 places were Level 13 while the tenth spot was a Level 12. If he had selected to be enlisted, he would then replace Folk Stories, a Templar.



In his previous life, Zhang Yang had entered the game 2 years too late, consequently he had never gotten the chance to be enlisted on the Player Level Ranking. That was why he did not know he had a choice in being enlisted on the ranking.

He contemplated and eventually selected 'Reject'. Right now, it would be better for him to stay out of the limelight while he accumulated his wealth!

After Level 10, Zhang Yang had changed his way of assigning his AP, investing all of them into Vitality. Before this, he had been completely equipped with White-Wood equipment which had then required him to assign his AP to increase his attack and maintain aggro. Now that he had Green-Copper gear, his damage output had significantly increased which subsequently required him to invest into his HP instead as monsters and bosses in Level 20 dungeons were all ferocious beasts. Furthermore, some of the bosses were magic-based and their skills would have been unavoidable with evasion or <Block>! If he had not invested in his Vitality, he would be in a tight spot!

Since he had gained a level, his farming speed had also increased. Just in a single day, he had submitted [Python Gall]s for the Repeatable Quest 15 times.

On the third day, Zhang Yang made it to Level 14 and completed the [Python Gall] quest 14 times.

On the fourth day, just as he entered the dungeon, Zhang Yang

had heard Crimson Fire say, “Zhan Yu, you’ve gotta slow down your leveling speed. We still want to break the dungeon speed record. If you zoom your way to Level 16 then our results won’t qualify!”

Zhang Yang took a glance, noticing that everyone in the party was either Level 12 or 13. In comparison, his leveling speed was indeed a little fast.

“Right now, leveling is the most important aspect of the game. Don’t put all your efforts into dungeon raids!” said Zhang Yang. He had suffered enough in his previous life for leveling slower than everyone else. Moreover, the reward for obtaining the Hardcore Mode’s first clearance was SP while rewards for Hardcore Mode’s fastest clearance ranking were only runes and gems. The difference between these two rewards was too much!

However valuable runes and gems were, there were just as many ways to obtain them. Zhang Yang did not value them as much! If he had delayed his leveling for these gems and missed the following first dungeon clearance, that would be his biggest loss!

“Ahh! Please don’t!” Crimson Fire tried to persuade him. Although Absolute Defense’s equipment had been beefed up in the past two days and had the capabilities to tank Hardcore Mode now, ultimately he was still thousands of miles away from Zhang Yang’s survivability, offense, and aggro control! Plus, the key to speed clearing Hardcore Mode was time and a tank’s capabilities would directly affect the efficiency in clearing the dungeon. It was only understandable that Crimson Fire did not want to let such a strong player like Zhang Yang off his grasp as he hurriedly turned to Silky

Snow and signaled her to persuade him as well.

Silky Snow laughed depreciatingly. For the past few days, even though she had become closer to Zhang Yang, their relationship was not any different from the others, what difference could she make in persuading him?

Crimson Fire persuaded Zhang Yang once more but seeing that he had steeled his desire to maintain his current leveling speed, he could only give up. As a guildmaster, it was naturally his duty to prioritize the advertising effect of the red server announcement spam! As of now, Lost Paradise was the only guild that has cleared Hardcore Mode Bangar Crypt. He had to maintain this status quo and take it a step further by ranking in the Fastest Hardcore Clearance Ranking!

Now that Zhang Yang could not be depended upon anymore, Crimson Fire had to find another solution!

After clearing the current Hardcore Mode, Crimson Fire had stopped asking Zhang Yang to reserve his dungeon entrance count for the next day but had assigned Absolute Defense to be the main tank, training the teamwork of the new party.

Even though Zhang Yang felt that losing the 1,000 gold coins of income each day was a pity, he did however earn 4,000 gold coins in the past 4 days and with the 10,000 gold coins that Crimson Fire had owed him earlier, he almost had enough funds to initiate his plans!

Returning to Tranquil Lake, he resumed his endless farming of [Python Gall]s. Once again, he had managed to unlock another chest but he had only obtained another [Treasure Map Piece] with no [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] recipe in sight. He would have to wait for another three days.

From the fifth day onwards, there were an increasing number of players present for the quest. While there were still not that many players around, Zhang Yang's crisis awareness had still rang. He was not afraid that they would take up all the monsters, but it was them stumbling upon the Gray-Silver Chest and looting it that he was afraid of!

Moreover, this chest would spawn at random places. The only thing quelling his worries was the fact that there would always be 4 Gold Venomous Pythons guarding the chest when it had spawned so random players could never take on the monsters alone!

It was lucky that the poison effect of these pythons was utterly annoying and underwater maneuverability was tough, so most players would just leave the place once they had completed the quest unlike Zhang Yang who had already made the lake his second home!

The fifth day had passed and Zhang Yang had reached Level 16. He had submitted [Python Gall]s for the 73rd time. Since Fatty Han's equipment had 'graduated' because of the Hardcore Mode runs, Zhang Yang did not raid dungeons anymore and had instead spent his entire day farming at Tranquil Lake.

On the sixth day, Zhang Yang reached Level 17 and submitted

[Python Gall]s for the 88th time.

---

The seventh day. Around 2pm.

Zhang Yang brought the last 20 [Python Gall]s to Deckard and completed the 99th ‘Collect [Python Gall]’ quest. As of now, he had reached Level 18 and if he wanted to, he could have been in the top 3 of the Player Level Ranking! Of course, that was excluding the fact that there could be others like him who did not wish to be ranked.

“Young adventurer, your bravery impresses me, your persistence awes me!” Deckard was finally moved, looking at Zhang Yang with admiration, “Your kindness is akin to Buddha’s! Oh, bless you young adventurer. you must lend me your aid for one last time!”

Finally!

Zhang Yang cleared his throat and said, “I will do my best!”

‘Ding! You have accepted the quest: The Last Python Gall!’

[The Last Python Gall] (Quest Difficulty: S)

Quest Description: Deckard wants you to head over to the

Python King's Nest, west of Tranquil Lake. Slay the Golden Venomous Python King and obtain its python gall! Adventurer, please be cautious! Golden Venomous Python King is extremely strong, it would be better if you could bring your companions!

Progress: Obtained [Golden Venomous Python King's Python Gall] 0/1

Quest Reward: <Specialist First Aid>, Title "Physician's Friend"

[Physician's Friend]: Increases Bandage healing effect by 100%!

Awesome, the quest had directly rewarded <Specialist First Aid> skill! Zhang Yang was delighted. To increase <First Aid>'s skill level, he must continuously make bandages, from [Beginner Linen Bandage] to [Coarse Cloth Bandage], [Cotton Bandage] and [Silk Bandage]... Each level would require at least 1000 of its respective bandages and above to level up!

This quest had rewarded Zhang Yang with <Specialist First Aid>, saving him the trouble of going through Beginner, Amateur, Advanced and Professional – a total of 4 levels and time to make more than 4,000 bandages!

Since the reward had been revealed, the quest score would be irrelevant! Regardless of an 'Average' or 'Perfect' score, the final reward would remain the same.

Exactly what level would this Golden Venomous Python King be?!

Zhang Yang went to his Friend List and was about to invite Fatty Han to slay this boss together when to his surprise, found that the guy was not online!

“Oh well, let’s try it once. If I fail, then I’ll find someone for help!” Zhang Yang thought and headed west.

A few players were killing pythons by the bank. When Zhang Yang traveled passed them, they did not pay him any attention.

The west of Tranquil Lake was a thick bush. At first glance, it did not look anything like a King’s Nest.

Zhang Yang dived into the water to examine the bush closer. After 10 minutes or so, he finally found a hidden cave.

Was this the Python King’s Nest? It looked nothing like one!

Zhang Yang went into the cave and slowly swam inwards. The cave was very narrow and after several meters deep, it was completely dark. Even with his eyes wide open, he could not see anything and all he could do was follow his gut feeling and continued swimming forward.

After a while, Zhang Yang could obviously tell that the water level was decreasing from his head to his chest, then to his stomach and knees. Finally he had stepped on land. Since it was a game, once his character left the water, his clothes and equipment dried immediately.

Turning around the corner, a wide swathe of plains greeted his eyes. Zhang Yang found himself exiting a hollow trunk of a huge fallen old tree!

He checked the mini-map and found that he was still in Tranquil Lake but this place clearly did not resemble anything like the lake. How did the game developers design this place?

Not far away, a huge python was coiling its body. Its girth was thick as a bucket but its length could not be determined since it was coiled. A rough guess would estimate the length of the python to be at least 10 meters long! Resting peacefully beside the python was a Gray-Silver Chest.

“The chest!” Zhang Yang’s eyes glinted. No wonder he could not find the chest after a whole day today. It seems like it had spawned hidden in such a secluded place!

Highlighting the python, the huge beast’s information window hovered in front of Zhang Yang.

[Golden Venomous Python King] (Green-Copper Boss)



Level: 20

HP: 60,000

Zhang Yang was filled with anticipation. He knew that he would get a handsome reward if he could beat this boss. However, high returns meant high risks! Even though this boss' HP was not as dreadful as a Hardcore Mode's boss, he did have a party of 10 players in Hardcore Mode!

“Let's just try it first!” Zhang Yang decided and unsheathed his sword, using <Charge> on the boss.

“-110!”

Such strong defense! Zhang Yang was surprised. His current attack power could have dealt 143 – 151 damage but he had only managed to deal around 100 damage on the boss. It was evident that the boss had a strong defense – probably 40 points or so!

The higher a monster's level, the shorter it would take to recover from being stunned. The Python King had recovered in no more than 1 second and shot towards Zhang Yang with a hiss.

“<Block>!”

‘-58!’ <Block> reflect damage.

‘-156!’ <Shield Bash>.

The Python King did not manage to land any of its attacks so it had quickly whipped its tail about in an attempt to coil Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang hurriedly withdrew, evading the attack while simultaneously brandishing his sword to counterattack.

‘-103!’

# Chapter 36: Golden Venomous Python King

---

A monster's most dangerous aspect was not knowing what skill it possessed! Not knowing its skills had naturally meant that there was no way of formulating a counter strategy. Only through constant deaths could a player reveal the monster's skills one by one!

This was why Zhang Yang who was familiar with almost all future dungeon bosses' skills and tactics had a significant competitive edge! Even if he was not skilled, just his thorough understanding of the bosses' skills would be enough to bring him fame in the server. All the guilds would have wanted to recruit him!

Right now though, Zhang Yang could only cautiously stare at the Python King, staying alert of any moves it might make. He had never faced this boss before, so he had to wait patiently for the boss' moves in order to counterattack.

This was the most passive strategy ever but he had no alternatives for now.

97%, 94%, 90%, Python King's HP went down slowly. This Green-Copper monster seemed to have no other special skills, as it kept attacking with its predictable fangs and tails.

'Ding! Gold Venomous Python King has used <Strangle>!'

Just as he thought about how monotonous the fight was, the

Python King glided towards Zhang Yang at lightning speed and coiled around him with its golden body.

Although Zhang Yang had been alert, the skill had no activation sign so he could not have prepared for it. He had been careless to have used <Block> which was now in cooldown, so even though he had quickly withdrew, Zhang Yang had still lost to the boss' speed and was strangled by the huge snake.

‘-184!’

Immediately, a red damage text appeared on his head.

Referring to the battle record: Golden Venomous Python King's <Strangle> has dealt 184 points of physical damage. 116 HP was reduced.

Zhang Yang had 20% of damage reduction passive skill and up to 70 points of defense, thus the 300-point damage was reduced to 184 points! He quickly used a red pot and a ‘+100’ floated across.

88%, 86%, 84%, the boss' HP continued to decline.

‘Ding! Golden Venomous Python King has used <Venom Spit>!’

Subconsciously, Zhang Yang used <Block> immediately and raised his shield.

‘Ding! You are affected by <Venom Spit>. Reduces 50 HP every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds!’

He had used <Block> for nothing! Only then had Zhang Yang realized that the boss’ <Venom Spit> was of magical-property damage instead of a physical one. The debuff status icon appeared on his avatar at once.

Crap! DoT again! His high defense had been totally useless!

‘Ding! Golden Venomous Python King has used <Strangle>!’

“D\*mn!” Zhang Yang cursed out loud. His <Block> earlier had been wasted so the effect had disappeared right after 1 second. He had nothing else to block this skill with now!

‘-184!’

Another red damage text glided across Zhang Yang’s head while <Venom Spit>’s DoT recurred with ‘-40’, reducing his HP to 712 points!

This was the disadvantage of knowing nothing regarding the boss’ skills! Otherwise, Zhang Yang would at most have been damaged by <Venom Spit> and could have definitely used <Block> against <Strangle>! Indeed, ignorance is the ultimate enemy of mankind!

82%, 80%, 78%, Zhang Yang calmed down and continued to hack

away intensely.

20 seconds later, the Python King stretched its mouth wide and spat a dark green venom towards Zhang Yang once again!

‘Ding! You are affected by <Venom Spit>. Reduces 50 HP every 3 seconds. Lasts for 15 seconds!’

Zhang Yang bemoaned inwardly, he could nullify <Strangle> with <Block> but he could do nothing against <Venom Spit>, a magical attack. Although he had 20% damage reduction from his passive, it still dealt significant damage!

Sigh, if he had brought along a healer, obliterating this boss would have been a piece of cake!

He was left with 452 HP yet the boss still had 75% of its HP. It seemed impossible to clear.

He had wanted to give up quickly and get a rematch after finding a healer but Zhang Yang guessed that there might still be skills the boss had yet to cast, so he decided to continue the fight.

‘Ding! Golden Venomous Python King has used <Strangle>!’

“<Block>!”

‘-58!’ <Block> reflected damage.

Red pot's cooldown had completed and Zhang Yang used it at once, causing a '+100' text to pop up.

71%, 67%, 56%...

The boss' defense was high but Zhang Yang's attack damage was equally substantial. He had brutally slashed the boss' HP down to 40% but his own HP was also at a sad 92 points. He could only withstand 2 more DoT effect.

'-40!'

Zhang Yang's HP went down to 52 points.

3 seconds later, another '-40' floated across his head and he was left with only 12 HP.

Another DoT was bound to appear when a white light had suddenly flashed by Zhang Yang. A green '+154' text that had never looked any cuter floated across his head at the same time.

Someone had healed him!

Zhang Yang turned and saw a lady dressed in white standing by the trunk's entrance. She was incredibly tall and slender, her especially thin waist highlighted her voluptuous hip with such allure and her pert breasts heavily blessed, being astoundingly

ample!

Character's physique was not modifiable in the game, which meant that this woman would have the same well-proportioned body in real life!

Unfortunately, while the lady had a figure that at least 90% of the female population would be jealous of, her face was ordinary. She was not ugly but she had quite a distance to go to call her a beauty! However, her pair of eyes were very beautiful. They were magnetic and faintly enticing.

“Thank you!” said Zhang Yang quickly. He had a good impression of this lady with a fantastic body but a plain face – if it had been someone greedy, they could have opened the chest while he was battling the boss!

This lady did not hide her profile. ‘Little Snow, Level 13’, and ‘Lone Desert Smoke’ were the two rows that hovered above her head. Judging from her appearance, she would be around her twenties! The face could be modified though, so Zhang Yang could not be sure if what he had seen was her real face.

Little Snow smiled and casted another healing spell on Zhang Yang and said, “You’re welcome. I was just passing by! Oh right, where is this? I’m completely lost. I got confused and walked for so long and then I arrived here!”

The game had a mini map that marked the player's location. It would be really hard to even ‘get lost’ even if you wanted to! Now



that she had actually lost her way into this place, that sounded even more ludicrous! Zhang Yang remembered how the cave's entrance was properly concealed and had he not accepted the quest which sent him here in search of the Python King's Nest, he would have given up long ago!

Terrible sense of direction!

Zhang Yang concluded in his head as he sent a party invitation to her. In 'God's Miracle', as long as a player has dealt damage to the monster, they would be eligible to obtain its loot. For Sacred Knights and Priests though, they could not get any equipment nor experience just by healing, so they must be in a party with attackers!

Zhang Yang had intended to ask Ocean Despair for help but since Little Snow had helped him and left a good impression, he had decided to share the loot with her!

The equipment Little Snow was wearing were not bad. Everything was basically Level 10 Black-Steel equipment. Although Python King was a Level 20 boss, Zhang Yang's attack nullification ability was incredible. It would be more than enough as long as she healed the HP lost from <Venom Spit>.

"Wow, you're already at Level 18!" Little Snow hesitated before accepting the party invitation. She was surprised when she noticed Zhang Yang's level, "Why isn't your name on the Player Level Ranking?"

“Enlistment is optional!” explained Zhang Yang.

“Oh!” Little Snow nodded and her eyes shone, “Ah, you are that Zhan Yu! Are you interested to join our guild? Defiant Monk kept praising you!”

“Defiant Monk?”

“Eh? You didn’t know Defiant Monk was in our guild?”

Zhang Yang only knew that Defiant Monk joined a guild but he did not remember clearly which guild it was! He laughed and said, “I see, we’re kinda fated then!”

Little Snow’s eyes were beguiling, the corners of her mouth raised into a faint smile. She might have looked ordinary but her beautiful eyes made up for everything, outshining her flaws, “Brat, trying to flirt with me?”

“Brat?” Zhang Yang smiled depreciatingly. Although he was only 22 years old currently, adding the 5 years of his previous life, his mental age was close to a 30-year-old uncle!

Elder sister who was terrible at directions!

Zhang Yang quietly amended his evaluation of Little Snow in his heart.

With the addition of Little Snow, Python King was no longer a threat to Zhang Yang. Even as it used both its skills interchangeably, its death was still imminent!

5%, 4%, 3%, 2%, 1%!

As the last drop of the Python King's HP vanished, it too had fallen to its death.

‘Ding! The party you are in has killed Golden Venomous Python King! Obtained 30,050 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!’

“Eh? This monster is a boss?” Little Snow was very surprised.

“If it's not, do we need such a long time to kill it?” Zhang Yang replied stoically. He had thought that killing this boss would induce a system reward, this could have been the first Green-Copper boss in the field! After waiting for some time though, Zhang Yang dropped his head in disappointment as there was no reaction from the system.

“Eh? It's not strange since a tank's attacking damage is low, isn't it?” Little Snow was indignant.

This girl, did she not see the boss' HP? Did she not see the damage he had dealt?

Zhang Yang sighed and asked, “Where have you been looking all this while?”

“The tank’s HP bar of course!” Little Snow had a despising look, “If you die, how am I, a Priest, supposed to survive?”

Made sense.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “OK, let’s loot and share the equipment!”

He looted and the first equipment came out.

[Python King’s Hood] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +18

Intelligent: 9

Spirit: +3

Level Requirement: 20

“This one’s for you!” Zhang Yang passed easily.

Little Snow darted her eyes and said, “Hey, are you really trying to flirt with me?”

“Haha”, Zhang Yang laughed dryly, “Can you please not be so narcissistic. I already have someone I like!”

“Hm. I know that. That person you mentioned must be me!” Little Snow said with an “I know it all” expression.

# Chapter 37: Great Lucky Hands

---

A narcissistic elder sister who was terrible at directions!

Zhang Yang ignored her as he proceeded to loot the corpse.

[Aphelia's Staff] (Green-Copper, Staff)

Magic Attack: 168 – 191

Level Requirement: 20

Note: “This staff still carries the stench of Python King's innards! Poor Aphelia! May your soul rest in peace among the gods!”

“Again! Yours!” Zhang Yang sighed heavily. It was not that he wanted the equipment but more so because he did not want Little Snow saying that he wanted to court her!

Nevertheless, Little Snow giggled happily, carrying an ‘I knew it’ expression.

Hmph, drama queen!

Another loot! Zhang Yang did not believe that it would only drop

## Priest's equipment!

[Boots of Agility] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +10

Intelligence: +6

Spirit: +4

Level Requirement: 20

F\*ck my life! Zhang Yang felt speechless.

Again, again!

[Resurrection] (Skill Book)

Use: You will learn <Resurrection>.

Class: Priest, Knight.

Zhang Yang shed a manly tear. All 4 items were for Priests!

Little Snow's eyes had turned into crescents from smiling, mumbling, "Indeed, kindness is always rewarded!"

Zhang Yang looted the corpse again. He had finally gotten something that was not for Priests!

[Golden Venomous Python King's Gall]: Quest Item!

'Ding! You have obtained 15 silver coins!'

With the last item looted, the boss' corpse disappeared instantly.

"There's still the chest!" Zhang Yang rubbed his palms and rushed towards the Gray-Silver Chest.

"Wow! A treasure chest!" Little Snow's eyes radiated with interest. "Let me open it! Let me!"

Since they were in the same party, it did not matter who had opened the chest. Zhang Yang moved aside.

Little Snow threw herself on the chest and rested her cheek on the lid of the chest as her hands caressed the chest. Her indulgent



expression scaring Zhang Yang.

A fortune-loving and narcissistic elder sister who was terrible at directions!

After some time, Little Snow had finally opened the chest with great reluctance under Zhang Yang’s urge. The unwillingness written on her face was as if Zhang Yang had murdered her father.

10%, 20%... 100%! The chest opened and Little Snow stuffed her hand inside.

[Silver-Scaled Sword] (Gray-Silver, One-handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 197 – 219

Attack Interval: 2.6 seconds

DPS: 80

Equipped Effect: Increases <Critical Strike>’s rate by 1%.

Level Requirement: 20

Jackpot! This [Silver-Scaled Sword] would really put his current

[Refined Iron Sword]'s 16 – 24 Weapon Attack to shame! Since Yellow-Gold equipment could only be obtained from Level 50 bosses, he could use this sword until he had reached that level!

Zhang Yang looked at Little Snow and thought to himself, “Is this [yin and yang](#) – they’re complementing each other as he had looted her equipment while she looted his?”

“Wow! Such a pretty sword!” Little Snow picked up the [Silver-Scaled Sword]. Before rolling, anyone who was eligible to roll for the loot could pick up the equipment but was unable to equip it nor store it in their inventory.

It was obvious that men and women had completely different perspectives. What Zhang Yang had cared about was [Silver-Scaled Sword]'s supreme functionality while Little Snow had only cared about its appearance.

Zhang Yang rolled 42 points while Little Snow passed without hesitation. The strongest one-handed sword at the current stage of the game then went into Zhang Yang’s inventory.

It was a shame that he had 2 more levels to go before he could equip it.

[Recipe: Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] (Alchemy Recipe)

Use: You will learn to craft Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion.

## Requirement: Beginner Alchemy Skill

Seriously... it came out! This thing's drop rate was not even one in ten thousand. In his previous life, even when the game had reached its mid-late stage, players who could craft this potion only numbered a handful!

[Silver-Scaled Sword], Alchemy Recipe... these were extremely rare drops yet she had looted them both in one instance, what great Lucky Hands! Zhang Yang's own 2 points of Luck was crap in comparison to her.

“Little Snow, this is something that I need, can you give it to me?” This was a matter concerning his fortune, so Zhang Yang had to quickly speak up.

“I will consider it if you call me ‘elder sister’!” Little Snow was more than delighted.

The lady did look like she was older but Zhang Yang's mental age was almost 30 years old, so it was extremely hard for him to utter the words ‘elder sister’!

“Eh? You won't say it? Well then, I'm going to roll now!” teased Little Snow.

“Little Snow, you're more like Mischievous Snow!” Zhang Yang

sighed.

“Hahaha! That’s why it’s fun! Hey, are you saying it or not?”

“Elder sis – ter” Zhang Yang said gritting his teeth. He added another word under his breath, “Witch!”

“Good boy! Come, let big sis here give you a candy!” Little Snow grinned, her eyes forming crescents.

After Zhang Yang kept the recipe, he thought to himself, “Wait till I make a huge fortune with this recipe and make you cry your heart out!”

Little Snow looted once more and the last item popped out.

[Treasure Map Piece (1)] (Gray-Silver)

Use: Put together all 3 [Treasure Map Piece]s and obtain a [Complete Treasure Map].

Zhang Yang checked his inventory. Right now, he had piece (1) and piece (3). This piece would be a recurring one so he unhesitatingly passed. He was extremely contented with the [Silver-Scaled Sword] and the recipe.

After Little Snow obtained the map piece, the chest dissipated slowly.

“Come, let’s get out of here!” said Zhang Yang as he went into the empty tree trunk. Little Snow hurriedly followed behind.

As he moved forward, Zhang Yang had suddenly realized that the little blinking dot that had represented Little Snow on the mini-map had disappeared.

Zhang Yang quickly asked in the party channel, “Little Snow, where are you?”

“I... I don’t know!” Little Snow replied, “It’s dark everywhere!”

This woman could get lost even when she was following him. She was really something!

“Stay there, I’m coming!” Zhang Yang could only say feebly.

“OK. But hurry, it’s so dark here and the water is so cold. It doesn’t feel nice at all!” complained Little Snow.

“Alright! Alright! I’m coming now!”

The blinking dot had finally reappeared in his mini-map after some few hundred meters of swimming. Zhang Yang swam over to her and said, “Follow me closely!”

She replied, “I can’t even see you, how am I supposed to follow?”

“Can’t you read the map?” Zhang Yang might have thought too highly of her.

“Nope, I can’t understand it. Gives me a headache!” Little Snow replied.

This was how a directionally-challenged idiot came about.

Zhang Yang sighed and extended his hand, “Then grab on to my hand!”

“OK!”

Holding on to the idiot’s hand, Zhang Yang led Little Snow out of the water. After 20 minutes of swimming, they finally saw daylight, both of them emerging from the bushes.

“My hands are soft, aren’t they?” Little Snow asked out of the blue.

“Hm, they’re alright!” Zhang Yang casually replied.

“How long do you plan on holding them?” Little Snow’s tone was laced with a feeling of the calm before a storm.

Zhang Yang looked. Oh, he had forgotten to let go after holding her hands for so long.

“Hehe, my bad! My bad!” Zhang Yang let her hands go and took a step back to express his innocence.

Little Snow looked at him haughtily and said, “Rascal, be careful next time! I’m not someone you can easily take advantage of!”

Speaking of arguing, Zhang Yang was not afraid of her. Before he had confirmed his relationship with Lin Yu, he still had his fair share of dating women. He just wanted to avoid causing trouble as he would rather not have any affairs with the opposite sex. With a light smile, Zhang Yang said, “I’ll be on my way to complete a quest. See you next time!”

Zhang Yang left the party and headed towards Deckard. He lifted and waved his left hand to bid farewell.

“Tch! Rascal!” Little Snow murmured and opened the voice messenger.

“Hello! Cousin, are you calling me to pick you up cause you’re lost again?” A crisp voice of a young girl came through, “How many times would this be? Come on cousin, stop making a fool out of yourself! You’re a Cambridge graduate, how can you have less sense of direction than me, a high schooler?”

“Hmph! I majored in Business Administration and not Tourism or Geology or even Archeology. Can’t I get lost?”

“Cous, you’ve gotten lost too many a time, don’t you think? Fine, fine, fine! I’m done arguing with you. Where are you? I’ll come and pick you up!” The girl on the other side of the line gave in.

“Who asked you to pick me up? I’m not lost!”

“Eh? Then why did you call me? I was in the middle of grinding!”

“I met that Zhan Yu just now! Hm, he’s strong indeed! Stronger than you!”

“Waaaa, I’m a Berserker. Why would you compare me to him!”

“Nothing. I’m just comparing!” Little Snow stretched lazily and said, “He’s indeed someone worth recruiting!”

“Well then, go pull him in! Hehe, you have big boobs. Didn’t they say that guys like big boobs? He’s sure to be enticed by you!” the girl on the other side of the line laughed.

“You little brat, your boobs are as flat as a sunny side up!”

“Han Ying Xue, I’m warning you! No comments about my breasts!”



“Tch! Sunny-side-up!”

“Hmph! Milk cow!”

...

Returning to Deckard, Zhang Yang passed the [Golden Venomous Python King’s Gall] over and the head physician’s eyes were wide open, “This is really the Python King’s Gall! I can feel it! This soft sac contains such poisonous venom! It’s shocking! Adventurer, I thank you from the bottom of my heart!”

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: The Last Python Gall. Obtained 10,000 EXP!’

‘Ding! You have learned the skill <First Aid>!’

‘Ding! Your skill <First Aid> has leveled up to Specialist!’

‘Ding! You have obtained the title: Physician’s Friend!’

A chain of notification rang at his ears, sounding absolutely melodious!

He opened the <First Aid> window and saw that he had already learnt 5 types of bandages: [Linen Bandage], [Coarse Cloth Bandage], [Cotton Bandage], [Silk Bandage], and [Magic-Woven Bandage]. However, [Cotton Cloth] could only be found from

looting humanoid monsters. As of now, he could only farm for [Coarse Cloth].

[Coarse Cloth Bandage]: Recovers 500 HP over 10 seconds, channeling needed. Any damage or movement will cancel channeling duration.

Cooldown: 1 minute.

With the title Physician's Friend, <First Aid> effect would be doubled, healing 1,000 HP over 10 seconds. That would almost completely refill Zhang Yang's HP.

Zhang Yang took out a Teleportation Reagent and tore it. A magic circle formed under his feet and he arrived at White Jade Castle 10 seconds later.

yīnyáng – Chinese philosophical theory where two seemingly opposite forces may complement each other. Everything is interconnected and interdependent. Yin refers to dark while yang refers to bright. Women are generally filled with yin while men are filled with yang.

# Chapter 38: Earthen Round Shield's Hot Sales

---

Ever since Zhang Yang started the 'Physician's Friend' quest, he had not returned to the city!

When he finally did, the first thing he did was to store all his junk items into his storage before checking his mailbox. A few days ago, the mail assistant informed him of new mails, but he could not retrieve any as he was away.

The mails came from the auction house, informing him of his sale of the [Earthen Round Shield] which had transacted for 870 gold pieces. He received his payment after having 87 gold pieces deducted as tax.

Zhang Yang had a look at his inventory and realized that he currently had 15,300 gold pieces. If this game had a Personal Wealth Ranking Board, he'd definitely be on the list!

With the intention to learn the <Alchemy> skill, Zhang Yang decided to forget <Mining> and proceeded to the Alchemy Shop. To gain a fortune from <Mining> would mean to invest quite a lot of time that Zhang Yang did not have. The only reason for him to learn <Mining> was for the class quest in Beginner Village.

Shortly after, he took out the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] recipe and patted it on his chest. A gold light shone and his <Alchemy> list now had something added to it.

Zhang Yang went to the auction house, opened the shopping window and searched for the keywords [Brassica Weed] and [Gingko Flower]. As soon as he confirmed his search, rows and rows of the items were listed out. Normally, a stack would usually cost 20 silver pieces. However, there were sellers that attempted to scam others by placing only one herb and selling it at the same price, deceiving careless players into buying them in a bid to earn more.

Zhang Yang selected all the available [Brassica Weed] and [Gingko Flower] with a price of no higher than 30 silver pieces to purchase. What was once in abundance at the auction house was wiped clean and now, there remained only a few units of herbs being offered up for sale by other players.

While the others were still in the midst of purchasing the same ingredients, they did not realize that a huge supply of them had disappeared, leading some to turn furious.

“What?! Where are all the [Gingko Flower]? I just saw over 100 stacks a few moments ago, and now there are only 7 units left?! Motherf\*cker! Which son of a b\*tch is trying to sell 1 unit for 20 silver! I clicked it twice!”

“[Brassica Weed] is gone too. What the hell? How am I supposed to raise my <Alchemy> level like this?!”

“Which bastard is so rich to buy all those herbs in an instant?!”

[Brassica Weed] was one of the materials used to create the [Beginner Healing Potion] while [Gingko Flower] was used to make the [Beginner Mana Potion]. The drop rate for these two recipes was rather high and players would usually rely on them to raise their <Alchemy> level. It was expected that players would be distraught when Zhang Yang cleaned all the shelves.

He headed back to his mailbox right after that to retrieve all the purchased [Brassica Weed] and [Gingko Flower]. However, having insufficient inventory space to collect them all at once, he had to place most of the herbs temporarily into the bank. When a character was created, they were given a free bank column from the system that had 100 slots. Players would then need to pay if they require more space. Additionally, the more slots you bought, the higher the price would be, increasing the price by 10 times for each subsequent purchase.

Zhang Yang had bought 3 bank columns which gave him more than enough space to store his purchases from the mailbox. He felt the pinch of spending 1,100 gold pieces for them though.

Once that was settled, he went back to the Alchemy Shop to buy a large amount of [Empty Bottle] to create the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] with his newly learned <Alchemy>.

‘Ding! You have created [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] x1. Your <Alchemy> Mastery has increased by 1 point.’

‘Ding! You have created [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] x1. Your <Alchemy> Mastery has increased by 1 point.’

...

‘Ding! You have created [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] x2. Your <Alchemy> Mastery has increased by 1 point.’

Wow. 2 bottles? Zhang Yang smiled and felt that this must be the advantage from his Luck attribute! The Luck attribute provided a certain chance to have 2 end products whenever a player crafted something. The higher the Luck attribute, the higher the chance! Despite that, the chances would still be very slim even if a player had 100 Luck.

After exhausting all of his materials in his inventory, Zhang Yang immediately ran to the bank to exchange his crafted potions for more materials and began crafting more. With the ridiculous settings in the system, it took 2 seconds to create a bottle of potion. Zhang Yang bought 370 stacks of materials which could be converted into 7,400 bottles of potions...

It took 4 hours of potion crafting to use up every material he had, but thanks to that, his <Alchemy> skill had surpassed Amateur level and with that, the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] icon turned grey. This meant that he could no longer obtain any experience points from crafting it to further increase his <Alchemy> mastery. As he looked at the neatly arranged potions in his bank, Zhang Yang felt a strong sense of accomplishment.

Currently, a bottle of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] costs only 5 silver pieces, but once players proceeded to the next dungeon,

Marzerway's Lair, , those potions would begin to fetch 1 gold piece for each bottle. That's a guaranteed bestseller right there! Naturally, the prices for [Brassica Weed] and [Gingko Flower] would be raised as well, reducing the profit margin.

Zhang Yang opened his Friend List and noticed that Fatty Han had just logged in! He sent him a private message, "Hey Fatty, quickly stock up on any [Brassica Weed] and [Gingko Flower] you can find! Prices will be increasing over the next few days! If the price doesn't exceed 2 gold pieces, buy them all!"

"Damn, Little Yang, for real?" Fatty replied hastily.

"Fatty, this is a golden opportunity right here in front of you! It's up to you to grab that chance!"

"Little Yang, I only have 16 gold pieces, I can't get much with what I have!"

"Alright, I'll mail 1,000 gold pieces to you later! You owe me for this!"

"Haha! That's good, brother!"

Fatty Han did not express much appreciation through words. Their friendship need not be that courteous, for what mattered more was the deed and the thought of it!

After Zhang Yang transferred 1,000 gold pieces to Fatty Han, he

withdrew 6 units of [Plain Copper Plate] and 30 stacks of [Iron Plate] to craft 6 [Earthen Round Shield] at the blacksmith. He was surprised by the results of his first auction of the shields. There were rich people everywhere!

He placed 1 [Earthen Round Shield] for auction with a minimum bid of 400 gold pieces and a maximum buyout price of 1,000 gold pieces for 24 hours while omitting his name. This was the best way to get the best price out of a rare item; selling them one by one. The higher the supply, the lower the price, making it worthless if the stock increased.

After that, Zhang Yang went ahead to look for any strange and special crafting recipes up for auction. Within a few days, what was once a desolate place had now turned into a lively auction house and the number of items for sale had definitely multiplied! Over at the Crafting Recipes tab, there were hundreds of recipes on sale. Most of them being [Beginner Whetstone] recipes and a few other random equipment recipes.

Quoting the official ‘5-year game review’, after the launch of the server, the number of players that joined shot up from 4 million to 10 million in merely 10 days. 3 months later, the developers announced a heaven-defying target game population of 1 billion and ‘God’s Miracle’ continued to steadily grow over time. 2 years later, the game reached its unbelievable goal of 1 billion players. The more high-leveled players therewere, the better the auctioned merchandise that could be found.

[Beginner Whetstone] was the most economical product to use when raising <Smithing> mastery. The only material needed to



craft it was a piece of [Iron Plate]. [Beginner Whetstone] was considered as consumable goods and was generally used to polish weapons, increasing its attack damage by 10 for an hour.

Having his <Smithing> skill at an Amateur level, Zhang Yang could not depend on the [Earthen Round Shield] to raise his mastery. He immediately purchased the [Beginner Whetstone] recipe from the auction house, withdrew it from his mailbox and opened his Friend list to send a message to the Mining Specialist.

“Hello there, old friend. How many units of the [Iron Plate] do you still have?”

After a while, he received a reply, “Yo! I haven’t heard much from you these days, and here I thought you did not need these anymore! I’ve got plenty of [Iron Plate]. How many do you want?”

“Alright. Give me 100 stacks!”

Raising his <Smithing> skill to Amateur level would require him to use about 50 stacks of [Iron Plate], but Zhang Yang only had 7 [Plain Copper Plate] that could be used with merely 35 [Iron Plate].

“Whoa!” the Mining Specialist replied in shock, “I’d say, ‘Please don’t scare the crap out of me every time!’ 100 stacks is too many. I only have 50 stacks including the ones in my bank.”

“50 stacks then. Deal. Send it to me whenever you’re ready! Mail transaction as usual!”

“Sure thing, boss! Thank you for your patronage!”

Zhang Yang patted the recipe and learned how to craft [Beginner Whetstone]. The mail would require 30 minutes before arriving and it would be meaningless to just wait, but he had been grinding monsters like a mad man for these past few days and he could not muster any desire to kill monsters within this short period of time.

‘Ding!’

A notification came from the mail assistant. Zhang Yang received a new mail. He was surprised for a moment. He thought that the mail system had changed after he was ‘reborn’. The mail could arrive so soon?

He checked his mailbox and found that it was not from the Mining Specialist but a notice from the auction house. His [Earthen Round Shield] had been sold for the maximum buyout price by a player with a strange name, Windward Three Feet Pee.

I’m rich!

Without wasting anymore time, Zhang Yang ran to the bank, took out a second shield and auctioned it again in the same manner.

‘Ding!’

In less than 2 minutes, Zhang Yang was notified again. The shield was once again sold to Windward Three Feet Pee.

Zhang Yang placed yet another shield for auction and the same buyer bought it once again.

Listed. Sold! Listed. Sold!

After 10 minutes, 5 of Zhang Yang's shields were sold out and Windward Three Feet Pee had been the one to grab them all. He thought of raising the price for the last few units, but 1,000 gold pieces was already rather plenty so he decided not to do it.

In the initial stages of the game, gold pieces devaluated very quickly. According to the current market ratio of 1:9, 1,000 gold pieces was worth nearly 10,000 bucks! Money really made a difference!

But it mattered not. At the current stage of the game, [Earthen Round Shield] was the best shield available. Aside from Lost Paradise, no other guilds have defeated Dadarerda. [Plain Copper Ore] was also one of the deciding factors in setting the rareness of the shield!

Windward Three Feet Pee should be someone from a big guild, as it could explain how he was able to buy all 6 shields from Zhang Yang.

Gray-Silver grade shields only dropped in Level 20 Hardcore

Mode dungeons. According to the game developers, each big guild would need at least 4 to 5 days to explore and complete Marzerway's Lair when players reached a suitable level.

Marzerway's Lair was much more difficult as compared to Bangar Crypt. During the exploring period in the beginning stages, players would be stuck for a day in Normal Mode due to a lack of understanding of the boss' skills. They are then stuck for another 2 to 3 days in Hard Mode and even longer in the Hardcore Mode. It would take up to 10 days just to obtain a Gray-Silver shield.

Furthermore, there would always be a few parties from the big guilds who were able to clear Hardcore Mode with their corresponding levels. Normal players would only return when they have reached higher levels! With that assumption in mind, the demand for [Earthen Round Shield] would last longer but the selling price would drop over time.

It seemed that the Hardcore Mode of Bangar Crypt was still worth raiding!

## Chapter 39: Invitation

---

After half an hour, Zhang Yang received his [Iron Plate] stacks and stored it in his inventory after paying Mining Specialist. Just as he was about to craft a [Beginner Whetstone] at the Blacksmith...

‘Beep!’

He received a private message. “Brother Zhan Yu, we’re in the middle of a boss battle. Could you lend us a hand? It’s a Level 25 Gray-Silver boss and we can’t take him down no matter how many times we try!”

It was a message from Defiant Monk. Ever since their First Clear Hardcore Dungeon achievement, they have not traveled together. However, they have kept in touch with each other by sending greetings whenever someone logged in or off on a daily basis, thus maintaining a close relationship. Even though Zhang Yang wanted to recruit Hundred Shots as soon as he could, he feared that doing so would affect his future in becoming a Dragon Hunter. If he really did miss out on the Red Baby Dragon, it would be a total disaster!

Zhang Yang questioned back, “That Level 25 Gray-Silver boss... what’s his name?”

“Martyr Unduin!”

“Crap!” Zhang Yang blurted out. This boss is on a whole new

level! Martyr Unduin is the World Boss at around Level 30, and if you wanted to try and fight him, you would better bring a whole lot of Level 20 players with you!

“How many players do you have there now?”

“We’ve got more than 30 players here!” Defiant Monk replied with pride.

Letting loose a sigh, Zhang Yang said, “Here’s my advice: Give it up and go home.”

But Defiant Monk was relentless, and continued trying to persuade Zhang Yang. “Zhan Yu! This is a Level 25 Gray-Silver boss! If we take him down, we’ll definitely have an achievement to it with a server announcement!”

It’s an attractive reward, alright. But you would still need to have the capability to challenge him! As he was about to decline the offer, he remembered something from the past. In his previous life, there was a player that posted in a forum claiming to have defeated Martyr Unduin alone. As soon as he published it, other players just mocked him for it as he was only Level 28. They just kept mocking him until he posted a video of him single-handedly killing the boss and the forum could only accept and quieten down.

Martyr Unduin was a Spellcaster class monster, and his only skill was the <Fireball>! As soon as the battle began, he would begin to cast it, and being a World Boss, his <Fireball> was not only a single one but ten separate balls! Each ball dealt at least 1,000 damage and

can be casted every 3 seconds. Truly, he was a monster capable of wiping out entire parties. However, he needed to channel <Fireball> every time before using it, and the Hunter made good use of the topographic layout of the area to his advantage. As soon as Unduin began channelling, the Hunter hid behind a huge rock out of the boss' line of sight. In 'God's Miracle', if a target left the line of sight, any attack would have been rendered ineffective, causing the boss to cancel the spell channelling.

When that happened, the Hunter would reemerge and resume attacking. With him in sight, the boss would once again begin to channel his spell but before he could complete the three-second cast time, the Hunter would slide behind the rock once more. This strategy was truly straightforward and the execution was fairly simple; the only difficult part was that the boss' HP was ridiculously high. Since attacking continuously was impossible, the Hunter spent an entire day just to slay the boss!

Once his strategy got out to public, people started to realize that it was not so difficult to fight this boss. The developers reacted quickly to this by removing that huge rock. When Zhang Yang entered the game, that rock was already gone. He only stumbled on this tactic while leisurely browsing through the forums. If that rock was what he imagined, then even a melee character could properly utilize the advantage!

After thoroughly thinking through, Zhang Yang replied to Defiant Monk, "Ok then, send me the location. I'm heading over now!"

"87145, 24103. We'll be waiting for you! Someone else will add

you into the party! Don't reject it!" And as soon as he said that, a party invitation came through.

'Ding! Player Drizzler has sent you a party invitation. Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang selected 'Accept' and was added in.

'Ding! You have joined the party. Party Leader: Drizzler. Item Distribution: Party Leader Distribution'

With him in the party, there were a total of 34 players. The game only allowed a maximum of 50 in one party. Zhang Yang scanned through the player names and recognized one player; Little Snow.

"Scrawny rascal!" Little Snow sent what looked like a tooth bearing and paws clawing emoticon, which was one of the available ones in-game. Zhang Yang merely ignored her and continued on. Defiant Monk began introducing Zhang Yang to the team with words of praise. "Guys, this is Zhan Yu; the Guardian that gave us that clear in the Hardcore Mode run. He's super pro!" Zhang Yang initially planned on laying low but with an introduction like that, he could only respond, "Hi, everyone!"

"Nice to meet you, Zhan Yu!"

"Whoa, Level 18! That's awesome!"

"Why isn't his name in the Level Ranking Board?"



“Must be a bug in the system!”

Everyone began chatting, and the channel got rowdy.

Zhang Yang opened the map to track the location given by Defiant Monk and according to it, he would be heading into the deep parts of the Plains Cloud Mountain! If memory served him well, all the monsters in that area were above Level 20!

Puzzled, he asked Defiant Monk, “How did you even find this boss in such a desolated area?”

To which, he hastily replied, “We’ve an idiot here who has a terrible sense of direction. She got lost and wandered into the Plains Cloud Mountain and found him!” It had to be Little Snow! Zhang Yang clearly recalled that woman’s sense of direction almost immediately.

Drizzler, the party leader sent a message in the party channel, “Everyone, recover your HP, we’re fighting him once again!”

“That’s our guild master!” Defiant Monk introduced. Soon, the battle began once more, and Drizzler began giving orders.

“Big Lin, start the fight! Healers, watch yourselves! Attackers, move forward behind me!”

Zhang Yang didn't have to think any further, as he already predicted the entire party would be wiped out. Half a minute later, all the names on the list aside from Zhang Yang had gone dark, which signified that they had died, and complaints began to fill the chat.

“Master, this monster is too strong! We're not capable of fighting it!”

“Yeah! With all the <Fireball> flying around, anywhere around us is a kill zone! Even the healers can't heal us in time!”

“This Level 25 boss is completely out of our league!”

But Drizzler felt discontented, “And should we just give up?”

The others began to realize that they were underpowered. “We have no choice. We need to get above Level 20, find equipment from the next dungeon, and raise our HP to at least 1,500 to even have some hope!”

Defiant Monk had banked his confidence on someone else instead. “Hold on for a little longer! Zhan Yu hasn't arrived yet, and with him here there should be a way!”

“Tch! The problem isn't the tanker, it's the boss' multi-target skill! We don't need a tanker against a skill like that!”

“Master, let's wait for Zhan Yu and try again!”

Zhang Yang's performance in the Bangar Crypt really made an impression on Defiant Monk to the point where he blindly trusts Zhang Yang to handle any problem in front of him no matter the difficulty. As Drizzler had not decided on anything yet, she went along with Defiant Monk's suggestion, "Okay then, we'll wait for him to arrive and then we'll give it one more try!"

Suddenly, someone in the party exclaimed, "Aw, nuts! My wife is about to have a baby! I'd better send her to the hospital now. Sorry guys, I'll be leaving!"

And after that, more people voiced out as well.

"Whoops, it's almost time to go to work. I'd better prepare dinner for my wife first! Bye guys, I'm logging off too. Take it slow!"

"F\*ck, my next door neighbours are barking at each other like dogs. I'd better go over there and give them a piece of my mind or they're not stopping at all!"

"Sorry, I'm going to be busy in a while. Got to give my boy some milk!"

"..."

In only a matter of seconds, more than 10 players gave ridiculous excuses to leave the party and logged off. Out of the 34 players

before this, there were only 15 left.

“Well, that’s it then. Dismissed!” Drizzler unwillingly announced to disband the party as many of them gave excuses just to leave. With that, the only ones left in the party were Drizzler, Little Snow and Zhang Yang. Even Defiant Monk left the party and he sent a message to Zhang Yang not long after saying, “Zhan Yu, sorry man! Your entire journey is wasted!”

“Not a problem!” Zhang Yang replied, as he continued on towards the Plains Cloud Mountain. Little Snow saw his name was still in the party list, and inquired, “Eh? Scrawny rascal! Why are you still in the party?”

“I want to give it a shot!”

“A shot at what? Trying to court me?”

“Han Yin Xue! Could you please stop toying with others?!” Drizzler couldn’t ignore any more of Little Snow’s behaviour and interjected with a sense of justice in her.

“Hehe... are you jealous, perhaps? Since you’re still underage, you can’t really be in a relationship.” Feeling enraged from that comment, Drizzler threatened her, “Han Yin Xue! I swear I will go up those stairs and punch you in your boobs! I’m going to bust those humungous bubbles!”

“Haha! Miss Sunny Side Up! You really are jealous of me!” Little

Snow could not contain her laughter anymore.

Zhang Yang could only remain silent. These two women are wild!

During the battle of words between the two, Zhang Yang reached the Plains Cloud Mountain and ran straight towards the boss' location. Being Level 18, he caused the monsters that were Level 20 and above to turn aggressive, so he had to slay his way through.

Drizzler kept on threatening Little Snow while she was still playing around.

“... Han Yin Xue! I'm cutting ties with you! If you ever get lost again, don't even think about calling to me for help!”

“Let's see... You've been cutting ties with me since you were younger. Hmm... this would be the 1,892nd time you did that. Or was it the 1,893rd?”

After passing through a bush, Zhang Yang reached the location, and he spotted two female characters at a distance. One was just casually looking at her fingernails with her arms stretched out, while the other had both arms on her hips looking quite fierce. That should be Little Snow and Drizzler. As soon as they saw him approaching, they stopped quarrelling and Little Snow asked him, “Are you really sure about trying this out?”

Drizzler was a female Human Warrior, Level 13. From the looks of it, she was about the age of either 17 or 18 years old. Her body

was still underdeveloped; she was completely flat-chested and didn't really have much of a behind as well. However, she did have beautiful complexion and given time, her body would mature into someone truly seductive... if her face changed as well.

“Hmm... I'm sure about giving it a go!” Zhang Yang casually responded while closely observing the huge round object. It was about 5 meters in width and 3 meters in height, and it looked more like a chopped tree trunk.

There is a chance! Zhang Yang could not help but let out an excited smile.

# Chapter 40: Attack On The Gray-Silver Boss

---

Looking at Zhang Yang, Little Snow felt a chill run down her spine. “Yo, look at the way you smile! You’re such a pervert! Drizzler, take a look at the ‘bad uncle’!” Just a second ago, they were in a heated argument, but now they were the best of friends.

Drizzler hurried to Litte Snow and hid behind her, looking at Zhang Yang and said, “Cousin, here’s your glorious mission. Sacrifice your dignity and use your sex appeal to lure this uncle into our guild!”

Little Snow didn’t take that suggestion too kindly. “Stinking little brat! What do you take me for, someone you can just buy and sell?!”

“The two of you stay here. I’m going to try and take on this boss myself. Even if things get out of hand, don’t try to enter this fight!” Zhang Yang was not in the mood to pay attention to them. While applying a whetstone on his weapon, he fixated his eyes on the boss; a man dressed in white robe, kneeling in front of the altar and on his left side, there was a purple wand.

[Martyr Unduin] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 25

HP: 300,000

300,000 HP! That is insane!

“Hey, hey, hey, are you really going to take this boss on? Alone?” Little Snow cried out as she saw Zhang Yang wielding his sword and rushing towards the boss. She remembered the first time she met him, and he did the same thing in the past as well. It seemed that the word “death” is not in his vocabulary!

There was a level gap of 7 levels between Zhang Yang and the boss, but he still stepped forward into the aggro range. Immediately, Unduin stood up, picked up his wand and said, “Intruder! You have tarnished the sacred altar. I must now use your blood to purify this boundless sin!”

In all honesty, the boss did have a handsome face on him. His untrimmed beard carried a sense of maturity in life that made a three-decade aged man look wiser than he should be. One could say he had the potential to seduce plenty of lonely housewives!

‘Ding! Martyr Unduin has begun casting <Fireball>!’

<Charge>!

As soon as his <Charge> was in range, Zhang Yang dashed in to strike, but he soon discovered that the boss was immune to stun. Unfazed, the boss glaringly looked at him while continuously chanting the spell. But Zhang Yang only used <Charge> to quickly reach the boss’ side, and without staggering, he ran towards the huge rock to his right.



‘60%! 70%! 80%! 90%!’

Just when Unduin’s chanting was almost complete, Zhang Yang managed to hide behind the rock, out of the boss’ vision. Unduin chided angrily and cancelled the magic symbol on his hand and moved to where Zhang Yang was. When he was within line of sight, the boss began chanting once more.

‘60%!’

Zhang Yang struck the boss, but his normal attacks could not even exceed 100 damage! His attack damage was supposed to be 153-161 points after applying the whetstone, but he suspected that the boss’ defense might be around 100 points! Having such low damage, the generated Rage will be equally low. After 10 points from <Charge>, he only had 16 Rage. After two seconds, Zhang Yang swung again to deal 53 damage and quickly moved back behind the rock and out of the boss’ vision with just two steps.

Unduin bellowed fiercely as his nearly completed <Fireball> was interrupted once again. He moved a few steps again to regain sight on his target and began casting once more.

‘61%!’

Zhang Yang casted <Horizontal Sweep> and there was finally some significant damage.

‘-222!’

After another two seconds, Zhang Yang swung his sword again to deal 57 damage and while paying attention to the timing, withdrew behind the rock and out of the boss’ vision for the third time. Unduin kept roaring, but due to how he was designed, he did not execute any form of melee attack and could only chase Zhang Yang to chant the spell that could never be completed.

“What... Is this really happening?” Drizzler was left with her jaw dropped, feeling dumbfounded.

“Now that’s a real professional!” nodded Little Snow.

“Cousin, it all depends on you now! Come on, pull him into our guild!”

“Hey, hey! I’m your one and only beloved cousin! Are you really going to sell me out like that?”

“Aww, you are my dear cousin! Now, please help me! You have that charm in you! I believe with just a lift of your finger, you’d definitely charm that weird uncle!”

“Damn! Maybe he prefers flat chests more?”

“Han Yin Xue! I’m warning you! Don’t you ever mention about my chest!”

“Haha! Sunny side-up!”

“ ... ”

“You two! Come and join the fight!” Zhang Yang was not aware that they were bickering again as it was through private messaging. On his own, his attack speed was slow, but with the two of them, it would be an added advantage to have more damage dealt. The two girls stopped their squabble and ran to his aid. They emulated Zhang Yang’s hit and run tactics.

“Just attack! You don’t have to hide, I will take care of the aggro! Don’t worry about the <Fireball>. It will never be executed!” The two understood his orders and started attacking the boss from behind and began to do some damage.

Drizzler was a Berserker and carried a two-handed weapon. Her basic attack damage was relatively high at about 190 points, but the attack interval was at 3.8 seconds between each strike. It was clear that high basic damage dealers could overwhelm monsters with high defense. The Berserker’s passive skill increased 10% of all attack damage, which allowed her to damage the boss with 100 points per strike, and a single hit was more than what Zhang Yang could deal. As for Little Snow, she was much weaker due to the 10 levels of gap between the boss and her. Thus, along with the boss’ basic magic immunity, she was rendered completely useless.

Although the progress was slow, the boss’ health was constantly dropping. After half an hour, the boss’ HP was left with 130,000

points; 57% remaining.

Drizzler began to cry out in fatigue, “Oh my god, how much longer is this going to take? I’m exhausted!” After doing some calculation, Zhang Yang said, “With this speed, it would take another 40 minutes to kill this boss!” Drizzler pouted her lips, “Wow! If I had known earlier how draggy this would be, I wouldn’t have dismissed the party!”

Little Snow interjected, “Stupid girl, less people means bigger share!” As soon as she heard that, Drizzler’s eyes sparkled and even Zhang Yang could see her eyes were radiating with shiny gold pieces!

Most players would have preferred fewer party members to get more equipment drops, but these two wanted money more than anything else!

“A Gray-Silver grade boss... he should be dropping quite the amount of gold pieces, no?” As soon as Little Snow said that, Drizzler’s fighting spirit and desire exponentially rose.

“Cousin, let’s do this! F\*ck this boss up!”

“Okay! Let’s go!”

Their desire and lust for gold drove their fighting spirits to greater heights!

Martyr Unduin was really strong. The <Fireball> skill could release 10 projections upon casting, carrying the destructive power of 1,000 damage each. Players considered this to be an unbreakable monster, but the existence of that particular stone has become Unduin's Achilles Heel! Unduin has been absolutely oppressed!

Another half an hour later, Unduin has only 10% HP left.

9%, 8%, 7%...

Ten minutes later...

“Vile invaders, the gods will punish you!” And with his last words delivered, the World Boss finally cried out in humiliation and fell.

‘Ding! You and your party members have killed Martyr Unduin! Obtained 100,500 EXP (50 points party bonus)!’

‘Ding! Congratulations! You are the first party to kill a Gray-Silver boss. Your glorious achievement will be recorded in history! As the party leader, please name your party to be enlisted into history and the world can praise you for your might!’

Drizzler was surprised, and an input box appeared on her interface that came with the notification sound.

“Zhan Yu, we can enter the ranking board! But, what should we name our party as?”

Drizzler was being polite, knowing that Zhang Yang was the main reason they managed to defeat this boss. She and Little Snow contributed almost nothing to it!

Zhang Yang laughed, “Just key in your guild name!” After all, they discovered the boss and with Defiant Monk in the guild, it was also a sign of respect.

“Thank you very much!” Drizzler was grateful and immediately keyed in her guild name. This was the best opportunity to spread their name as the server announcement has the best publicity effect.

‘Server Announcement: Party Lone Desert Smoke has successfully killed the Martyr Unduin, Level 25 Gray-Silver Boss (China Server). This achievement will be recorded in the Hall of Fame! Please celebrate and cheer for them!’

‘Server Announcement: Player Drizzler (Party Leader) has successfully killed the Martyr Unduin, Level 25 Gray-Silver Boss (China Server). Obtained 10 Gold Coins, Luck attribute +1, and 500 Reputation points across all races in the league are awarded!’

‘Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Party Member) has successfully killed the Martyr Unduin, Level 25 Gray-Silver Boss (China Server). Obtained 10 Gold Coins, Luck attribute +1, and 500 Reputation Points across all races in the league are

awarded!’

‘Server Announcement: Player Little Snow (Party Member) has successfully killed the Martyr Unduin, Level 25 Gray-Silver Boss (China Server). Obtained 10 Gold Coins, Luck attribute +1, and 500 Reputation Points across all races in the league are awarded!’

The entire Chinese server began to get lively. At this point in time, most players were still happily raiding the Bangar Crypt in Easy Mode, and only 10% of the players could raid in Hard Mode, while the elites from the big guilds would take on the Hardcore Mode. Out of the blue, came a server announcement bearing news of the first kill on a Gray-Silver boss. How could anyone be calm? On top of that, the boss was killed by a party of three! What on earth was happening?! The server was filled with chatter, causing a large number of parties to be killed in the dungeon!

Now, the ones that regretted the most were probably the Lone Desert Smoke players that left the party earlier! Had they known that there was such a possibility, they would have certainly stayed on to obtain the server announcement as well! It would be exhilarating!

...

“It’s money! Money, money, money!”

Completely disregarding the equipment, Drizzler happily hugged

the heap of money dropped by the boss. Zhang Yang could never comprehend their love for money! The other players would already be weeping as there were Gray-Silver equipment lying all over the ground... there was even a skill book!



# Chapter 41: A Handsome Reward

---

‘Beep!’

One by one, messages flooded his Friend list.

Defiant Monk: “You’re a pro! You really did kill the boss! Haha! I knew you could do it!”

Snowy Death: “Pro, bro! Taking on the boss without inviting a bro? Come on, bro!”

Hundred Shot: “Congratulations!”

Fatty Han: “F\*ck you, man. How could you have hoes before bros? There are two babes right there, and you can’t even let me have one?”

Crimson Fire and Silky Snow sent their regards too, he knew there was envy and jealousy hidden in their words.

...

Zhang Yang could not tolerate those two anymore, “Alright, alright! You’re all grown-ups now. Stop acting like children! I’m opening the corpse!” They were so intoxicated with money that their eyes glowed into a weird symbol of money.

‘Ding! You have obtained 40 silver pieces after distribution!’

Such a stingy Gray-Silver boss, only giving 1 gold and 20 silver.

Drizzler openly replied to him, “Zhan Yu, you should get all the equipment since technically, you killed the boss.”

Zhang Yang pondered and then said, “You do know that any one of these equipment can easily be sold for at least 1,000 gold. How can you let this chance slip by when the two of you are so intoxicated with such little amount of silver?”

“Hmph! I’m not a miser!” Drizzler then threw a look of disgust onto Zhang Yang. “You know, as the saying goes, ‘For what you earn, pray that it’s clean’! You can’t accept a fortune that is not by your effort!” Zhang Yang grinned, and replied, “I prefer the saying, ‘A horse without wild grass would be thin; man without a fortune is poor.’”

“Ugh! What a waste of time!” Then the girls stepped aside.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, “Since we fought the boss together, everybody should get a share. How about this? I will help myself with whatever I like, and the rest of the loot will be shared between both of you!”

“Sounds good!” The girls agreed, as it was still the battle loot from a Gray-Silver boss!

---

[Martyr Ring] (Gray-Silver, Ring)

Vitality: +10

Strength: +10

Equip effect: Increase Critical Strike chance by 1%

Level requirement: 20

The girls gave up their roll at the same time and the equipment went to Zhang Yang. At least he was lucky once. He continued to open the corpse.

[Spellcaster's Circlet] (Gray-Silver, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +48

Intelligence: +24

Spirit: +8

Note: This once belonged to the great Spellcaster Unduin, signifying intelligence and strength!

Zhang Yang was the first to reject the roll, leaving Little Snow happily smiling.

[Carved Boots] (Gray-Silver, Leather Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +15

Strength: +5

Dexterity: +20

Level requirement: 20

Since all three of them could not equip this, they rolled together and was obtained by Drizzler with 78 points.

[Holy Prayers] (Skill book)

Use: You will learn <Holy Prayers>.

Class requirement: Priest, Knight.

“Quickly, use it! What does it really do?” asked Drizzler curiously.

Little Snow obtained the skill book after Zhang Yang and Drizzler gave up their roll. She then patted the book on her chest and posted the skill description after learning it.

[Holy Prayers] (Level 1): Heals target's HP for 100% of the current magic attack. The nearest surrounding players will receive healing for 25% of the current magic attack. Up to 4 players maximum.

MP Cost: 50.

Cast time: 1.5 seconds.

Cooldown time: 10 seconds

It was not clear what would happen after levelling up the skill, whether it was increased healing capacity, shorter casting time, or even reduced cooldown time. It did not matter as this skill was meant for mass healing which greatly reduced the difficulty of

raiding dungeon bosses that used multi-target skills.

Under the boss remained the last item, a skill book with a red cover.

[Eagle Eye] (Skill book)

Use: You will learn <Eagle Eye>

Class requirement: Warrior, Knight, Hunter, Thief.

Drizzler was once again curious. “Eh? This skill is so versatile; it can be learned by so many different classes. What skill is this, exactly?” Zhang Yang, on the other hand, got excited and said, “Please, let me have this one!” Drizzler curled her lips to his response, “Tch! What are you getting so excited about? I’ve already said that all the loot belongs to you!” She then gave up her roll. Little Snow had the intention to tease Zhang Yang again but as she also agreed to let him have all the items, she gave up her roll as well.

Once Zhang Yang had gotten hold of the skill book, he quickly patted it against his chest and with a flash of light, a new skill appeared on his skill window.

Seeing Zhang Yang giggling like a madman, Drizzler could not resist and asked. “Post it out! I want to see it too!” Zhang Yang

laughed too and posted the newly gained skill description to the party channel.

[Eagle Eye] (Passive) (Level 1): You now have the ability to thoroughly search the enemy's weak points. All attacks will now ignore 50% enemy defense.

“Tch, and here I thought it was some godly skill. The warrior's Level 20 <Cripple Defense> skill also has a 50% armor reduction!” and Drizzler curled her lips again.

“Uh huh. First. <Cripple Defense> can only cause 10% armor reduction upon each stack and you can only have 50% armor reduction after 5 stacks! By then, I would have attacked a number of times already! Plus, if you were to fight against a group of monsters then you'll have to apply 5 stacks of <Cripple Defense> on each monster. How long would that take?” Zhang Yang giggled uncontrollably. “Second. <Eagle Eye> effect can be stacked with <Cripple Defense>!”

Both girls were surprised.

Zhang Yang loved this skill in his previous life. Sadly, <Eagle Eye>'s skill book drop rate is too low, and there were not more than 100 players who had this skill in the entire China server. Zhang Yang never managed to pick up this skill book before and he had never seen this skill book being sold in the auction house. The maximum level for this skill was 10, and the ignore defense value would increase to 95%. This was especially efficient when it was

used against high defense bosses or in PK against Knights or Guardians.

If Zhang Yang had possessed <Eagle Eye> during the boss fight just now, he would have immediately ignored 50% of the defense and his attack would increase by 50. That was almost double his attack power!

Later on, he opened another 7 to 8 other equipment but none of those suited him. He was lucky enough to roll these three equipment: two leather armor and one heavy armor for a support Knight. The leather armors were for Fatty Han and the heavy armor was for Ocean Despair. But Zhang Yang decided to sell it off in the auction house because he knew that Ocean Despair would reject his offer out of courtesy.

“Alright, everything has been distributed. Let’s return to the city!” Zhang Yang took out a [Teleportation Scroll] and tore it apart nonchalantly. Before the magic circle formed completely, Zhang Yang asked, “Oh, right. Have you guys tried Bangar Crypt in Hardore mode?”

While tearing their [Teleportation Scroll] as well, Drizzler replied, “The first boss is too tough. We had two tanks but they could not maintain the aggro. One fell after the other, and we could never conquer it!”

“Why’d you ask? Are you willing to take us there?” asked Little Snow. After a white pillar of light flashed, Zhang Yang emerged out of the teleportation waypoint in the White Jade Castle. Following closely were Drizzler and Little Snow in the same white



light.

“I just want a mineral that appears at the third boss. You guys can have everything else. How about that?” said Zhang Yang, smiling. Right now, [Earthern Round Shield] is selling extremely well. If the Plain Copper Vein could produce two to four [Plain Copper Ore], he could earn up to two to four gold pieces!

Even though the two girls were a little crazy whenever it comes to money, but their way of conduct was truly to be respected; which was why Zhang Yang would only involve people he thought was worthwhile in a mutual beneficial act.

“Sure, sure, sure! I’ll form a party now!” Drizzler was happily cheering, but she stopped after a while, turned around and looked at Zhang Yang with suspicion in her eyes, “Hey... you’re not actually trying to get my cousin and me, right?” Little Snow nodded in agreement and said, “Drizzler, there’s always something hiding behind a good will.”

“No, I’m not!” Zhang Yang shook his head. “Very well then!” Drizzler bought into his words and went on jumping happily. “Innocent little idiot!” Little Snow withdrew with defeat.

After checking the system clock, Zhang Yang suggested to them, “It’s almost 7pm. How about we all take our dinner and meet back here in an hour?”

Drizzler then turned to Little Snow, “Hurm, now that you’ve mentioned it, I am kind of hungry! Cousin, where shall we eat

later?”

“... How about at the Arc de Triomphe? That place has some good beef steaks!”

“Okay! Let’s go! Let’s go!”

And with that, the two girls logged off faster than Zhang Yang could, and their characters instantly disappeared right in front of him. He thought it was a little amusing, chuckled, and then logged off himself.

Zhang Yang suddenly thought, “These two girls must be from a rich family,” There was also a Western restaurant called Arc de Triomphe in the city where he was living in and it really was famous for its beef steak. In his previous life, he went there and ate several times while he was rich. It truly was delicious, and it could be a chance that they were all actually living in the same city!

After a brief thought, Zhang Yang ran downstairs and bought two packets of 5 dollar boxed rice. It had to be two as he always had a big appetite and would not be contented with just one. After dinner and some rest, Zhang Yang came back online. He first spent some time at the Smithing shop and raised his Smithing level. When it was almost an hour past, he already made more than 900 pieces of [Beginner Whetstone] and obtained Amateur Smithing level.

‘Ding! Player Drizzler has invited you to join her party. Would you accept the invitation?’

8pm sharp. These two girls were really punctual. Zhang Yang accepted the invitation and with him, there were 10 other players, including Defiant Monk. After greeting each other in the party, they headed to the dungeon entrance and as soon as everyone gathered, the fight began.

What really surprised Zhang Yang were the girls; they both had strong gaming abilities! Drizzler was just a little girl wielding a two-handed sword, but she held it fiercely and with great strength. Her knowledge in using her skill rotations was quite formidable as with proper rotation, her total damage was high enough that she would come in second place in terms of damage output as compared to Zhang Yang.

Little Snow had good crowd control. Whoever had their HP dropped low, she would be there to instantly cast a [Regeneration] spell and would consider whether to continue casting a healing spell. Her MP management was incredible as she had never wasted a single drop of MP! Whenever a fight ended, she could control and manage her MP to be more or less half, while the other healer completely drained his MP to zero. Little Snow was leading in total healing by 62%!

If these two persons were willing to be trained and studied a little, they could be professional players in the future! Though it might not be possible to guarantee a victory in the S-class Professional League, they could still completely conquer the A-class with ease. It is weird. How have I not seen their names before?!

Lost Paradise was not really a big guild but at least they were a semi-professional one sponsored by a business company. That was why all the elites in the guild were fluent in the game basics. However, Lone Desert Smoke was way beneath them. Even though Drizzler chose the players with the best equipment to join the party, their attacking power was still far from that of Lost Paradise.

The good thing was that Zhang Yang was already level 18. All his equipment were almost Green-Copper, pressuring the boss' own attack. Along with Drizzler's capability and Little Snow's healing control, they managed to overcome obstacles and defeated the dungeon's third boss Dadarerda.

## Chapter 42: The Brother Dragon Of The Massage Parlor

---

A Plain Copper Mine spawned, but Zhang Yang could not harvest it as he had discarded that skill; someone else harvested and gave it to him. As promised earlier from both parties, Zhang Yang could have all three [Plain Copper Ore]. Lone Desert Smoke members had no objections regarding this as the only reason they were there was to look for better equipment.

While Zhang Yang led the party into the secret chamber of Momorermo, a private message appeared from Fatty Han. “Little Yang, lend me a hand in Hard Mode!” Surprised, Zhang Yang replied, “What the f\*ck are you doing in Hard mode?! Hurry up and raise your level, and I’ll bring you in to get the “First Clear” achievement of the Level 20 dungeon!”

Fatty Han continued pleading, “Please? I’m carrying a lovely girl to farm for some equipment! These two noob tanks can’t even get past the first boss. We got wiped out three times! I’ve already made a promise to her, so please come and help me!”

“Damn, you sleazy pervert! Okay, but I’m still in the middle of a dungeon run and I’m fighting the last boss. Add me into the party after I’m done!”

“As expected, my brother. I will wait for you!”

Zhang Yang shook his head, and then began to explain the boss strategy to his party members. They started the fight and was

wiped out twice, but they eventually cleared it. Zhang Yang was in a hurry, and as soon as the boss was defeated, he went straight out from the dungeon without checking the loot. He left Drizzler's party when he reached the dungeon entrance and sent a private message to Fatty Han, "Ok, party me!" After a while, a party invitation was sent from a stranger.

'Ding! Player Dragon Swordsman invited you to join his party. Will you accept his invitation?'

Zhang Yang accepted and joined the party of 10. He re-entered the dungeon and saw nine others waiting for him at the dungeon entrance. "Wiped out again?" Zhang Yang asked. "Yeah, all noob sh\*t!" scolded Fatty Han. Dragon Swordsman chipped in, "Haha... Now that the professional is here, we can surely clear this dungeon now. Let's go!"

Zhang Yang scanned the team and saw two lovely ladies standing beside Fatty Han, and they seemed to be in their twenties. One was rather slim while the other was fairly plump, but she had an impressive bosom. Their tag read 'Floating Flower' and 'Round Swallow', and both were Level 12 from the same guild called 'Blazing City'. Floating Flower was an Elf Priest and Round Swallow was a Human Sacred Knight. I guess these are the two being babysat. From the looks of it, the other party members were like a group of birds flocking together. Aside from Dragon Swordsman and another spellcaster called 'Little Tyrant Zhou Tong', the four other members were young girls. All of them had an acceptable level of beauty, and there were no "dinosaur" cases here; although none of them could compare to the all-female guild that is Crimson Rage. At the current stage of the game, the number of male players overpowered the number of female players, but the

male and female ratio in this party was very strange.

“Fatty, which is your girl? The Priest or the Sacred Knight?” asked Zhang Yang. “Sacred Knight!” Fatty was shy and bashfully said, “and also the Priest!”

“F\*ck. You sick pervert!” scolded Zhang Yang. “How does it feel to have two targets?”

“Aww, come on. I’m still pure! I won’t be doing those kind of disgusting acts!” Fatty Han’s face was filled with righteousness. “I’m just enjoying the buns and a little lip service on the side! Little Yang, this high quality virtual reality is truly impressive. The sensation of soft flesh is completely the same as reality!”

“In the end, you’re just a sick pervert!” Zhang Yang scorned. Chatting while walking, they soon reached Black Claw, the first boss. “Let’s go!” Zhang Yang bluntly said as he wielded his sword and rushed forward. With his current equipment and skills, he was almost able to go solo in Hard Mode. Brandishing his sword, he was able to beat the Black Claw to a pulp and defeated the first boss.

In the team damage statistics, Zhang Yang dealt 48% in total, and with Fatty Han, they dealt 78% together. The two of them were enough to kill the boss! This party’s damage output was terrible and the healing was all over the place. The two healers had the equipment but they did not have the power to use it.

Dragon Swordsman started a private chat with Zhang Yang

shortly after, “Zhan Yu! It’s an honor to finally meet you!”

“Haha... You are welcome!” replied Zhang Yang.

“Please, join our guild! Name your price!”

It seemed like Dragon Swordsman could be someone rich and powerful. Zhang Yang only smiled and said, “Thank you, but I currently have no plans to join any guilds.” Dragon Swordsman suddenly changed the topic. “This Slim guy is your friend, I presume?” Zhang Yang was confused. After realizing that he meant Fatty Han, he said, “Yes!”

“Your friend is in our guild. There’s no point in playing alone! Join us and play together! You know, the more the merrier! Our guild, Blazing City, has plenty of lovely ladies, and most of them would be happy to let off some steam. Uh huh, you know it!” Dragon Swordsman was trying to bait him in. Zhang Yang glanced back at the two girls that were slobbering all over Fatty Han, and finally understood what Dragon Swordsman really meant by “letting off some steam”. What was the difference between them and common hostesses?

Zhang Yang was right! In reality, Dragon Swordsman was the owner of a massage parlor. He was commonly known there as ‘Brother Dragon’, and has been running that parlor for several years. He really made a living for himself! He was recently assigned to be Vice Deputy President of Public Security Bureau in Chang Cheng, resulting in a conflict of his business. With no one to run his parlor, how could he go on?



The Deputy Chief had some problems with his reputation which directly affected his business. He could not proceed with his business since and had to shut it down. However, Brother Dragon was a smart man! He recalled that his nephew mentioned a newly released online game, and the biggest selling point was the high quality virtual reality! He researched 'God's Miracle' and bought two gaming helmets to try it out. After entering the game, he conducted many tests on the best girl in his parlor. He tried to knead, pinch, touch and nip her sensitive parts, and he also ordered her to strip down. Brother Dragon felt excitement that was beyond compare! He had the epiphany. Times have changed and technology has advanced. His future now lies in the internet!

Without hesitation, he spent a large sum of money and bought game helmets for every female employee working under his business. He brought the parlor's 'waitresses' and security boys together and entered 'God's Miracle'. Brother Dragon took the first step in this game of chess and wanted to establish a brand new massage parlor in the game itself!

Even in the midst of all the confusion, he could see a clear vision of his prosperous future. His first step was to raise his guild's reputation and recruit as many members as he could. Having high popularity meant being able to promote all the lovely girls under his business. The ladies that went through face adjustment features during character selection will look as bedazzling as if they undergone plastic surgery in Korea. He was certain they would be able to seduce those perverted men!

If the business grew bigger, he would be able to make a deal with others to expand the business. Brother Dragon had the utmost

confidence that he could build the largest red light district in history! However, the first step was always the hardest; how could he raise his guild's popularity? Just as he was frowning to the point his brows were knitted closely, he saw the server announcement; the same announcement that belonged to Zhang Yang when he cleared Bangar Crypt! Brother Dragon had another inspiration!

He then sent his trump cards to lure in 10 party members. Unfortunately, Zhang Yang was out of reach as he turned off his private messaging and friend request service. The four Lost Paradise members could not be tempted and as for the remaining 5 players, Fatty Han, having the weakest resolve was easily seduced.

Brother Dragon went through the dungeon several times before, and he knew the importance of a good tank in a party, and was desperate in trying to recruit Zhang Yang in. Even though contacting him had failed, he found out that Fatty Han was actually Zhang Yang's good friend in reality. That was why he always betted on Fatty Han and used him as bait to draw Zhang Yang to his side!

...

Unable to hold back his feelings, Zhang Yang sent Fatty Han a private message, "Fatty, don't tell me you're actually serious with these two girls?"

Fatty Han replied. "Tch! Look at them go at me! It's the same as the salon girls from 'Happy Street'. I just want to enjoy their service for a little while!"

Zhang Yang finally understood, that Fatty Han knew what he wanted.

“Fatty, I’m going to start our own guild very soon. Stop slacking and pay attention to those players that might have some skills or personality. We could recruit them next time!”

“Ok, I got it!” Fatty Han then paused and said, “Those two seductive ladies are flirting with me again, and they want me to pull you into the guild! How about this? Join this guild temporarily and give me some respect! Hehe... Little Yang, the members of this guild are all really pretty! Plus, they all like to have ‘fun’!”

“You go ahead! Don’t drag me into you own fantasy!” The party proceeded on. With Zhang Yang’s passive <Eagle Eye>, his attack power rose to another level. It did not take long for Zhang Yang to defeat the second and third boss; Hard Mode was fairly easy for him. Brother Dragon wanted to proceed with the Hardcore Mode, but Zhang Yang left the party, claiming that he only had limited dungeon entries. Brother Dragon wanted to insist more but even he knew when to stop persuading. It did not matter much since he had Fatty Han in his grasp, and one day he could use Fatty to bring Zhang Yang into his guild. There will always be a chance!

Zhang Yang returned to the capital and the first thing he did was to buy all the [Brassica Weed] and [Gingko Flower] from the auction house and turned them all into Anti-Shadow Potion. It was about 11pm or so when he was done. He decided it was time to log out. Laying in his bed, Zhang Yang hopped onto his train of

thoughts. Right now, he needed to set up his own dungeon party. He cannot depend on wild or random parties to raid a dungeon.

Marzerway's Lair was a Level 20 dungeon, split into three sections. The 'Front Wing' and 'Middle Wing' were 5-men dungeons. The equipment drop from the three difficulties were Level 10 Black-Steel grade, Level 20 Black-Steel grade and Level 20 Green-Copper grade respectively. The main section, 'Marzerway's Lair', was a 20-men dungeon with only one boss, Marzerway. The equipment drops from the three difficulties were Level 20 Black-Steel grade, Level 20 Green-Copper grade and Level 20 Gray-Silver grade respectively.

In other words, there were three Hardcore Mode "First Clear" achievements obtainable from this dungeon! That also meant three extra skill points to gain! Currently, he decided to keep Fatty Han and Hundred Shot in the party. For the 5-man dungeon, he needed a healer and an attacker. Zhang Yang only knew a few healers, namely Ocean Despair, Silky Snow, and Little Snow.

Although Ocean Despair was a big fan of Zhang Yang, his skills and spatial awareness were not up to his expectations and he could not leave Ocean Despair to handle healing alone! Silky Snow was good, but she was in Lost Paradise and would definitely not follow him! As for Little Snow, she might become a potential A-level Professional League player with some honing. It would definitely have been a great help if he could recruit her! Drizzler was also already good to go as she was... truly a wonderful piece of jade.

Was it possible to get them on his side? Zhang Yang started to ponder on this matter.

## Chapter 43: Sacred Training Ground

---

After waking up from a good night's sleep, Zhang Yang logged into the game filled with energy and spirit. Opening his Friend List, he saw Fatty Han online and realized that he was only Level 15! So painfully low! Hundred Shots was online too, and he was only a level lower than Fatty Han!

Looking through the Level Ranking Board, Floating Fire Ball was at Level 19, while the other three were Level 18, except for Clear Color who was Level 17. Hundred Shots and Fatty Han's levels were just too low!

Zhang Yang suddenly had an idea; I know an excellent place for a quick level up! He sent the party invitations to them, and Fatty Han accepted it immediately.

Even Hundred Shots accepted it. He has been maintaining good ties with Zhang Yang by chatting him up for the past few days.

"Guys, I found an amazing place to grind!" exclaimed Zhang Yang through the party channel. "Go, go, go!" Fatty Han shouted excitedly.

"Hold up! I need to invite two more players!" and Zhang Yang sent a message to Little Snow, "I found a great place to train, want to join? All I need is a healer and an attacker." After some time, Little Snow finally replied, "Scrawny rascal, what are you planning to do with me?"

“Tch! Yes or no. I could always find someone else!” Even Zhang Yang knew how to act tough.

“Yes! Of course I want to! Hang on, I’ll call Drizzler!” And she logged off immediately. Soon, she re-logged in and sent a private message, “Send a party invitation to Drizzler and me!” and they were added into the party too.

Fatty Han was thrilled to see them. “Whoa! Pretty ladies!” Hundred Shots could only chuckle at him. “You haven’t even seen their faces, how could you call them pretty just because they are ladies?” Fatty Han decided to play the devil’s advocate against Hundred Shots,

“Ladies, this guy dared to say you’re not pretty! Should I just punch him in the face?”

Drizzler giggled and said, “Punch him! I’m definitely a pretty lady, and soon to be a pretty queen, charming thousands around me!”

Little Snow couldn’t help but to rain on her parade, “Little brat. What’re you bragging about when you just woke up? You haven’t even brushed your teeth!”

“Han Yin Xue! How dare you say that out loud! I was sound asleep until you came in and made a mess! Hmph! Hmph!”

Fatty Han tried to keep the conversation going, but he was just

spouting nonsense, “Eh? Pretty Snow is also a Han. What a coincidence, my surname is Han too! This is destiny, truly destiny!”

“Everyone, gather at the North of the city. We’ll follow my lead once everyone is here!” Zhang Yang could not resist adding another sentence, “Drizzler, please keep that directional idiot on the right track!”

“Who is the idiot?!” Little Snow retorted.

“Whomever that responded is the idiot!” Zhang Yang laughed as he replied. “Now, hurry up and stop wasting time! We have to get to Level 20 today!” Drizzler seemed doubtful about this and strongly protested against the idea.

“Level 20? Zhan Yu, have you lost your mind? At my current Level, I need at least 1,000,000 Experience Points and even if I spend my whole day grinding, I can only gain one level. My cousin and I are only at Level 13, and I don’t think you can even make it to Level 20 either!”

“Haha! That’s the reason why I called you here; to grind at the Holy Training Ground!”

“Oh? Is there really such a place?” Drizzler began doubting her own thoughts as Zhang Yang spoke with such confidence. To think this man actually defeated the once undefeatable boss Martyr Unduin... He definitely has some secret up his sleeve! “Let’s go for it!”

After finally meeting up, they embarked on their journey through the sky-blue lakes and peaceful plains, before finally entering the Spider's Forest. It was dark and dim, filled with all kinds of spiders roaming everywhere, leaving cob webs hung with animal carcasses as the forest's decoration. There were little globs that were white spiders' eggs rest beneath the tree, and they were absolutely disgusting.

“Eww...” Little Snow and Drizzler both frowned at the sight of it. Fatty Han stepped forward in front of them and said, “Don't worry ladies, for this Fatty will protect you!”

“Follow me!” Zhang Yang continued to lead the way, guiding the other four into the deeper parts of the forest. They slain a number of minions along the way and soon reached a cave entrance.

“Enter!”

Not being fond of darkness in the cave, Little Snow and Drizzler forced themselves to press on as they were already here and it would a waste to turn back! The girls stuck closely behind Zhang Yang while Fatty Han and Hundred Shots guarded their rear. As they proceeded on route while killing more small spiders, they finally arrived at the deepest part of the cave. It had a massive space and two gigantic spiders as tall as two-storey buildings sat on their webs, taking up almost half of the area. All eight of their legs were thicker than an elephant's and the hair covering them looked more like daggers.





[Broodmother] (Green-Copper Boss)

Level: 20

HP: 60,000

Little Snow whispered, “Hey, do you actually think we could level up to 20 after killing these monsters?” Zhang Yang laughed loudly. “Of course not!”

In the game, speaking loudly would not provoke or attract a monster’s attention, unless you were in the monster’s aggro range.

“Little Yang, where is this so called training ground that you spoke of?” Fatty Han looked somewhat confused despite having faith in Zhang Yang. “We’re here!” Zhang Yang spoke nonchalantly.

The other four players began expressing confusion. This is a Level 20 boss, and even though it is a Green-Copper boss, the divided experience points earned after killing it would be low! The only way to gain even one level from this was if the boss had unlimited respawn and we killed it 40 to 50 times!

The unpredictable Zhang Yang then pointed to the two rocks to their left and said, “I’ll give the signal to hide later. Fatty, Hundred, and Little Snow; you three must stand in the middle of the rocks while Drizzler and I defend the front.”

“Why?” Drizzler asked.

“You’ll know soon enough! Get ready, I’m starting the fight!” Zhang Yang then wielded his sword and used <Charge>.

‘-133!’ Normal attack.

Broodmother quickly recovered from the stun effect that lasted for a second and then moved one of its long legs to thrust it towards Zhang Yang.

‘<Block>!’

‘-78!’ <Block> reflected damage.

‘-178!’ <Shield Bash>!

Zhang Yang shouted “Start the attack!” after he made sure he kept the aggro on him. Little Snow and the others still had no clue to what Zhang Yang was thinking, but they played along and began to strike.

95%, 83%, 71% ... the boss’ HP kept dropping at a tremendous rate.

Within two minutes, Broodmother was left with only 15% HP. “Stop! It’s time to hide!” Zhang Yang ordered loudly. Having left a

professional impression on the team, Little Snow and the others followed the plan even if they still had some doubts in him. They stood between the rocks once more, having to lean on the side as it was too small for three of them.

14%, 12%, 11%, 10%!

Broodmother gave a piercing shriek, ignoring Zhang Yang and climbed the web to its eggs. With a swing of its feet, 4 smaller spiders jumped out and tackled Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! Broodmother hatched Baby Spiders!’

With the system notification sound, Zhang Yang withdrew to the rocks with Drizzler. With each taking one side, they stood their ground and defended Little Snow and their team. The Baby Spiders did not stop hatching from the eggs and swarmed at them.

[Hatched Baby Spider] (Normal)

Level: 15

HP: 300

“Kill the smaller ones!” Zhang Yang yelled as he swung his sword, using <Horizontal Sweep> that caused numerous damage texts to pop out, ranging from 286 to 302. Some of the Baby Spiders

were killed, while the rest had only a sliver of health left. His <Shadow Rage> necklace was frantically activating, popping out “-20” constantly.

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Hatched Baby Spider. Obtained 110 Experience Points (50 points party bonus)!’

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Hatched Baby Spider. Obtained 110 Experience Points (50 points party bonus)!’

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Hatched Baby Spider. Obtained 110 Experience Points (50 points party bonus)!’

‘Ding...’

Little Snow and the others were both surprised and happy. “Do you understand now?” Zhang Yang asked while he smiled at them. Fatty then asked, “These Baby Spiders... do they spawn unlimitedly?”

“Yeah, as long as you don’t kill the boss, they’ll keep on spawning!” and thus the secret was revealed. According to the boss mechanics, having lesser than 10% HP prompted it to continuously summon minions to fight. The proper way to fight was to battle until it was dead, but a player’s wisdom knew no limits. Someone immediately thought of a way to abuse this mechanic to level up fast! As long as there were two high defense class players blocking

the rocks with healers to sustain them, they could grind indefinitely without a problem!

However, as soon as the method was revealed to the public, the game developers immediately modified the boss' mechanics to only summon ten Baby Spiders instead, demolishing the unlimited spawn method. Since Zhang Yang played the game a little later, he was not able to personally experience this method of levelling. He only heard it from others as they joked about 'God's Miracle'.

Aside from Little Snow, Zhang Yang and the rest of the party were attacking furiously. The two melee fighters were blocking any incoming attack while the range attackers fired from behind. Little Snow did her job to heal Zhang Yang and Drizzler. As they were blocking a stone each with half of their body, only 10 Baby Spiders could attack at once. Most of the aggro were held by Zhang Yang and having 70 points of defense, they only struck him with a measly 4 points of damage each. It was a breeze! Safe, fast, and with unlimited monster spawning, this was the smoothest way to level up!

Zhang Yang's devastating Attack Power truly allowed him to perform at his best here! As there is a high monster count, <Block> reflect damage could be considered a multi-target damage skill. Each damage could bring three to four '120 and above' damage text. <Horizontal Sweep>, on the other hand, was much more overwhelming. With high basic attack damage, it could accumulate up to 5,000 damage in a single use against 10 monsters!

Drizzler did not have any multi-target skills, so her total damage output was far from Zhang Yang's; from 30%, it jumped to 74%.

Fatty Han began to feel the excitement, “This is awesome! Look at my EXP bar go!” Even Hundred Shots expressed his gratefulness, “Zhan Yu, you’re amazing! You could even discover such an amazing way to level up!”

Two of them gained a level first. Even though it was slow for Zhang Yang to level up, it only took him 20 minutes longer to reach level 19! After an hour, Little Snow and Drizzler levelled up to 14.

## Chapter 44: Rapid Leveling

---

A traditional, boring, and never changing style of battle would definitely put someone to sleep. Therefore, having a rapid levelling style would incite an unbelievable fervor into someone even like Little Snow as if she could morph into a dragon and slay the monsters in one swift fire attack! After an hour or so, everyone but Zhang Yang gained a level.

It was almost lunch time, but no one in the team talked about logging out for a meal knowing that a loophole like this could be removed by the game developers at any time! With that thought in mind, they were on a frenzy not to waste this golden opportunity.

“Hey guys, how about we log off once everyone is at Level 20?” Zhang Yang asked. While furiously killing more spiders, Drizzler replied, “Well, I’ll take this as a chance for me to skip a meal. I’m not going to stop here just yet!” Little Snow tried to provoke her even more.

“Little brat! You’re already so paper-thin, your chest would just sink right to your back! If you lose any more weight, I’m afraid that you might never get past puberty!”

“Han Yin Xue, just you wait! While you’re asleep tonight, I’m going to put Little Daisy on your bed!”

Little Snow’s face turned slight pale out of fear. Feeling dazed, she said, “Then I’ll bring a cat home tomorrow!”

Zhang Yang was curious, “Um, is Little Daisy a mouse?”

“Guinea pig! Oh, Little Daisy is so cute and cuddly!” Drizzler began to describe her pet.

“Ew, disgusting!” Little Snow frowned upon her description.

Another hour passed again and everyone gained another level; even Zhang Yang reached Level 20 and gained a skill point. He immediately invested it in <Block> to reduce the cooldown time to a mere 6 seconds! He also swapped his current sword and ring for the new [Silver-Scaled Sword] and [Martyr Ring] and raised his attacks to a whole new level!

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 20

HP: 1,600

Defense: 70

Strength: 106

Dexterity: 39



Luck: 3

Melee damage: 345-367 (Damage formula: [Silver-Scaled Sword] highest and lowest damage + 148 (Strength value)/ 2 (Every 2 points of Strength will increase 1 point of DPS) x 2.6 (Weapon Attack Speed)

Attack interval: 2.6 seconds

Now he was strong enough to kill the spiders in one hit as compared to his previous damage output which took him 3 strikes. Using <Horizontal Sweep>, he could now deal a whopping 700 damage! With Zhang Yang's increased damage power, Little Snow and the others gained experience a little faster than before but Zhang Yang's own gaining speed was slower than a snail!

Zhang Yang's current level surpassed the current Rank 1 in the Level Ranking Board, which was Floating Fire Ball. Fatty Han on the other hand replaced Abradon at Rank 10 with Level 17 at 76% Experience Points. Being the show-off that he was, he definitely was not planning to stay in the shadows. Another hour later and Hundred Shots got enlisted on the board at last place. Once Fatty Han reached Level 18 with 57% Experience Points, he immediately ranked up to the top 3, causing quite a scene for the other players!

It has always been a rat race when it came to the Level Ranking Board. It was not a strange sight to see someone ranked fourth drop to fifth or sixth all of a sudden. However, Slim and Handsome here was too much to handle, as he only took an hour to climb up from the lowest rank to the third! It was truly a shocking yet

spectacular phenomenon!

And the ranking war kept on going!

After another hour, Little Snow and Drizzler were also enlisted in the board, ranking at ninth and tenth place!

“Aww yeah! That’s freaking awesome! This Fatty here is ranked second!” Fatty Han smiled from ear to ear, until his eyes became a slit. Floating Fire Ball had now been pushed down behind Fatty Han. Little Snow and Drizzler shared the same excitement as well, with their faces flushed red with the color of pride.

“Tonight, we dine like kings!” Drizzler cried out.

“Get yourself some more Papaya Milk drink!” Zhang Yang jokingly said.

“Huh? Why?” Drizzler’s eyes were wide open, as if she was completely oblivious about it.

“Um...” Zhang Yang was stunned. He did not want to taint the still innocent young girl.

“Don’t mind him. He’s a scrawny rascal! What good advice could he actually give?!” Little Snow stared furiously at Zhang Yang. Her eyes brows was raised and lower seductively, exquisitely, but it was a pity that she did it behind his back so he could not see anything.

“Oh!” Drizzle spoke as if she understood.

With the level ranking race still going on strong, everyone fought tirelessly. Rays of golden light flashed between them. The China server Level Ranking Board was ever-changing and never constant.

“Wow, take a look at those 4 new players ranked in the board! How did they do it?”

“That Slim and Handsome player was only Level 17 in the beginning but my god, is he ranked at first place already? Holy crap! That’s three levels in four hours! It’s beyond logical! It took me one whole day to gain a level!”

“Argh, they must be using some kind of hacking program!”

“Nonsense. You’ve been told many times now that ‘God’s Miracle’ doesn’t have any hacking programs!”

“It that Little Snow and Drizzler? The same players that got the achievement board for killing the Grey-Silver boss yesterday?”

“You’re right! And those guys, Slim and Handsome, and Hundred Shots were in the party that achieved the Bangar Crypt First Clear Hardcore Mode Achievement!”

“They’re all monsters!”

“Hey, doesn’t it feel like they’re taking one step back and two steps forward?”

“Carry me!”

The server channel once again began to be filled with players chatting about.

...

When it was almost 5pm, a flash of golden light shone around Drizzler’s body as she levelled up once more. With that, everyone in Zhang Yang’s party had achieved Level 20!

In the current team, Zhang Yang was Level 22, Fatty Hand and Hundred Shots were Level 21, and Little Snow and Drizzler were Level 20! Since Zhang Yang decided to be out of the ranking board, Fatty Hand and the rest claimed the first, second, third and fourth rank in the Level Ranking Board. The original leveling king, Floating Fire Ball, has been pushed down to the fifth rank!

Zhang Yang used <Horizontal Sweep> to kill his way out of the monster swarm and used <Charge> to rush towards the Broodmother’s front to swing his sword and deal a huge amount of damage on it. The boss was unable to move nor retaliate as it was busy spawning its minions. With Zhang Yang’s impressive firepower, the boss’ HP dropped from 10% to 3% before Little Snow and the others reached his side. The boss was then defeated with only a few hits.

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Broodmother. Obtaining 6,050 Experience Points (50 points party bonus)!’

“Come on, reward! Reward!” Drizzler cried as she went ahead to loot the money dropped from the boss.

‘Ding! You have obtained 5 silver after distribution!’

“Tch! Stingy ass!” Drizzler scorned as she counted her money.

[Spider’s Long Spear] (Green-Copper, Two-Handed Spear)

Weapon attack: 172 – 192

Attack interval: 3.5 seconds

DPS: 52

Level requirement: 20

“Little brat, this one belongs to you!” Zhang Yang giggled towards Drizzler. She curled her lips as she spotted the spear in the shape of the Broodmother’s leg. “Yuck! Gross!”

“Holy crap, it’s really ugly!” Little Snow nodded in agreement.

Most common male players would inspect the equipment specifications, but female players paid more attention to the appearance.

“Just take it!” Zhang Yang gave up his roll and opened the corpse for the second equipment.

[Broodmother’s Leather Chest Plate] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +23

Strength: +5

Dexterity: +12

Level requirement: 20

“Fatty, Hundred Shots, take the roll!” Zhang Yang spoke in the party channel as he gave up his roll for the equipment.

“Hundred Shots, you take it! My current equipment is much better than yours!” Fatty Han was smart enough to let him claim the equipment as he knew that Zhang Yang wanted to get Hundred Shots to join his side.

“Haha! Don’t mind if I do!” Hundred Shots cleared Hardcore Mode only once, so his current equipment was all over the place, being much inferior to Fatty Han’s. He really needed a change of equipment to prevent himself from becoming the team’s weakest link.

The boss was quite the scrooge, dropping only two equipment and a few random Etc. items that could be sold.

“Guys, tonight, we’ll take down the Bangar Crypt Hardcore Mode and tomorrow we’ll raid the Marzerway’s Lair and claim two of the five-man dungeon first clear achievement. Is everyone okay with that?” Zhang Yang inquired the team, to which they responded, “Agreed!”

“Alright, let’s take a break!” and Zhang Yang tore a [Teleportation Scroll].

“Ugh, I’m starving!”

Hundred Shots sent a private message to Zhang Yang to properly express his gratitude, “Thanks, Zhan Yu! Someday I’ll surely return the favor!” He was just a regular player that enjoyed a casual gameplay to release stress. He never thought that he could

actually be enlisted in the Level Ranking Board. After all, it is a game, and you can never run far from competition, otherwise there would not have been so many different achievement boards! Who would not want to get first place? Imagine putting on a Celestial-tier equipment and claiming every single dungeon first clear achievement and be famous for it.

Zhang Yang and Hundred Shots were complete strangers, but after sharing a moment of friendship in the Bangar Crypt dungeon, the trip down to the Hardcore Mode, and now getting himself listed in the ranking board, there were no words to express his level of appreciation.

This player is now in my grasp! Zhang Yang laughed to himself. To think that someday you could be the Dragon Hunter; it would be the greatest help you could offer. Even if it was just a speculation, if you just believed in the team to fight in the professional league, you would not be disappointed nor regret it!

Back in the city, Zhang Yang received mail that contained 50 stacks of [Iron Plate] from Mining Specialist. After paying the fees, Zhang Yang went to the bank to withdraw the remaining 10 piece of [Plain Copper Ore] and began smithing 10 shields at the Smithing Shop.

After putting up a shield for sale with the same setting and price, he began to hoard all the [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower] once again from the auction house. Because of the same actions performed yesterday, the price of the two ingredients raised from 20 silver a stack to 25. There were some that were placed at 40 silver a stack. Zhang Yang did not care much about it and bought



all with a reasonable price.

For this round, he collected over 300 stacks of herbs and only paid 100 gold pieces for it! “Materials sure are cheap now. Until Marzerway’s Lair gets popular...” Zhang Yang shook his head. He then went to the Alchemist Shop and bought empty potion bottles and made some potions.

He managed to use all the material to craft the potions at 6:30pm. Zhang Yang then logged out in a hurry, bought his meal and scarfed it down like a glutton.

# Chapter 45: Fatty's Death

---

Floating Fire Ball's real name was Lu Ming. He was someone you could say was born with a silver spoon in his mouth. But unlike other rich boys, he does not like cars, parties, or even girls. His attention was for online games! He would definitely play games that were popular then and did not hesitate to spend some money in-game. With his own decent gaming ability, he would unquestionably raise some kind of uproar in whatever game he played!

When 'God's Miracle' was launched, Lu Ming entered the game and established the guild called 'Pride'. Since Lu Ming was famous in the gaming world, he could naturally gather up a large group of underlings, but most of them were only in it for the money.

Lu Ming's greatest hobby was to show off his level! If he wanted to get an equipment, he could just throw some money into the game and buy them off the auction house! That was why in most games that he played, he chose the best character for leveling which was Spellcaster or the infamous high attack and low defense "Blaze Wizard"! Undeniably, he made the right choice as he entered the Level Ranking Board just on the second day of launching and made it to the top on the fourth day and managed to keep it that way.

When he was grinding in the Spectre Crypt before, he had Pride to clear the ground outside, making sure no one could enter to disturb his leveling progress!

"Pah! Pah! Pah!" Every time Lu Ming casted a <Fire Ball>, a

monster would fall and die! If it was not his attack power that was at a point of delivering a one-hit KO, his followers would have preemptively dealt some damage to allow him to take the killing blow. In a non-party situation, the player that dealt the last hit claimed 50% of the shared experience point. That was why Lu Ming was ultimately ranked first in the Level Ranking Board and planted firmly at the top.

Finally after an uncountable number of fallen monsters on the ground, Lu Ming reached Level 20 with a flash of golden light around him! Awesome! Heh heh, truly awesome indeed! He already reached Level 20 when everyone else were still at Level 13 to 15. It was such a thrill to be leaving them behind! Lu Ming opened the ranking board to enjoy the feeling of having a huge gap between his place and the second.

Eh? Level 21? Is this a miracle, or a system error? After fighting so many monsters, he thought his eyes deceived him to not be able to differentiate 20 from 21. He rubbed his eyes and checked the list again.

[Level Ranking Board] (China Server)

Slim and Handsome, Elf, Beastmaster, Level 21

Lu Ming almost puked blood! He was no longer the first! Where did this Level 21 bastard come out from to kick me down to the second place?!

Hundred Shots, Elf, Beastmaster, Level 21

Miracle! Ridiculous! Absurd! How could another Level 21 Hunter get on the Ranking board? Could a hunter be that much more effective at leveling? Crap, I'm now at third place!

Little Snow, Human, Priest, Level 20

Lu Ming was bewildered.

Drizzler, Human, Berserker, Level 20

Floating Fire Ball, Human, Pyromancer, Level 20

What. What?! WHAT!? Did everybody take some power pills or Viagra? How could they push me down to the fifth position? His expression changed, turning sour and bitter. He went to the party channel and said, "Slim and Handsome, Hundred Shots, Little Snow, and Drizzler. Can anyone tell me about these guys?"

"Bro, you didn't know? Slim and Handsome and Hundred Shots were in the team that got the first clear achievement in the Bangar Crypt whereas Little Snow and Drizzler got the first kill for the Grey-Silver Boss yesterday and went up in the Board of

Achievements! They're all strong players! We never knew they could be so good at leveling as well!"

Lu Ming's expression turned for the worst. After some time, he said, "Piggy Head, I need you to find out where these players are at. If they're based in White Jade City, bring some people along and kill them! Motherf\*ckers don't know who they're messing with! They don't know what death is!"

Feeling prideful, Piggy Lover responded, "Yes, Fire bro!"

...

After a short break, Zhang Yang re-logged.

'Ding! You have reached Level 20. The currency exchange service is now available for you! Do you wish to bind your National Debit Service with your game account?'

"Yes!" Zhang Yang reacted quickly.

'Ding! Syncing your brainwave with the Banking details. Please hold!'

'Ding! Matching National Debit Service found. Account: 3205XXXXXXXXXXXX. Please check if all details are correct, then select 'Accept' to continue!'

“Continue!”

‘Ding! Your account is now bound with the National Debit Service. You can now use this currency exchange service to trade in-game currency to real-life currency and vice versa! This service is available at Banks in any main cities. Please check with the Bank notice for the accurate exchange rate!’

Zhang Yang arrived at the Bank and checked, and so far the current exchange rate from in-game to real-life currency is 1:8. Obviously, the inflation rate of the in-game currency will rise. Without giving much thought, Zhang Yang kept 1,000 gold to buy herbs and exchanged the rest of his gold to dollars. Before this, he had more than 20,000 gold pieces, and now after exchanging it, he became ‘poor’ in the game, but in reality his bank deposit rose to 160,000 in just a few days!

Zhang Yang felt grateful. If he had not been reborn, he would not have obtained the [Earthen Round Shield] recipe, but discarding old equipment was fast especially when the Marzerway’s Lair started to gain more attention. After the Grey-Silver piece of shield spawned, the [Earthen Round Shield] would be extremely hard to sell even at 10 gold.

That is why knowledge is power! And his knowledge was about the future, which made it even more valuable! As long as he could just pile up more herbs and materials to craft the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], his chance to gain more fortune would come when the crowd started to reach Level 20 and began raiding Marzerway’s Lair!

Zhang Yang thought about it as he arrived to the Warrior's Home and decided to learn new Level 20 skills from the instructor. After paying 20 gold pieces, his skill windows had two new skills.

[Cripple Defense]: Destroys target defense value by 10%. Cause 50% melee damage to the target. The maximum stacked effect is 5. Lasts for 30 seconds. This skill will generate a large amount of aggro.

Rage cost: 10

Cooldown time: 1 second

Requirement: Melee weapon.

[Thunder Strike]: Borrows the power of thunder to deliver a powerful strike onto the ground, dealing 100% physical damage to all surrounding enemies. Inflicted targets will have 50% speed reduction for 5 seconds. This skill will generate a large amount of aggro.

Rage cost: 20

Cooldown time: 8 seconds

[Cripple Defense] was a general skill that all warriors had, but [Thunder Strike] was a skill only Guardians could learn. The same went for the skill [Tornado Cleave], which was also an AoE skill that was only available for Berserker class.

After some time, Hundred Shots, Little Snow, and Drizzler logged in. Zhang Yang first let Drizzler invite Hundred Shots and then only the rest of the Lone Desert Smoke members to raid the Bangar Crypt Hardcore Mode. Since Drizzler and Little Snow now have known that Hundred Shots will be one of the five-man party for the raid the next day, he had priority over the equipment distribution. The Lone Desert Smoke members did not say anything at all but their expressions could tell that they were not happy.

Players tend to be greedy from time to time. Yesterday after feeling contented in being able to break pass the Hardcore Mode, they thought the equipment in today's haul should have belonged to them. They would obviously not want to willingly surrender the equipment to any random person. Because of that, the atmosphere started to get colder and colder. Conversations became lesser and only got lively during equipment rolling.

Before Zhang Yang could begin the fight with the final boss, Fatty Han talked over the voice chat in an effort to contact Zhang Yang.

“Little Yang, I’m being ambushed! Come and fight with me!”

“What happened? Did you finally get stung by the bees when you’ve been messing with too many flowers?” Zhang Yang laughed.



“No! A bunch of nobody from ‘Pride’ attacked me out of nowhere for no reason! Crap, I’m about to die... F\*ck! I really died!” Fatty Han growled angrily.

The guild ‘Pride’? Those people again? Zhang Yang felt rage and said, “You wait there and don’t revive just yet. I’m coming now!”

“Okay, but you better hurry! I will not rest until I get my revenge. I’ll kill them all!” Fatty Han’s killing intent was getting stronger.

Zhang Yang switched to his party channel to inform them, “I’m sorry. Urgent matter, I have to leave now! You guys could wait or you could swap a tank and continue the dungeon!” After sending the message, he immediately left the party, tore a piece of [Teleportation Scroll] and sent a party invitation to Fatty Han.

“Zhan Yu, what happened?” Drizzler sent a private message to him.

“My friend, the fat one, got killed by someone. I’m going over to kill them!”

Drizzler suddenly got excited and said “Wow! A fight! Count me in!”

Zhang Yang thought that if they were to be a team in the future, they would need to have each other’s back, so he sent a party

invitation to Drizzler too.

“And my cousin sister!” Drizzler wanted to include Little Snow as well.

Hundred Shots sent a private message at the same time and after knowing what happened, he demanded to be invited into the party as well. And so the afternoon party was together once more!

“Fatty, where are you?”

“Eastern side, once you exit the city. Jade Dragon River, Position 12464, 39743.”

“How many of them are there?”

“About 10 and more. Shit, I dropped a level! These bastards!” Fatty Han gritted his teeth. He was now Level 20 with 0% Experience Points, instantly dropping him from first to the fifth rank on the board.

“Okay, wait by the body. We’ll be arriving soon enough!”

Zhang Yang hastened his pace. To be honest, he did not even consider the 10 players to be a threat to him. With his skills and the equipment he has obtained so far, he could be killing a hundred men with ease! Very soon, Zhang Yang arrived at the point. By the huge river side, there were more than 10 players surrounding a body, spitting and stepping on it. Some were murmuring

something but he was too far away to hear it.

These people did not hide their personal profile information and had the 'Pride' guild tag on their heads, every one of them being at Level 13 to 15.

Zhang Yang scanned and recognized a few people! Floral Pants, Prideful Precepts and the rest of the four-man party. Kindling Chest Hair was not there because they were killed back to level 3, as they were only level 13 then.

Zhang Yang unsheathed his Silver-Scaled Sword, with eyes that radiated a powerful killing intent.

## Chapter 46: Ridiculous Reasons

---

Fatty Han began cursing furiously in the party channel, “Little Yang! Those bastards dropped my level only because their boss didn’t like me to be higher than him! F\*ck. They even sent me a private message, warning me to stay in the city and never leave, or else they will kill me every time I try to do so!”

Zhang Yang inquired more, “Who is their boss?”

“Some guy named Floating Fire Ball. The Guild Master of Pride. He was the guy at first place in the Level Ranking Board and they were mad with the fact that we snatched their position away! They’re also planning to kill the other four players that are above him!”

Drizzler responded with a chest full of justice, “How could he be so arrogant? Is the first rank only for him? Who died and made him king of the game?!”

Floating Fire Ball? Zhang Yang took some time to think. He could not bring himself to remember that name in his previous life. Even in all guilds, Pride was not famous at all! Perhaps when he entered the game previously, Pride had already collapsed and disbanded.

“These bunch of players... what nerve!” Hundred Shots had always been well-mannered, but even he was getting angry now. “Hmm, ‘nuff said. Let’s wreck these guys first!” Zhang Yang exclaimed as he stared coldly at the still parading Pride members. They had a total of 13 players, 4 of them were Silk Armored. They

could be Spellcasters or even Priests, but that he would not know.

The most obvious strategy would be to start from the Silk Armored and progress from there. Being a high defense tank, he would not need to be afraid of physical attacks. Zhang Yang used <Charge> and dashed into the fight, stunning a Silk Armored player called Death Law, and with a swing of his sword, he caused a “-402” damage text to float across his head, effectively reducing his HP down to only 228!

“Holy crap! Someone is attacking me!” cried Death Law as he hurriedly used a red potion and immediately casted a <Frost Arrow>.

“He must be one of the hunter’s comrade. Let’s kill them all!” The rest of the players saw Zhang Yang’s entry and raised their battle cry to charge towards him. They all thought the same thing that Zhang Yang’s brain might have been kicked out by a donkey to charge into a fight like this knowing that he was outnumbered!

Prideful Precepts, Prideful Babysitter, and Floral Pants faces turned pale as they saw Zhang Yang’s face. The recollection of the painful memory when they were killed down to Level 3 reemerged.

Being mentally traumatized by him, Floral Shots advised the rest in the channel, “Piggy bro, this warrior is crazy strong! I think he’s using some kind of hacking program! We have to withdraw for now!”

Prideful Piggy yelled back, “Hack my ass. You need to be a genius

to be able to hack in this game! Now, get your sorry ass back out there and kill him! We'll stand guard!"

"-1!"

"-5!"

"-9!"

"....."

The others tried their best, but as hard as they could hit, they could never reach a double digit damage number!

"Shit!" The 'monumental' damage that was being dealt left everyone wide-eyed!

"Fatty! It's your turn now! Use <Barrage>!" Zhang Yang yelled in the party as he casted <Horizontal Sweep>.

"-683!"

"-727!"

"-689!"

"-1452!"

“.....”

10 brutal damage texts appeared! Two critical strikes! With just a single stroke, there were only two players left standing with 50 HP remaining! These guys were just around Level 13 to 15 with Level 5 Black-Steel equipment obtained from Normal Mode in Bangar Crypt Dungeon. Even if they did use all their AP on Vitality, they could only cough up 1,000 HP. There was no way they could survive Zhang Yang's godly skill!

It all happened so suddenly that not only the members of Pride were surprised, but also Zhang Yang's party as well! They almost forgot to hold back their attack!

“Little Yang! Don't kill them off yet! Leave some for this Fatty to kill!” Fatty Han revived himself and in the next split second, he drew his bow and used <Barrage>, dealing enough damage to kill off the two remaining players. <Barrage> was an AoE skill a hunter could learn at Level 20.

[Barrage]: Fires arrows randomly into a targeted area. Causes 200% ranged damage to all enemies in the area for 10 seconds. This skill requires channeling. This skill will be cancelled instantly if the player receives any movement-impairing damage.

Cost: 100 Focus

Within a few moments, the 13 Pride members were down to three ranged attackers.

“-175!”

Hundred Shots regained his senses and drew his bow to strike at the enemies while commanding his pet to attack at the same time. Drizzler was a good battle comrade, too. After the shocking scene, she excitedly used <Charge> to attack them. Little Snow was quick to chant a healing spell on Fatty Han.

“+392!”

Her equipment were already up to standard and now her magic damage has increased to 300 points after she obtained the Level 20 Green-Copper magic staff. After the two-second healing chant delay, she had already recovered more than half of Fatty Han’s HP.

“Cutie Snow! Fatty loves you!” Fatty Han threw a flying kiss towards her and returned to attack the remaining 3 enemies.

Although the last three were above Level 20 with Green-Copper tier equipment, their strong attack power was still no match to Zhang Yang’s; normal players would consider them as god killers, but facing the current overwhelming odds, they had been outmatched.

“Pui!” Fatty Han spat furiously. “These bastards surely got what



they deserved! I slogged my way to reach Level 21 and yet here I am, brought back down by a bunch of nobodies!” Hundred Shots jokingly interjected him, “Hey Slim, the one who did all the work was Zhan Yu, though. You just closed your eyes and shot blindly the whole time, no?”

“Should we guard the bodies?” Little Snow asked. Although not as battle-crazed, she did express an edgy feeling.

“Of course!” Fatty Han firmly answered. “I want these bunch of dumb little bunnies to remember this lesson: Never anger this Fatty!”

At the revive point, Lone Wild Cat’s face had dread written all over it. His eyes expressed so much fear that he was imagined getting killed off by Zhang Yang. “Piggy bro, should we call for backup?”

“Useless piece of shit!” Prideful Piggy Lover slapped him across his face, but being in the soul state, the slap only went through their hollow figures. “We were called to kill that whole bunch, but we got killed instead. How could you still consider asking for help! Go ahead if you’re not ashamed to do so, because I am!”

“Piggy bro! That Zhan Yu guy is really strong! Back in the days, Hairy bro and the three of us were killed down to Level 3 from Level 10!” Prideful Precept was really scared of Zhang Yang. How could he ever try to raise his sword against him again?

“Curse you! You’re useless! You motherf\*cker! So what if you

died a few times? Follow me! Everyone spread out and ignore the noob tank and strike the other four! We'll take him on last. His strong AoE attack is nothing if we attack individually. What can he do then?!" After Prideful Piggy Lover's bashing, the group of souls came to their bodies. Everyone could see that Zhang Yang and the other four were happily chit-chatting to themselves, but they could not hear anything while being in the ghostly state and everything they saw was in monochrome.

"On the count of three, everyone revive themselves and hit them with everything you've got!"

"Understood!" Everyone nodded, but Floral Pants and his own gang glanced at each other.

"1!"

"2!"

"3!"

10 figures formed from where the bodies lay, except for Floral Pants, Prideful Precepts, and Prideful Babysitter.

"Kill 'em all!"

As they say, experience is the greatest teacher. Floral Pants and the other two made the right choice! In only two minutes, Prideful Piggy Lover and the rest were strewn across the floor again!

“Flowery! What the f\*ck are you three doing! Why didn’t you guys revive?!” Prideful Piggy Lover furiously yelled at them as he returned to the revive point.

“My hands were shaking. I couldn’t press the revive button!”

“Me too!”

“Hm. Hm.”

“Shake your own ass! That’s what you’ve been doing! This game is controlled by brain waves, not by a mouse! You’re all scaredy-cats! If you three joined us just now, we could have won!”

The three of them exchanged looks, thinking to themselves. If you guys are already beaten like street dogs, what’s the use of three additional players? It would’ve just meant three extra deaths. Though they knew these words would hurt someone, they decided to remain silent, not wanting to say more.

After venting out his frustration, Prideful Piggy Lover calmed down. He was not stupid. He knew that they could not stand a chance against Zhang Yang after having the team wiped out twice. He hurriedly opened voice messenger and contacted Floating Fire Ball.

“Fire bro! It’s me! Piggy Head!”

“Hm. How’s the job going?”

To earn back his rightful place, Lu Min gathered many high level members to help him with his leveling. Because he reached Level 20, he managed to learn the Spellcaster’s AoE skill called <Rain of Fire> which increased his killing rate tremendously.

“That guy you asked us to kill, the rank one Hunter. We killed him, yeah... but he called for backup and those people were also in the Level Ranking Board! They killed us all! Fire bro, we all dropped 4 levels; we can’t fight anymore!”

“How many players are there?”

“... 5 players!”

“You useless trash! You have more than 10 people there!”

“Fire bro, please send more people over, and I’ll surely be able to kill them off by then!”

“Tch! The higher leveled players in the guild are helping me with my leveling. If I send more people over, would you reimburse me for the slower leveling rate? With so many people aiming for the top rank, how could I do anything that would slow my down?!” Lu Ming rejected helping him without hesitation. If he wanted to take the top position, he could not depend solely on killing those who were ahead of him, but at least compete to get ahead of them!

Even if all of the guild were to chip in, could they kill all those players over and over again? That was why he needed to retain his current progress! That was the righteous way.

“What now, Fire bro?” Even though Proudful Piggy Lover spoke with modesty and respect, deep down there was cursing and yelling.

“Let’s see... Dominating Blades and his party joined ‘God’s Miracle’. I’ll have them take care of these people!”

“Fire bro, weren’t those professionals playing another game called ‘Dragon Age’?”

“Bullshit. Look at how the hype of ‘God’s Miracle’ got within the past few days! To think that these guys would ever let this chance slip away! This is good. These guys would do anything for a good pay. Alright then, it’s settled. You guys better get going and grind those levels up! We will claim the first clear achievement for the next dungeon!

## Chapter 47: Sword And Fire Mercenary

---

Zhang Yang and the party guarded the bodies for a while but when they saw the bodies turned translucent and began disappearing, they knew that they chose to revive in the city. “Let’s go. Time to head back!” Zhang Yang sheathed his sword. Fatty Han nodded in agreement. Although still not satisfied, but killing them with the Red tagged penalty and dropping their level by 4 with an additional 1 after being revived in the city, he was contented.

Zhang Yang and the others aside from Fatty joined back the Lone Desert Smoke and continued the Bangar Crypt Hardcore Mode. Fatty Hand went to find girls from the Massage Parlor to discuss ‘life’.

30 minutes later, Zhang Yang finished the dungeon and came back to the city and retrieved his mail. His [Earthen Round Shield] was sold but not with 1,000 gold pieces, but 650 gold pieces instead. No one else bid for a higher price, the auction time was up, and the transaction was complete! Zhang Yang was surprised. He never would have thought that such a valuable shield could have a drop in price! He thought about it, and went to the auction house to search for [Earthen Round Shield], and the result showed someone else selling the same item but with an initial bidding of 500 but the wanted bid was 700 gold pieces. The seller did not even hide his name; Floating Up.

It was him!?

Bewildered, Zhang Yang immediately recalled everything he

knew about this person. In his previous life, there was an extremely strong mercenary group called 'Sword and Fire Mercenary'. The group had only 10 members in it, but their strength was undeniably strong. They alone claimed half of China server's five-man and ten-man Hardcore Mode First Clear Dungeon achievement!

As long as you were willing to pay the price, their mercenaries would get the job done for you. It could be from getting a First Clear dungeon achievement for a client's guild to even naming the party after the client's own name. They also accepted other jobs aside from dungeon related requests, like assassinating or providing bodyguards for a certain target. Now, with the strength of the mercenary's group, it was not known how many players had perished by their hands. Someone did ask them before about establishing a guild, but they responded that making a guild would require 30 members but they only had 10.

This "Trash" mercenary lasted for another half year until the starting of A-class and S-class Professional Leagues. The party began having internal conflicts about which sponsor title should they put. In the end, the group disbanded. Six of the greediest men took on the job of carrying the title of Japan's company "Team Toyota" and participated in the S-class Professional League. Although the remaining four men tried to recruit more, the players lacked quality and skill, causing them to be stuck in the A-class league.

This man, Floating Up, was one of the mercenary that was split and stuck in the A-class league. He was a Guardian and Zhang Yang has dealt with him before. Even he had to admit that the guy had skills that were on par with him!

However, to be able to craft and sell [Earthen Round Shield], they had to be able to clear the Hardcore More and defeat the hidden boss to get the recipe, but in his previous life, the first clear achievement was claimed only after a month... and Zhang Yang suddenly understood.

Before, most of the elite parties could not get past through the third boss due to the bug-like boss' skill! But this time, he "invented" a terrain bug method a little too early and since Lost Paradise and Lone Desert Smoke discovered it as well, there was a high possibility that the method was leaked out! Because of that, the once impossible and invincible boss was now just a piece of trash; anyone could defeat it!

The game progress changed now because of him and the butterfly effect just kept spiraling down! Zhang Yang sighed and took out another shield and made the starting and ending price 500 and 700 gold pieces respectively. "Come on, man. Work with me, not against me! There's fortune for everyone here. Don't do something that will only cause problems for the both of us!" Zhang Yang said in his heart.

'Server announcement: The party Fire and Sword Mercenary has set a new dungeon time record for the Bangar Crypt Dungeon Hardcore Mode. Their achievements will be recorded in the Hardcore Time Attack Achievement Board (China Server). Please celebrate for them!'

'Server announcement: Player Dominating Blades (Party



Leader) successfully broke the Bangar Crypt Hardcore Mode time record. Obtaining 10 gold pieces, 1x Level 1 Rune, and all race 250 Reputation Points from the system reward!

‘Server announcement: Player 44 Bandits (Party Member) successfully...’

The server channel was filled with red texts in an instant.

“What the... Where did these people come from? They actually broke the record!”

“Fire and Sword Mercenary... I think they were in the game called ‘Dragon Age’!”

“That’s awesome!”

“...”

The local channel was abuzz.

Zhang Yang was a little surprised with this, but what came after was a rather humorous feeling. Crimson Fire always wanted to get that speed record, but his dream was now shattered into oblivion! Even though Lost Paradise core members could be considered as professional players, but comparing with “Trash Mercenary”, Lost Paradise was nothing.

Tch! The upcoming was to get the first clear achievement will be extremely brutal!

Zhang Yang opened Hardcore Mode Speed Record and checked their time record.

27 minutes and 30 seconds!

That was rather good! Zhang Yang vaguely remembered in his previous life, that the record was replaced several times but finally came to a halt at 24 minutes and 17 seconds. There were no faster time record that replaced it. The record had always been hard to defeat as the dungeon level limit was 15, and with that kind of strength, it was hard to product any decent results!

Take Marzerway's Lair for example; the entry requirement was Level 20 and the level limit was Level 29. There was a 10 level gap to allow players to have sufficient time to try the trials and defeat the speed record. After Level 100, the leveling duration could be 10 days to half a month, and it provided enough time for players.

'Beep.' A private message arrived.

"Zhan Yu! Argh... I'm so screwed this time!" Crimson Fire cried with a tone of despair in his voice.

"Cheer up, man. There will be more chances in the future!" Zhang Yang consoled him. In all honesty, Zhang Yang was not

really close with Crimson Fire, and he did not like to meddle with someone who was quite emotional. He preferred to mix with people like Phantom Days.

Crimson Fire smiled bitterly. Even with the numerous amount of dungeons in the game, he knew his own capabilities as well as Lost Paradise's. They were not consistent enough to claim the first clear achievement of Bangar Crypt alone; and that was with Zhang Yang aiding them!

“Zhan Yu! I want to make a deal with you!”

“Now we're talking. Is it the shield? 1,000 gold a piece! Thank you for your patronage!”

Crimson Fire hurriedly rectified, “No, no! That's not it! I want to reserve a dungeon run! I want the first clear achievement for Marzerway's Lair!”

Having thought about it, Zhang Yang said, “Sorry, but the five-man dungeon run has already been decided!”

Crimson Fire would not give up and tried negotiating, “Aw, come on, Zhan Yu. We've been doing this since back in the days! Give me a chance! At least one slot for me! I'll pay you 10,000 gold for it, how about that?”

Zhang Yang's current goal was to create a concrete and stable team, not just to raid dungeons but to compete in future

tournaments! He already had the right amount of gold and no longer needed to work for others now!

Zhang Yang laughed as he said, “I can’t do it! I’ve already made a deal! Plus, we’re doing the nest tomorrow! Do you have anyone on your side that’s Level 20 already?” Crimson Fire bit his tongue. To get the speed record, each of the guild’s elite were not willing to get their level any higher than 15. They were all at the same level. How could he manage to get a Level 20 member in just one night?!

“Zhan Yu, don’t go rushing into things! Look at the board, there aren’t many Level 20 players now! For your dungeon run, let it slide for a few days. I’ll even chip in another 10,000 gold! How’s that?” Crimson Fire became agitated. But Zhang Yang was firm on his decision to decline.

“Sorry, Guild Master Crimson Fire. I’ve made my word.”

Crimson Fire was silent for a moment. “Alright then. If that’s the case, we’ll double our efforts and level up. Perhaps we’ll call you up for the Level 30 dungeons.”

Zhang Yang laughed, “Haha, that’s a deal in the future. Until then!”

After his conversation, Zhang Yang went to the auction house and swept up all the [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower] again. Ever since Zhang Yang began clearing them, players increased the selling price for the two herbs, and thrown many Alchemy users into disarray. Not everyone could be as rich as Zhang Yang.

After using all the ingredients in hand to craft, Zhang Yang accumulated as many as 300 stacks of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], taking up about 60% of his bank storage. If he did this for another day or two, his storage would definitely be full. Once he was done, it was 11pm and Zhang Yang logged off and called it a day.

The next day, Zhang Yang woke up at 6 in the morning and conducted his daily routine. He put on his jersey and went jogging after a round of boxing. He ran from his prefecture, all the way past the garden, across the market area, and arrived at an alley entrance. There, he stopped. He stopped not because he needed a breather, but what he saw at the entrance of the alley, was a 50-year old man, laid on the floor. His hands were on his head, covering it as if he was badly injured. There was a large crowd surrounding him but nobody took action.

Just as Zhang Yang wanted to walk up front, he was held back by another man, who was about 60-years old. “Hey kid, mind your own business! That man right there is a huge scammer. Anyone going to help him will only get themselves in trouble. Who knows how many hundreds or thousands of dollars he scammed away.”

It was no longer a mystery as to why youngsters these days were called cold-hearted, disrespectful and lacked morality! It was all over the internet; the news of people trying to earnestly help others but was only cruelly and cunningly scammed. Because of them, those who really needed help were casted aside and left to die on their own. Once the perpetrator successfully latched on, they would go in for the kill and scam their way for money. If they had failed in their attempt, they could easily get away with just a

few words like “Sorry, wrong guy!” or “Sorry, I’ve recognized the wrong person.”

Zhang Yang merely shook his head and went ahead.

The old man grabbed Zhang Yang’s arm again, “Hey kid, Didn’t I tell you to mind your own business?”

“It’s not like I have a choice, old man. I have to take this road to go back home!” said Zhang Yang, with a smile on his face.

“If that’s the case, you’d better be careful there. That old swindler is rotten to his core!”

“I understand, Thank you very much, mister!”

However, something inevitable happened. Zhang Yang walked around the old man lying down there and before he could even get a step past, he felt like his calf was being grabbed on tightly. He turned around. Who else could have held his legs, if not for the old scammer?

## Chapter 48: The Old Scammer

---

“He hit me! He hit me!” the man screamed at the top of his lungs as soon as he got hold on to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang could only sigh. This old scammer is really shameless. There was only a meter between Zhang Yang and the old man, and yet he could roll over that distance to grab Zhang Yang’s calf.

Zhang Yang did not hold back. “Old man, are you really going to go that far?” Someone as cunning and sly as this old man did not deserve to be treated with an elder’s respect. The old scammer kept repeating the same thing.

“He hit me! He hit me!”

The crowd reacted the same way as Zhang Yang; having no remorse and began scolding him.

“There are so many eye witnesses here. Do you really think that you could wrong someone like this?” Zhang Yang let out a little anger in him. How many innocent people has this man tricked?

The old scammer finally opened his mouth to reply. “Hm hm. So what?” His face was like a cunning snake; 2 shiny golden front tooth could be seen as soon as he opened his mouth. “I’ll surely get you! Who do you think the judge would listen to? The crowd, or the victim?”

This guy has the guts to actually do it!

Zhang Yang's rage boiled immensely. He was famous because of his fighting skills from young, and he further refined it when he entered university. He would never have thought that this merciless brawl would be forgotten in a mere four years.

“Dad! What happened?”

“This son of a b\*tch actually knocked me down!”

Two 30-year old skinny men came out from the crowd, knelt on each side of the old man, and put up a façade of a son respecting his father.

“You bastard! Was it you who knocked my father down?!” The two men then stood up quickly and stared at Zhang Yang with a sense of hostility. Zhang Yang did nothing but laughed coldly. “You guys sure have a keen eyesight. You quickly came to the conclusion that the man was knocked down when you saw him lying on the floor. Why didn't you say that he was beaten down? Or perhaps he slipped and fell on his own?”

The two of them wavered a little until one of them shouted, “You little brat! You dare talk back when you were the one who knocked down my father! You'd better reimburse the medical fees or we will sue you for attempted murder! That will be at least 8 to 10 years in prison life for you!”

Among the bystanders, someone voiced out their unfairness, “You bunch of rotten family have been playing this game for god



knows how long! Everyday you'd be conning someone off their hard work! You'd better prepare to face punishment in the afterlife!"

"Shut the f\*ck up! Do you want to get stabbed?!" and then the scrawny man drew out a blade, gleaming with its sharpened edges. The crowd was frightened with its presence and took a step back in silence.

"Haha!" the man felt contented with the crowd's fear. He then waved the blade playfully in front of Zhang Yang and said, "Kid, give me 100,000 and we'll close an eye on you!"

"I'm about to go home and play some games. You... you're in my way!" Zhang Yang's expression turned solemn and mean.

"What? Games?" the man with the blade laughed. He patted on his partner's shoulder and said, "Bro, this boy is frightened silly! He thinks we're playing a game with him!" The other man laughed too.

The old man who was still on the floor cried out, "Hurry up and pay! I'd be lying all day here!"

"You heard the man! Pay up!"

"Hmph. Eat my fist!" Zhang Yang threw a straight punch, landing clean onto the man's face. His strength had always been powerful. That punch has been honed to perfection for 4 years in

university; it was definitely not just for show! The man with the blade flew a good three meters away and landed on the floor with a loud thud, oozing fresh blood from his nose and mouth. He was knocked out for good.

The other man was left standing in rage and fear. There was a hint of fright in his voice as he tried to threaten Zhang Yang, “You... you date! My uncle is... is... a c-cop! He’ll c-catch you a-and put you in j-jail!”

Zhang Yang only laughed. With a chain of punches, he dominated the fight and knocked him out as well. He then looked down at the old man he had been dragging along for a few steps and smiled, “How long do you plan to hug my leg?”

The old man was shocked! Back then, he could just con anyone with his two sons stepping out to frighten the victim, yet today, he picked the short stick!

“Hmm, sorry. I’ve mistaken you for someone else?”

Zhang Yang laughed. “Mistaken?”

“Yes! I-I’ve mistaken!” said the old man as he withdrew backwards. Zhang Yang advanced forward to him, and grabbed the old man up. “Dear elderly man, just because you’re old, doesn’t mean you can throw your respect for others away. I want you to carve this lesson well in your memory. Don’t ever do this kind of scamming business anymore!” Rather than letting him go, Zhang Yang threw a punch at the old man.

“Buah!” he was thrown backwards, and blood spat out along with his two golden teeth.

“Ah! My golden teeth!” The old man hurriedly crawled over to pick it up.

And then, a round of applause roared from the crowd. Zhang Yang looked around and saw many bystanders were clapping away, while some were cheering “Good punch!” All the commotion caused the 3 conmen to sneak away like rats in an alley. Everyone cheered for him. Zhang Yang's actions and punches managed to capture the hearts of the crowd!

“What’s all this ruckus! What’s going on here?”

A clear and crisp voice could be heard. Among the crowd, a woman in police uniform walked out. She looked like in her early twenties and was very tall, maybe about 170cm. The uniform she wore brought out a strong sense of valiant; not to mention she was quite beautiful! She looked exactly like the ones you would see on screen, carrying a cold aura around her, signifying her nobility. Truly admirable!

Under her appearance lies the devilish body of a woman! With voluptuous curves at her front and back, along with those incomparable long legs, she brought out a beauty that people would think a waste if she was not a fashion model!

If Zhou Su city had a policewoman beauty pageant, this woman

could be in the ranks! There was a chance that she could even top every other women in all of China!

Zhang Yang's eyes gazed at where her breasts were. He could not help it; who asked her to allocate all her excess fat there! With that perky shape and size, one could not resist looking at here!

“Ah! Police!” The old man cried out loudly as if he met his own father. “He beat me! He beat me!”

The policewoman listened and averted her gaze and looked at Zhang Yang coldly.

“Excuse me, miss, you can't blame this young man here. All of this is the father and sons' fault!” The crowd began to talk, explaining what sort of crime they had done. The policewoman became furious as she listened to the explanation. Her once beautiful eyebrows narrowed and frowned. She clenched both her fair fists.

“Police...” the old man continued his wails but before he could finish, the policewoman roundhouse kicked him off. The golden teeth that he picked up dropped again.

The crowd was surprised for a moment and applauded. At a day and time like this, having a policewoman who was on the right side of justice like her was very rare!

Zhang Yang felt it was funny and laughed it off, and he turned

around to leave the scene.

“Halt!” the policewoman rushed towards and grabbed him. Her expression was cold.

“Eh?” Zhang Yang raised an eyebrow, not understanding her action.

The policewoman asserted her view on the matter with a sense of justice and fairness, “What they did was wrong, but what you did was wrong as well! Fighting in broad daylight!”

“Are you serious?!” Zhang Yang tried to refute. “That guy was holding a knife! He was about to stab me with it! What I did was self-defense, not fighting!”

“That’s true!” The crowd pleaded on Zhang Yang’s behalf as well. After all, bad guys did not deserve the public’s pity.

The cold policewoman took her time to think, and she said, “I’ll give you a chance. If you could defeat me, I’ll let you go! Otherwise, you’ll follow me back to the police station and confess your crime!”

“You’re not joking, are you?” Even if Zhang Yang was the king of street fights, he would never cross fists with the police, what more a policewoman.

“I never joke!” the policewoman replied coldly.

Zhang Yang replied in a serious manner, “Well then, I’m sorry if I hurt you!”

“Hmph! I will not hold back!” The policewoman went into her fighting stance. She kept her legs wide apart, firmly on the ground. Her hands moved around, gesturing a sort of movement that her left hand represents Ying and her right hand represents Yang, emitting a strong killing intent.

Zhang Yang could not help but be cautious; this policewoman cannot be underestimated! He too, got into his battle stance and said, “Come at me!”

A police and a civilian having a duel, and the police was a beauty at least. A scene like this was not something to be seen every day! The crowd spread out across the scene, withdrawing and forming a large circle, giving fighting space to the two of them.

The young men had their eyes fixed onto the woman’s chest. If they were to bounce about, they would be bleeding by the nose at any moment!

The cool policewoman ignored the crowd, focusing intensely on Zhang Yang. She suddenly struck forward but only grazed past Zhang Yang’s left ear. “Such speed!” Zhang Yang thought. If he had not moved a little more, he would have taken a beating.

Before the strike, Zhang Yang was looking down at her. He would never have thought that this woman’s ability was anything but

weak! With that attack, Zhang Yang started to lose the upper hand in this fight!

Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!

Once the opponent had the upper hand, she wasted no time and unleashed a series of combo punches! As fast as lightning, Zhang Yang did not have any gap to counter the attacks!

Fast! Accurate! Powerful!

“Huargh!” The woman used her last attack, with both her hands enveloping Zhang Yang’s waist. She wanted to do a suplex! If the fight continued on like this, Zhang Yang would definitely faint!

His heart tightened, he had to rush back home to bring Little Snow and the team to rain Marzerway’s Lair later on! How could he kick the bucket here!

His arms reached out far, trying to grab hold onto anything he could get as long as he would not be thrown over! The policewoman intended to use her back power to flip Zhang Yang over but she never thought that he would reach out and grab her busty chest!

Tong!

A loud, crashing sound was heard, and the two of them fell down! Zhang Yang on top, while the woman was underneath him.

“Ehh...” The crowd wondered. The fight was on the policewoman’s side, and after a few trading of punches, the woman’s legs went weak and was pinned down by Zhang Yang. The sensation that was in his hand was as soft as cotton; full of elasticity! A heavenly sensation in his hand! Zhang Yang squeezed with a little coincidence, and a low, soft lingering voice was instantly heard. One could not help but feel a little hard!

“Let go!” Her voice now filled with rage. She was gritting her teeth while speaking.

Zhang Yang was being held on by the policewoman. He looked up and could not look down at his body. Once he realized the situation he was in, he immediately knew... Both of his hands were holding on to those mountains!



## Chapter 49: The Top 3 Guild

---

Her cold look could not hide her body's sensitive side, and Zhang Yang clearly felt it! Underneath her thin uniform, he could feel her two round buns clasped in his hands! It's no wonder people say that the colder a woman is, the more sensitive her body would be; and she is the perfect example! Zhang Yang loosen his grip on her, rolled over and stood up. As the policewoman did the same, her cheeks blushed like red roses quite visibly. She was beautiful and cute, yet glamorous at the same time!

The surrounding crowd gave out a sudden call, and Zhang Yang took this chance to flee from the scene with his tail between his legs. He knew he made a grave mistake and if he continued standing there, he would be branded a pervert and be arrested! Watching him run away, the policewomen stomped the ground with anger and dread, causing her bosoms to bounce with every step. She turned and returned to the police station with the 3 members of the scamming family.

Along the way, Zhang Yang grabbed a few snacks to eat before he got home. The time was slightly past 9:30am, and he quickly put on his gaming helmet and logged in.

“Little Yang, what took you so long to get up? Could it be... did you have some fun last night?! Listen to me, you can't go around and pick them up from the streets! They're some nasty stuff, bro! Give me a few days, and I'll come over and bring you to this awesome place called 'Girl's Town'! The girls over there are at the same level as superstars!” Zhang Yang was immediately greeted by Fatty Han's private message. As usual, he never bothered to change his lustful and perverted behavior. Ignoring his usual habit, Zhang

Yang sent a party invitation along with his reply, “Uh huh, right... like I’ll believe you!”

Little Snow, Drizzler, as well as Hundred Shots were recruited as well.

“Sorry I’m late, guys. Had a little hiccup just now. Let’s gather at the North side of the city!”

Drizzler began to complain, “Stupid uncle! If I’d known you were going to be late, I would’ve slept longer!” Zhang Yang felt a little ticked off. He only smiled bitterly and said, “Why ‘uncle’? I’m not even that much older than you are.” Albeit childish, Zhang Yang did not really fancy being called an old uncle nor a young brat.

“Aren’t you over your 20’s?” Drizzler asked.

“Huh... yeah. I’m 22 now!”

“Come on! I’m only 17. What else would I call someone who’s five years older than I am?”

Fatty Han then interjected, “F\*ck! If you called someone five years older than you ‘an uncle’, that means you’d be calling someone ten years older as ‘gramps’!

Drizzler’s expression began to change into a ‘murderous when provoked’ look, “Hey Fatty, what’re you trying to say? Do you think you could take advantage of me since I’m only 17?”

Fearful, Fatty Han immediately tried to change the subject, “Ahahha... nice weather we’re having today!”

Time flew past as they all gathered. Zhang Yang brought them to complete the dungeon pre-requisite quest, which was fairly simple. All they needed to do was to kill a bunch of monsters, find the NPC near the dungeon entrance and gain access to the lair.

To save time, the party rented mounts from the Gryphon Keeper and flew to the White Shine Forest. This was one of the many transport services in the game that helped players who were mount-less to reach their destination in a much shorter time, instead of having to spend more time running over.

“Flying in the air is awesome!” Drizzler stretched out her arms to feel the air. “It feels like I’m a Sword Shaman! Whoosh! Thousand Mile Soaring Blade! Sigh... It would be nice if this game could change into the Xian Xia style, then we could all learn the Sword’s way and fly on our own!”

Zhang Yang giggled. “This is an international gaming community! They won’t change the game that way since it’s a little too Eastern! It’s not suitable for the international market!”

“Tch, what a waste! They westernized the game just to earn profits! Cunning bastards!”

“Alright, alright. Let’s get going. Snow Spite City is just through the forest!”

Zhang Yang went ahead to clear a path for the party through the forest. Once they were out, they saw human-like structures in front of them. The city was only a short distance away. In there, they saw all kinds of elemental spirits wandering around the city. What was once a human city became a paradise for the Fire, Water, Wind, and Earth elementals.

Zhang Yang flipped through the quest description and notified the team, “Guys, we need to take out ten of each elemental spirits to complete the quest!”

“Go! Go! Go!”

Everyone in the party had overpowered equipment against the monsters. Killing them and completing the quest was a breeze. They soon arrived at the dungeon entrance.

Marzerway’s Lair was situated in this abandoned man-made palace in Snow Sprite City. There were three sub-dungeons namely Front Wing, Mid Wing and the Main Wing and the palace was the entrance to the dungeon. The Front and Mid Wing had two bosses each while the Main Wing held Marzerway, a 20 player party-fight boss.

“Eh?” Zhang Yang and his party were surprised to see that they were not alone there. In fact, there were 30 players; six parties with five players each. They were all from different guilds, namely The Dominators, Sky High, and Crimson Rage. Every one of them had reached Level 20! They were all technically qualified to enlist

themselves in the Level Ranking Board, but none of them did it and Zhang Yang understood their decision. They were furiously competing with each other and neither one of them wanted to expose their true strength. Even though they gave up their pride, they never gave up their determination. In the end, they all fought hard and leveled up, arriving at this Level 20 dungeon entrance at the same time as the others.

Noticing Zhang Yang's party walking towards them, they were taken aback. How could anyone else be able or even try to raid this dungeon?!

Humbly Gentleman of The Dominators scanned the party and saw that Zhang Yang's name was hidden. "You are Zhan Yu, I presume?" Such keen eyes, as expected of a guild master! Zhang Yang could only give a light smile.

"Are you all going to raid that dungeon?"

"IT'S YOU!" Zhang Yang heard a loud voice that sounded like someone screamed through their teeth. There came a beautiful woman with arms on her waist and bosoms big enough to attract any eyes. Right, she was the woman I exchanged my [Refined Iron Ore] with regular [Iron Ore]. Her name was Thorny Rose.

"Oh, hi!"

"You sneaky bastard! I was doomed because of you!" Thorny Rose's face was flushed with crimson rage. Fatty Han, noticing her anger, quickly interjected.

“Excuse me, young maiden. Has this little brat wronged you? Did he knock you up and refused to claim responsibility?! Damn you, Little Yang! How could you do this?! How could you just use this young girl and discard her like that?! Urgh, I’m so jealous!”

With just that, the atmosphere suddenly became a lot heavier. Everyone began to exchange looks towards Zhang Yang and Thorny Rose. They looked like they knew what was going on in their mind.

“You dirty uncle! I’m 100% certain now that you’re a big horny pervert!” Drizzler exclaimed as she shared the same thoughts as others. Thorny Rose tried to explain otherwise.

“N-no! It’s not that! This sly fox cheated me over 100 [Iron Ore]! He caused Mei Mei to be late for more than half a day to submit her quest!”

So that was the truth! With that revealed, the crowd began to lose their interest. It seemed that the exciting lie was more entertaining than the boring truth.

“Rose! Stop fooling around!”

A woman walked over, carrying with her a sense of dignified nobility, calming the raging Thorny Rose. She then took her time to observe Zhang Yang. “I’ve heard of your name. I’d never thought that today would be the day I finally met the famous Zhan Yu, the legendary Guardian. It’s an honor!”

Crimson Rage's guild master; Snow Seeker. In the future, she would be ranked fourth in China Server's top ten Spellcasters. She would also be the player representative for the "Red" party, an S-class competition team. Zhang Yang would not dare to ignore someone like her.

"No, guild master Snow, the honor is mine! I, too, have heard of your noble name! Luck truly is on my side!"

"Enough of these fake words! We've all gathered here today to fight for that 'First Clear' achievement! Stop making those welcoming faces as if they were your own!"

Cold words, coming from the mouth of Sky Shaman, the guild master of Sky High. Snow Seeker averted her gaze and smiled warmly.

"We, the Crimson Rage are all just maidens. We do not have such wildly ambitions. In fact, we're just here to try on the Hard Mode!" Nobody believed her. They knew her words were as fake as the nature in-game.

Humbly was in his own sea of thoughts when he suddenly voiced out, "How about we have a bet? To see who would be the first to claim two of the 'First Clear' achievement for Hardcore Mode?" Sky Shaman felt confident about winning the challenge.

"Haha! A challenge invites progress! Well said! How about it, guild master Snow, Zhan Yu? Let's compete!"

Snow Seeker only lightly smiled as she replied, “We would always welcome a clean and fair fight. I only fear that someone might not obey the rules of the game and uses some underhanded tactic to win the bet!” Hearing her words, Humbly Gentleman and Sky Shaman’s smiles faded a little.

Zhang Yang could not help but wonder. What happened between those three guilds that left them having a grudge against each other? After thinking about it again, he left it alone as it was none of his business.

“If we participated, what would get out of it?” Zhang Yang inquired.

Sky Shaman, with words full of confidence, gave a hefty suggested reward. “Haha! Everyone will bet on 10,000 gold pieces! The loser will have to pay 10,000 gold pieces each to the winner! Two dungeons, two rounds. How about it?”

Snow Seeker expressed her objection to the idea, “I’ve said it before, Crimson Rage would only take on Hard Mode. Consider us forfeiting the bet! We will now take our leave and start on the dungeon. We’ll be going now, then!”

Snow Seeker waved goodbye and led the party into the dungeon. No one outside the party would know the mode of the dungeon that they were raiding, but everyone knew this: the pre-requisite quest must be completed to gain access to the Front and Middle Wing. Parties must raid both to be able to enter the Main Wing,



and the requirement did not specify what mode they would choose.

“Gentleman, Zhan Yu! How about it? Shall we place our bets?”

“Yes!”

Humbly Gentleman and Sky Shaman stared at each other, emitting a strong enmity between the two. This was how the two guilds treated each other; with a strong sense of hostility. Zhang Yang, on the other hand, laughed out loud. “Well, I’ll just go on and follow Gentleman! It’s a ‘yes’ from me as well!”

“Alright! Now that’s what we’re talking about!” Sky Shaman then clapped his hands to get his team’s attention. “Are you listening, brothers? We’re competing with Zhan Yu and The Dominators, to fight for the ‘First Clear’ achievement! What do you guys think? Could we lose to them?”

“Hell no!” The players from Sky High roared out in unison, and their morale was instantly boosted.

“So, let’s go!” Sky Shaman waved his arm, leading his army to disappear into the dungeon.

“Well then, I’d better be going now!” Humbly Gentleman winked at Zhang Yang. “Brother Zhan Yu, after today, let’s find some time together to chat! I’ll take my leave now then!” And with that, The Dominators disappeared into the dungeon too.

“Guys, we’d better quickly complete the quest now and enter the dungeon, or we’d have to put out 10,000 gold pieces!”

Drizzler shamelessly responded, “Hmph! That’s what you have decided, not us! If you lose, you’d better pay them from your own pocket. But if we win, we must share the booty!”

“You little brat! Is money the only thing on your mind?”

“Hehehe!”

## Chapter 50: Strength Of The Minion

---

The quest submission NPC was an Elf Thief, hidden in the shadows at the dungeon entrance. She's barely noticeable even if you stood beside her! One by one, the party members submitted their quests, and the NPC finally gave responses.

“Heroes of the Union! Behold the sight! Those devil-succumbed Spellcasters! Look at what they did to this place! Snow Sprite City was once a marvelous and beautiful city; but the wicked Dark Magicians left this place devastated! Now, he sits on the throne in the center of the Main Wing! You must save this city! You must destroy him!”

“But beware, adventurers. If you want to defeat Marzerway himself, you must first defeat four of his underlings and get past the Front Wing and Middle Wing! Heed my warning! These four underlings were created by Marzerway himself through the use of Dark Arts, made from the essences of the elementals! These elementals are not to be treated lightly!”

‘Ding! You have received a quest from Ranger Xue Wei: Get Rid of the Claws. Will you accept it?’

Zhang Yang accepted the quest.

[Get Rid of the Claws] (Quest Difficulty: A)

Quest description: For the Union! Brave adventures, conquer

the Front Wing and Middle Wing to make a path to the Main Wing! Kill Marzerway and save the Snow Sprite City!

Progress:

Water Spirit Wattland 0/1 Earth Spirit Oz 0/1 Fire Spirit Farr 0/1 Air Spirit Ains 0/1

Quest Reward: Access to the Main Wing, Marzerway's Lair entrance qualification.

Zhang Yang set the difficulty to Hardcore and commanded the party, "So let's go!"

Everyone followed and stood before the castle door. The courtyard was in ruins and everything else was either old or destroyed which caused the scenery to be extremely dull and gloomy. Not too far away, two water spirits were patrolling the area. Their transparent and liquefied figures flowed with a kind of liquid, wielding a shield on their left and a spear on the right.

"Little Yang, why didn't we start from Normal Mode?"

"Fatty, Normal Mode would only drop Level 10 Black-Steel equipment while Hard Mode gives Level 20 Black-Steel equipment. That's almost on the same level as Level 10 Green-Copper equipment, which is what most of us are wearing now. It'd be meaningless to even start with Hard Mode!"

“Alright then, let’s get things going!” Drizzler took out her spear and entered her battle stance.

“Hold up! Let me explain before you get us all wiped out!”

From the bottom of his heart, Zhang Yang was deeply worried that this dumb and childish brat would just charge straight on without thinking.

“Killing is pretty straightforward. The main problem is after the monster is dead, a debuff will be casted on every nearby player. If two players get the debuff near to each other, it will cause a 30-meter explosion that deals 2,500 damage to every player in the blast radius!” Zhang Yang then pointed at Drizzler.

“That is why when you see the monster’s HP almost gone, run as far away as possible! The two hunters must also stow away their pets!”

“Yeah, yeah. I get it. You’re not even that old and you’re already lecturing like an old gramp!” Drizzler looked like she had had enough.

“Fine, let’s get going then!” Ignoring her, Zhang Yang waved his hands, signaling the team to strike. He used <Charge> on one of the elemental spirits and marked it with a star tag.

“Hit the tagged monster!”

[Demonized Water Spirit] (Elite)

Level: 20

HP: 10,000

The blood-boiling Drizzler let loose a battle cry and used <Charge> to dash forward. With the spear in her hand, she caused a significant amount of damage. Hundred Shots and Fatty Han did not hold back either and drew their bows to attack.

90%, 80%...

The team's equipment was decent enough to contribute to the damage pool. The star-marked monster was quickly defeated.

"Little brat! Withdraw now!" Zhang Yang screamed at the top of his lungs as he saw the monster was about to drop. Drizzler on the other hand, did not notice his screams and continued slashing wildly.

'Ding! Demonized Water Spirit has casted <Mark of Doom> on death!'

'Ding! Player Zhan Yu has the effect of <Mark of Doom>!'

‘Ding! Player Drizzler has the effect of <Mark of Doom>!’

Zhang Yang and Drizzler’s bodies began to glow in a dark light and then...

‘-2500!’

‘-2500!’

‘-2500!’

‘-2500!’

‘-2500!’

The entire team was killed.

“You little brat! What did I tell you in the beginning?!”

At the reviving point, a goddess was humming a song in an unknown language, giving a holy-like celestial kind of aura. Meanwhile, Zhang Yang gave out a deadly and furious aura, staring irritably at Drizzler.

“I didn’t understand a thing you said that that time!” Drizzler tried to explain her mistake while giving an innocent face.

“Huh?!” Zhang Yang narrowed his eyes, emitting more killing intent.

“Alright, alright! I got all worked up there. I forgot all about it then!” She shrugged it off as if nothing happened. Zhang Yang sighed heavily.

“Just... just pay attention next time, alright?” Not even he could continue to be mad at a cute girl like her.

Shuh!

Five more souls appeared at the revive point and from their name tags, they were all from The Dominators. Humbly Gentleman was a little surprised when he noticed them as well.

The local area channel appeared, “Gah! You guys were wiped out too!”

In death, players were blocked from using “Talk”; no one could hear you speak. Players could only use text and words to chat in the party, guild, and local channel.

Before Zhang Yang could even reply, five more souls appeared. It was the other 5-man party from The Dominators. Not long after, two of the 5-man parties from Sky High arrived as well.



“Haha! Everyone was killed off at the first minion!” Fatty Han typed in the local channel.

Scanning the surrounding to see who was there, Sky Shaman came to the conclusion, “Not everyone.”

“Crimson Rage!”

“Did they really just fight in Hard Mode?” Humbly Gentleman thought to himself, eyebrows frowning with his thoughts. Minions in the Hard More were surely as fatal as the ones in Hardcore Mode that could kill you off with just a blast.

“Go on! Don’t stop now!” Zhang Yang cried out in the party channel and revived at his body.

As they entered the dungeon with health recovery snacks in their mouth, they noticed that the number of patrolling Water Spirits did not reduce. Being able to defeat only one before they died, the other Water Spirit respawned when the surviving one left its battle state.

“Remember what I told you, little dipsh\*t! If you cause us to die again, prepare for some spanking!” Zhang Yang said as he gritted his teeth.

“Hmph!” Drizzler turned her head away from Zhang Yang, pouting her lips.

“I’m going in!” Zhang Yang used <Charge> to rush into the monster’s range and after a few attacks, the monsters were defeated. Even though little Drizzler was naughty and playful, she would never pull out at a fight.

“Next one!” The party moved on, clearing waves of minions until they arrived at a small shack with three water elementals inside.

“The f\*ck are we going there for? The road is on the other way!” Drizzler pointed to the road on their left.

Zhang Yang giggled. “There’s a treasure chest in here, dummy!”

Drizzler and Little Snow’s eyes glinted simultaneously. “Treasure chest?!”

Zhang Yang first used <Charge> towards one of the elementals, followed by a normal attack and a <Horizontal Sweep>. Now that he had a new skill <Thunder Strike>, his ability to lock in the monster’s aggro was at a whole new level. Zhang Yang quickly activated all his skills and firmly kept the aggro on him.

Under the entire team’s firepower, the monsters were taken down flawlessly. Like a lightning bolt, Drizzler and Little Snow occupied each corner of the treasure chest, caressing it’s golden frames like a new born baby.

“Ah... this sensation! Truly exciting!”

“Hmm... this is marvelous indeed!”

The two ladies were already in their delusional world; misers at their best.

“Alright! Alright! Let go of the chest and open it! Don’t forget, we’re here to claim the ‘First Clear’ achievement!”

Zhang Yang could not hold in his anger anymore; he could no longer endure facing these money-crazed ladies along with those stupid faces they make every time a treasure chest appeared. After reminding them for god knows how long, they decided to play scissor-paper-stone to determine who opens the chest.

Being the winner, Little Snow reached out her hand to open it.

[Tight Leather Jacket] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +24

Strength: +4

Dexterity: +12

Level requirement: 20

“Give it to Hundred Shots. I have full Green-Copper equipment on me. Let him upgrade his own!” Fatty Han humbly rejected the roll and offered them to Hundred Shots. He had only been through two runs of Hardcore Mode of the Bangar Crypt; surely his equipment could not be on par yet with Fatty Han’s. Hundred Shots did not hold back, he knew that words were just mere words; actions spoke louder.

Little Snow touched the chest again and the second item popped out.

[Smithing Recipe: Level 2 Whetstone] (Smithing Recipe)

Use: Teach you to craft Level 2 Whetstone.

Requirement: Amateur Smithing.

“Good hands!” Zhang Yang smiled. This recipe was one of the methods to raise one’s Smithing level from Amateur to Advance. The recipe was not at all rare; they were in fact easy to farm for.

Zhang Yang rolled for 35 points.

Drizzler rolled for 87 points.

“Haha! It’s mine!” Drizzler smiled from ear to ear. She turned her gaze to Zhang Yang, “Sneaky uncle, if you promise not to treat me so bad, I’ll give you the recipe!”

“Tch! Who would want it!” Zhang Yang shook his head to reject her offer. He knew that the recipe’s drop rate was very high, and could be found in abundance in the auction house at an extremely low price in fact! Why would he need to answer her request?

“Hmph!” Drizzler held her chest up and patted the recipe to learn it.

“Continue on!”

Zhang Yang commanded and the team complied. As the moved further into the dungeon, they arrived at an entrance to a palace. Standing guard outside were two water elemental spirits, and they looked much bigger than the ones they fought before. These spirits had the same transparent body, but were holding thick and rough swords.

[Water Spirit Guardian] (Elite)

Level: 20

HP: 10,000

“These two monsters have very high attack power; not to mention they can clear their aggro timely. When that happens, they will use <Charge> towards a ranged player and unleash a skill similar to <Tornado Cleave>. It’s a much stronger skill, and it could last longer than <Tornado Cleave>. Once the battle starts, please maintain a certain distance from one another. Don’t be too close to the next player or you’ll die when <Tornado Cleave> strikes.” Everyone listened closely; their eyes were set on Zhang Yang firmly.

“Here I go!”

Zhang Yang used <Charge> to stun one of the elementals and initiated his attack on the other.

‘-352!’

With one of them stunned, the other began to hurl the sword in its hand towards Zhang Yang.

‘<Block>!’

‘-91!’ <Block> reflected damage.

‘-197!’ <Shield Bash>.

‘-675!’

‘-701!’ <Horizontal Sweep>.

The stunned monster finally recovered and began attacking Zhang Yang as well.

‘-91!’

‘-91!’ <Thunder Strike>.

‘Ding! Water Spirit Guardian has used <Charge>!’

One of the monsters aimed the <Charge> on Hundred Shots, stunning him. It then flipped over his sword and began to spin in circles.

‘Ding! Water Spirit Guardian has used <Dance of the Blade>, causing 300 damage to all nearby targets. Lasts for 5 seconds!’

Zhang Yang quickly directed the team, “Everyone! Get away from that monster!” But what luck, the other monster used <Charge> and targeted Hundred Shots as well.

‘Ding! Water Spirit Guardian has used <Dance of the Blade>, causing 300 damage to all nearby targets. Lasts for 5 seconds!’

With two monsters using their strong AoE skills together, Hundred Shots took a lot of damage.

‘-285!’ and ‘-285!’ kept floating across his head. He was not in time to escape, and Little Snow could not heal his HP quick enough.

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots has died!’

Zhang Yang would not dare to charge ahead. Once that skill has been activated, it will damage its surrounding area for five seconds. <Block> could only nullify one instance of attack and all other remaining attacks depend on his defense. Even if he did have 1,720 HP, he could not hold off the two monsters’ furious attack together!

The skill’s duration ended and the monster returned to their original position to resume their attack on Zhang Yang.



# Chapter 51: Water Spirit Wattland

---

“Holy crap! That’s a sick skill! Why isn’t the Berserker’s <Tornado Cleave> that awesome?!” In her tone of voice, there was a hint of both pity and excitement.

“Alright! Alright! Save your breath for later. Press on the attack, or it will unleash another tornado and kill us all!”

Zhang Yang’s unreserved manner of speech ticked Drizzler off, and she returned his scorn with her own insult.

“Tch! Zhan Yu, if you’re going to continue being humorless, I’d pity whoever that’s going to be your girlfriend! She’d be bored as hell!”

During their quarrels, one of the guardians was defeated and turned into a pillar of light, disappearing into the air. The party changed their target to the remaining guardian and bombarded it with all their damaging skills.

After some time, the Water Spirit turned and used <Charge> on Little Snow, immediately casting <Dance of the Blade>. She quickly healed herself with a bottle of red potion along with a healing spell. Fortunately, it was only one monster, as her healing could keep up with the damage loss to maintain her HP and surviving the attack. The party picked up the pace and attacked furiously. The last guardian fell soon after.

“Little Snow, revive Hundred Shots. I’ll take this time to explain

the next battle strategy.”

Zhang Yang opened the palace door, and standing right at the center of the room was a gigantic Water Spirit. Having the height of almost half the room, the giant stood almost 10 meters tall.

[Water Spirit Wattland] (Green-Copper)

Level: 21

HP: 126K

“This boss is a Spellcaster class and its main attack is <Water Arrow>. It will only cast this skill on the player with the highest aggro value. There’s a three-second unbreakable channel duration which will then strike an 800 damage value! The person that’s going to take this skill head on is me. After my passive 20% damage reduction, I would take about 640 damage. It’s still quite fatal so I need Little Snow to focus your healing solely on me!”

Little Snow nodded in all seriousness. She knew at this time, he was not in the mood for jokes and she had to take this fight seriously too.

“His second skill is <Ice Ring>, and it’s randomly casted on any player. Once activated, an icy ring will form around a player and within 3 seconds, it will form an orb around you, causing 1,000

frost damage. Anyone that starts to notice an ice ring forming around them, you must run out of the range or you'll receive a fatal attack."

Almost everyone in the party had a specific attribute allocation style; Fatty Han being one of the most extreme ones did not allocate a single AP on Vitality before Level 10. Only after that level did he allocate his AP as such: 2 on Vitality, 1 on Strength, and 1 on Dexterity. His HP was the lowest in the team, with only a little over 1,000 HP. Little Snow and Drizzler always had 2 AP allocated on Vitality at every level gained, so their HP were around 1,200. Hundred Shots had the highest among them, having 3 AP assigned to Vitality at each level, gaining a strong HP of 1,400.

Fatty Han jokingly gestured, "Little Yang, wht didn't you tell me to assign any AP on Vitality when I first joined in? Look at my HP now! It's so low that I feel I could get killed in a single hit!"

Zhang Yang replied, "Tch! Whoever gets hit by the <Ice Ring> is a dumb piggy! As for the third skill..."

Fatty Han interrupted, "What the f\*ck! Just how many skills does this boss have?!"

Zhang Yang could only shake his head, disappointed at his wasted anger.

"Three skills, and you think that's many? Wait till you encounter Marzerway and that's when you know the true definition of 'many skills'. Imagine all the skills of his underlings, adding up with his

own skills. I'm pretty sure you'd be on cloud 9 then!"

Fatty Han was left stunned.

"AS FOR the third skill..." Zhang Yang repeated a little louder, "it's called <Hail Storm>. It has a three-second casting delay and once casted, it causes 200 damage to all targets for 10 seconds. The skill's interruptible so it can be stopped!" Zhang Yang turned to look at Hundred Shots and Fatty Han, "Fatty, Hundred Shots, you've learned <Silencing Shot>, no?"

They exchange looks and nodded. "Yeah."

"The skills <Hail Storm> has about 20 seconds cooldown time while <Silencing Shot> has 30, which is why we need not just one but two Hunters to successfully cancel out the boss' skill. Remember guys, the first <Hail Storm> interruption must be done by Fatty Han, and the second by Hundred Shots. Just repeat the cycle, got it? The next time the boss uses <Hail Storm>, one of you use <Silencing Shot>. Easy right?"

They looked at each other and then back to Zhang Yang again.

"You guys are the ones that determine whether or not we survive this round. If any of you missed the chance to <Silence> the boss, all of us would die in just one <Hail Storm>." There was a threatening tone in Zhang Yang and Fatty Han clearly felt it.

"It seems easy when you explained it earlier but once you said

our lives are depending on us, it's making me feel a little nervous." Fatty Han turned to face Zhang Yang, hoping to be consoled but what he saw was a middle finger pointed directly to his face.

"If there's anything else you guys want to ask, voice it out now!"

"Pretty sure it's easy."

"Let's try it once!"

"Okay! That's the spirit! The boss is easy indeed. As long as you can evade well and the two Hunters can <Silence> just right, we'll be safe and sound."

"Easy for you to say." Fatty Han rolled his eyes.

Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword. "Here I go! Everyone get inside, because the moment I start the battle, the door is going to close. Anyone left outside can do nothing but wait!"

Everyone else in the party complied and followed him in.

"Ready? Here I go!"

<Charge>!

'-327!' Normal Attack.

The stun effect was weak against Wattland. Being a Level 20 boss gave it a certain degree of resistance towards crowd control effects. In just one second, it recovered from the stun and started to make a weird noise.

“Haha! Here comes a bunch of beings to offer their lives! Wattland will freeze you all!”

The giant targeted Zhang Yang and began to cast <Water Arrow>, and a progress bar appeared on its head.

‘-640!’

‘+392!’

In almost a split-second gap, a green healing text appeared right after the red damage text popped out. As expected of Little Snow, her healing ability was truly remarkable.

This b\*tch actually has some decent healing capabilities. Just when she saw the boss’ attack progress bar reaching one-third of the way, she also started to chant her own healing spell. Two seconds later, Little Snow’s healing spell and the boss’ <Water Arrow> went off at the same time.

Little Snow immediately casted another <Regeneration> on Zhang Yang. Even though the recovery rate was slower, the overall healing amount over 15 seconds was 200% of her magic attack,

which was better than having no healing at all!

If it were to be another healer, their magic attack would be at most around 200 with all the Green-Copper Level 10 equipment, but Little Snow was different. With only a single Level 20 Green-Copper magic staff, her magic attack was already at 180. Adding that to her other Level 20 Green-Copper equipment, her Magic attack totaled to 300. That was the major difference between other healers and her!

Even with such powerful attributes, Little Snow would still need to use all of her strength to keep up with Zhang Yang. That was the power difference of a Hardcore difficulty boss! If you wanted to take it easy, better to just raid the Normal Mode. With Black-Steel equipment and players not making silly mistakes, it was a sure fire win in the dungeon. Hardcore Mode is not some playtime thing where you could just try out for the fun of it; it was do or die! Fight your hardest to win!

‘Ding! Water Spirit Wattland used <Ice Ring>!’

Zhang Yang quickly turned around to warn the team, “Guys! Look down and check at your feet! Continue to attack if it’s safe and don’t get any unnecessary damage that burdens our healer!”

The boss chose to cast the skill on Hundred Shots. An icy ring formed around him, forming a thick layer of ice and it got thicker overtime. He quickly evaded the ring and got out flawlessly. He was and will be the man called the Dragon Hunter. Even though most of his glory would be because of the pet dragon that he would get in the future, Hundred Shots still had a trick or two up his

sleeves. He used to follow Zhang Yang into Hardcore Mode and experienced Hardcore boss fights; a simple run and dodge was nothing to him.

The boss' attacks were becoming quite a problem. Little Snow drastically used up her MP to make sure Zhang Yang survives. Thankfully, the boss stopped after a series of attacks to cast another skill.

'Ding! Water Spirit Wattland used <Hail Storm>!'

"Fatty! <Silencing Shot>! Now!"

"On it!"

Fatty Han drew his bow and fired a dark-green arrow. As it landed on the boss, a '-224' appeared, simultaneously cancelling the boss' spell cast.

"That's it, guys! Keep this up! Keep it going!" Zhang Yang tried to raise the party's morale.

As the battle raged on with many of the boss' skills casted, none of the party members were once hit by <Ice Ring> as they managed to evade swiftly. Even the silencing cycle was performed errorless against <Hail Storm>.

90%, 80%... all the way to 20%, the boss' HP drained off quickly.



‘Ding! Water Spirit Wattland used <Hail Storm>!’

“Fatty!”

Zhang Yang and he had been battling for more than 10 years now, and their communication was and always has been excellent. With just a call, Fatty Han fired a <Silencing Arrow>.

“Missed!”

“F\*CK!” Zhang Yang suddenly cursed out; everyone’s face changed instantly.

After three seconds, arrow-like icicles fell from the sky. There was no place for them to hide.

‘-200!’

‘-200!’

‘-200!’

Even after Little Snow trying her best to heal everyone with all her might, she could not replace the HP loss everyone suffered in time.

‘Ding! Player Slim and Handsome has died!’

‘Ding! Player Little Snow has died!’

‘Ding! Player Drizzler has died!’

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots has died!’

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yun has died!’

It was another party wipe out once more.

The five of them stood together at the revive point.

“!@#\$! What luck! I missed?! I actually missed!”

Any physical attacks had a 1% chance to miss the target. This value could not be modified or changed by any equipment or the player’s level. How would you describe a skill like <Silencing Shot> that required 30 seconds to cooldown to miss a hit? The only answer would be just plain luck, which he did not have. Sometimes in life, all you needed was not the strength to carry on, but the luck that comes along the way.

“It’s fine, guys! Now everyone knows how to fight ths boss! We can defeat it in the next round! Think of this as practice!” Zhang Yang tried to cheer up the team.

“Okay!”

‘Shuh!’

Another five souls appeared at the revive point; they were members from Sky high, and they were the elite members that were led personally by Sky Shaman.

“Haha, it’s you again, Zhan Yu!”

“It’s alright, guys! It’s alright. Come, let us all revive again!”

Shy Shaman asked Zhang yang, “Hey, where did you guys die at?”

“At the two guardians! Holy crap, their attacks are too strong! They killed us all in one clean swipe!”

Sky Shaman relaxed a little. He felt tense before thinking that Zhang Yang could have overtaken them, but now he knew that Zhang Yang was on the same progress as they were.

“Hah, you guys are strong! We haven’t even reached there yet!” Sky Shaman then quickly revived and continued his fight.

“This bastard!” Zhang Yang shook his head in anger. So you think you could trick us? Well, guess what, we’ve also tricked you!

“Zhan Yu! Hurry and revive now! I’m waiting to open the corpse!”

All little Drizzler was here for was to get the money. She only cared about money, and that was the only thing she loved.

## Chapter 52: Earth Spirit Oz

---

Zhang Yang's party revived one by one. Luck was not something you can control. There's really nothing you can do about if something went bad and luck did not favor you.

On their second run, Hundred Shots' first <Silencing Shot> was already a miss, leading the team to death once more.

“What the f\*ck is going on!? I swear that this is just an easy boss, but how did we get ourselves in this freaking shitty situation!?”

“Fatty, I think it's your karma biting back at you. This is probably a payback for peeping at your neighbor's little sister.” Zhang Yang joked.

“Go to hell little Yang! I'm a true gentleman! Why would I try to peek under a girl's skirt?” Fatty Han said a honest face.

“Big Bro! Zhan Yu didn't say anything about peeking under a skirt. Did you just dig your own grave?” Drizzler giggled away happily.

Zhang Yang frowned, suddenly feeling envious of Fatty Han. “Why did you address him as Big Bro and I'm the uncle?!”

“Little Yang, you're the type that gets old quickly. Don't be jealous of Fatty Han's eternal youth!” Fatty Han reached out his hand to pat Zhang Yang's shoulder but his hands just went

through his shoulder like air; they are still in the soul state.

“Handsome, my ass!”

The five of them revived again and proceeded towards the Water Spirit Wattland. “I’m pretty sure that all of us are used to the strategy by now. Winning or losing depends on luck now!”

Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and pointed it to the air. “Let’s go!”

90%, the first <Hail Storm> was disrupted by Fatty Han.

80%, the second <Hail Storm> was disrupted by Hundred Shots.

70%....

60%...

50%...

There was no “Miss” this time while the boss’ HP dramatically dropped. In a while after, Wattland’s HP had almost reach its red zone.

7%!

“Don’t let your guard down! What needs to be disrupted must be disrupted. What needs to be evaded must be evaded! Don’t get us all killed at 1%!” Zhang Yang warned. He was not looking forward to repeating the process all over again.

“Almost there! Ahhh! I can see it. The glowing luster of gold pieces! Ahhh!! Almost there!” Drizzler’s strange feminine cries filled the atmosphere, and her attacks got faster and wilder in the heat of the moment.

3%!

2%!

1%!

0%!

And the boss finally fell.

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed Water Spirit Wattland. Obtaining 25,250 Experience points (50 points party bonus)!’

“Aww yes! We are the best! YEAH!” Drizzler was jumping about in joy, much like a little girl who had just won her first teddy bear in a circus; the rest of the party members just smiled happily.

Zhang Yang smiled with satisfaction. He was pleased to see the team working hard together, achieving victory hand in hand. His vision of seeing the team together became clearer.

Zhang Yang then clapped his hand to get their attention. “Alright, guys! It’s time to open the corpse!”

“Oh! I wanna touch it! I wanna touch it!”

“No! I want to do it! Let me do it!”

Fatty Han knees felt weak as he heard the cousins fighting over the right to open the corpse.

“A-Ah girls? Stop fighting. Come, touch me! I’m pretty nice to rub around. I assure you that you’ll be extremely satisfied after a session with me!”

“F\*ck off!”

Same rule, same game, and Little Snow won another round of rock-paper-scissors. Drizzler looked sadly at her fist making the shape of a rock and sighed.

“How could I always lose at this game?”

“That’s because you’re a big idiot!” Zhang Yang sighed. He could not believe that she did not realize her own mistake.



Drizzler got up with her hands on her waist, angrily speaking with her cheek bursting with anger. “Where did I go wrong?!”

“This game only needs one of your hands to play. Your playing hand was behind you but their other hand was out in front. I don’t know why your other hand would have the same gesture. That’s why everyone could see through your act. Even a dummy could know what you’re playing next in scissors-paper-stone! And if they can’t see through you, they’re as dumb as you are!” Zhang Yang explained in his stoic face, holding back his urge to laugh out loud.

“Kyaaa!!!!” No wonder Drizzler could never win her elder cousin sister in this game! No, she never stood a chance because of this habit of hers!

“Han Yin Xue!! I’m cutting ties with you!” Drizzler screamed from the top of her lungs.

“Right, and this is the... hmm I can’t recall the times you’ve wanted to cut ties with me.” Little Snow replied her screams nonchalantly, ignoring her and reaching out for the corpse to open it. The others may not show it but they had been waiting for the equipment excitedly.

[Frost Crown] (Green-Copper, Metal Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +24

Strength: +12

Dexterity: +4

Level requirement: 20

“Hey, little brat. Let’s forget about the system roll and settle this with a game of rock-paper-scissors!”

“Sneaky little kid!” Drizzler rolled her eyes and quickly rolled for the equipment. Zhang Yang laughed and rolled for the item as well. He won with 84 points.

[Briskly Crown] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +20

Strength: +6

Dexterity: +14

Level requirement: 20

Fatty Han gave up the equipment humbly and offered them to Hundred Shots again.

‘Ding! You have distributed 10 silver pieces!’

As the body started to disappear, Fatty Han got upset, “That’s it? Two equipment only?”

“Uh, yeah. That’s about right. Getting two equipment in a 5-man dungeon is already considered quite good!” Zhang Yang nodded.

“And it’s all just hats! Tch! This boss sure has some weird hat collecting habits, huh.”

“This first boss would only drop helms and boots. We’re lucky enough to get all helms.” Zhang Yang explained. “Alright then. Let’s proceed to the next boss and claim the “First Clear” achievement!”

“Let’s go!”

The team was filled with thirst for victory; everyone was eager to win the fight. Their morale could never have been higher.

After the first boss, the element changed from water to earth. The next enemy is a huge earth elemental with 7 to 8 smaller earth elementals around.

[Inflated Earth Elemental] (Elite)

Level: 21

HP: 50,000

[Deflated Earth Elemental] (Normal)

Level: 20

HP: 1,000

“Sigh. These smaller minions are quite troublesome!” Zhang Yang frowned as he rubbed his forehead. He missed the days where he could just kill off skill-less minions in Bangar Crypt.

“It’s pointless to kill the smaller ones. As long as the big one is still alive, it will quickly re-spawn the dead minions! Still, we can’t drag the battle too long or else the big one will command the small ones to self-destruct. Each of those pesky little minions could cause 200 damage per explosion. You’ll actually get blasted and literally

be at cloud 9!”

“So...we are supposed to fully focus on the big one before it commands the small ones to explode at us?”

“Understood?”

“Yeah!”

“Let’s start!”

Shush! Zhang Yang rushed over with <Charge> along with Drizzler doing the same.

With Zhang Yang there to pull in the minions, the others did not have to worry about aggro problems; they just focused their attack on the elite monster. With such strong focus fire, it was defeated fairly fast. The party then used all their AoE skills to clear of rest of the surviving minions.

Hunter’s <Barrage> and Berserker’s <Tornado Cleave> were AoE skills, and they were much stronger than a Guardian’s <Thunder Strike>! But neither one of those skills could be compared to Zhang Yang’s 200% damage <Horizontal Sweep>! Stacked with the powerful Grey-Silver sword and the <Eagle Eye> skill, the final damage was truly remarkable!

“Zhan Yu, I want your <Horizontal Sweep>!” Drizzler was feeling envious.

“No way!”

Drizzler tried to tempt him with something else to make him yield, “But I can give you Little Snow’s address!”

Fatty Han’s ear’s suddenly twitched. Little Snow may not have the best beauty complexion but that ridiculous body of a succubus was truly something worth. Furthermore, the in-game appearance and real-life appearance are not necessarily the same. There was still a chance that this lady might look like a goddess in reality!

“You little brat! You must be sick of living for so long now! Are you so eager to die?” Little Snow raised her fist.

“Don’t worry, Drizzler! I’m here to protect you!” Fatty Han stood out with his chest up high. “Quickly! Reveal her address!”

“So what if she told you. China is such a big place! Can you really find it out?”

Zhang Yang laughed. “Tch! Who knows? We might be in the same city!”

“We’re living in Zhou Su City. How about you?” Drizzle asked.

Zhang Yang and Fatty Han froze at the same time. “What a coincidence! We’re also living in Zhou Su City!” Zhang Yang

flinched. Zhang Yang did have some suspicion that they were living in the same city before.

“Ah! This is destiny! This is fate!” Fatty Han began to feel extremely grateful.

Drizzle giggled happily. She blinked her big eyes and said, “Little Snow is living at No.105, Shi Zi Street! Got it?”

Fatty Han began to chant the address like a mantra, fearing of forgetting the address later on.

Zhang Yang shook his head. If memory served him right, No.105, Shi Zi Street was the police station! Thinking of it, he recalled the policewoman he met earlier that morning! The soft and supple sensation of those melons. They were surely ranked number one if he compared them with a previous encounter in his previous life!

Zhang Yang smiled evilly. The thought that he could Fatty Han’s face when he would discover the truth of that address made Zhang Yang refuse to let him know about the police station.

The party went onwards and after 20 minutes of fighting more small minions, they arrived at the entrance of the second boss.

[Earth Spirit Oz] (Green-Copper)

Level: 22

HP: 132k

There was a large brown-colored Earth Elemental; its size looked sturdy and enormous, being as high as 15 meters tall. Even without a visible weapon, the spirit's own gigantic body gave off a certain kind of pressure.

“What's the plan?” they all asked. They “knew” that Zhang Yang was a beta player!

Zhang Yang walked up confidently. Several days before this fight, he had been squeezing all of his brain juice to remember all of Marzerway's skills and fight strategy, which was why he could casually explain everything as if he already knew it all.

“This boss is basically a physical attack type. His attacks are like a bulldozer; very strong and powerful, which means we'll need to depend on Little Snow for this round as well!”

Little Snow turned to Zhang Yang and winked seductively. “In that case, I want some overtime pay!”

“Cousin! Would it kill you to just stop behaving like a slut?!”

“Heh heh heh. I'm used to it!” Little Snow then winked at Drizzler, sending a cold shudder all over her.



“This boss’ first skill is <Open Wound>. He will only cast this on the person with the highest aggro, which is me. If he casts this skill on anyone else, that would only mean that I died! This is a DoT attack, so I will lose 100 HP every second. The damage will not be affected by defense value. F\*cking sh\*t!”

As a Guardian, he absolutely hated skills that would ignore his defense attribute.

“The second skill is <Smash>! This skill will also be cast on the person with the most aggro, which is again, me! <Smash> itself does not do any damage but it stuns me for 2 seconds and casts a debuff, increasing his attack frequency by 100%! This skill cannot be blocked or evaded, which means I would have to take it head on! The most dangerous part is when I’m hit by it. I can’t voluntarily move to block any attack. The boss originally has a very fierce attack and I could get killed off any time!

Little Snow rolled her eyes glamorously and said, “Well then, I must ask for a raise!”

“Cousin, can you please be a little more lady-like?”

“And where am I not a lady?” Little Snow threw another wink. Her glamorous and show-off behavior made the other party members a little awkward to put up with.

# Chapter 53: A Wasted Effort

---

“Sneaky b\*itch.” Zhang Yang whispered to himself.

“The third boss’ skill is called <Earth Spear>. This skill will be casted on 3 random players. It will look like a muddy puddle that’s about 2 meters wide. In that puddle, you will have 50% movement speed reduction and also receive 150 damage per second. You must quickly move away from the puddle the moment it appears! The damage and slowing effect will not immediately take effect when it appears as there will be a 0.5 second delay before the effect kicks in! You must be quick and alert at all times!”

Zhang Yang took a breather, giving sometime for the party to absorb all the information.

“Lastly... and this one is the problematic one, is after every 15 seconds, the boss will gain 5% increased damage. This is a damage battle. The longer we drag this battle, the worse situation we will be in. Our healing powers will diminish over time and when the boss has grown to 150% or 200% increase in damage, it will be the end of us!”

“All in all, what you guys need to do is to avoid the <Earth Spear> and give it everything you got!”

“What a load of bull crap! You could have just said that last sentence to summarize everything!” Fatty Han scratched his head. “Man! All your talking makes my head hurt! What a waste of my brain cells trying to remember all of that junk!”

Zhang Yang laughed.

“If there isn’t any problem, we can just go ahead and start now! The “Firsts Clear” achievement is right in front of our eyes!”

“WOAH! Let’s go!”

The party marched into the boss’ chamber with big smiles on their faces. The fight started with Zhang Yang’s <Charge>.

To maximize damage output, Zhang Yang prioritized his attack using <Cripple Defense>, adding 5 stacks to reduce 50% of the boss’ defense value. Being a physical type, it naturally had a high defense value. Reducing 50% of his defense was equivalent to reducing 30 Defense attribute. 30 Defense value was not much but it was enough to help Hundred Shots and Fatty Han; classes that used Dexterity as their main attribute.

Zhang Yang had the passive <Eagle Eye> skill, along with 5 stacks of <Cripple Defense>, ignoring a total of 100% defense. Zhang Yang’s attack was directly attacking with 0 Defense damage reduction, it felt as if he was attacking a completely naked boss! This kind attack was significant.

The higher the player’s level, there more skill that was available for them to use. The problem with having too many skill was the priority of it. To be able to use different kinds of skills in different kinds of situations was the key factor to differentiating a rare professional and a common casual. Both of those players could

have the same equipment set and the same level, but they could not deal the same damage output. One would deal an extremely high damage while the other gives out a normal amount. This was the importance of prioritizing skills in situation.

Under Zhang Yang's guidance, Fatty Han formed his own attacking strategy and made obvious progress. Zhang Yang was not familiar with the Hunter class' skills and tactics even with his 5 years rebirth experience as he played the game as a Guardian previously. He could only teach Fatty Han the most common skill rotations to maximize his character potential.

Zhang Yang had his eyes on Drizzler, though. Drizzler was a battle-driven girl. She liked to fight and compared her damage with others. Because of that, she was willing to learn new tactics and skill rotations to further increase her damage output! The one that had made the most obvious improvement was Drizzler!

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu has the effect of <Open Wound>. Receiving 100 physical damage every second for 20 seconds!’

A debuff icon appeared on Zhang Yang's head. ‘-80!’ red damage text popped repeatedly above him.

Before the skill was cast, Little Snow was having the time of her life, healing slowly and leisurely. After the debuff appeared and Zhang Yang HP was slowly draining off, she began to frantically cast her <Healing Spell>.

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu had received <Smash>! Stunned for 2

seconds!’

Several stars could be seen above Zhang Yang’s head, and he could not control his body. He began to sway his body back and forward, head bobbing around like a drunkard.

‘-304!’

‘-312!’

‘-80!’

‘-309!’

‘-318!’

‘-80!’

Earth Spirit Oz was as in a frenzy. In just two seconds, Oz had attacked Zhang Yang with four consecutive strikes. With the damage <Open Wound> had caused, Zhang Yang HP was instantly robbed away by 1403 points! Luckily Zhang Yang swapped a new helm earlier, raising his already beefy HP to 18401 even then it was still not enough!

It was only after the attacks that Little Snow’s <Higher Healing> conjured, healing Zhang Yang with a ray of light.

‘+395’

Half a second later, <Regeneration> also healed another ‘+120’, recovering almost half of Zhang Yang’s HP.

Having only half of his full HP, Zhang Yang had no time to catch his breath. The boss’ right fist was in front of him, flying right into his face! Zhang Yang dodged it but another left fist came flying just as quickly! His quick judgment concluded that he could evade that strike, so he quickly raised his shield and used <Block>!”

Even though this boss had double physical attacks, it was still just as agile as a thief. Each time Oz attacked with both fists, Zhang Yang could only physically dodge the right fist but used <Block> against the other. He was not able to dodge both!

Little Snow was still not done with her healing. She quickly chanted a <Higher Healing> and after a ‘+387’, Zhang Yang’s HP was no longer in the danger zone!

“My god, this is tiring!”

The first few seconds after the battle started was already as exciting as it was. She felt like her heart and lungs were going to burst out of excitement!

“Xixi, who asked you to be a Priest!” Drizzler tried to provoke her cousin.

“Aiya. Only a Priest is suitable for a person like me.” Little Snow purposely patted her overwhelming chest and winked at Drizzler. “F-L-A-T~”

Drizzler face was flushed with rage. “Han Yin Xue! Enough with my boobs!”

‘Ding! Earth Spirit Oz has gained <Growth> effect (1 stack). All physical attacks are increased by 5%!’

“Guys! There’s always a time and place for everything, and we can’t joke around right now. Don’t be slacking on the attack and healing! Look, the boss had gained a buff! If I was in danger before, imagine how I would be when the boss stacks up his <Growth>. I’d be ready to meet my maker soon!” Zhang Yang scolded.

‘Ding! Earth Spirit Oz had used <Earth Spear>!’

Zhang Yang quickly looked down to his feet to check, and a black goo-ish mud puddle appeared underneath. Zhang Yang hurriedly moved away from the circular area and shouted when he was safe from the skill.

“Everyone! Be careful! Check your ground!”

Shing! Shing! Shing!

The sound of clashing metal could be heard as 7 to 8 razor sharp stone pillars pierced out from the muddy puddle. After a split

second, the pillars retracted back into the puddle, and then reappeared the next second.

Fatty Han tightened his butt, thinking something naughty is his mind.

“Hey, if I was actually pierced by these things in the ass, is it considered an\*l sex?”

“@#\$%! Go to hell!”

“Fatty Bro, you’re so perverted!”

“You seriously need some help.”

“Die, you sick son of a b\*tch!”

When everyone was having fun laughing and scolding, the boss gained another buff, increasing its damage by 110%.

80%, 70%, 60%!

At the same time, the boss’ HP was dropping as well. After all, there were 3 strong attackers, with Zhang Yang having the stronger attacks!

40%!



‘Ding! Earth Spirit Oz has gained <Growth> effect (8 stack). ). All physical attacks are increased by 40%!’

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu received <Smash>! Stunned for 2 seconds!’

Again, Zhang Yang had stars circling around his head.

‘-423!’

‘-112!’

‘+120’

‘-432!’

‘-427!’

‘+398’”

‘-112!’

‘-431!’

Zhang Yang’s heart jumped with the same feeling as riding a roller coaster. Luckily, Little Snow managed to slide in a <Higher

Healing> and a <Regeneration>. If it were not for those two skills, Zhang Yang would have already sent to the revive point.

“Phew!” Zhang Yang let out a sigh of relief. He then dodged one of the boss’s fist and used <Block> on the other, giving enough time for Little Snow to chant another <Higher Healing>.

“You know...You should get yourself a skill book called <Holy Shield>. That way, both you and I won’t have to fear of getting a heart attack every time we fight a boss of this caliber!”

[Holy Shield]: Cast a magic shield that will absorb damage equal to the caster's 200% magic damage. Last for 30 seconds. Cooldown time: 15 seconds. Instant casting.

Instant casting. That was the most valuable point of Holy Shield. The absolute trump card to save a life.

“I’m but penniless. Would you like to buy it for me?” Little Snow winked around crazily.

“Cousin! Please stop doing that! I’m completely ashamed by you!”

“Would you guys stop doing that! Please focus on the boss! If it boss gets any stronger, I’ll be dead by the next <Smash>!” Zhang Yang scolded. He did not sound normal anymore.

30%... 20% ... 10%... 7%!

‘Ding! Earth Spirit Oz has gained <Growth> effect (12 stack). All physical attacks are increased by 60%!’

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu received <Smash>! Stunned for 2 seconds!’

‘-492!’

‘+120!’

‘-487!’

‘-128!’

‘-489!’

‘-481!’

‘-128!’

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu had died!’

Little Snow failed to cast her <Higher Healing> in time which led to Zhang Yang’s defeat.

“Don’t give up! Continue attacking! There’s only 6% left! Fight for your life!”

5%!

Once Zhang Yang fell, Drizzler immediately became Oz’s punching bag. It turned around and started to attacking furiously!

‘Ding! Player Drizzler had died!’

4%!

‘Ding! Player Slim and Handsome had died!’

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots had died!’

‘Ding! Player Little Snow had died!’

Complete annihilation.

“Sigh...”

The team appeared at the revive point and sighed together. Wiped out at 4%, what a waste!

“Little Snow, the next time I get <Smash>, don’t use <Higher Healing>. Instead, switch to <Holy Prayers>. Even though the

recovery rate for <Holy Prayers> is slower but the incantation is much faster! <Higher Healing> requires two seconds to cast, but <Holy Prayers> only needs 1.5 seconds so it can be cast in between the two-second stun! If you used <Higher Healing>, you might have been in time to save me!” Zhang Yang gave a long talk to Little Snow, trying to help her revise her healing tactics.

“Remember, once I’m out of the stun, I’ll use <Block> immediately. You will have enough time to cast <Higher Healing>!”

“Okay!” Little Snow nodded obediently. She looked like she was blaming herself for the team’s downfall. Even though it was not her fault to begin with, she did feel a little guilty for the waste of effort. It’s rare to see her obedient face, not winking around like a madwoman.

Shush!

Another five souls appeared at the revive point. They were the The Dominators. Humbly Gentleman was not among the party, which meant the party was the secondary raiding team.

“Hey! Where did you guys die at?” one of the party members from The Dominator screamed.

Zhang Yang looked at Fatty Han with a certain look in his eye. Fatty Han quickly caught his intention and replied, “The first boss!”

“F\*cking hell! They’re actually the same as us!”

“Tch! So what if they’re at the same stage as us! The important thing is the boss, not the minions!”

The Dominators started to discuss among themselves.

“Hey, neighbor! We managed to damage it up to 60% HP left. What about you guys?”

Fatty Han looked at Zhang Yang, who was smiling silly.

“Better than you did! We were at 40%!”

The five of them exchanged a look and smiled sly-fully. They switched to party channel and said, “Hah! Only 40%! Boss was already beaten down till 20%. Just a few more and we’ll win this match for sure!”

## Chapter 54: The Second First-Clear Achievement

---

“Hey! That’s mean!” Drizzler laughed underneath her covered mouth.

“Little brat! What do you know! This is called deception in war!” Fatty Han was trying mimic the looks of the great philosopher Zhu Ge Liang.

“Drizzler! That’s called ‘Learning from Experience’! Even in game he would use some kind of trickery to deceit others. Obviously, he would also be a swindler in reality! Drizzler, you must take this chance to learn. Next time, when you see someone like Fatty, you’d better get far, far away from him!”

Drizzler stood upright and saluted her like a soldier to a captain. “Sir! Yes Sir!”

Everyone laughed at the cousin’s skit.

Fatty Han quickly tried to rectify to situation. “Hey! I have the 4 virtues of a youngster! It’s just you guys who could not recognize it!”

“Which four?” said Hundred Shots. Being the silent type, he rarely participated in talks but since the mood got quite rowdy, he decided to join in.

“I’m a little greedy!”

“A little horny!”

“A little baddie!”

“A little fatty!”

“Oh my god...” All four of them pointed their middle fingers at Fatty Han.

Once that was over, the team revived themselves and ran over to the second boss. Everyone sat outside the boss’s chamber to consume some health recovery items.

“Alright, all set! Let’s go!”

<Charge>! <Charge>!

Both Zhang Yang and Drizzle activated <Charge> at almost the same time. They dashed through the floor and arrived in front of the boss.

<Provoke>!

Zhang Yang immediately locked on to the boss’s aggro. He used <Block> and a normal attack after, damaging the boss with his



sword.

‘-335!’

He gained 34 Rage and immediately he used <Cripple Defense> and <Horizontal Sweep>. Zhang Yang managed to stack two layers of <Cripple Defense> as soon as the two seconds of <Provoke> wore off.

Earth Spirit Oz grumbled and opened its mouth.

“Invaders. Oz will not allow you to destroy Lord Marzerway’s plans to destroy all of humanity!” After the opening speech was over, Oz began to charge towards Zhang Yang.

“Huh... human annihilation. I guess that is the only dream all bad guys could ever have!” Drizzler scoffed.

“Actually, Marzerway is the victim here. Quite the pity as well.” Zhang Yang explained while he swung his sword.

“Huh?”

“Didn’t you read the official introduction?” Zhang Yang sounded disappointed. “Sigh, every dungeon has their own lore!”

“Well, Fatty here doesn’t care about that. All I want is the equipment!”

“I just care about the gold pieces!”

“...”

“Really?! Come on guys! The developers put their hearts and souls into making this game to be as detailed for the sake of the players! What you have done is spat on the efforts the developers! What a waste of a beautiful game!” Zhang Yang shook his head in disappointment.

“Tch! What an elderly act. You’ll surely be elderly soon enough!” Drizzler scorned.

“Alright... Let’s hear it out. What’s the story?” Little Snow resumed her pace, winking about again.

“In the lore, Marzerway was a famous Spellcaster who was part of a Spellcaster guild in the Empire’s Royal Family. A few years back, he joined the army to fight against the invading specters, leaving behind his loving wife in the hands of a noble. Little did he know that the noble tainted his wife, causing her to grieve, and she eventually killed herself. When Marzerway returned, and found out the truth of his wife’s death, he sought out to have his revenge. Sadly, he was deemed a traitor to the empire. Hated by all, he was imprisoned, waiting to be executed.” Zhang Yang looked around. Everyone was listening carefully.

“Anguish and despair beyond any human can endure, Marzerway surrendered his soul to the demon and exchanged it for unlimited

power. He escaped the prison and desecrated the Snow Sprite City, killing everyone and everything in it! After that, Marzerway occupied the city and summoned countless of elemental monsters to defend the city against the Empire's army." Zhang Yang finished his story and look around again. He suddenly yelled.

"F\*ck! Why are you guys just standing there! We're still in the middle of a fight!"

The four of them were shaken, as if they were woken up from a dream. Drizzler bit her lips.

"Aw...Marzerway is quite pity!"

"Ah... this truly is sad. If only I can get married to someone as loyal as Marzerway... that would be nice!" Little Snow had a yearning kind of tone in her voice.

'Cousin! What's the use if he is just loyal? A true gentleman must be straight forward, brave, handsome and cool! If he is anything like Fatty Han, then you might as well give up." Drizzler giggled and turned around to make sure he heard what she said.

Fatty Han shriveled up. He only joked around to cheer the party, and now he made himself public enemy number 1. How did it turn out this way?

"Foolish intruders! Taste my wrath!" A red glow covered entire Oz's body, increasing his power by a level.

‘Ding! Earth Spirit Oz has gain a <Growth> effect (1 stack). All physical attack is increased by 5%!’

“Crap! No time to play around anymore guys! Strike him with all you’ve got!”

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu received <Smash>! Stunned for 2 seconds!’

‘-305!’

‘-316!’

‘-84!’

‘+120!’

‘-312!’

‘+297!’

‘-301!’

‘-84!’

This round, Little Snow used <Holy Prayers > instead of <Higher

Healing >. With only 1.5 second casting time, she could easily heal in between the boss' furious attack. After enduring that barrage of attack, Zhang Yang's HP remained at around 900. He then evade one attack, and used <Block> on the other, giving Little Snow enough room to cast <Higher Healing>. After he was healed, his HP was back to 70%.

90%, 80%.... the boss' HP dropped continuously and it was not slowing down. However, the boss was also growing in damage. 5%, 10%, 15%...

“Alright, this is going well. Guys! Maintain this pace and we can surely win this round!” Zhang Yang encouraged the party.

“Pathetic little intruders! I will crush all if you into smithereens!” Earth Spirit Oz growled. The red glow engulfed his body over and over again and when Oz's HP reached 10%, he stacked over 12 layers of <Growth>!

“Here comes the most dangerous time!”

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu received <Smash>! Stunned for 2 seconds!’

‘-487!’

‘-128!’

‘+120!’

‘-482!’

‘-489!’

‘+302!’

‘-128!’

‘-491!’

After a serious beating, Zhang Yang’s HP stopped at 57 points!  
The boss has yet to stop attacking!

‘Evade!’

‘<Block>!’

Zhang Yang quickly consumed a bottle of red potion while waiting for Little Snow to heal him.

‘+399!’

The potion’s healing only managed to put him out of the danger zone, but he was still not out of trouble!

9%, 8%, 7%... Death was inevitable!

4%!

3%!

2%!

1%!

0%!

“Oh... L-Lord Mar... Marzerway will resurrect me a-again! I-I will....c-crush...” With its last dying words, Oz came crashing onto the floor.

“WE DID IT!” Finally, they did it. All of them let out a sigh of relief and cheered.

‘Ding! You can the party member around had killed Earth Spirit Oz. Obtaining 26,450 Experience points (50 party bonus point)!’

‘Ding! Your party has successfully conquered Marzerway’s Lair: Front Wing (Hardcore Mode) and obtained the “First Clear” Achievement! This glorious accomplishment will be recorded in the Hardcore First Clear Achievement Board. As the party leader, please name your party!’

Zhang Yang paused and thought for a while. He turned around and said, “Hey little brat, I’ll key in your guild’s name into this achievement for 1,000 gold pieces! How does that sound?”

“Wah! Come on, uncle. We’re so close to each other now! Would you still charge us for it?” Drizzler screamed and shouted. To take her money was on the same level as robbing a bank; there would be resistance.

“Haha! Friendship is one thing, business is another! Come on! Pay up!” Zhang Yang continued to play with her.

“Awww...” Drizzler then tried to follow Little Snow’s seductive behavior by trying to wink. After so much effort, all she could only manage to close one of her eye. It’s freaking tiresome! Drizzler gave up and stomped the ground. “Ah, well. How about I offer you Little Snow’s nudes! Yeah. You heard it right! Her nudes!”

Little Snow’s eyebrow twitched. “Ahem! You little witch, what are you blabbering about?” A seductive look naturally formed.

“Are you for real?!” Fatty Han got excited. Everyone could see a pinkish erotic aura emitting from him.

“Of course it’s real!” Drizzler patted her chest.

Little Snow did not really care at first but when she saw Drizzler smiling ear to ear, she began to feel that something was wrong.



“You couldn’t possibly be serious...”

“HEHE!”

“You brat, when did you...?”

“You always like to leave the door open whenever you take a bath. I was just passing by one time and when you didn’t notice my presence, I took a picture!”

“Oh no you little witch! YOU’RE SO DEAD WHEN I GET MY HANDS ON YOU!” Little Snow voice became louder.

Fatty Han took the opportunity to sneak in.

“Hey, hey Little Drizzler, since WE are also quite close... so...”

“Hey, hey! We’re not that close!” Drizzler played along.

Zhang Yang laughed.

“This time I’ll key in your guild name. The next dungeon, I’ll key in my own guild name!”

“Eh? When did you join a guild?” Little Snow asked.

“No. Not yet. After these two dungeons, Fatty Han, Hundred

Shots, and I will establish a guild of our own. How about it? Feel like coming over to this side?” Zhang Yang gazed at the two girls. There were fine specimens after all!

“Why so troublesome?” Drizzler pouted her lips. “Why don’t you come to our guild? I’ll pass the guild master position to you!”

Zhang Yang was surprised. “Eh? You would do that?”

“It’s fine! My cousin and I established the guild just for the fun of it. Being a guild master is so troublesome after all. I had to do this and that, manage here and there... Argh! I’d wanted to quit for so long! To think that you could take over my position! I would be glad to pass it to you!” Drizzler sounded very decisive.

Zhang Yang could never have predicted this outcome.

“You’d better think this through and through. ‘God’s Miracle’ is not like any other VRMMORPG. In the future, the game will have so many more players joining in! You could basically call this game the ‘second Earth’! If the guild is managed properly, you could earn a living from the income!”

“Yeah, yeah. How could you talk so much? It’s so annoying! Ain’t that right, cousin?”

“Em, that’s right. Besides, in less than a month, Drizzler will heading back to school. She won’t have much time to play this game anymore. It’s would be in the best of interest if you took over

the guild!” Little Snow nodded.

Zhang Yang felt bad for those under these two lazy bums. He would not mind to take over the guild’s responsibility at the least. He thought for a while and considered it.

“Alright then, in that case, add all 3 of us into the guild! Fatty Han, quit your guild now!”

Fatty Han was a little unwilling, “Sigh... if someone as handsome and cool as me left that guild, I’m afraid those pretty chicks would go crazy without me!”

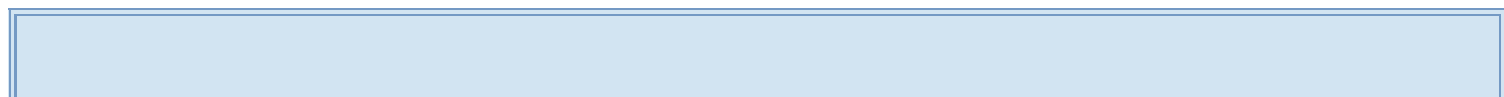
‘Ding! Player Drizzler has invited you to join her guild: Lone Desert Smoke. Will you accept her invitation?’

Zhang Yang entered the guild. After a short while, he saw the guild notification refreshed.

Player Slim and Handsome has joined the guild.

Player Hundred Shots has joined the guild.

Zhang Yang then keyed in the name Lone Desert Smoke as the party name and selected “Confirm”. The server channel then dyed in red again.



‘Server announcement: Party Lone Desert Smoke has obtained the First Clear Achievement: Marzerway’s Lair, Front Wing (Hardcore mode). This glorious achievement will be recorded in the Hardcore First Clear Achievement Board (China Server)!’

‘Server announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Party Leader) has obtained the First Clear Achievement: Marzerway’s Lair, Front Wing (Hardcore mode). Obtaining 10 gold pieces, 1 Skill point, and 500 increased all races reputation from the system reward!’

‘Server announcement: Player Drizzler...’

## Chapter 55: Onward To The Middle Wing

---

After the server announcement flooded the entire server channel, all 20 men from The Dominators and Sky High were left stunned. Those that were not in the midst of battle were fine, but the other 15 people; 3 teams of 5 players were instantly distracted and got killed off and appeared at the revive point.

The results were far too much for them to take in! Who were they to even compete with Zhang Yang's team when they were still struggling at the first boss of the dungeon?

...

At Crimson Rage's side...

"Sister Snow! It happened, just like you said it will!" Thorny Rose cried out admirably as Fire Spirit Farr's body fell defeated. "How did you do it?! How did you know that Zhan Yu's team would be the first to win the Front Wing's dungeon? If we had followed along to take on the Front Wing, we'd be crying our eyes out by now!"

Thorny Rose and the rest of the Crimson Rage party were currently in the Middle Wing dungeon.

During the start of the fight, Crimson Rage's two 5-man party first entered the Front Wing dungeon. However, after two minutes in, they quickly switched and headed to the Middle Wing instead!

According to the official website, the Middle Wing's bosses were level 23 and level 24 while the Front Wing bosses were level 21 and level 22. Normally, players would choose to tackle on the easy ones first and left the harder selection for later on. However, Crimson Rage guild master had a different way of approaching this matter. She chose the other way around to conquer the dungeon!

Snow Seeker raised an eye brow and smiled lightly. "Even though I may have predicted that Zhan Yu's team would be the one who will claim the 'First Clear' achievement, but I could not have foreseen that they could complete the dungeon in such a groundbreaking speed! Sure, we might have defeated the first boss, but Zhan Yu's team already cleared the Front Wing and may be proceeding to the Middle Wing, and if he does, not even I would how that will turn out!"

"How could this be?" Thorny Rose expressed her disbelief. "We have gained the Boss' information beforehand and had several days ahead to devise a strategy! We even died several times to win this boss! Don't tell me that they also had a relative in the development team!?"

Snow Seeker thought it through and shook her head at the impossibility.

"According to my brother, during the boss skill design phase, everyone will be in charge of their own department. There was absolutely no interaction nor communication between departments! Furthermore, the initial designer and the editor were strangers who did not have any connections. There was no possible

way that a person would have the knowledge of all the boss's skill! We only knew about the first boss' skills and gone through hell and back for the second boss' skills!"

Snow Seeker stopped her speech suddenly and realized something far more important.

"I for one, hope that Zhan Yu had gotten himself some information leak. Or else, how could you explain his incredible speed at clearing the Front Wing dungeon?" She shook her head to get rid of that frightening thought.

"Everyone! Get yourself together, even though we are one step ahead of them, we must not let down our guard! They are... strong!"

"HUURAH!"

...

For some members of Lone Desert Smoke, they were excited when Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots, and Slim and Handsome joined the guild. That was, however, just the tip of the iceberg. When the server channel was flooded with the server announcement of their achievement, things got even wilder! For almost half day long, the guild channel was just as noisy as a subway station! Chattering and cheering were everywhere! Even though they did not contribute into the party in taking the "First Clear" Achievement, they still praised and bragged around about their guild!

‘Player Drizzler has surrendered the Guild Master position to Player Zhan Yu. Player Zhan Yu is now the current Guild Master!’

Another important news!

Even so, members of Lone Desert Smoke did not express any objection to this matter! They were actually happy with the change! After all, they have all heard of the name “Zhan Yu”. The guild members were happy and contented to have a professional commander like Zhan Yu to lead the guild to glory!

“So guys... should we just rest a bit or do we go on to raid the Middle Wing?” Little Snow asked Zhan Yang.

“Strike the iron while it’s hot! Of course, we shall move on!” Zhang Yang laughed loudly. Pointing at the corpse, he continued, “However, let’s distribute the equipment first!”

“Oh! Oh! Me! Me! Let me open it!” Drizzler jumped like a rabbit and quickly touched the corpse.

[Heavy Stone Boots] (Green-Copper, Metal Armor)

Defense: +6

Vitality: +12



Strength: +6

Dexterity: +2

Level requirement: 2

“Tch! Hey! Take this boot and raise your pathetic HP amount!” Drizzler rejected her roll for the equipment. “Don’t get yourself killed in just one strike!”

It was not just Drizzler who had the thought to prioritize the main tanker’s equipment; it was in everyone’s mind as well. They started to get a little cautious ever since they witnessed the sheer attack power of a Hardcore-level boss. Zhang Yang laughed guiltily. He too knew that he needed to pump up his HP to face a Herculean-like boss in the Hardcore Dungeon. He put on the new equipment and also invested the SP he gained on <Block>, reducing its cooldown time to only 5 seconds.

“Friends of Lone Desert Smoke! Congratulations on obtaining the ‘First Clear’ Achievement! I represent The Dominators to congratulate you on this awesome achievement!” Humbly Gentleman posted in the local channel.

“Hmph! What you say doesn’t match your intention! Gentleman, my ass!” someone from Sky High began insulting to provoke.

“Huh? Where did this barking dog came from?!” Members from

The Dominator started to retaliate.

Sky High did not want to admit defeat, and they started to return their insults. Eventually the entire local channel was flooded with words of scorn and abuses.

Zhang Yang’s team started to feel a little annoyed. With a flick of a button, they turned off the local server feed and the whole world went dead silent.

[Blinders Skirt] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +16

Intelligence: +16

Spirit: +6

Level requirement: 20

This equipment obviously belonged to Little Snow.

[Lined Cape] (Green-Copper, Cape)

Vitality: +6

Dexterity: +4

Equip effect: Increase 1% critical strike.

Level requirement: 20

Only Dexterity and no Strength, this equipment was obviously suitable for either a Thief or a Hunter.

Just when Fatty Han wanted Hundred Shots to have the item, Hundred Shots rejected his chance to roll.

“Fatty, it’s fine now. My equipment is quite strong. You don’t need to give it up anymore! From now on, let’s just roll for the next equipment fair and square!”

“Alright then!” Fatty Han nodded and accepted the cape.

The party then ran towards the dungeon entrance. Fatty Han suddenly turned around and asked Zhang Yang, “Hey Little Yang, are there any hidden bosses in this dungeon?”

Zhang Yang shook his head. “Not all dungeons have hidden bosses. As for Marzerway’s Lair, there are no hidden bosses in any of the three dungeons!”

After a while, the party got out from the Front Wing and entered the left entrance of the dungeon.

“Ding! You have entered Marzerway’s Lair: Middle Wing (Hardcore Mode)!”

The atmosphere and background of this new dungeon was exactly the same as the previous one. The only difference was the monster patrolling inside were now fire elementals.

[Demonized Fire Elemental] (Elite)

Level: 22

HP: 6,000

There were so many monsters here; too many in fact! With just a look, it felt like the room was cramped and tight.

“So-freaking many!” Fatty Han took in a deep breath.

“Yeah. The monsters here are far stronger than before. They’re

all magic attack types. They just love to spew fireball at you and those are painful as f\*ck!” Zhang Yang explained. “However, the good thing is that their HP is very low. They are about half of those elite monsters. We can just use our AoE attacks and they can be killed off easily.”

Zhang Yang walked ahead and used <Charge> to initiate the fight.

Zhang Yang cut down one of the monsters for 342 damage and gained 36 Rage. He immediately used <Horizontal Sweep>.

‘-701!’

‘-745!’

‘-726!’

Many more damage texts overlapped each other in the tight crowded space.

A total of 8 fire elementals had their targets set to Zhang Yang and began conjuring fireballs.

The team followed up and started unleashing their AoE skills like <Barrage> and <Tornado Cleave>.

3 seconds later, the monsters finished casting their spells and

threw 8 fireball towards Zhang Yang. A barrage of attacks landed on Zhang Yang, causing ‘-122’, ‘-119’, and ‘-125’ damage to him. Zhang Yang lost around 1000 HP in this wave.

Little Snow was prepared for it. The moment she saw damage texts popping out on Zhang Yang’s head, she waved her hand and used <Higher Healing> on him, restoring 400 HP. At the same time, <Regeneration> healed him for 130 HP every 3 seconds. 2 seconds later, Little Snow conjured another <Higher Healing> and healed Zhang Yang almost to his full HP.

Boom!

Another 8 fireballs landed on Zhang Yang.

“Argh....I don’t want to do this anymore...This is so tiring!” But being the only healer in the party, Little Snow had to continue her healing alone or else Zhang Yang would die and the whole team would be defeated.

30 seconds into the battle and all of the minions were killed off, granting the party immense experience points.

Little Snow jeered at the hallway and saw waves and waves of minions patrolling. She turned sour and said, “God, how long would this last!”

“Cousin, I’ll give you a back massage after all these minions. Is that good enough?”

Fatty Han suddenly gave a lusty expression. “Pressing and pushing is something only Fatty can do best! I’d tell you, no one else could do it better! Little Snow, take my number and call me whenever you’re in the mood for a back massage. I’ll be over in a jiffy!”

Drizzler walked over to Fatty Han and observed his fleshy hands.

“Huh. Now that I’ve seen your hand. I finally understand why the Mandarin language has the phrase ‘Salty Pig Hands’, you pervert!”

Everyone laughed for a bit and moved on forward.

The monsters were indeed strong and their attacks were stronger, but the only person working furiously was Little Snow, while the rest of the party were calm and relax all the way.

20 minutes later, they finally arrived at the first boss.

[Fire Spirit Anni] (Green-Copper)

Level: 23

HP: 138k

Standing at 10 meters tall, the gigantic elemental spirit was burning away like a huge bon fire pillar. In this enormous palace, there were no other minions around anymore.

“Alright, rape our ears, Little Yang!”

Zhang Yang shook his head and sighed. He then began to explain the boss’ strategy and skills.

“As you could guess, the boss is a Spellcaster class. Its physical attacks are not strong so it will cast <Flame Shot> at the person with the most aggro. The skill has a 3 second casting delay and deals 1,000 damage per shot! Little Snow, just give up! As the only healer in this Hardcore Mode dungeon, it is your fate to heal till you drop!”

Fatty Han laughed and said, “Little Snow, just give up and listen to Little Yang!”

“Pervert Fatty!”

“Pervy Brothers!”

The girls scolded together.

Zhang Yang expressed innocence. “Hey! Why am I in the same category as him?”



Little Snow replied, “Birds of the same feather...”

“...flock together!” Drizzler continued her cousin’s idiom. “The two of you looked like brothers in arms. That is why both of you must share the same bad habit!”

“What!? Argh! A gentleman must not be arguing with a lady!” Zhang Yang gave up and used an escape card to avoid the argument. He then continued his boss explanation. “The boss’ second skill is called <Knockback>. This skill will cause every target in its effective range to be knocked back 3 meters behind, and will also receive 500 fire damage. At the same time, the target will be inflicted with a debuff called <Combustible>, causing all fire magic damage to be increased by 50%! The debuff is quite dangerous. If I’m hit with <Flame Shot> and <Knockback> while gaining the <Combustible> debuff, I will receive about 1,800 damage! I will be instantly killed if I were to receive that combo without a full HP status!”

## Chapter 56: Fire Spirit Farr

---

“Its third skill is called <Lava Flow>.” Zhang Yang continued to explain the boss’ skills. “Once it’s activated, eight rivers of lava will flow out in a specific pattern with the boss at its center. The lava will continue to flow for 30 seconds so remember to avoid it at all cost! Anyone standing in it will take 500 damage!”

“Hmm, sounds pretty simple. We should be fine as long as we can avoid the lava!”

“The fourth skill...”

“Holy crap, there’s a fourth skill?! Little Yang, please finish your sentence! Don’t leave us hanging here!”

Zhang Yang laughed at Fatty Han.

“The fourth skill is quite simple. For every party member’s death, the boss gains 50% damage increase; which is why you have to survive at all costs! In summary, stay alive and don’t die!”

“Let’s go!”

<Charge>!

“Ho! Where did these pests come from? How dare you step into my domain! Hmph! Water Spirit and Earth Spirit are completely

useless! How could they let these pests get past them?”

Being completely immune to <Charge>’s stunning effect, Farr raised its fiery fists and hurled them at Zhang Yang. “Hahaha! I will burn your soul into the depths of the abyss! Enjoy wandering forever, never to return!”

“Little Yang, is it just me, or does this boss love to talk a lot?” Fatty Han asked while firing a shot.

“Yeah, I feel the same way too! Zhan Yu, this boss could actually be on the same level as you! Annoying as hell!”

Drizzler used <Charge> to dash towards the boss and began hacking and slashing. Noticing high damage texts that were popped out rapidly, her face flushed with excitement.

Hmph, if I were to keep my mouth shut, do you think we could reach to this stage?

Zhang Yang had a little monologue and smiled bitterly by himself.

“Some boss’ difficulty factor lies on their attack and skill. For others, like this one, have another way to annoy players, and that’s through trash-talking!”

Fatty Han laughed. “Huh? Trash-talking? Can they actually do that?”

“Yeah, just wait for it! This will be our first encounter of a trash-talking boss!”

While they were happily conversing, Zhang Yang had already stacked 5 layers of <Cripple Defense> and made the vulnerable boss even more vulnerable.

“You stinky piece of walking flesh! I’ll use my flame to burn all of you into roasted meat, and then I’ll eat you for dinner!”

Fire Spirit Farr began to chant <Flame Shot>. Three seconds later, a giant fireball flew rapidly towards Zhang Yang. He could not block nor escape from it and took a hit while simultaneously a huge ‘-800’ damage text flew across his head.

“Haha! Foolish mortals! How does it feel being burnt into a crisp?” Fire Spirit Farr then switched to its fiery first to strike. “Perhaps I shall keep your skeletons and fashion them into a table! That would be a perfect decoration for my palace!”

After a few fist attacks, Fire Spirit Farr started to chant a <Flame Shot>. Being a Spellcaster-class monster, it would naturally prioritize its magic attacks as it’s main.

Boom! A fireball flew off, hitting Zhang Yang again.

“Impossible! You, a mere mortal withstanding my almighty attack! No! Why are you still alive?! NO! You must die! You must

die NOW!” Fire Spirit Farr growled loudly.

‘Ding! Fire Spirit Farr is enraged!’

‘Ding! Fire Spirit Far has unleashed <Knockback>!’

A circular wall appeared with Farr at the center of it. The wall then blasted away in all directions and knocked back Zhang Yang and Drizzler, while leaving a debuff effect on them. “Foolish creatures! I will not hold back any longer!” The fire spirit then chanted another <Flame Shot>, aiming at Zhang Yang.

Fatty Han could not hold it in any longer. “What the hell?! This boss can really talk... a lot!”

Zhang Yang snickered, “Haha, trash-talk! This is considered as a challenge. Once you encountered enough of these kind of bosses, you’ll get used to it soon enough. Still, you wouldn’t really get yourself mad from a computer, right?”

Little Snow was holding on for quite some time, but eventually she lost it too. “Would you guys just kill it already?! I’m suffering here!”

After casting <Flame Shot>, Fire Spirit Farr scanned the party. “Hmph! You who would only sneak behind and attack, I will burn you all!”

Woosh! Eight rivers of lava flowed out from the boss’ body,

across the battlefield. Fatty Han and the rest managed to evade it by a hair's breadth, but the melee fighters did not have enough time to react at all. It was only luck that the boss' <Lava Flow> did not target a specific player. When the lava started to spew from the boss' body, it went past Zhang Yang and Drizzler, scaring the hell out of them!

90%, 80%, 70%... the boss quickly lost its HP at a fast pace. As it talked too much, the party began striking and shooting at their best and maybe even a little more as they were pretty much annoyed by the trash-talking.

“Despicable human! Curse you!” Fire Spirit Farr cried in pain after being attacked. “Let the flame cleanse you away!” Using <Knockback> again, the boss blasted his firewall everywhere and almost killed Zhang Yang with only over 600 HP left.

“Thank god this boss didn't curse my future baby child or something like that, or I'd be really furious!” Fatty Han said as he happily drew his bow and shot at his own pace.

“Slim and Handsome, you've been shooting for almost half a day, and yet nothing came out! How could you call yourself a man?”

That was it. Fatty Han stopped his attack suddenly and furiously walked up to the boss! “Who said I can't shoot it out?! People call me the '7 shot man'! I can shoot it out in five minutes! Hmph! I can't shoot? I'll shoot in your f\*cking face!”

“Hey, take a chill pill there, horny brother!”

“Disgusting prick!”

“Fatty, you just revealed your secret here!”

It was then Fatty Han realized that he had been played by a computer! How could he allow himself to be fooled by a computer to lose his temper?

“Haha! Fatty, I think you’ve completely tarnished your good name!” Zhang Yang laughed loudly.

“Oh, get out of there!” Fatty Han was angry right down to his bone. “This boss’ perverseness is just as good as mine!”

“Bullsh\*t! You’re the only one here with that kind of mind! The boss is insulting your marksmanship, not your... you know! Hey, Fatty Han. Could it be that a certain part of your body isn’t working properly? I know an old medical officer that lives just down the alley here...” Zhang Yang could not help himself to laugh even more.

“Mind your own business! My little brother is as fine as it is!” Fatty Han defended his own “ability.”

Fire Spirit Farr began provoking Hundred Shots as well, “Hundred Shots, you’ve been shooting for almost half a day, and yet nothing came out! How could you call yourself a man?”

Being Hundred Shots, the man that never lost his “chill”, he remained steady and undisturbed as he continued to fire his arrow unfazed.

“See that, Fatty Han? That’s what I call style. Cool as a cucumber!”

“Tch! Hundred Shots, tell me the truth now, how old are you?” Fatty Han asked.

Hundred Shot sniggered before he answered, “30!”

“When you are 30, you’ll have that problem. When you are 40, you can’t do anything about it besides having those thoughts! This is not style, it’s a fact! I’ll never have the problem about shooting it out!”

With this topic now in the air, not a single man would leave themselves undefended. Hundred Shots curved his lips and said, “Well, according to my wife, I’ve no problem with my little brother. And if it’s a problem, it’s not a problem at all!”

“Bullshit philosopher!”

Both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were surprised at Hundred Shot’s comment and laughed out loud.

“Hey, are you guys fighting or not?!” Drizzler angrily cried out. She could not take it any longer; it was not about the dirty adult



talks that revolved around their private matters, but the fact that she could not understand any bit of it! If she could not understand it, then it did not matter anymore!

“Drizzler! Are you giving me a massage? If that’s the case, it would be a waste! I could barely feel anything!” Fire Spirit Farr turned and pointed at Drizzler, starting to say something insulting again. “I will flatten you!”

“Huh? Flat? Flat chest? Did you just call me flat-chested!?” It’s hard not to admire how Drizzler interpreted that. From the word “flatten” to “flat chest”. Still, the angered little Drizzler was triggered to fight even wilder than ever!

Fatty Han laughed and said, “This boss sure is fun to play with!”

“Horny boss! Perverted Fatty!” Drizzler continued to land more hits on the monster.

“Hey, hey, hey! I’m a normal and serious man!” Fatty Han was quick to refute.

“Despicable mortal! Feel my wrath!”

Lava began to flow out again, causing the entire party to jump like cats and dogs. As the party regained their composure, the boss’ HP was left with only 20%.

“This boss is quite easy to defeat! If it wasn’t because of its crap, I

could fight this kind of boss anytime!”

Zhang Yang shook his head. “We were only lucky. We didn’t get hit by the <Flame Shot> and <Knockback> combo! That one is a lethal skill!”

15%, 10%, 7%... The boss’ HP continued to drastically drop.

5%, 3%...

Boom! A <Flame Shot> landed on Zhang Yang and reduced his HP down to 512 points. At that moment, the boss opened his mouth and said, “You’ve angered me, mortals!”

‘Ding! Fire Spirit Farr has unleashed <Knockback>!’

‘-600’

Zhang Yang was instantly killed by the attack.

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu has died!’

“Don’t stop! Kill it! Kill it!” Zhang Yang shouted.

‘Ding! Fire Spirit Farr has gained a <Sacrifice> effect. All attacks have been increased by 50%!’

“Haha! Delicious soul! I can feel my powers grow stronger!

Fire Spirit Farr’s body grew larger. Now that Zhang Yang died, the boss changed its target to the second most aggro player; Drizzler. Luckily, this boss did not have the tendency to use <Flame Shot>. Even if Drizzler was hit by a <Knockback>, it would only cause 450 damage and then kill her off easily with a few normal attacks. It did not need to use the 3-second delay <Flame Shot>!

2%, 1%...

‘-2250!’

Carrying the <Combustible> debuff, Drizzler was vulnerable to attacks. Even if Little Snow could heal her back to full HP, her pitiful 1200 HP could only withstand a single attack from the boss. Soon after, Drizzler also died.

‘Ding! Fire Spirit Farr has gained a <Sacrifice> effect. All attacks have been increased by 100%!’

“Such a wonderful feeling! My powers grow stronger again!” Fire Spirit Farr laughed evilly, and then turned to face Fatty Han and casted <Flame Shot>.

‘1200.’

‘950.’

‘740.’

The boss had a little over 1,000 HP left!

‘400.’

‘143.’

‘-2000!’ <Flame Shot> was cast. Fatty Han was defeated.

‘Ding! Fire Spirit Farr has gained a <Sacrifice> effect. All attacks have been increased by 150%!’

This time around, the boss did not cast a <Flame Shot>. It rushed over to Hundred Shots and attacked him with physical strikes.

‘-176!’

‘-413!’

A simultaneous attack came from both Hundred Shots and Little Snow.

“No, no, no! This isn’t happening! I am the Immortal Fire God! No one could have killed me! No...!” With an unwilling expression, Fire Spirit Farr fell defeated.

‘Ding! You and your party members have killed Fire Spirit Farr.  
Obtaining 69,050 Experience Points. (50 points party bonus)!’

## Chapter 57: Air Spirit Ains

---

Facing a Spellcaster-class monster would be quite troublesome if players did not possess any passive or automated damage reducing skills. Zhang Yang felt grateful that he could learn a particular skill when he reached Level 30. <Shield Wall> was an active skill that reduced 75% of all incoming attacks for 10 seconds. Before that, he could only fight hoping lady luck was on his side!

Zhang Yang stopped thinking and shouted, “Little Snow, revive me!”

Little Snow suddenly had an epiphany. “Wow, I never knew the experience points could be so much when there’s so few people standing! Hehehe... Maybe next time when the boss is almost down, I’ll let you guys just die off again!”

“Hey, hey, hey. Isn’t that a little too extreme?!”

“What do you think?” Little Snow threw a playful wink at Zhang Yang as she chanted the reviving spell.

“The deadliest housewife ever!” Zhang Yang shook his head, disappointed.

“What did you say?” Drizzler retaliated just as she revived. Zhang Yang walked over to Drizzler and patted her timid little head. “This doesn’t concern you, little brat. You’re still very far away from being a housewife!”

Little Snow, on the other hand, smiled sexily. “Hey, hey! This elder cousin is not a housewife!”

Sigh, she’s not even close to being a pretty lady but how could she have the nerve to behave like a supermodel?!

Zhang Yang did not want to waste more time and quickly commanded, “Open the corpse!”

“Ah hah! Mine!” Drizzler ran over and grabbed the chance to open the corpse.

Fatty Han sadly lost all his chances to open the corpse ever since Drizzler and her cousin joined the party. This little brat collects all the gold coins first like she always do, and only then would she get the equipment.

[Fiery Long Bow] (Green-Copper, Ranged Weapon)

Weapon attack: 99-117

Attack interval: 2.7 seconds

DPS: 40

Equip effect: Forged from the finest of flames, every attack

will have a 5% chance to inflict additional 50-70 fire damage.

Level requirement: 20

“Good hands, Drizzler! Very good indeed!” Zhang Yang laughed. “That’s an excellent piece of bow!” Drizzler was still a young little girl; immature and playful. She got happy and excited after being praised.

Hundred Shots, 79 points.

Fatty Han, 77 points.

“Fatty, I ain’t holding back now!” Hundred Shots swapped for the new equipment as soon as he obtained the weapon. Hundred Shots felt it was disgraceful to be lowest in damage output that tarnished his pride. He did not want people to think that he was dragging the team down!

Fatty Han smiled and waved his hand, “Don’t sweat it! We’re friends after all!”

Zhang Yang, being startled, forced himself to speak. “So far, our party composition doesn’t make sense. If there’s a Knight, Thief, or Spellcaster equipment, we’d have no choice but to auction it out! We’ll have to quickly set up another team, prioritizing class to not waste anymore equipment! With his 10-man party as a base, we can take on the Professional League. We can even take on the 10-



man dungeon, or perhaps even the 20-man!”

[Burning Chest Plate] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +22

Strength: +4

Dexterity: +14

Level requirement: 20

“A Hunter’s equipment again!”

“Fatty, you’d better take this one. I’ve already taken the bow!”  
Hundred Shots smiled.

Fatty Han took the equipment happily. A character’s damage depended highly on the weapon; Hundred Shots’ damage power increased to a certain degree after he obtained the new weapon. Fatty Han on the other hand needed a new armor as his HP was the lowest in the party.

Drizzler just began to scold the boss' dead body, "Tch! Stingy boss. Talk so much but so little equipment. Ptui! I spit on your corpse!"

"Ha! Drizzler, the boss might remember this and get back at you the next time we fight it!" Zhang Yang tried to frighten her, and it worked. What if they were to fight this boss again tomorrow and the boss called her "flat" a second time? What would she do then?!

When everything has settled down, the door behind the dead boss' body opened automatically, revealing the pathway that led them to the last boss, Air Spirit Ains. Naturally, they cleared the minions along the way and reached the end.

[Enraged Air Elemental] (Elite)

Level: 23

HP: 50,000

Almost all elemental monsters had the same appearance, the only difference was their color. Water was blue, Earth was brown, Fire was red, and Air was white. The monsters on the pathway were little, having only three to four monsters. However, their numbers matched evenly with their HP; one monster's HP was just as high as the boss'!

"Listen, this kind of monster is often called as Tank Slayer. They're very strong!" Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword. "Ok,

here I go!”

Zhang Yang used <Charge> and initiated the fight.

‘Dodge!’

‘Dodge!’

‘<Block>!’

‘Dodge!’

Zhang Yang moved around like a fish in the water. He evaded all the monster’s attacks with ease; not a single attack landed on him. Seeing Zhang Yang not taking any damage, she pouted her lips and complained, “Hey! Why did you say they were Tank Slayers? They look like nothing but easy kills!”

At that moment, Zhang Yang decided to prank Drizzler and smiled evilly, “Why don’t you try and use <Provoke>.”

Drizzler wanted to prove him wrong so badly that she did not give a second thought. She used <Provoke>.

‘-783!’

‘-832!’

‘Ding! Player Drizzler has died!’

“@#\$\$%! You sneaky little noob tank! I swear we will never get along ever!” Drizzler exploded in the party channel.

“Haha! I would say that you’re an ant who thinks it can carry an elephant, but you’ll only know it once you’ve tried it!” Zhang Yang justified his actions while at the same time slashing the monster.

“Bastard! You’ll pay for this!” Drizzler was both puffing with anger and sniffing in tears.

“Cousin! When the monster is left with 5% HP, let the noob tank die!”

“Haha, okay!” Little Snow played along.

Very soon, the monster’s HP dropped down to 5%, and Little Snow stopped her healing on Zhang Yang and hummed a random song. However, a Guardian would not have any trouble dodging and nullifying attacks when faced with a physical attack monster. Besides, the monster was just an Elite; its attack were not as fast nor as deadly as a boss, making it extremely easy for Zhang Yang to evade them. The monster fell before he could even lose all his HP.

“Pfft...” Zhang Yang held back his laughter. “R-Revive her!” he laughed.

Drizzler got back up to her feet. She was obviously angry; flares were coming out from her nostril and she stared at Zhang Yang with such wide eyes that you could tell the iris apart from the sclera.

As they continued to move on the pathway, they encountered more minions. They were strong, but Zhang Yang's party was not weak either. As troublesome as it may have seemed, the pathway had been cleared and they arrived at the boss' chamber 30 minutes later.

[Air Spirit Ains] (Green-Copper)

Level: 24

HP: 144K

The boss stood more than 20 meters tall. On its right hand, it was holding a heavy spear even taller than itself; it was weird it could still float so easily above ground. The battle would just be the same as the previous one; only the boss with no minions.

“Ahem!” Zhang Yang cleared his throat loudly, signaling that it was time for his speech.

“This boss is a physical attack type, and they are powerful! Its first skill is <Sonic Pierce>. This skill will be casted on the player with the highest aggro. One attack will deal about 1,500 damage, so Little Snow here will have to always make sure my HP has to

exceed 1,200 HP. I will also try to reserve <Block> for this as the skill would only trouble the tank and healer.” Zhang Yang paused. “Everyone alright so far?”

“Yeah!”

“Remember this, the second and third skill is very important to everyone. As soon as the battle starts, the boss will cast out 10 gas bombs. These bombs are homing projectiles and explode upon contact, causing 1,200 magic damage to everyone. Now, the good thing is that these bombs are not so fast, so maneuvering away would be easy!”

“Its third skill is probably the most bothersome one ever, <Summon Clouds>. These summoned clouds will chase you at an incredible speed. Now, the clouds itself do not attack but once it’s made contact with anyone, it will inflict a 10-second stun effect, proving enough time for the previous bombs to chase up to you!

These clouds can be destroyed! They’re about 5,000 HP; easily removed. That’s why once the boss releases the little clouds, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots will have to shoot them down. You guys have to make sure they don’t touch anyone!”

“This battle is about speed and movement. You can’t win this match solely by slouching and hitting the boss!”

“Hoho! This is interesting. Let’s give it a go!” Drizzler was breathing heavily with excitement, eager to fight the boss.

“Alright, let’s fight and get used to the tactics!” The five of them walked into the battlefield together.

“Here I go!” Zhang Yang initiated the battle with <Charge>.

“To see you standing here in this battle proves that all of you have the potential! But your fight ends here, for I will crush you personally!” Air Spirit Ains swung its spear and furiously thrust it at Zhang Yang.

‘Dodged!’

Zhang Yang spread out. The boss’ attack was fast, but as long as it was not a skill attack, he could still continue to evade the attacks.

After equipping the new bow, Hundred Shots attacking power reached to that of Drizzler, surpassing even Fatty Han’s attack power! Aside from Little Snow the Healer, everyone’s attacking power was considered above average. In less than 10 minutes, the boss has lost 10% HP!

“Detestable pest! Die!” Air Spirit Ains let out a loud growl, releasing ten of 1 meter wide white-colored gas sphere from his body. It slowly floated across the battlefield and started chasing everyone.

‘Ding! Air Spirit Ains has unleashed <Air Bomb>!’

“Here come the bombs, guys! Mind your steps!” Zhang Yang

pulled the boss and started to shift his position away from the incoming <Air Bomb>.

“Puny mortal! I will crush you!” A red light glimmered across the boss’ body. It then raised its spear.

‘Ding! Air Spirit Ains has used <Sonic Pierce>!’

Zhang Yang’s athletic was immediately triggered, activating <Block> in crucial moments.

‘<Block>!’

‘-117!’ <Block> reflected damage.

‘-234!’ <Shield Bash>.

“Nicely done!”

The boss’ skill had a preemptive movement that indicated the attack. Even so, it only provided a tenth of a second’s time for the player to activate <Block> to nullify the attack. This ability to grasp the short time to react is not for everyone! The four of them cheered in admiration.

“Guys, be alert here! Don’t just stand there and stare!” Zhang Yang hurriedly reminded the team when he saw them gazing at him.



“Stinking little pests! Let’s have some fun!” Air Spirit Ains stuck up his butt and let out several fist-sized clouds. These clumps of fart gases floated slowly up into the air and suddenly flew to Drizzler at a shocking speed.

‘Ding! Air Spirit Ains has used <Summoned Cloud>!’

“Eww...” Everyone but Zhang Yang frowned in disgust.

This boss was really just putrid.

# Chapter 58: Wiped And Wiped Again

---

“Fatty! Hundred Shots! Quick, take down the clouds!”

In the light of a dangerous situation, Zhang Yang commanded the team properly while bearing the responsibility of a party leader. Drizzler was scared beyond words. If she would really take it in, even a tiny bit of that boss’ putrid fart would make her not eat anything for days!

With Zhang Yang’s clear words, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han turned around and changed their targets quickly and began attacking the cloud. However, the cloud’s movement speed was too fast for them to properly react. Even though they managed to take half of the cloud’s HP off, they were not quick enough to stop it from touching Drizzler. As soon as the cloud touched her, she cried out for help.

“NO! NO!”

‘Ding! Player Drizzler has received the <Summoned Clouds> effect: Rotten Stink, Stunned for 10 seconds!’

The stationary Drizzler wobbled back and forth while the <Air Bomb> slowly floated towards her.

‘-1200!’

‘-1200!’

‘-1200!’

‘-1200!’

‘-960!’

Aside from Zhang Yang, the rest of the team’s HP were in the red zone. As she was still stunned, Drizzler had another bomb coming at her.

‘-1200!’

‘-1200!’

‘-1200!’

‘-1200!’

‘-960!’

‘Ding! Player Drizzler has died!’

‘Ding! Player Little Snow has died!’

‘Ding! Player...’

Complete annihilation.

Five souls appeared at the revive points.

“Bleh! Bleh! Bleh! Stinky boss! Rotten boss! Shit! Shit! Shit!” Drizzler’s face had nothing but the expression of disgust. She stuck out her tongue and spat out everywhere.

“Calm down, Drizzler. This is all just a game! There’s nothing real about this!” Zhang Yang consoled.

“B-but, it’s just so real! It’s so smelly! I think I can still smell it on me!” Drizzler cried. Fatty Han smiled evilly. “Use XXX soap! Wash up for your health!”

“Scram!” Four middle fingers pointed at him.

Shush! Five new souls entered the revive point. At this period of the dungeon exploration stage, there would be many parties sent by many guilds, wiped out in different ways, crowding the revive points.

The newly arrived souls were Crimson Rage’s party!

Snow Seeker posted a question in the local channel, “Oh, it’s none other than Zhan Yu, the party leader! Where did you guys stop at? Have you guys defeated the first boss?”

With the appearance of a beautiful woman, Fatty Han started to behave “manly”. He then replied, “Actually, Miss beautiful Snow, I’m the real player behind the scene. I was the one who trained Little Yang!”

Ignoring his comments, Zhang Yang answered her question with another question. “Hehe, Snow guild master! What about you? Where did you guys stop at?”

Snow Seeker replied after a few moments later at the local channel, “We started off with the Middle Wing. Right now, we’d defeated the first boss and are still fighting the second!”

They started the dungeon with the Middle Wing?

Zhang Yang thought for a while about it and finally pieced it together. What they did was to hide the truth within a lie! While everyone was fighting furiously for the Front Wing First Clear Achievement, these girls silently raided the Middle Wing. This way, they would have saved themselves a lot of time!

This method... no, this strategy was indeed ingenious! The only hiccup they could have ever faced was Zhang Yang’s party!

“Wow, what a coincidence! We’re also fighting the second boss!” Zhang Yang decided to tell her the truth since the other party was doing the same.

Shit! All five Crimson Rage party members grit their teeth.

How could they be so far?

“Sister Snow, could he be lying to us on purpose? I think he’s trying to inflict us with mental stress!” Ever since her last encounter with Zhang Yang, Thorny Rose had nothing but a bad impression of him.

Snow Seeker thought for a while and shook her head, denying her suggestion. “I don’t believe that’s the case. We can clearly see how fast Zhan Yu’s team proceeded to conquer the Front Wing. It would only be normal to think that they could progress this far!”

White Orchid became worried. “T-then...we s-should....”

“Let the horses loose; empty the stable! There is no other way but forward! We’ll have to use all our efforts to win this round! We have to defeat this boss!” Snow Seeker turned her gaze at her teammates.

“Dancer, Perfume! I want the both of you to increase your attack speed on the <Summoned Clouds>! Rose, for god’s sake, please pay attention to the <Air Bomb>, don’t just chase the boss!”

“B-but Sister Snow, I’m all boobs...”

White Orchid interjected Thorny Rose’s word. “All boobs no brains! Yeah, I’ve heard that a thousand times now! Please stop

using that as an excuse for your incompetence!”

“I’m warning you! If you make another mistake, I’ll take a plane and fly over to Zhou Hang! I’ll personally go to your house and burst those meaty sacks of fat!”

“Tch!” Thorny Rose lowered her head in submission and whisper, “My boobs are really that big...”

Perfumed Water suddenly voiced out, “You know...if you want to compare breast sizes, our Sister Snow here is the real deal! Hehe! She’s 36F!”

“Is that for real?”

“Of course it’s real! It’s a pity that Sister Snow always wears loose clothing. What a humble woman she is! Hehe! I even felt her size myself!” Perfumed Water continued to brag.

“You little witch! How dare you defile Sister Snow! I-I haven’t even touched hers before....”

“Sister Snow! Let me touch’em!”

The five women turned the quiet scene into the utmost chaotic room.

.....

Zhang Yang's party went into the dungeon and revived.

“Woah! That fight was really intense!”

The party members started to have small talk as they ran into the boss chamber.

“Little Yang! T-They're all freaking beautiful! How about this, we let them have this round! You know, to get them to owe us a favor! Who knows one day they may repay us! That's when we can hit on them back! I could have two! No, three! Argh! I'd have them all!” Fatty Han started to dwell in his own imagination.

“Hm... what? I didn't hear you. I was thinking that I should find another Hunter to replace you when I take down the next dungeon!” Zhang Yang sighed loudly.

“Oh brilliant! I concur!”

“You have my vote as well!”

“Two thumbs up for me!”

3 voices spoke out.

“F\*ck! Since when did I become public enemy number 1?” Fatty Han shook his head, disapproving their action.



When the party arrived at the entrance of the boss chamber, all five of them sat down and started to chew on recovery snacks before they moved into the chamber together.

“Fatty Han! Hundred Shots! I’d leave the <Summoned Clouds> to you guys!”

“We got it covered!”

“Here I go!”

Shush! Zhang Yang used <Charge> to dash into the fight once more.

Remembering the fart from the boss, Drizzler guts were still filled with boiling rage. You did not need to tell her, she would go on and fight the boss herself. As she furiously fought the boss, swinging her weapon around wrathfully, she looked like someone who had completely lost her mind.

“Hahaha! More pesky bugs have come here to offer their lives!” Ains laughed manically and raised its spear to pierce Zhang Yang.

“I shall personally send you all to hell!”

The battle began!

After a minute into the fight...

“Fatty! Hundred! The clouds!”

“Crap! I’m stunned!”

“Shit, it’s about to explode!”

.....

The five of them were sent back to the revive point.

“Little Yang, I really think that the two of us are not enough! Let little Drizzler help us with the clouds!” Fatty Han voiced out his suggestion.

“Bleh! Bleh! Bleh! No way in hell am I going near those smelly clouds!” Drizzler shook her head left and right as fast as she could. Zhang Yang also shook his head, disagreeing.

“Melee attackers can’t attack the clouds. She would be stunned once she makes any contact with it! Okay, let’s try it this way. Once the cloud is out, Little Snow, I want you to stop healing and start attacking. I think I can handle myself when all 3 of you are busy with the clouds.”

“Hmm... Sounds good. Let’s go!”

They revived, entered the dungeon, recovered their health, and started the boss fight.

Two minutes later, they were wiped out again.

“Hmm... That was satisfactory... three of you with the clouds. Yes. That’s the way. Let’s stick to this!” Zhang Yang tried to console the team.

“Fatty! I think you should really consider dieting! If your head weren’t so big, the cloud would take 0.1 seconds more to reach you! We can still destroy that cloud instead of it smashing onto you directly!” Drizzler playfully ridiculed.

“Little Drizzler, This fat body of mine is as important as my own life!” Fatty Han chuckled. “There are three benefits when you have a meaty body!”

“Oh here he goes again! Fatty Bro, are you trying to fool around again?”

“Hell no! Listen! Being fat has 3 benefits! Number 1, fat has high buoyancy, I won’t drown that easily! Number 2, fat makes me heavy; heavy makes good momentum, you’ll be sure to be at advantage in a fight! Number 3, fat is cool!”

“F\*\*\*\*\*CK!” 4 members booed Fatty Han.

The party restarted the fight and tried again.

Complete annihilation. Again.

All dead. Again and again.

.....

“Little Yang, this boss is very tough!” Fatty Han shook his head. “I-I can’t continue on anymore. My equipment’s durability is almost gone! I’d need to go back to the city to have it fixed.”

“No need!” Zhang Yang hurriedly answered. “There is an NPC in the entrance of the dungeon there. He’s a blacksmith! He can fix your equipment. Let’s revive and get out of the dungeon first then!”

“How could we fail that many times?” Drizzler thought about it but she could not find a way to solve it. The battle strategy was clearly laid out, but every time the fight started, she always got messed up. Making mistakes where she should not have made mistakes. The only reason she could think of is the <Summoned Cloud> not being destroyed fast enough which led the <Air Bomb> to kill them all.

“We have been fighting for some time now. Everyone must be tired!” Zhang Yang thought of a solution and said, “Guys, after we repaired our equipment, let’s all log off and rest for an hour! It’s already after 3pm now and we haven’t had our lunch yet. This is a bad condition for us to continue playing. Have a meal, have some rest and we’ll meet back here at 5pm sharp! We’ll defeat the boss in

one go then!”

“Okay!” Everyone nodded their head in agreement. In the beginning, they were eager to fight, excited to defeat the boss and claim the “First Clear” Achievement. Of course, they would not feel hunger. However, once the fight dragged on longer and longer, and getting wiped over and over again, everyone lost their will and was unable to properly focus in battle. Unsurprisingly, mistakes will be made.

They revived and went out of the dungeon to get their equipment repaired to its full durability. One by one, the team logged out and rest.

‘Fuh!’

Zhang Yang took off the helmet and let out a deep sigh. He cannot help but reminisce the Gaming Capsule he used 5 years later. In about half a year later, ‘God’s Miracle’ would have released a series of revolution!

Number 1, a change in the gameplay style, allowing players to continue to play the game even in sleep!

This method allowed countless of working adults to fully enjoy the game! Furthermore, the in-game time and reality time was set to be 3:1. Three hours in game would be one hour in reality, allowing everyone take part in this wonderful world.

## Number 2, introduction to the Gaming Capsule!

The utilization of both the gaming helmet and the Gaming Capsule would not cause any effect on the player character! The Gaming Capsule was developed by the aerospace technology and the stasis chamber. It had the function to provide nutrients and supplement the body needed in a fixed time interval. As long as the players were willing to do it, they could continue to play the game as long as 15 days in real life with no side-effect! When the Gaming Capsule was first released, it was obviously too expensive for normal citizens to purchase. It was a luxury only the rich could afford. One set of Gaming Capsule actually caused millions of dollars! Even a luxury car was inferior to the machine! It was only after two years later when the developers managed to solve a manufacturer problem that the Gaming Capsule became cheaper and many now could enjoy the product!

## Number 3, the launch of the Professional League Championship!

Zhang Yang clenched his fist tightly. His heart was filled with immense excitement! He only had one year left to prepare himself. One year, that was when Yu Li entered the game! With her in his mind, Zhang Yang eyes turned soft and kind, his mind was calmed down instantly as if a heavenly tree grew in his heart.

# Chapter 59: One More Time!

---

Zhang Yang reconnected to the game exactly on 5pm. He strolled for a little while and the rest of team appeared beside him almost simultaneously.

“Wow, I’ve got to tell you! After I had an awesome meal and had a warm bath, I feel so relaxed!” Drizzler sounded refreshed and energetic. “I feel like I could punch a tiger if one comes out now!”

“Haha! Very well, Tiger Slayer! I have high expectations of you!” Zhang Yang snickered. Drizzler snorted and proudly replied, “Hmph! Just watch me!”

The party team re-grouped together and enter the dungeon once again. They could not even remember how many times they had entered and re-entered. Now that the first boss was killed off before; the entire arena was empty. The only remaining monster in this dungeon was the boss; until the dungeon was refreshed and respawned all the missing monsters at midnight.

“Alright, I’m not going to waste my breath to explain again. I believe everyone knows what they should do by now. We can win this if each of you do your part! Remember! WE ARE THE BEST!”

“WE ARE THE BEST!”

“Let’s go!”

Shush!

Both Zhang Yang and Drizzler used <Charge> at the same time. Zhang Yang then activated <Provoke>, drawing the boss' attention towards him.

“Puny mortals! Die in hell!” Almost every boss loved to use this kind of arrogant, powerful, and even provoking kind of speech to officially start the fight.

90%, 80%... The boss' HP reduced smoothly without any complications.

‘Ding! Air Spirit Ains has used <Summoned Cloud>!’

“Careful! The farts are coming!” Zhang Yang screamed to alert the members. In an instant, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, and Little Snow had their eyes locked onto the clouds and started their attacks.

‘-282!’

‘-381!’

‘-224!’

Having only 5,000 HP, the cloud was quickly destroyed under the concentrated chain attacks by 3 players.



“That’s right! That’s the way to do it! Look at how easy that was!”

Zhang Yang moved around, pulling the boss on the hand, and evading incoming <Air Bomb> on the other. In fact, all five of the party members were not stationary. Everyone was always constantly moving around. The bomb was not meant to be taken lightly; one touch and they would be completely wiped out again!

70%, 60%, 50%...

The battle went better than expected this time. Their reaction speed and attention were raised after having proper rest and a decent meal. While performing at their best, the cloud was killed off in no time. No one ignored the <Air Bomb>, and each of them carried out their role properly.

This was the true way to raid a dungeon. Each player had to play their specific role properly. An attack must have had enough damage power. A tank had to be strong enough to withstand attacks and had good crowd control skill. A healer had to be a good support and healing power. The remaining extra players filled in with the others while not making mistakes. However easy the strategy may be, it always seemed harder to execute the plan in actual battle. It was hard to make sure that everyone could perform their part flawlessly!

With that theory in mind, a 5-man dungeon was easier than a 10-man dungeon which was easier than a 20-man dungeon, and a 20-

man dungeon was far easier than a 50-man dungeon! It was much easier for a 5-man team to make no mistake, but to make sure a 50-man dungeon to run smoothly was not impossible, but extremely hard!

40%, 30%, 20%, 10%!

“Guys, fight harder! Victory is just one step ahead! Don’t let your guard down! The fight is hardest at the eleventh hour! The last part is always the hardest! Do not fret!” Zhang Yang immediately tried to boost the team’s morale. They were excited and agitated.

8%!

5%!

3%!

2%!

1%!

0%!

Thud! The boss falls defeated!

‘Ding! You and the party members around you have killed Air

Spirit Ains. Obtaining 28,850 Experience points. (50 points party bonus)!'

‘Ding! Your party has successfully conquered Marzerway’s Lair: Middle Wing (Hardcore mode) and obtained the “First Clear” Achievement! This glorious accomplishment will be recorded in the Hardcore First Clear Achievement Board. As the party leader, please name your party!’

Without needing to ask anyone for it, Zhang Yang immediately keyed in “Lone Desert Smoke” into the confirmation box and the server channel was dyed in red color again.

‘Server announcement: Party Lone Desert Smoke has obtained the “First Clear” Achievement: Marzerway’s Lair, Middle Wing (Hardcore mode). This glorious achievement will be recorded in the Hardcore First Clear Achievement Board (China Server)!’

‘Server announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Party Leader) has obtained the “First Clear” Achievement: Marzerway’s Lair, Middle Wing (Hardcore mode). Obtaining 10 gold pieces, 1 Skill point, and 500 increased all races reputation from the system reward!’

‘Server announcement: Player...’

“WE DID IT!” Fatty Han’s thundering voice could be heard

clearly among the cheering of the other party members. Being stuck for roughly 4 hours at this boss, they could finally let loose their built up stress.

The guild channel was also in complete chaos. Everyone was extremely happy, jumping around crazily. With their guild name out in the open, everyone was celebrating this joyful event! Imagine walking in public with the guild tag on your head, all swag and cool.

“Hey, hey! Look at this player here! Don’t you know? This is the guild that claimed two consecutive “First Clear” Achievements! Huh? You’ve never heard of it? Hah, you’re outdated now, bro!”

...

“Hahaha!” Fatty Han had been laughing uncontrollably for a while. “Little Yang! How about we take down the Main Wing as well tonight?!”

“Sigh! Ignorant people sure are dangerous!” Zhang Yang shook his head in disappointment.

“Huh? What’s wrong?” Fatty Han turned and looked at Hundred Shots, pleading for an explanation. Both of them were Hunters, and since they had several common features, they became best friends immediately.

“The Main Wing is a 20-man dungeon! We can’t do it alone!” His

best friend explained.

“F\*ck! Why did it suddenly turned into a 20-man dungeon!?” Fatty Han became angry.

“Hahaha!” Zhang Yang laughed. “That’s because the Main Wing will drop a set equipment!”

“Set equipment?”

“Set equipment will grant a secondary effect when worn together. Out of the 5 equipment, there is the Head, Chest, Hands, Sheen, and Legs. If you have 3 of out 5 equipment you will gain an effect. If you have all 5 of the set, you will gain the second effect! A set equipment effect is very strong; just like putting on one more piece of equipment. Having two effects is like wearing two extra equipment! Very OP!

Zhang Yang patted Drizzler on her shoulder and when she turned to at him, he pointed his finger to the corpse, gesturing her to open the corpse.

“What about the set effect of a Hunter’s equipment?” Fatty Han added.

Zhang Yang could not recall anymore. A level 20 equipment was just a temporary equipment that would be quickly replaced. Plus, he was never a Hunter and level 20 was something he had forgotten years ago!

He shook his head and said, “Sorry! I’ve forgot! The only thing I could remember was the warrior set effect. 3 equipment set effect was that every time you take damage, you have a chance to generate a barrier that can absorb up to 500 damage. The 5 equipment set effect was 10% damage increase.” While Zhang Yang was explaining to Fatty Han, Drizzler opened an equipment.

[Air Spirit Sword] (Green-Copper, One handed sword)

Weapon attack: 88-104

Attack interval: 2.4 seconds

DPS: 40

Level requirement: 20

The only person who could use this sword was Zhang Yang. However, since he already had the Grey-Silver sword in his hands, he did not need a lower grade sword!

“Take it up to the auction house! We’ll share the profit!” said Zhang Yang. All the other party members nodded their head in unison and Little Snow took the item. Being gold misers, Little Snow and Drizzler were the only ones who would try to snatch it away. If other Bandits, Guardians, or Defenders found out what

they were about to do with the sword, they would literally cry their eyes out! How could any situation lead to the equipment being unwanted!?

“Little Yang, when could we fight the Main Wing?” Fatty Han had the set equipment in his mind.

“Hm. Let’s try this. Tonight, we should all split up and try to form two teams to raid the Bangar Crypt Hardcore mode. We try our best to quickly pick out 20 players with strong, above-than-average equipment.” Zhang Yang started his train of thoughts. Once he became the guild master, he was fast enough to get into character. His responsibility had increased, and so did his expanded way of thinking.

Right now, Little Snow, Drizzler, Hundred Shots, and Fatty Han were level 20. There was hope that they could dominate the Hardcore Mode with just their level and equipment.

[Engineering Recipe: Gas Bomb] (Engineering Recipe)

Use: Teaches you how to make a [Gas Bomb]

Requirement: Engineering.

This boss was quite stingy. Aside from the sword, it only gave a recipe and a skill book.

Among the team, Hundred Shots took the recipe because he was the only one that learned Engineering.

“That would take days! Little Yang, what if someone else claimed the Main Wing ‘First Clear’ Achievement first?” Fatty Han was already addicted to claiming the achievement. In his mind, the achievements was rightfully theirs!

Zhang Yang laughed. “If someone can and have taken it, well, it can’t be helped! However, you must know that a 20-man dungeon is extremely hard. It’s easy if it’s just Normal mode and it would just drop normal equipment. But the Hard mode and Hardcore mode is a whole other story!”

There was a fact that Zhang Yang chose to hide; if anyone had the intention to conquer Marzerway’s Lair before level 30, they had to depend on the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to do it! And with the rarity of the recipe, Zhang Yang wholeheartedly believed that only very few people in China possessed this particular recipe!

As long as he did not release the potion out in the market, it was downright impossible to get past through the fifth stage of the lair!

[Skill book: Holy Shield]

Use: Teaches you the skill <Holy Shield>.



Requirement: Priest.

“Hah! It actually dropped!” Zhang Yang suddenly let out a scream. Now Little Snow can support the team better!

The skill book <Holy Shield> was considered to be a global drop, which meant that almost every monster in the world could have the potential to drop this skill book and not just Air Spirit Ains alone.

Once all of the loot was distributed, the party left the dungeon and went to the elf NPC to complete the quest. The elf smiled with satisfaction and awarded them with huge amounts experience points and also granted them the qualifications to enter the last dungeon, Marzerway's Lair: Main Wing.

“Now that we have achieved what we planned, I thank you all for your efforts. Now let's split up and do what you need to do! Remember! Tonight, we must be online! Please do your best to form a 20-man party!” Zhang Yang smiled happily.

“Okay!” All of them nodded their heads. Even though they had some rest, there were still people who were quite worn out and chose to log out to rest more. Zhang Yang was one of them.

It was a sudden change of character for Zhang Yang. He now had many more aspects and matters to give his thoughts to.

He was, at the very least, the vice guild master for the guild Clear Water in his previous life. A person with a degree of leadership, which helped him when he became the guild master for Lone Desert Smoke now. There was nothing that he was not used to here.

The game itself encouraged players to join a guild. The system granted a certain level of benefit to players with a guild, like extra experience points, a level 35 mount, and discount on equipment repair or shopping. Although these extra services did not help in increasing a player's combat ability, but it was still beneficial to a certain extend.

In 'God's Miracle', guilds were categorized into 10 ranks. To increase a guild's rank, the guild would need the corresponding [Guild Upgrade Order]. The higher the guild's rank, the better the benefits a member could receive. However, aside from the [Guild Upgrade Order], the guild would have to accumulate the required amount of guild experience points.

Zhang Yang remembered clearly, the first piece of [Guild Upgrade Order] would be dropped at the level 30 dungeon, Shadowmoon Castle. However, his guild's current accumulated experience points was only 16%!

To obtain the guild's experience points, its member had to complete the guild quest! Zhang Yang then decided that the first thing he would do later was to get everyone to complete them!

# Chapter 60: Guild Contribution

---

“World! Greeny! Fang! Foxey! Tonight, I want each of you to lead teams of your own. We will be carrying out a raid through the Front Wing and Middle Wing. I want all of your members to get qualified for entry to the Main Wing!”

Sky Shaman, the guild master of Sky High, was gathering elites in the guild to prepare for a large-scale campaign.

“Guild master, there are only 17 Level 20 players available at the moment! We can’t form 4 teams!” World Hunter was quick to address the guild master’s oversight.

“....H-How long? How long before we have 20 level 20 players?”

“About 5 hours, sir!”

“That’s too slow! I want you to arrange a team. I want all level 17 members to help those at Level 19 to level up! Within 2 hours, I want to see all of them at Level 20!”

“Sir, yes sir!”

Sky Shaman turned around and faced his members. His face, initially lined with worry and anxiety, abruptly broke into a broad, knowing smile.

“Brothers, Zhan Yu and his party may have left us behind for now. But, know this! They are in a bit of a pickle right now!”

Sky Shaman’s smiled with such confidence that if he did not know any better, victory was already well within his grasp.

“Guild master?” His guildmates spoke up uncertainly, not sharing his sense of conviction, as evidenced by their past repeated losses to Zhan Yu.

Sky Shaman’s smile only grew wider.

“They are currently lacking in party members! Take a look at their party formations. They have always been a wild bunch that charges into the fray like Leeroy Jenkins. They may have taken on both the Bangar Crypt and also part of the Marzerway’s Lair. Have any of you realized that to be the most likely scenario? We, Sky High have dispatched two parties to take down the Marzerway’s Lair. The same goes for The Dominators and Crimson Rage. Both guilds have dispatched 2 parties just like we did! However, it seems that the most Zhan Yu can cobble up together is one miserable party! This can only lead to one sad conclusion; they simply do not have sufficient Level 20 members!”

“The Main-Wing is a 20-man dungeon. No matter how strong Zhan Yu’s party may be, they are but a small team! How could they possibly take down the Main Wing with just 5 people?”

World Hunter and his party members’ eyes radiated with renewed hope at the prospect of victory, for once.

“Now listen up! This will be our secret strategy! Know that we must treasure every minute, every second of the day and fight! Fight for our guild’s honor! We shall go straight ahead with the Main Wing and start with the Normal Mode. There, we will take our time to gather intelligence on the boss! Discover every possible skill, explore every possible outcome! The equipment dropped in the Normal Mode are all Level 20 Black-Steel equipment, which are almost on par with Level 10 Green-Copper equipment! If you raid the Normal Mode of the Main Wing, it will be no different from raiding the Bangar Crypt Hardcore Mode! Furthermore, this nest will drop set-based equipment! Be it Black-Steel, Green-Copper, or even Grey-Silver, they will all be set equipment with potential set effects!”

Sky Shaman eyes gleamed with infectious excitement. He went on.

“The Hard Mode of the nest will drop a level 20 Green-Copper equipment! Which are the same drops as the Hardcore Modes of the Front Wing and Middle Wing! Which is why I have deduced that we could not possibly fall behind in terms of equipment strength! In fact, we could be even stronger than them! If my calculation is correct, we will have 4 days before Zhan Yu can even muster up a 20-man party! What say you my brethren? With a 4 days head start, with all the tactical advantage from all the recon we could carry out, is losing to them even a possibility?!

“Sir, no sir! We will win!”

“That’s the spirit! We will win! No, we must win! The “First

Clear” Achievement of a 20-man Hardcore dungeon is much more valuable than a puny 5-man dungeon!”

“We, the Sky High guild...”

“ARE THE STRONGEST!”

Sky High’s burning passion to overtake Zhan Yu was truly admirable! However, if this so-called burning passion was to be witnessed by Zhang Yang, he would not be intimidated by one bit nor be in awe. He would, on the contrary, be laughing his head off sinisterly. A bunch of lowly players who think that they even matter in the big league! If they did not have Zhan Yu’s [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to begin with, they would never ever get pass the fifth phase of the Marzerway’s! Yeah sure, the Normal Mode was practically a free service for you all, but the Hardcore Mode? If not for anything else pray that you could even end up walking out of the dungeon in one piece!

.....

Sky Shaman was not the only one that had a plan to counter Zhan Yu. The Dominator and Crimson Rage also had their eyes on the apparent weakness of Zhan Yu and had devised a plan to overtake him. The war for the next dungeon “First Clear” Achievement was going to get wilder and fiercer!

Zhang Yang logged into the game after his dinner.

He opened the guild member window and checked the members' statuses. There were a total of 316 members. Only 11 players were Level 15 and 99% of the guild member had exceeded Level 10. They were all still currently raiding the Bangar Crypt.

Zhang Yang quickly invited Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, Drizzler, and Little Snow into the party and explained his strategy. Once he gained their approval, he turned to the guild channel and began his speech.

“Hi everyone, of the Lone Desert Smoke. I’m Zhan Yu, the new guild master!”

“Woah! Woah! It;s big brother Zhan Yu! You’ve finally shown yourself!”

“Wow! My idol! Ahh! Please come closer!”

“Please power level me!”

“Praise the almighty boss Zhan Yu!”

“Ahem! Everyone please calm down for a moment and let me speak!” Zhang Yang waited for a moment, until the members had calmed down. Only then he continued, “Some say when you receive a higher title, you would need to show your worth for it. Now that I have accepted the title of guild master, this is my way of showing my worth!”

“Hahahaha!” Everyone in the guild broke out in hearty laughter.

“In an hour’s time, Little Snow, Drizzler, Hundred Shots, Slim and Handsome, and I will lead two parties into the Bangar Crypt, Hardcore Mode! There, we will start to pick and select the best of you!”

“Awesome! I want in!”

“Oh! Me too!”

“Hey! I want in as well!”

“Big Bro Zhan Yu! Please take care of me!”

Everyone started to get excited as they heard that Zhan Yu himself will be leading them to a dungeon. When there was a chance to get better equipment, who would want to miss out?

Zhang Yang waited again for the guild members to settle down and then he continued.

“I’m sure everyone is looking forward for this, but keep in mind that there are only two parties available. There are limited slots! Which is why Drizzler and I have made a decision to properly solve this problem. Whoever has contributed more to the guild will be prioritized!”



“Big boss Zhan Yu. What is this guild contribution and how do we get them?” Most of the members started to echo the question.

“Hehe, this is a new invention of mine!” Zhang Yang explained.

“In the future, whenever we want to raid a dungeon, the members with higher guild contributions will have higher priorities in joining the expedition! To earn contribution points, you must complete a guild quest. I have already designed a few guild quests. Furthermore, you can also earn contribution points by raiding the specifically assigned dungeon! There are other ways for you to earn contribution points such as, donating items into the guild’s bank, obtaining special system rewards and help in promoting the guild’s name! However, these points aren’t just for show. You can spend these points to exchange equipment from the guild! That is why, everyone has the chance to do it!”

The guild got rowdy and some had even scooted away to carry out the new guild quests.

Guild quests were almost similar to that of daily quests. You could only complete 5 quests a day. However, these quests were repeatable. This meant that the quests could be repeated day after day. The quests were simple and easy to complete. Some of the quest were as easy as killing a certain number of monster, or running from places to places. All it would take was just a few moments of your time.

Zhang Yang switched to the party channel and spoke to the team.

“Later, I will bring a team on my own. The 4 of you will bring another team! Both Fatty and Hundred Shots are Beastmaster classes. Their two pets are almost the same as two tanks. With their level, they can easily take down a Level 10 Hardcore dungeon!

“Little Yang, can you really do it alone?” Fatty Han tried to reason with Zhang Yang. He was afraid that he might get over his head and fail to leave a good impression to the guild members.

Zhang Yang snickered. “If that’s the case. How about we make a bet? Let’s compete in a race for the dungeon speed run!”

Drizzler quickly replied. “Pfft! Puny little tank boy. We have 4 Level 20 players here including me. Even if you could fight with all your might, you could only be matched with both pervy-Fatty and Uncle Hundred. Plus, I’m a super sailor soldier! Just I alone would be an even match for 6 or 7 of your party members! Furthermore, we have my cousin here with her super-duper huge ‘support!’” Drizzler paused and grasped two invisible balls in her hands that seemed to be at chest-level. “Our team would only need one healer!”

“Ha! That’s right!” Little Snow wrapped her arms underneath her chest and slightly raised them up, causing them to jiggle.

“Haha! I take it that you have accepted the challenge?” Zhang Yang intentionally provoked them.

Drizzler walked up to Zhang Yang with an intimidating expression. She patted her flat chest and said out loud, “We accept!

Just you wait! You'll soon be kneeling on the floor admitting your defeat!"

"Little Yang. Even though I've always been supporting your back, but now, I just want to defeat you badly!" Fatty Han rebelled.

"Zhan Yu. This is a fight for honor and pride. I will not hold back!" Hundred Shots declared.

"Alright, alright. I still have to remind you that the skill of the first boss, Black Claw, will increase the damage you take. It is not a conventional attack buff, but rather a debuff on it's target. Very deadly. Even if you're Level 40, your pet will still die in a hit if you let the debuffs stack too high! The best strategy is this. Have two of your pets go up and fight together to accumulate aggro. Pull back any one of the two pets that is the first to stack 2 layers of <Death Stare>. Have the second pet take over the aggro and hold on. When the second pet is inflicted with 2 stacks of <Death Stare>, pull it back and switch the other pet back in. This one of the many ways to 'switch' tanks." Zhang Yang gave them the advice because he was afraid that they were not all free from chances of failure.

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han nodded together approvingly. They thought that Zhang Yang's strategy made perfect sense.

One hour later.

The members' contribution points started to have some visible changes. There were more than 10 members who had completed 5 guild quests and obtained 5 points each. Some others had stopped

at 4 and 3 points individually. The guild experience points managed to accumulate to a total of 1%!

“Little Snow! You guys get to pick your party member first!” Zhang Yang smiled sincerely as he let them have the first pick.

Now that they had the chance, they did not want to lose to Zhang Yang’s little challenge. They then chose accordingly to their class and guild contribution and picked out 6 members to form a 10-man party. After they had form their party, Zhang Yang picked the next 9 members with the highest guild contribution points and also form a complete party.

Those who had been selected were happy and satisfied. This was not to say those who were not selected lost all hope. They knew that if they were not picked today, there is always a chance that they could be selected tomorrow! All members were more than eager to complete their guild quests.

“Gather at the dungeon entrance later. We’ll start the timer and go in together!”

With the strong intention to win the dungeon, everyone braced themselves to fight the dungeon with a welcoming heart. Even if they could not get their hands on an equipment, they would still fight for victory.

After 10 minutes, 2 teams; 20 players were gathered at the dungeon entrance.

“Little Yang. Competition comes before our friendship now. We will not hold back this time!”

“Hehe! Likewise!”

“To the dungeon!”

Zhang Yang switched to the party channel.

“Fellow members! Are you ready to lose to them?”

“Hell no!”

“Do you want to win?”

“HELL YEAH!”

“Awesome! Later, I’ll go ahead and kite the monsters, do not attack until I say so! If you cannot follow this one thing, please leave the dungeon now!” Zhang Yang’s tone gradually became stern.

“Roger that!”

Zhang Yang drew his blade and used <Charge> on one of the monsters. Following closely was a normal attack that dealt 364 damage and raised his Rage by 39 points. He immediately used

<Horizontal Sweep> and dealt significant damage to the group of monsters.

He then shouted without looking back at his team mates. “Follow me!”

Zhang Yang moved further into the dungeon. The rest of the party were awestruck for a moment before quickly recovering and regaining their pace after his trail.

And just like that, Zhang Yang was at the forefront, closely followed by the monsters that he had not killed off, and the further behind were the party members.

In a short amount of time, Zhang Yang arrived to the second wave of monsters. Just as his <Charge> cooldown refreshed, he immediately used <Charge> and dashed towards them, leaving the monsters that were following behind further. He did a normal attack, following closely with a <Horizontal Sweep> and a <Thunder Strike>. The chain attack dealt a huge amount of damage and also caused a 5-second slowdown on the monsters following behind.

Zhang Yang moved on further into the dungeon and within 3 minutes, they had already arrived at the first boss’s entrance. Zhang Yang had kited not only the monsters but also the Bouncers that stood guard at the boss’s chamber. Zhang Yang had more than 10 monsters kited in a go!

T-This is, a straight flush!

# Chapter 61: One Straight Flush

---

“Fight now!”

In the middle of the skirmish, evading ferocious attacks, dodging claws, casting skills, and even in the midst of battle, Zhang Yang’s ability to command the team was not compromised one bit!

Shush! Zhang Yang had totally did a number on the enemy that left all men spellbound!

No one besides Zhang Yang alone was above Level 20, thus they did not possess any AoE skills; they were only limited to damaging one monster at a time. According to the Damage Statistics, Zhang Yang completely dominated the entire party with a staggering 92% damage contribution! How many <Horizontal Sweep> or <Thunder Strike> could a Level 10 monster with 3,000 HP take?

After 40 seconds, monsters lay defeated and everyone gained a luxurious amount of experience points. Since Zhang Yang was already Level 22, the amount of experience points a Level 10 monster could provide for him was minuscule. For the most part however, he did help to contribute to the morale of the party.

“Woah! That’s a lot of experience points!”

“This is just too awesome. I got like 20k experience points in 5 minutes. I’m leveling up like there’s no tomorrow!”

“With this speed, we would have certainly left the other team in the dust!”

“It’s in the bag!”

“Woohoo! Praise our leader! Praise our guild master!”

Everyone’s faces were filled with excitement. Their admiration towards Zhang Yang could only grow ever more.

Zhang Yang flashed a small smile. “Shush! Don’t brag in the guild channel! Give them some hope!”

“Geh Geh!” The party snickered.

“Alright, it’s time to fight the boss! Everyone, focus on your attacks! Do what you’re supposed to do!” Zhang Yang then used <Charge> and dashed ahead.

This was a completely one-sided battle. The boss was defeated in merely 3 minutes. It dropped 3 pieces of equipment.

“Now, for the equipment. Each equipment will cost you 20 guild contribution points. Those with higher points will have priority and those with the equal points shall roll dices for the equipment. Once you have obtained the equipment, your contribution points will be deducted! The deducted points will be distributed among all the party members equally.”



Zhang Yang had modified the distribution method to Party Leader Distribution before entering the dungeon. After the inevitable mess that came whenever anything was employed practically for the first time, the equipment was finally distributed. The boss was decimated in 3 minutes but distribution of the spoils took a whole 5 minutes.

Moving on!

Zhang Yang used the same method, with one straight flush to grab the aggro from all the monsters along the way up to the boss entrance and fought them there. Just as they had finished with the monster and were preparing to start with the second boss, Fatty Han posted in the guild channel, addressing Zhang Yang.

“Hehe, Little Yang, we have just defeated the first boss. Where are you now?” His voice sounded quite jubilant, as if he was sure that he had surpassed Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang turned around and winked, his eyes sparkling with mischief.

“We are just about to fight the boss!”

It was the truth, alright. It just happened to not be the entire truth!

Obviously, Fatty Han’s party did not anticipate Zhang Yang using

such an abusive method like this one straight flushing to raid the dungeon. Fatty Han replied with a smirk on his face. “Little Yang, don’t give up just yet. There are still 3 bosses. You may still have the chance to catch up to us! Haha! I’ll be going then!”

Zhang Yang’s ability was not a mystery for them, everyone knew how strong he was. To think that they could actually stand a chance to beat him head on, led Fatty Han and his party almost delirious with excitement!

Zhang Yang brandished his sword and said, “Alright guys, it’s time to kick some ass! Remember to fall back you get afflicted with the curse! Don’t falter and break our chain combo either, yeah!” The battle started quickly and ended in the same manner. Even with Zhang Yang’s reminder, there were still 4 careless players who stood still when they were cursed with the <Curse of Water and Fire>. Silently, Zhang Yang remembered each and everyone’s performance and had secretly appraised and graded them on play style and ability.

After they distributed the equipment, the party went forward and used the same method to kite the monsters all the way to the third boss’ entrance.

Fatty Han announced again when his team had just defeated the second boss. Fatty Han’s ineffective provocation only left Zhang Yang and his team laughing silently.

After a little effort, they successfully defeated the third boss and also the hidden boss, clearing the entire dungeon smoothly and swiftly.

“We’re done!” Zhang Yang announced in the guild channel.

“Impossible!” Fatty Han and his team cried.

After keeping their mouth shut for so long, they finally could take brag all day long about his godly method “one straight flush”

“You sneaky, noob tank!” Drizzler cried out in the guild channel.

“Hah! Sneaky? This is called a “Secret Strategy”! Would you reveal your trump card to the enemy?” Zhang Yang burst out, laughing.

“Hmph! I despise you!” said Drizzler angrily.

Once the equipment was distributed, the guild now had many players with negative contribution points. They would have to slowly complete guild quests and raid dungeons to raise their contribution points back up. While the rest of the party members that did not manage to obtain equipment have accumulated more points; Zhang Yang, Little Snow, and the rest have gained 26 points each.

After a short while, the party was disbanded under Zhang Yang’s command. Each of them went on to their own errands. Zhang Yang, wanting to set an example for his fellow guild mates then decided to complete some of the guild quests himself. After accepting a kill quest, he took off and arrived at the assigned

destination. His quest was very simple and basic, that was to kill and eliminate some Level 10 monsters. This quest was a breather in comparison to the hectic rush he experienced in the raids earlier on.

As he hacked his way through the targets, he felt alarms going off in his head. Instinctive impulses tugged at his heart. Just as when he stepped forward, the sensation grew stronger and he noticed a strange, tangible effect of light bending in the air close by.

It was a bandit! A bandit in stealth mode!

With over 3 years of combat experience below his belt, Zhang Yang had developed a sharp combative instinct. He immediately got out from the battle mode. As his Rage points slowly decreased from 47 points, he immediately used a <Horizontal Sweep>. The gleam of his sword spread across everywhere, illuminating the area!

‘-703!’

The damage text popped out, a human figure fizzled from the air into visibility, revealing that his HP had dropped from 1110 to 407!

‘Ding! You have initiated an attack on 44 Bandits. You are now penalized with the Red Tag! If you were killed in this condition, you will drop 2 levels and experience a 100% equipment break!’

“Haha! The infamous 44 Bandits!” Zhang Yang swung his sword

and dealt a normal attack on him. 44 Bandits, the Bandit of the Sword and Fire Mercenary group.

‘Dodge!’

The enemy was agile. He dodged Zhang Yang sword and thrust his daggers to counterattack.

Zhang Yang activated <Block> and nullified the enemy’s attack.

‘-102!’

44 Bandit received the <Block> reflect damage and Zhang Yang quickly activated the <Shield Bash>, dealing another 219 damage to him.

All normal attacks would have a detectable sign before it is triggered. As long as a player’s own reaction rate was fast enough, one could easily dodge any normal attack with ease. However, there was almost no way to anticipate a skill. Even if you attempted to rely on instinct to predict a skill activation, the body simply could not keep up with the skill activation speed and make necessary evasive maneuvers. Even if you raised your Dexterity to the maximum, it wouldn’t help one bit! To counter a skill, you must use another skill!

“F\*ck! How could you be dealing so much damage!?” The enemy finally voiced out in frustration.

Zhang Yang stomped the ground and use <Thunder Strike> to deal a final 102 damage, instantly killing 44 Bandits.

‘Ding! You have killed 44 Bandits!’

Zhang Yang sheathed his sword and sent a private message to the enemy.

“I don’t think that I have ever offended anyone from the Sword and Fire Mercenary group. Why is there an assassination mark on me?”

He would never believe him if he said that he was sneaking up on him just to say “Hello”.

After a noted pause, the enemy replied. “I was hired to kill you back down to Level 0!”

“Oh! I wonder who would want to do that.”

“I’m sorry. Business is private and confidential. We would never reveal our client’s private info!”

“Well then, do you still insist on killing me?”

“Business is business. I will do it.”

Zhang Yang smiled. To think some there is someone out there who wished to decrease his level, it had to be someone from Pride! He never thought that Pride had such wide connections and managed to hire someone from the “Trash” Mercenary!

...

44 Bandits ran back to his body in his phantom state. Before reviving, he looked around and went ahead with the deed once he was sure that Zhang Yang had left the place. He then wasted no time in turning invisible and walked towards the bush to eat recovery snacks.

Shush!

A figure dashed out and a star appeared on his head circling around. He was stunned and rendered immobile.

‘Ding! You have been stunned by Player Zhan Yu! Stunned for 2 seconds!’

‘-362!’

In the stunned condition, all 44 Bandits could do was to witness the sword flying towards him, draining off his residual HP down to 0.

‘Ding! You have died!’

“F\*ck!” 44 Bandits cried out as he was sent back to the revive point. His level dropped from 17 to 15! After giving it some thought, he sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

“How could you still use <Charge> on me when I am in stealth mode?”

Stealth was not 100% imperceptible. You could still be detected when you're close enough to someone else! However, <Charge> was a skill that had a limited ranged activation condition. It could not be activated if the distance is too close. That was why 44 Bandits could not understand how Zhang Yang could still stun him with <Charge> when he was not anywhere close to him!

Zhang Yang replied.

“If you were in my shoes, would you reveal the secret?”

“No!” 44 Bandits replied honestly.

“Well. That explains it!” Zhang Yang laughed it off.

It was no big secret. One, Zhang Yang had 3 years of combat experience fighting with a Bandit, he had an instinctive method to detect a “hidden” Bandit. Two, the level gap between the two of them was far too great, weakening the effect of <Stealth>!



44 Bandits returned again to his body, however, he lingered around instead of reviving himself. He was still afraid that Zhang Yang might still be guarding his body. After some time, he sent another private message.

“Zhan Yu. Would you dare to fight with me fair and square?”

“Sure!”

44 Bandits relaxed, thinking that this player was soft hearted!

Boom! @#\$\$%#@

Just after he revived and was eating on some recovery item, he was stunned and sent back to the revive point.

“F\*cking hell! You’re an honorable man! Why would you break on your promise!” cried 44 Bandits furiously.

“You’d actually believe the words from the enemy. You’re really naïve!” Zhang Yang snickered.

In his previous life, 44 Bandits was famous because of his sexual offences. In stealth mode, he had always picked low level female players as his target. In ‘God’s Miracle’, you could only reveal yourself from stealth mode if you attack or received an attack. Doing naughty things to a female player did not trigger the stealth dispel. Furthermore, low level players would have a hard time detecting a high level “hidden” Bandit.

It was because of his act of sexual offences, many female players lodged their complaint to the game developers, forcing them to modify the condition of <Stealth>.

This was why Zhang Yang was extremely hostile towards this man. He took this chance to properly teach him a lesson!

44 Bandits chose to remain quiet for a while and eventually chose to log off.

Zhang Yang on the other hand chose to remain on guard for a while and only continued his guild quest when he had accurately deduced that the enemy had logged out.

## Chapter 62: Emmy's Test Of Strength

---

With the current race to gather more guild contribution, every member had their priority set to complete daily guild quest, competing with each other to accumulate more points! Zhang Yang had decreed that the first who reached level 20 will be added into the Marzerway's Lair's raiding party. And because of that decree, the guild atmosphere was most intense, with everyone wanting to get their hands on the set equipment!

Who would not want to join Zhang Yang to be one of the first few to raid the Hardcore dungeon and get their names on the "First Clear" Achievement Board? It would be the highest honor and dignity to have their names appear on the server announcements. With that colored announcement texts appearing in the server channel, completely dyed in red, it would be so exciting! Even if it was a step behind; if they could not get the "First Clear" Achievement, they could still get their hands on powerful equipment! Is that not the game's own unspoken rule? To get powerful equipment to dominate the world?

Still, Level is not something anyone could just raise up anytime they want. To form a team of 20 players at Level 20 would take at least 3 to 4 days! All he could do is wait. Ever since 44 Bandits failed in his assassination attempt on Zhang Yang, he was never attacked by them anymore. However, Zhang Yang still advised his friends to stay close to each other and reduced any lone activities. He did not want to give even a small chance for them to get killed.

The second day, after Zhang Yang and his merry little team of 5-man party raided the Marzerway's Lair Front and Middle Wing dungeon, Zhang Yang brought them to a village called Antelope

## Village

“Noob tank! Why did you bring us here for?!” Drizzler finally cried out angrily.

Zhang Yang smiled provocatively. “Hah! And here I thought that you would actually keep quiet for a little while more!”

After yesterday’s friendly bet, Drizzler had a little quarrel with Zhang Yang and said that she would want to cut ties with him. This morning, when she logged in, the little kid remained silent and gave Zhang Yang the cold treatment. Even in the dungeon, she had not spoken a word to him. However, the little kid would always behave according to her age. She eventually forgot about her own oath.

Enraged, Drizzler shouted at Zhang Yang.

“You sly fox! I dare you to compete again today!”

“Sure! But I want to raise the stakes. The loser must pay 1,000 gold!”

Suddenly, her expression changed. She looked like she was in pain, as if there was a knife pierced into her belly. To her, receiving money was an absolute bliss; an orgasmic feeling. But if you asked her to give up her own money, she would resist until the end of time! She appeared to be reluctant and unwilling and finally, she bitterly said, “No money!”

“Didn’t you just get 8,000 gold this morning?” Zhang Yang quickly debunked her makeshift lie.

The 8,000 gold was obtained from the bet with The Dominators and Sky High. Since Zhang Yang and his team won the bet, they obtained 40,000 gold from both of the guild as their victory reward. They received their reward via the mail system and each one of them obtained 8,000 gold coins each.

“I-I’ve given them to cousin!” Drizzler quickly passed the baton to Little Snow, trying to avoid the situation and save herself.

“Ha! Haha!” Zhang Yang forced a laugh out. He too did not want to dwell too long in this topic.

“We are here to do a quest!”

“What quest?” said Fatty Han. He was actually in the middle of a “heated” conversation with the “service ladies” from Blaze City. Even though he left the guild not too long ago, he was unwilling to just forget about the girls there.

Zhang Yang purposely played with the party members and slowly, dramatically revealed the answer.

“It’s the....”

“ ... ”

“It’s the main quest!”

“The main quest?!” All of them shouted in unison. “What’s the reward?”

Everyone knew that the main quest would reward them luxuriously, but up to now, there was no player who had ever completed a main quest. No one knew the reward! Even the game developers were clandestine with the release of the quest. They had made the quest to be very mysterious and hard to detect!

“A bunch of stuff!”

His vague statement immediately angered the party. Zhang Yang quickly raised his hands to surrender. Truthfully, he was not sure about the rewards himself. All he knew was that this quest was the [Invade the Spectres] main story quest.

If he had still remained quiet, he would be sure to further anger the team! He quickly squeezed his brain to think of anything to say.

“It should be Skill Points or Yellow-Gold equipment. I think there is also a chance to get super awesome AoE ultimate skill book!”

“OHH!! Let’s go!”

Everyone got excited and walked into the village together.

“Where is everybody?”

The party entered the village and walked around inside for a while. Besides the wind and houses, there was no one around, leaving a kind of lonely and creepy feeling. Little Snow shivered and had goosebumps. Unable to calm herself, Little Snow moved closer to Drizzler.

“Hm. The quest is to find out the source of this phenomena!”

While the team was trying their best to search for clues. Zhang Yang was trying his best to recall the memories of this place. It was a long time ago; he could not remember everything in detail. All he remembered was that the main story quest should have started in this village. He could not remember how to trigger it! After all, he would not have known that he needed to return to the past!

The entire party split up and searched high and low for clues. They searched every house, every well, and even in the underground basement and upstairs cellar. Yet they could not find anyone.

“Mr. Holmes! There isn’t anyone here, not a single shadow. Where and from whom do we receive the quest? Hmm?” Little Snow rolled her eyes. Even though her target was Zhang Yang, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots were both collateral victims, mesmerized by her.

Zhang Yang appeared to not to hear. He was frowning and thinking. After sometime, he looked up and said, “Did you say something? Mind repeating that?”

“You want me to repeat what I said? Ok! You’re a pig head!” Little Snow snarled.

“That’s right!” Zhang Yang had figured it out.

“Take off your clothes!”

Little Snow was stunned.

“Hey hey! We are not that close enough to be doing those things! Then again, even if I did have a thing for you, there are still p-people a-around...”

“Han Yin Xue! Behave yourself!” said Drizzler angrily.

Zhang Yang burst laughing for a moment and calm down.

“I’m so sorry! Haha! Let me rephrase that. Take off your equipment. We’re about to kill ourselves. If we removed all our equipment, we would save the equipment durability and repair fees!”

“And why would we need to kill ourselves?!”



“Because, the NPC that will give us the quest, is a ghost!”

“Pu...” Drizzler laughed and quickly stopped when she saw Zhang Yang was not joking about it.

“R-really?” said Drizzler.

“Yeah!” Zhang Yang quickly unequipped his gears. The good thing about ‘God’s Miracle’ was that under a complete “naked” status, a character would still have indestructible clothing, for modesty purposes. Men would have a pair of shorts while women would have their lingerie on.

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han followed and quickly “stripped” down to their short pants.

When all 3 of them were “naked”, they turned their sight on the girls, visually assaulting them.

Drizzler felt their stares and quickly covered her chest. “W-what are you guys up to?”

“Little brat. Relax!” Zhang Yang gestured with his hands.

“With a body like that, no guys who be interested in you. Not even in 10 years!” Zhang Yang sighed.

“EXCUUUSE ME!??” Drizzler burst with anger.

“What exactly did you mean when you said ‘With a body like that’ huh?! How could you look at this wonderful and slender body and say that no one in the entire world would be interested in this hot piece of ass?”

Little Snow quickly stepped in and pulled Drizzler close. “Hmph! You bet! We are not going to undress here! Hmph! Let’s get going then!”

“Er...fine? Let’s go to the forest there and let the monsters there kill us!”

Zhang Yang was the first one to get out of the village. The rest of the party followed closely behind.

Before Zhang Yang moved on, he turned and reminded Drizzler one last time.

“Little brat. If you get killed wearing all of your equipment, you’re going to be incurred the expensive repair fees!” said Zhang Yang provokingly.

As expected, both Drizzler and Little Snow cringed. However, they stood firm with their decision, for them, money comes after pride!

Outside the village, there were Level 20 monsters on the side of

the pathway. All 5 of them rushed and triggered the monster's hostility, allowing the monsters to attack them without resisting. After a while, 5 souls appeared at the village's graveyard.

“Eh!? There is a girl up there!” In their phantom-like soul state, the 5 of them immediately spotted a ghostly little girl walking around the exit of the graveyard. On her head, there was a yellow colored exclamation mark.

[Emmy's Soul] (Normal)

Level: 1

HP: 0/50

Zhang Yang quickly moved in and approached the girl.

“Little girl. Why are you alone here?”

“Big brother! I'm scared!” the girl replied quietly.

“Oh...little girl. Don't be scared. Tell me, where are your parents? Where are the rest of the villagers?” Zhang Yang continue the conversation, hoping to trigger the quest.

“They...they're all dead! Sob...sob...” Emmy started to cry but in

the soul state, there were no tears.

Little Snow's motherly instinct kicked in. She quickly approached and hugged the girl. "There, there. Don't cry little girl!"

"Little girl, who killed your parents and the villagers!" Zhang Yang continued his attempt to trigger the quest.

Emmy sunk her head into Little Snow's chest and buried in deeper.

"Emmy cannot tell you that! It's too dangerous! You will die!"

"Don't worry. We are soldiers from the White Jade Castle!" Zhang Yang said loudly.

"Really?" Emmy eyes glittered.

"Really!"

Emmy raised her head and looked at Zhang Yang suspiciously.

"You have to prove your strength! I will not let you die for nothing!"

'Ding! Emmy has a quest for you: A Test of Strength. Will you

accept it?’

After all of them accepted the quest, the exclamation mark on her head turned into a white question mark. A white question mark indicated the quest was still incomplete. Once the quest was completed, the white question mark will turn yellow.

After accepting the quest, the 5 of them quickly revived. Zhang Yang checked the quest description.

[A Test of Strength (1)] (Difficulty level: C)

Quest description: To prove your true strength, Emmy has asked you to collect 10 pieces of [Finger Bone]! The item can be collected from the monster, Pale Skeleton. These monsters should be located around the flatlands north of the village.

Progress: Collected Finger Bone 0/10

“Let’s go! To the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands!” Zhang Yang and the guys quickly put on their equipment and ate recovery items before they started their journey.

After ten minutes of walking, the party approached their destination. As they continued further, the atmosphere gradually changed. The green grass turned a sickly greyish color. The air around them become heavier and darker. The environment turned

dull and their visibility dropped. All of them felt like they had been trapped in a caged filled with thick fog.

Within the mist, they could see skeletal monsters walking about.

‘Ding! You have entered the field: Desolated Ghostly Flatland!’

“This place gives me the creeps!” said Drizzler. Her frown was clearly visible despite the thick fog.

“Let’s get this going!” Zhang Yang said.

“These are normal monsters. They are not that hard to kill! Let’s split up! It’s no use sticking together. We are hunting for our own quest item.”

[Pale Skeleton] (Normal)

Level: 25

HP: 1,250

Everyone followed Zhang Yang’s advice and went their separate ways. Even though the monsters’ level were ahead of them, their equipment was strong enough to make killing fairly easy. The problem was not about the killing but the item drop rate. On

average, the drop rate was at 5 monsters per [Bone Finger].

The party took almost 20 minutes to gather enough items. They returned to the village to complete the quest. However, they needed to die again in order to talk to Emmy.

The party completed the quest one after another, but Emmy remained unconvinced with their strength. She then issued another quest. Zhang Yang and his party had already anticipated a follow-up quest since the quest name carried a number in its name. They accepted the quest without any hassle and proceed on with it.

[A Test of Strength (2)] (Difficulty level: C)

Quest description: Emmy wants you to further prove your strength. Start by killing Weak Zombies! You can find this monster in the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands north of the village.

Progress: Killed Weak Zombies 0/20

“This is so troublesome! We have to die every time we submit the quest! Furthermore, the hunting field and the NPC is so far apart! Which dumb idiot designed this?!” Drizzler scolded on and on.

Zhang Yang snickered.

“If it wasn’t designed this way. Other players would have easily

found this quest!”



## Chapter 63: Crafting The Antidote

---

The second quest was also an easy feat. However, the problem in this case was the spawn rate. Weak Zombies were simply too scarce. They spent too much time hunting for them one at a time. It was lucky that the game had a shared party kill system. As long as the party members did not stray too far away from each other, any Weak Zombie that Zhang Yang killed will also be counted as a kill for the rest of the team. The same went for anyone else. Still, they had to spend an hour to be able to kill a total of 20 Weak Zombies.

“This pisses me off!” Drizzler was a temperamental girl. She could not endure any form of slow progress that required patience. “Argh! I don’t care how sad or pitiful the girl is. If she gives out another quest that requires me to run around again, I’d smack her upside down!”

10 minutes later.

“Waa...haa...” Drizzler broke down. “Argh...why couldn’t I steel my resolve...waa waa...I just can’t help it! Look at her! She is so sad! Now I am sad!” Drizzler failed at her attempt to be stern.

“Haha! It can’t be helped! Let’s continue on!”

[A Test of Strength (3)] (Difficulty level: C)

Quest description: Emmy requires you to further prove your

strength! Kill 50 Obese Ghouls to prove it. You can find this monster in the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands north of the village.

Progress: Killed Obese Ghoul 0/50

Luckily the third quest was also a kill quest. Even though the kill count increased, the time taken to complete this quest was much faster than the previous one! Unlike the low spawn rate of Weak Zombies or the low drop rate of the [Bone Finger], the Obese Ghouls' spawn rate was so high that they managed to finish the quest in no time.

“I swear that this time! I will just dump this quest if Emmy issues another quest like this! Hmph! I will definitely walk the talk!” said Drizzler on their way back to the NPC.

Zhang Yang snickered. “Drizzler, you’re a pot calling the kettle black!”

“Huh? Black? I’m not racist!”

“No Drizzler. It’s means that you’re the epitome of irony.”

“Noob tank! I curse you to love guys instead of girls!”

“Woah there! Little brat! You really hate me don’t you!”

“They see me rollin’ they hatin’...” Fatty Han started to sing the song that was viral on the internet.

When they arrived at the village, they killed themselves again to talk with Emmy.

“Big brothers, elder sisters. Emmy has faith in your strength! You indeed have the strength to help us!” said the girl with her reddish eyes. “About 7 days ago, a Necromancer visited our village. With just a wave of his hand, he casted a greenish cloud of poison and engulfed the entire village, killing every single one of us!”

“Big brothers, elder sisters, this Necromancer is evil! Not only has he taken our bodies, he even dragged our souls! Emmy’s parents, grandparents, and all of the villagers; he has taken the souls of everyone! Please, Emmy begs you! Please save them! Please save their souls!”

Her sob was the only sound in the silent village.

“W-Would you hick help Emmy?”

With her puppy eyes, she begged the party.

“Woo...” Drizzler cried like a baby. Her cries were at first soft and appropriate, even, but eventually turned downright outrageous. “Waaah...that’s so sad! She’s so sad! Waaaah!”

Zhang Yang sighed.

“Emmy has to warn you! The Necromancer is very strong! You will have to make necessary preparations. You will need to gather ingredients to make an antidote for the Necromancer’s poison! Without it, you won’t stand a chance against him!”

‘Ding! Emmy has a quest for you: To Craft an Antidote. Will you accept it?’

[To Craft an Antidote] (Difficulty level: A)

Quest description: To resist the Necromancer’s poison, you would have to craft an antidote to dispel the poison mist he releases! Moon Orchids can be found in the Mossy Forest. Zombie Mushrooms can be found in the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands. The Frog King can be found in the Misty Swamp.

Progress: Collected Moon Orchid 0/10 Zombie Mushroom 0/10  
Frog King’s Blood 0/1

After putting in some thought, Zhang Yang decided to split the team to search for the ingredients.

“Little Snow and the brat, you guys go collect the Moon Orchid at the Mossy Forest. Fatty, Hundred Shot, and myself will go to the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands for the Zombie Mushrooms. Please rendezvous at this spot once everyone had gathered the ingredient. We will take on the Frog King together!”

“Okay!”

Everyone began heading out in their assigned direction but Fatty Han had some reservations. He insisted that he should be in the same party as Little Snow and Drizzler. After a little struggle, he was forcefully kicked back to Zhang Yang’s side by the girls. Reluctantly, Fatty Han rejoined and headed to the Desolated Ghostly Flatland.

The Desolated Ghostly Flatland was a training ground for players above Level 20. As many of the monsters here were higher than Level 25, their aggro range was much wider. Zhang Yang and the other 2 Hunters quickly found themselves caught up in huge mobs after just a few steps.

Zombie Mushrooms could be found growing in the earth, hidden and buried on the side of a copse. The mushrooms were dark in color and if you did not pay attention, you could easily walk pass them! The 3 of them made very slow progress as they were preoccupied in battles most of the time. On the other side of the village, Drizzler had an equally hard time finding the Moon Orchid. She had been complaining continuously in the party channel.

After wasting a whole 2 hours of killing and plucking, they successfully gathered 50 of each ingredient. Once they completed their gathering, they met back at the village. After a quick stat rep, they headed to the Misty Swamp, to fight the highly anticipated Frog King!

The Misty Swamp was located at the other side of the Mossy Forest, which was considered to be a Level 20 to 30 training ground. Since most casual players were still at around Level 15, this training ground was completely empty. With the absence of any being, this place was made to be more cool and creepy. Bubbles formed constantly within the mud of the swamp, releasing an extremely foul smell when the black-gooey globes burst.

“Urgh...it smells...” Drizzler voice was muffled as both Little Snow and she covered their mouths and pinched their noses. Her cheeks were puffed up and she looked like she was going to be sick at any moment.

“Go to the main setting window and open the Realism tab. There, you can adjust the Smell Setting to your liking. You could even turn it off if you want to. That way, you can remove the stinking smell!” Zhang Yang turned around after giving the advice. He had bigger things to worry about. Right now, Zhang Yang was stressed out. The entire swamp is so big, where is the Frog King exactly? Even if he was a man from the future that came back with valuable information, he was still a human; and an imperfect one at that!

“Looks like I have no choice. I’ll sweep the area a la old fashion!” Zhang Yang sighed heavily and walked deeper into the swamp. Usually, the boss would spawn at an area’s highest peak, or the center of the area, or even at the deepest floor. The mini-map would have an indicator that represented the quest monster. However, it would only appear in the map when you’re at a close proximity.

There was a pathway in the swamp, but the pathway was small

and narrow. You could slip and fall into the mud and receive a certain amount of damage. The monsters in this area were mostly hidden in the mud. It would only jump put and attack when a player entered its aggro range.

Some of the monsters available here were Steel-Skinned Frogs, Greyback Crocodile, and also the Dark Piranha. Every single monster here was in no shortage in terms of revolting, repulsive and disgusting appearances. Little Snow and Drizzler were constantly complaining about the designing ability of the developers.

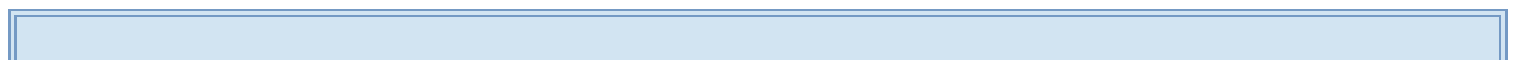
As they fought their way further into the swamp, they arrived at a huge muddy plain. In the center of the thick fog, they could see a large object crouched over, it's back silhouetted like a tiny hill.

Everyone was alerted of its presence and they checked their mini map to make sure. They found it! A yellow blinking dot appeared!

“Found it!”

They slowly approached the object and as they were close enough, they could clearly identify it.

There, sitting in the center of the muddy plain, with its glowing pair of dark gleaming eyes, was a 10 meter tall blood red giant frog. Its presence gave off a mystical magical evil aura! The gigantic frog opened its mouth and croaked as loud as thunder!



[Venomous Frog King] (Green-Copper)

Level: 25

HP: 150k

“Hah! It is a boss!” Fatty Han was delighted. “We can get equipment!”

Zhang Yang did not share the same excitement as Fatty Han. He was on full alert.

Even though this boss did not seem to be any harder than a dungeon boss, he did not possess enough information about this boss to safely fight it! A wild boss was not the same as a dungeon boss. If a dungeon boss was raided as often as possible, players would have extensive information about its skill or ability and they would be able to form a perfect strategy to fight it. However, this was not the case for wild bosses. The rate of encountering a wild boss was so low that the information about it was extremely scarce!

Zhang Yang had never encountered this boss before in his previous life, which was why he did not know a single thing about this boss's skill.

“We'll have to go in blind for now. Let's give it a shot!”



Zhang Yang pulled out his sword.

“Let’s go! Prepare for battle!”

With only two steps forward, Zhang Yang had entered the boss’ aggro range, triggering the boss to croak loudly and turned its enormous body towards Zhang Yang. The boss jumped and tackled Zhang Yang, while at the same moment, Zhang Yang activated <Charge>. Both of their attacks met in the air and both of them fell down. Completely unaffected by Zhang Yang’s stun effect, it opened its wide mouth and attacked Zhang Yang.

‘Dodge!’

Zhang Yang quickly turned to face the Frog King and landed an attack on it.

‘-334!’

When the Frog King received Zhang Yang’s attack, it croaked loudly and opened its mouth wide. A foul-smelled liquid came flying out and hit Zhang Yang.

‘Ding! You have received the effect of Foul Poison (1 stack). Receiving 200 Nature Damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds!’

“Shit! It’s strong!” Zhang Yang had never expected the poison to be so powerful. It inflicted a strong DoT damage with just one stack! Zhang Yang could not imagine what would have happened

to him if he received more stacks of the effect!

The rest of the party quickly started their attack while Little Snow instantly casted a <Regeneration> and chanted a healing spell.

Just within a few hits, the Frog King spat another wad of poison, stacking another layer of DoT on Zhang Yang. In just half a minute, Zhang Yang had 5 layers of DoT effect, taking away 800 damage in just one tick.

Luckily the DoT effect was capped at 5 stacks. If it was unlimited stack, Zhang Yang could literally die in just a few seconds.

“Hmph! Such an easy boss! Just a little while more before my finishing strike!” Fatty Han laughed menacingly.

‘Ding! Venomous Frog King has used <Poison Spray>!’

A dark reddish liquid spewed everywhere, hitting every one. Upon contact, their body glowed in a deep red color. Beneath their feet, there was a circle sized red mist measuring approximately 1 meter in diameter. A debuff icon appeared on everyone’s head.

[Contagious Poison]: You have been poisoned. Receiving 100 Nature Damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds! This poison will spread and infect others. Damage is increased by 300% for every infection.

---

Zhang Yang understood the gravity of the situation and quickly called out. “Spread out! Don’t group together! Little brat! Go and fight behind the boss! Keep at least 2 meters away from me!”

His call was a little too late. Since Little Snow, Hundred Shots, and Fatty Han are ranged characters, they were all standing close to each other. When the <Poison Spray> landed on them, their poison infected each other, totaling up to 3 times infection and 900% increased damage.

They had received 1000 damage every 3 seconds!

Zhang Yang and Drizzler had infected each other, receiving 2 times infections.

Little Snow then frantically casted <Holy Prayers>, followed by <Regeneration>, <Holy Shield>, and regular healing spell. However, as everyone was losing HP at a tremendous speed, she could not keep up with the healing and died.

‘Ding! Player Slim and Handsome had died!’

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots had died!’

‘Ding! Player Little Snow had died!’

Once the healer was down, Zhang Yang and Drizzler could not

escape their imminent doom. They struggled to hang on for a few more seconds but eventually died after that.

With no players left to attack it, the Frog King resetted, hopping back to its original spot and croaked. Whether it was a victorious warcry or an automated NPC behavioral pattern, no one would ever know.

## Chapter 64: A Boss That Didn't Drop Equipment

---

“I was...actually poisoned to death...” tears flowed down Fatty Han's cheek.

“I object this! This is absurd! How could there be a venomous frog!” Drizzler scolded.

Zhang Yang laughed. “Ah come on! Even something like milk, or...or...eggs has poison in them! What's so strange about a poison spitting frog?!”

Fatty Han continued to wail alone.

“Woo...I got sprayed in the face...”

“Ew...” The girls turned away from Fatty Han in disgust.

Zhang Yang and Hundred Shots burst into laughter after they understood what Fatty Han meant.

“I-It's fine Fatty. Haha...You're won't get inseminated by the Frog seme-I mean, poison!” Zhang Yang quickly ran off to his body.

“Noob tank! Since when did you learn all the indecent stuff from Fatty Han?!” Drizzler turned and gave a scornful look at Fatty Han.

“Hey! What did you mean by that? Zhang Yang was the bad influence! Not me! I was young and pure when this guy came along and dragged me down into the dark side! Ladies! You must set the facts straight!”

While they were having their conversation, everyone went back to their body and revived.

“Now that you have seen what the frog can do, you should now know what to do! But just to be sure, don’t stand together! Don’t let the poison infect another person. We cannot withstand that kind of damage!”

“Okay!”

Zhang Yang walked towards the boss and triggered its aggro. The fight started as the monster leapt towards him.

‘-359!’

‘-381!’

Wielding a one-handed weapon, Zhang Yang could still deal a much stronger damage than Drizzler with her two-handed weapon. Still, it was all because of the sword Zhang Yang wielded. The Level 20 Gray-Silver sword was still the strongest sword so far. Coupled with the passive skill <Eagle Eye> and 5 stacks of <Cripple Defense>, Zhang Yang was practically fighting a boss with o

defense! Any attack in that state would be extremely devastating! Fatty Han and the rest could only stare in jealousy.

‘Ding! Venomous Frog King has used <Poison Spray>!’

The dark-reddish liquid was sprayed all over the place, hitting everyone with the liquid. Upon contact, their body glowed in a deep red color. Beneath their feet, there was a circle shaped red mist, measuring approximated 1 meter in diameter. A debuff icon appeared on everyone’s head and they started to receive damage from the poison.

However, having died once under this skill, everyone proactively moved around and spread across the battlefield, preventing further infections. Little Snow quickly did her job without having Zhang Yang to remind her.

Her current magic attack exceeded 300 and her <Regeneration> heals were over 120 HP per tick, overshadowing the boss’s DoT damage. Her <Regeneration> completely nullified the boss’s poison effect! That is, if the team did not do something foolish like infecting each other with the poison.

80%, 70%...the boss HP started to drop at a steady rate.

“Haha! You smelly frog! Let’s see how long can you hold on!” Drizzler laughed out manically as she swung her weapon around like a true psychopath.

“Croak croak!” The frog “answered”.

60%, 50%, 40%!

The boss damage was undeniably strong, but Zhang Yang’s evasive capability was stronger. Little Snow’s healing strength was also on another level to begin with. With the both of them working together, even a tougher boss could not stand a chance against them.

5%, 4%, 3%, 2%, 1%, 0%!

A loud thud could be heard when the boss’ huge body fell.

‘Ding! You and the party members around have killed the Venomous Frog King. Obtaining 30,050 Experience Points (50 points party bonus)!’

“Shitty boss! Rah! Take that!” Drizzler stomped the lifeless body.

“I wonder how many [Frog King’s Blood] would this boss drop...” Zhang Yang reached out his hands and opened the corpse.

[Frog King’s Blood]: Quest item

Thank god there were 5 of it.



“I think it depends on the number of people who accepted the quest!” said Hundred Shots.

“Who cares about that! As long as there’s enough for everyone to complete the quest!” said Fatty Han as he took one of the [Frog King’s Blood] and kept it inside his inventory.

“Has everyone collected one each already?”

“Okay, okay! Move aside! I want to get our prize now!” said Drizzler as she pushed Zhang Yang aside.

Zhang Yang laughed and talked to Little Snow.

“Didn’t you guys use to compete for the right to open the corpse? What happened to your petty squabble? Are you guys at peace now?”

“What are you saying? To let the young ones have their way is what an elder sister is supposed to do!” Little Snow winked.

“Tch! What are you lying about this time! You cheated me of my limited-edition cologne! Both of them!” Drizzler quickly overruled Little Snow’s sweet talk.

Little Snow rolled her eyes and said, “You’re still too young to put on cologne! And I didn’t cheat. I was taking them away for

your own good!”

“Hmph!” Drizzler scoffed, unconvinced.

[Poison Essence] (Green-Copper, Special Item)

Use: Causes all targets (Including the user) within 30 meter to be poisoned, receiving 150 Nature Damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds. Effect cannot be stacked.

Charge left: 50/50

“Eh? What is this? I have never seen this kind of item before!” said Fatty Han.

“A Special Item class. It’s some sort of a play toy like item. You can’t really keep using them as they have limited usage. If it can be used unlimitedly, it would be the same as having another AoE attack skill!” Zhang Yang explained.

“Gimme! Gimme! I call dibs!” Drizzler’s demanded. She wanted this extra little tool to increase her damage as she had always lost to Zhang Yang in damage power. Drizzler was quite overbearing whenever she voiced out her demands, so everyone gave it up for her.

[Frog King's Flap] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +1

Use: Grant you the ability to jump higher, last for 10 seconds.  
Cool down time: 1 minute.

Level requirement: 20

“Fuh! Good item!” Zhang Yang eyes quickly glinted. “Mine!”

“Noob tank, this is a Cloth Armor! Death sentence to you who takes item without consideration!” Drizzler complained with her puffy cheeks.

“Are you really that dumb? This item is designed to be a Cloth Armor so that the 6 main classes could equip this!”

“What so special about it?” Fatty Han started to show some interest.

“With this item, you can reach places you normally could not reach!” Zhang Yang had no intention to keep it a secret. In the game, there were places that could only be reached with equipment such as the [Frog King's Flap]. Those hidden places may contain treasure chest and also NPCs that could issue special quests!

Fatty Han faces morphed into a perverted look.

“Places that could not reach...like a girl’s bathroom window...”

“Go to hell!”

Before this, Zhang Yang had rarely ever voiced his wants, so everyone willingly gave up their roll when he asked for the item.

[Unhatched Little Tadpole] (Green-Copper Pet Monster)

Use: Hatch a little Tadpole. Who knows, someday it could become a handsome prince!

“What is a Pet Monster?” Fatty Han turned and looked at Zhang Yang, waiting for an explanation. All of them knew that Zhang Yang was a “beta player”.

Zhang Yang walked and stood in front of them. He dusted off his clothes and adjust his cloth.

“Ahem!”

Everyone took a step closer, expecting the explanation to be epic.

“A Pet Monster is...a pet monster!”

“Whaa...”

“Ahaha, I’m just kidding. A Pet Monster is like a pet dog or cat. A companion that you could bring along anywhere you go. However, this pet monster and a Hunter’s pet is not the same! This pet cannot attack nor has it any attacking ability!”

“Oh!”

“This is nonsense!” Fatty Han puffed an angry breath through his nose.

“This boss only dropped these 3 stupid toys and no equipment at all! This is preposterous!”

Zhang Yang shook his head. “Tch Tch Tch! These 3 “toys” are worth much more than some equipment! You must keep this in mind. With our leveling speed, how long do you think an equipment will last? A Level 20 equipment could only last until you reach Level 30! The turnover rate for equipment at our low-level period is very fast! However, non-combat items are different! They can be used for as long as you want! Especially Pet Monsters! Pet Monsters’ drop rates are extremely low! After half a year, you could probably sell this Pet Monster for at least 10,000 gold pieces in the auction house!”

Zhang Yang was not making thing up. In his previous life, pet monsters could be sold for a very high price, especially those are extremely rare. Those rare pets could be sold for at least a few hundred thousands! What he told them was an understatement.

“T-ten thousand!?” Both Drizzler and Little Snow eye’s glinted with the money symbol! Both of them rolled for the item in the same time.

Zhang Yang gave up the item because he was not all that fond of the money. Fatty Han and Hundred Shots also gave up the pet because they were not as interested.

Little Snow obtained the item with 76 points, while Drizzler only got 43 points.

“Alright, time to submit the item and complete the quest! Once we have completed the quest, we will get a reward. And that reward is the one that we should be excited about!” said Zhang Yang even though he never did complete a single main story quest in his previous life!

The party then headed back to the Antelope Village and killed themselves to talk to Emmy.

“Wonderful! You have gathered the ingredients to make the antidote!” Emmy smiled happily.

“Big brother! Elder sister! Please head to the evil Necromancer’s

Lair and save all the villager's soul!"

'Ding! Emmy has a quest for you: Rescue the Villagers' Souls. Will you accept it? This is a main story quest. Complete the quest to receive a luxurious reward!"

Here it comes!

The party quickly accepted the quest.

'Ding! You have obtained the item [Properly-Made Antidote]!"

[Rescue the Villager's Soul] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest description: Emmy pleads with you to save the souls of the residents of Antelope Village. You will have to defeat the evil Necromancer Zac in order to release the imprisoned souls! You can find the evil Necromancer Zac at the Cave of Bones, west of the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands.

Be wary! Zac is extremely strong and powerful. Make sure you have enough players to fight him together!

Progress: Released Villagers' Soul 0/1

[Properly-Made Antidote] (Quest Item)

Use: Grants you the immunity to the deadly poison! Last for 10 minutes.

Charge left: 3/3

“We finally got the main story quest!” said Drizzler excitedly.

“Haha! Furthermore, Emmy is no longer the NPC that we will need to meet to complete the quest! In other words, we do not need to kill ourselves anymore!” said Zhang Yang with a smile on his face.

Everyone quickly turned their sights to the girl’s head and there is no white exclamation mark on her head! The NPC to complete the quest is someone else!

Hundred Shots suddenly said, “We did an A-level difficulty quest and fought a Green-Copper boss. Now, our quest is an S-level difficulty; which means the boss we will be fighting is a Gray-Silver boss?”

“Ah! Right!” Little Snow’s voice overwhelmed Hundred Shots. “Remember the Gray-Silver boss Andoin or Andola... I can’t remember his name. Has he spawned already?”

Zhang Yang scratched his head and thought for a while.

“Hm...That Gray-Silver boss will re-spawn after 3 days. Which



means...it's today!"

"Awesome! We must fight it later!" Little Snow licked her lips.  
"So much money..."

"Sure! However, we must first kill this current quest boss!"  
Zhang Yang waved his arms forward. "Let's go heroes! We have  
ourselves a bad guy to kill!"

# Chapter 65: Undefeatable?

---

The ever-desolated flatland was still covered in thick fog. The sky was dark and zombies were limping everywhere. The entire place was surrounded in an eerie atmosphere. Since Zhang Yang had visited this area a few times before, the map of the area only revealed a portion. There were still many area of the map that were still hidden in a black shadow.

In this game, a player would have to explore the unknown areas of an unknown region to have the system reveal the region's name. You could also reveal this information through buying [Map] from an NPC of that specific area.

“This place gives me the creeps!” said Little Snow. She had been cowering behind Drizzler this whole time while holding tightly to her sleeves.

“Um, cousin. You're already quite old now. Wouldn't you be ashamed for being this scared?” said Drizzler after walking for quite distance. She could not hold in anymore.

Little Snow nudged her cheek and said, “Tch. You cheeky little brave girl!”

“Teehee!” Drizzler was not angered by her comment but instead she smiled. “Hey! I have an idea. Shall we dress up as ghosts and scare the residents at our apartment?” The three guys frowned at her sudden idea. What on earth was this little rascal thinking?

As they travelled deeper into the flatlands, the monster's level gradually rose from Level 21 to 24. Luckily the team was filled with strong players as they killed their way further into the flatlands.

“You can find the evil Necromancer Zac in the Cave of Bones west of the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands’ bullshit! This place is so freaking huge! Where on earth are we going locate this so-called Cave of Bones?” Fatty Han scolded. He had been walking for so long but only managed to reveal one quarter of the entire region.

“Hm... shall we split up?” Hundred Shot suggested.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and nodded. “That’s a good idea. Let’s split up!”

The five of them split into four. Little Snow insisted that she did not want to leave her cousin alone. All five of them then headed into four different directions. With the team divided, the killing speed drastically decreased, but going in all directions sped up to exploration and in only another ten minutes, Little Snow posted in the party channel, “Here it is! I’ve found it! Get over here!”

Since Zhang Yang was separated with the girls for a distance, they were gone from his mini-map. Zhang Yang quickly open the world map and headed towards their general direction. As he killed the monsters in his way towards Little Snow, he stumbled upon the bodies of the same monsters that he was fighting. Someone just fought this monster not too long ago. He quickly checked his mini-map and found Fatty Han.

After a while, Zhang Yang and the two other guys met with the girls. The place that they were currently at was on a small short hill. At the foot of the hill there was a cave entrance as high as three men. Nearby the entrance, there were at least 7 to 8 Skeleton monsters patrolling. Zhang Yang opened the world map and checked the area they were in. The area was no longer black; he could see texture of the hill along with the name “Cave of Bones” superimposed on it.

“Onward! To the cave!” Zhang Yang called out.

[Recently Assembled Skeleton]

Level: 25

HP: 2,500

Once Fatty Han read the name of the monster, he felt disgusted. “Who could have such a weird hobby to actually play with a human skeleton?!”

He turned his gaze to Drizzler and immediately had a playful thought. “Hey Drizzler, compared to these skeletons, you’re actually quite well-endowed.”

“F\*ck off, fatty bum!” Fatty Han instantly enraged the party. The girls started to literally hit him. Still, no matter how hard he was

beaten, there was still a smile of ecstasy on his face. Every time the girls struck him, he let out a weird “Ohh Ohh Ahh Ahh” kind of sound. The girls stopped immediately as they thought that it was both strange and scary.

The party then proceed on clearing all the minions outside and went into the cave. Luckily, the designer of this area did not want to trouble the players too much as there were many fire torch lit everywhere in this cave. Even though the light from the torches were not all that bright, Zhang Yang and the party did not have much trouble seeing further inside. Just like outside of the cave, there were many skeleton monsters roaming about. However, they were only just normal minions that posed no threat to the party.

The team rampaged on and killed their way forward. None of the monsters could even last longer than five seconds. Ever since Little Snow was technically freed from her duty as a healer, she could only follow behind the team, picking up all the loots that were dropped by the monsters.

After they fought for a while, Zhang Yang suddenly recalled a memory. “Ah! I remember now! This cave has five floors! The final boss is located the deepest level!”

It was not that he had entered this cave in his previous life, but he remembered because he had read an introduction article posted in the official forum. This cave had five floors and every floor had a mini-boss. Beside the expected Green-Copper equipment, the boss also dropped a few non-combative items that were extremely valuable! When the game reached near mid-maturity phase, every Cave of Bones of every city was occupied with big guilds. The caves

were so occupied that normal players did not even know what the boss looked like as they could not walk into the cave in the first place!

“F\*cking hell! Five floors!?” Fatty Han cursed as he could no longer hold in his frustration of walking and clearing the entire first floor! Zhang Yang laughed. “Yeah! This is troublesome! But remember this, there is a mini-boss on every floor! Their rewards are also extremely valuable!”

Fatty Han regained his spirit and quickly replied, “Okay! Go, go, go! Let’s kick the boss’ ass and get some equipment!”

The monsters here were all killed off quickly under the fierce attack of the party. After 10 minutes, they finally hit the end of the dungeon. There was a 2-meter tall, gigantic Skeleton monster that was blocking the pathway onward.

[Skeleton Captain, Gawain] (Green-Copper)

Level: 25

HP: 250,000

“Holy crap! This one is much stronger than the others!” Fatty Han blinked his eyes.

Zhang Yang quickly explained. “You need to understand that a dungeon boss is limited to a few people. The one we just fought, Marzerway’s Lair was only a 5-man dungeon. This is a field boss. There is no limit to how many people that is able to participate. It wouldn’t be called a boss if it can be killed off easily, now would it?”

“Ahh...I wonder what skill does this one have. Let’s just hope that it’s not as strong as the Frog King!” Fatty Han did not dare to be too relaxed after he was “shot in the face”.

“Let’s not waste any more time. All three range players stand behind and spread out! Little brat, we’re up!” Zhang Yang took out his sword and walked. He quickly activated <Charge> once he was in the effective range.

‘-334!’

Before the <Charge>, the giant growled and threw its skeletal arm at Zhang Yang when he entered its aggro range. The stun effect was only effective for half a second, but it was enough so that the boss’s movement was interrupted halfway.

‘<Cripple Defense>!’

‘-160!’

To maximize the team firepower, Zhang Yang used <Cripple Defense> on the boss when he had enough aggro.

“Bold intruders! How dare you enter the domains of Lord Zac! I will eat your soul! I will make you all into my slaves!” said Gawain, the Skeleton Captain once it recovered from the stun, growling loudly at the party.

“Pffft! It’s probably time to brush your teeth! Smelly, stinky boss!” Drizzler swung her spear and pierced the monster, dealing significantly higher damage than she had before. After the morning dungeon trip, she swapped out a few of her old equipment for newer and stronger ones, increasing her damage by a noticeable amount.

“Puny human! I want your blood!” the monster cried out and immediately ignored Zhang Yang. It moved at lightning speed towards Drizzler and held her tightly with both of its boney, skeleton arms. It then opened its pale white jaws and bit into Drizzle’s fair neck.

‘Ding! Player Drizzler has received the effect of <Vampiric Bite>. Losing 200 HP every second and heals the caster for 2000HP. Last for 10 seconds!’

“Aiyyyy! Bastard boss, let me go!” Drizzler frantically tried to escape its grasp but under the boss’ skill control, she could not retaliate. No matter how hard she tried she just could not get herself out of the situation. She felt pressed down like Sun Wu Kong trapped under the Five Element Mountain.

Zhang Yang started to laugh, “Haha! Little brat, I always thought



that you were always born with a provoking face. Why else would the boss jump on you instead of the others?”

“Shut up and help me!” said Drizzler.

“He can’t. No one can! The skill is unbreakable!” Hundred Shots and Fatty Han fired a few <Silencing Shot> and failed to interrupt the boss. Luckily, Little Snow was fast enough to recover the HP loss. She was constantly healing Drizzler, making sure her HP is always out of the red danger zone.

After 10 seconds, the boss dropped Drizzler and began to attack Zhang Yang furiously. The party attack was strong, but the boss’ vampiric recovery was stronger. The boss recovered almost 20,000 HP in just 10 seconds, almost to a full health!

97%, 94%, 90%!

“Useless Hunter! I will suck your blood dry!” This time, the boss picked Fatty Han as his meal.

‘Ding! Player Fatty Han has received the effect of <Vampiric Bite>. Losing 200 HP every second and heals the caster for 2000HP. Last for 10 seconds!’

“Argh! No! Don’t take my blood! My blood is bad! It tastes bad!” Fatty Han grit his teeth as he faced the monster at a close distance, completely filled with disgust.

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds...

+2000, +2000, +2000...

Green texts appeared on the boss' head continuously and after 10 seconds, it was healed back to 95%! "Crap! We've been attacking him and it heals nonstop!" said Fatty Han as he was fazed by the boss's full health bar.

Zhang Yang started to frown. This was not going as planned. He deduced that his team's firepower was not strong enough. If they had 10 members attacking at the same time, then the boss would not be able to keep up its healing with the damage received!

"Noob tank! Do you have any other strategies hidden in your sleeves? If this goes on, my cousin will run out of MP really soon!"

"She's right. The boss only lost 5% HP and I have already used 15% of my MP. If we drag this on any longer, we will surely die before it!" Little Snow calmly exclaimed.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and yelled, "Everyone stop!" The party members looked at each other with uncertainty. However, they placed their trust on Zhang Yang and stopped their attack.

"Hey, not you! Continue to heal!" Zhang Yang quickly shifted his position to evade the boss' attack. Overtime, the boss started to grow stronger, its attacks got quicker, making it harder for Zhang Yang to evade. Eventually, Zhang Yang had to take damage.

Little Snow scoffed. “You asked all of us to stop! You said it yourself!” Even as she debated, she still casted the healing spell, recovering Zhang Yang.

94%...93%...92%...

When Zhang Yang was the only one attacking, the boss received less damage and lost its HP slower. It only reached 90% after so long.

“Damned Guardian! No matter how hard your skin maybe, my teeth can still pierce through it!” The boss attacked Zhang Yang and used <Vampiric Bite> on him.

“The boss’ Lifesteal skill is depends on the rate of its HP lost! If you attack it fast, its activation rate will also get frequent! If you attack it slower, it will be less frequent!” Zhang Yang roughly assumed the boss’ mechanics.

“F\*ck! That means if the party DPS does not exceed 2000, we can never kill him!?”

Everyone was bewildered and baffled. Even though they were much stronger than other players on the same level, excluding Little Snow, their total DPS only totalled up 600 tops!

How could they continue on the fight?

# Chapter 66: Reverse Lifesteal

---

“We should recruit more people! We aren’t getting anywhere with our current numbers!” said Fatty Han. Drizzler nodded. “I agree as well! We need more people!”

Suddenly, Zhang Yang had an idea. “Everyone! Resume your attack! I have a plan!”

“Speak your mind!”

Zhang Yang smiled. “Brat! Pay attention the boss’ HP. When it reaches 91%, I want you to use the [Poison Essence]!”

“What is that?” Drizzler asked honestly.

“Tch! The one you got from the Frog King! The Special Item that can poison everyone?”

“Oh. Why?” Drizzler asked again.

“Damn! Why would you keep asking questions?!”

“Of course I’ll ask. I don’t know what you are up to!” Drizzler pouted her lips, trying to act cute.

“Hah! Fine. I give in!” Zhang Yang sighed. “I think I remembered something about this boss skill. If the targeted player has the

<Poisoned> status, the <Vampiric Bite> will have no effect!”

There were not many bosses in game that possessed <Lifesteal> ability, which was why Zhang Yang could not immediately come up with a counter measure for the boss’ skill. It would have solved the problem if he recruited more people to fight, but there was an easier way. If one could somehow inflict the poison status onto the targeted player, the boss’ life stealing skill would be nullified and in reverse, the boss would receive more damage!

“Okay.” said Drizzler even though she felt otherwise.

“I want to rearrange the battle position. Little brat, I want you to stand directly in front of the boss. Little Snow and the rest of the party will stand behind Drizzler. When Drizzler lets out the poison, all of you must run into the poison ring and get the <Poisoned> effect!” Zhang Yang explained.

The normal playstyle would have a Bandit in play. The Bandit would enable Friendly-Fire mode, and had his weapon coated in poison. When the boss used a Lifesteal skill, the Bandit would then attack the target player and inflict <Poison> on him. This method could completely counter the boss’ Lifesteal skill.

However, since Zhang Yang’s party did not have a Bandit onboard, he would have to resort to the self-poisoning method. It was lucky that the party found the [Poison Essence] from the Frog King.

“Noob tank! Why’d you say I would “let out poison”!? I’ll smack

you in the face!” Drizzler clenched her fist and pointed at Zhang Yang.

“Hey Little Yang, what happened between the two of you? You won’t be able to get the both of them if this goes on!” Fatty Han sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

“Why are you always thinking of perverted stuff? Get both girls? I’ll get both of my fist you’re your face!” Zhang Yang replied angrily.

“Haha! Little Yang! Just look at them! They’re both quite good! The elder one has the bobbylicious body even though her face is just “meh”. As for the little one, her body still has more room to mature but her face is just-GRAHHH- I can’t take it anymore! Remember, Little Yang! You must grab the opportunity while it’s just lying there! Imagine, two girls, one man! GAH! Thinking about it alone boils my blood!”

“...Fatty Han. You’re really a beast inside that meat suit aren’t you...”

94%, 93%, 92%, 91%. Zhang Yang alone could not damage fast, but when everyone attacked together, the boss’ HP dropped like a landslide.

“Little brat! Use it now!” Zhang Yang shouted.

Drizzler was someone Zhang Yang had his eyes on, as her ability

was on the level of an A-tier Professional League player. Her reaction speed was nothing something made up. With that, she quickly smashed the [Poison Essence] and released a green mist from her body, instantly engulfing 30 meters around her. The party did not even need to get close to her to get the poison effect.

‘Ding! You have received the effect of [Poison Essence]. Receiving 150 Natural Damage every 3 seconds for 15 seconds!’

The green mist appeared and disappeared in an instant. It only lasted for a second before the mist dispersed. Everyone, including Zhang Yang and the boss as well were inflicted by the poison effect. Their body were glowing in a greenish hue.

“Haha! Little Drizzler. Just now, what you did, it was as if you have just let out a massive fart!” Fatty Han laughed maniacally.

“Yuck!” Drizzler face was filled with disgust. “Wretched Fatty bum! I won’t forgive you!”

“Foolish Hunter! I’ll suck your blood dry!” The boss activated its skill just as its HP reached 90%. It sprinted across the field like a lightning bolt, and sank its fangs into Fatty’s Han’s neck.

‘-2000!’

‘-2000!’

‘-2000!’

‘...’

A chain of red damage texts attack appeared.

After 10 seconds, instead of healing, the boss' HP had dropped to 76%! “Haha! Have a taste of your own medicine!” Fatty Han shouted. He turned around and shook his butt provokingly.

“Oh come on! Do you actually be more wretched than this?” said Drizzler.

Fatty Han thought for a while and said, “If you don't mind, I could even undo my pants and shake my bare-naked ass at the boss!”

They thought that he was only joking but when he was about undress, they yelled, “Stop! We mind! We mind!” Fatty Han was shocked at their reaction and quickly stop his act. “Hey hey! I was just joking. I wasn't serious about doing it. Do you really think I would actually fool around like an idiot?”

“I know that you're absolutely not an idiot. But when you're fooling around, you're worse than an idiot!” Zhang Yang sighed loudly. Fatty Han laughed. “Haha! Precisely! That is why you're my own brother from another mother!”

After Gawain took severe damage from its own skill, it did not activate the skill again immediately. Instead, it waited until its HP



dropped till 50% to activate it again. However, under Zhang Yang's guidance, Drizzler was able to maintain everyone's <Poison> status and made sure that they could always counter the boss' <Lifesteal>. However, the credit was not to Drizzler alone; Little Snow was able to heal everyone in time. Luckily, she was as good of a support as her own massive "supports" underneath her clothes.

After taking damage again instead of healing, the boss' HP was reduced to only 36% when it had done "poisoning" itself.

36%. Just a little more...

"Haha! Take that, vampire wannabe! Let's see how you die, being defeated by your own skill!" said Drizzler jubilantly.

"Since you mentioned about vampire, I remember a story. It was a..." Fatty Han let out a cynical smile.

"Will you just shut up?!" Two girls cried out while rolling their eyes. They did not have to listen, they knew that any story told by that Fatty bum would be something indecent. "Woo...why would you say that? I was just trying to lighten the atmosphere!" said Fatty Han.

30%, 25%, 20%, the boss' HP was shaved off by the party without any noticeable problems. When it reached 10%, Gawain activated the skill for the last time. Its action only accelerated its impending death. The party killed off the boss before it could finish the skill.

“Hmph! Die like the dead man you already are!” Drizzler went up the body and stomped on it to release her frustration. “Little brat! You’re quite the feisty one aren’t you?!” Zhang Yang laughed.

“Now that she’s stomping on a skeleton, I have a story about Skeleton Stomping. Once upon a time...” Everyone yelled in unison, “Shut up!”

“Wuuuuu...” Fatty Han pretended to cry and secluded himself to a corner.

“Let’s check out the goods!” Drizzler began opening the corpse.

[White Skull Hammer] (Green-Copper, One-handed Hammer)

Weapon attack: 95-113

Attack interval: 2.6 seconds

DPS: 40

Level requirement: 20

“Ah! What luck! Another item up for the auction house!” cried Fatty Han.

“Hey! This is still 300 gold here!” Little Snow was delighted instead. She quickly pushed the others to give it to her to put it up in the auction house. “Hah. Now that you mentioned it. How much was the sword you sold yesterday?” Zhang Yang asked casually.

“Ah! 300 gold coins!” Little Snow answered in the same manner.

“Ah I see... So, after distribution, all of us should get 60 gold coins each, right?”

“There is still the 10% service charge of the auction house!” Little Snow crossed her arms angrily.

“Ah. I understand. So after deducting the service charge, we should all have 54 gold coins each, correct?”

“Technically, yes...” Little Snow’s voice was getting softer, as if she was guilty of something.

Zhang Yang raised his voice. “Then why am I getting only 54 silver coins?” Little Snow started to get scared. “Erhm... Maybe you’re mistaken... Did you look properly?”

“What do you think?”

Little Snow lowered her head. “I think you’re mistaken!”

“Enough! Imburse my money! If not, pay with what you have!”

Zhang Yang smiled menacingly. He had confirmed with both Hundred Shots and Fatty Han that both of them had obtained 54 gold coins from Little Snow. He was the only one that obtained 54 silver coins!

Little Snow rolled her eyes and said, “This lady here has nothing but her smile to offer!”

Fatty Han walked over. “Alright then, smile for me!”

“F\*ck off!”

[White Bone Crown] (Green-Copper, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +4

Vitality: +20

Strength: +16

Dexterity: +4

Level requirement: 20

Zhang Yang’s current helm was already the same as this new

equipment. He then rejected the roll and offered it to Drizzler.

‘Ding! You have obtained 11 silver pieces!’

“Eh? That’s it?” said Fatty Han as the body started to disappear. “Well I’ll be damned. This boss is really stingy!”

“Well, technically in the field, the last boss is one level higher than the mini-boss. So, we’re considered lucky enough to fight a Gray-Silver boss!”

Zhang Yang led the way forward and went through a tiny and narrow walkway.

Shush!

Just as Zhang Yang poked his head out, eight debuffs simultaneously appeared on his head. He scanned the area and saw 8 Skeleton Spellcasters running towards him! He frantically shouted, “Get back!” and led the team back into the walkway.

The Skeleton Spellcasters chased after them until the walkway and stopped right there. They remained there for a while before turning back into the shadows. “Holy shit! There are so many of them!” Fatty Han swallowed his saliva. Everyone could hear the sound of it and realized how frightening it was.

Zhang Yang’s head popped out ‘-80’ damage texts and only stopped after 15 seconds. Little Snow got busy immediately.

[Shadow Decay]: Curse a target with the power of the shadow. Causes 500 shadow damage over 15 seconds to a target.

Hundred Shot shouted as well. “Damn, these monsters sure are strong!”

“Necromancers. They are also known as the Curse Magicians. Their DoT skills are very OP!” Zhang Yang sucked in a long breath. “This is quite a problem here. There are so many monsters inside. There’s already eight of them waiting for us at the entrance. Damn! It’s going to be a crowd inside there!”

Fatty Han tapped Zhang Yang’s shoulder and asked, “How do we fight?”

Zhang Yang thought for a while. “At this level, the Curse Magicians have not only <Shadow Decay> but also another skill called <Shadow Whip>! The cast range of <Shadow Decay> is 30 meters while the cast range of <Shadow Whip> is only 20 meters! Did you guys notice, those monsters cannot leave the second floor?”

Four of them remained stoic, their eyes glinted with a plan.

“Heh. I knew you guys were smart. Let’s drag them to the entrance and kill them with our AoE skill!”

## Chapter 67: Another Godlike Boss?

---

“Hunters stand behind, as long as you can hit the monsters with your <Barrage>!” Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, “Little Snow, I want you to stand further behind. As for you, little brat, don’t attack the monsters just yet. Go and stand together with Little Snow!” Drizzler had her jaw dropped in shock. As a battle maniac, she did not feel comfortable when being asked not to fight.

“Okay! I’ll lure the monsters over now! I want you guys to attack the monsters when they start to approach the entrance. Hold on to their aggro!” Zhang Yang added.

“Roger that!”

“Off I go! Little Snow, give me a <Holy Shield>!”

Hong! Little Snow waved her hand and a transparent shield appeared on his body.

“Hah! Little Yang! The ‘protection’ you’re wearing is quite powerful huh!” Fatty Han said.

Zhang Yang ran out of the entrance and instantly triggered the eight Skeleton Spellcasters. With just a wave of their staff, eight debuffs appeared on Zhang Yang’s head. Zhang Yang quickly withdrew, luring the eight monsters along with him to the dungeon entrance.

“Open fire!”

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han both activated <Barrage> simultaneously and targeted the skill at the entrance.

All eight monsters changed their aggro to Hundred Shots and shifted their target to him.

Shush, Shush, Shush! Eight <Shadow Decay> appeared on his head and since he was 30 meters away from each other, the monsters were unable to cast <Shadow Whip> on him. They could only stare at him at the entrance with their gaping mouth.

Little Snow quickly cast a <Regeneration> and a <Holy Shield> on Hundred Shots. She also casted a healing spell to recover the loss of HP due to the DoT skill. Even with all the damage taken, it was not even a problem for Little Snow.

After a volley of arrows landed on the monsters, taking away close to 1,000 HP each.

Zhang Yang said to Drizzler, “Let’s go! Now that Hundred Shots holds the most aggro, the monster will not target us at all!”

“With pleasure!” Drizzler had been waiting for Zhang Yang’s green signal for some time. She then rushed onward with a <Charge>. Zhang Yang joined in as well. After a <Charge>, he landed a normal attack and gained 35 Rage. He then used <Horizontal Sweep> and dealt a devastating attack. There was even



three accounts of critical strikes that dealt about 1,400 damage. With that, the monsters shifted their target to Zhang Yang. However, before they could start their attack on him, a volley of arrow came raining down from the sky, killing them off.

[Death Mage] (Normal)

Level: 25

HP: 2,500

All eight of the monsters were killed before the second volley of <Barrage> could finish. Everyone gained luxurious amount of experience points.

“Little Yang this place seems pretty nice to grind our level!” Fatty Han missed the day where he was ranked first in the Level Ranking Board. For these two days, they had been raiding dungeons instead of grinding; they were then pushed down the ranking board by Floating Fire Ball. He was now ranked first with a level of 22.

“Okay then, let’s clean up this place!” Zhang Yang walked up to the entrance and squinted his eyes. The second floor was extremely crowded with monsters; there were a bunch of Mages standing further inside the floor.

“Crap! There’s just too many monsters there! I fear if I’d go in,

my HP would be shaved off to 0 when I come back! Fatty, this is your chance to shine. I need your pet to go in instead!”

“F\*ck! You’re so cruel! Is this the same as throwing my pet into the fire pit!?” Fatty Han patted his little pet bear and said, “Little Fatty, go! If you die, I’ll burn a female bear and send her to the afterlife for you! You won’t be alone down there!”

“Enough talking horny bum! Make your move!”

Fatty Han then pointed at the nearest Mage. The bear then growled loudly and charged onward.

Shush, shush, shush! Just when the bear stepped out of the entrance, it was inflicted with more than 10 DoT skills. At the same time, the Mages waved their hands, casting a black colored ray and beamed it at the bear, causing it to slow down.

[Shadow Whip]: Use the power of shadow to whip the enemy. Causes 500 Shadow damage over 5 seconds of channel time. Requires channeling. Range: 20 meters.

The accumulation of firepower of the 10 monsters was extremely potent! Even though Fatty Han was a Beastmaster and had its HP improved to 1,500, it was still not enough to withstand all those Mages. After only a few steps, the little pet bear was sent to the afterlife!

All of the attacking Mages then turned towards Fatty Han and began to chase after him.

“Back to the entrance! Go, go, go!” Zhang Yang quickly shouted. Once they made it back to the safe haven, Fatty Han had already gained 10 icons of <Shadow Decay> on his head.

Both Hunters started their attack, unleashing two <Barrage>, raining down volleys of arrow from the sky onto the monsters. However, Hundred Shots was smart. He purposely delayed his <Barrage> to a few seconds later to make sure the aggro was held onto Fatty Han longer. He wanted to avoid getting inflicted with the DoT effect to lighten Little Snow’s healing burden.

Once the volley was done, they did the same maneuver as before. Both Zhang Yang and Drizzler went up and cast <Horizontal Sweep> and <Tornado Cleave> and killed all of the monsters.

“Alright this time, it’s Hundred Shots’ turn. Fatty Han quickly revive your pet!” said Zhang Yang.

“Woo...my cute little pet...” Fatty Han cried crocodile tears as he chanted the revival spell. His little theatrical act started to annoy the party.

The same procedure was carried out by Hundred Shots’ pet. It drew the attention of a bunch of Mage and lured them towards the entrance, having to unfortunately die in the process. They repeated this way as many times as possible and after 20 minutes, they manage to kill almost all of the monsters in the second floor.

The remaining monsters were not worth to pull back all the way to the entrance, so the party rushed in and killed the leftovers head on.

As they revised their collected goods, they found out there was nothing that was of actual worth. It was all just “garbage” and random etc items. As the party arrived at the end of the second floor, they could not find any sign of the boss. What’s stranger was that there was no entrance or pathway that led them to the third floor!

“Eh? Where the heck is the boss?” Drizzler turned around like ballerina and found nothing but shadows. “Maybe the boss must be triggered!” said Zhang Yang. He recalled that there was a place like this but he had never fought in before. He had that thought at the same time everyone else did too.

“Everyone! Scatter around and search for clues! There must be some kind of hint to spawn the boss!”

Everyone including Zhang Yang himself spread out to search the surrounding.

“I found it! Come over to me!” Hundred Shots called out. The party then gathered to where he was and saw him standing near a small altar. The altar was just the shape of a small dining table and on top of the table was a small bowl. There was a complicated magic circle underneath the bowl that was emitting some sort of eerie dark ray.

“Looks like we’ve found it!”

“But how do we summon the boss?” asked Little Snow.

“Fatty! Go and drop some of your blood into the bowl. This boss must be summoned with blood!” said Zhang Yang. “What?! Why me!” Fatty Han bellowed. “How come you didn’t choose Hundred Shots or Drizzler to do it!?” He protested.

Zhang Yang smiled playfully. “Okay then! Let’s put this to a vote. All those who agree that Fatty Han should be the one to do it, please raise your hands!”

Shush! Four arms were raised into the air.

Drizzler burst into laughter. “Hah! Serves you right, Pervy Fatty! Just give up and accept your fate!”

“Come on bro. It’s just a game. Go ahead and drop some of your blood!”

“F\*ck! I hate you guys!” Fatty Han had no choice. He walked over to the altar and bit his thumb. He then reached out his thumb and dropped his flowing blood into the bowl.

“Tuk, tuk, tuk” drops of blood echoed through and the bowl suddenly vibrated. Fatty Han quickly withdrew a few steps back. The bowl then vibrated wildly and turned around on its own. It turned three times counter-clockwise and two times clockwise.

The magic circle underneath then glowed brighter and let out a loud “hooooongg” sound. Wind started to blow in all direction; sand and pebble were shaken off the wall as the entire cave vibrated malevolently. It was as if something bad was about to happen.

“I have a bad feeling about this...I’m 100% sure that the next boss would be scary as hell!” Fatty Han turned his head left and right, trying his best to observe any changes around him.

Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!

The sound of broken chains echoed through the cave, followed by an eruption of black ray from the magic circle. The ray burst out like a column; huge and enormous. Suddenly, a massive figure emerged out of the light, wearing a majestic robe and a sorcerer’s pointy hat. In his hands, he was wielding a staff that glowed with a black light.

Boom!

A strong shockwave blasted through the field and he vanished from the pillar and reappeared in front of the party. There he stood, a 10-meter tall, gigantic Necromancer. His entire body was only just a human skeleton, with no flesh to support, brittle and weak. But needless to say, his presence alone gave a strong sense of enmity to the party, especially those abyssal dark eye sockets that held a pair of emerald-green light orbs that looked like there were burning on the inside!

“Holy... What kind of monster is this?!” Fatty Han shrieked.

Zhang Yang and the party quickly checked on its system detail.

[Witch King of the Undead, Mardevich, Lord of Spectre]  
(Celestial)

Level: ???

HP: ???

“Jesus Christ! Why would a Celestial boss appear here!?” cried Hundred Shots. The ever silent and matured character was troubled. If all of the server players got together and joined forces to defeat this boss, they would ultimately fail and crash the server when they would be sent to the graveyard! They were facing a Celestial-tier boss for crying out loud!

“Hahaha! Mortal! I’d never thought that I would be freed by a bunch of lowly humans! Nevertheless, I am grateful for your deed! This king will now let you all continue to live and breathe as a reward!” Its eerie jaws moved and talked.

“Now, BEGONE!” It bellowed. Its voice was thundering till the high heavens.

The party was so scared that they took a few steps back. To think

that they would take on a Celestial-tier boss... It would only mean certain death!

The party turned around and was ready to leave the field before anything could take place. Fatty Han stopped and he saw that Zhang Yang has not even budged from his place.

“Hey, let’s go! What’re you waiting for!?” Fatty Han cried out in the party channel.

Zhang Yang suddenly cracked a smile. He started to move forward, not towards the party, but towards the boss.

“Hey! What the hell are you doing?!” Fatty Han frantically shouted. Even though this was just a game, there was no reason to walk towards a certain doom!

“Feeble mortal! Are you trying to have a taste of the power of a god?!”

Zhang Yang has successfully provoked Mardevich. Its voice was so loud and it also sent the cave trembling, dropping sand and pebbles all over the place.

Shush!

Zhang Yang used <Charge> and dash towards the boss!



“Oh my god! Did he not learn how to recognize the word “death” in school!?” Little Snow facepalmed herself. She remembered how Zhang Yang was like when he faced the Python King and Martyr Unduin. He did not just simply charge towards them like he did now!

Zhang Yang versus the Spectre boss!

## Chapter 68: Guranda The Chameleon

---

Zhang Yang dashed towards the boss head on. When the two of them made contact, a star symbol appeared on the boss head, indicating a successful stun. Even though the stun lasted only a few milliseconds, it was still a successful stun!

“Haha!” Zhang Yang swung his sword and sliced the boss, taking away ‘-339’ damage.

“Argh...”

The boss cried in pain. Bright piercing light started to burst out from the boss’ body, blinding those who would look at it.

Fatty Han and the rest of the party quickly turned around. “What’s happening!?”

How could Zhang Yang still be alive? On the other hand, the boss seemed to be having a bad time! The four of them started to feel happy and surprised in the same time. Could they be a God Killer? A God Killer! According to the official website, to fight a boss of this scale, you would need to gather several hundred thousand to even millions of players! The war would also last for several days and nights! If they could defeat a Celestial boss with just the 5 of them, it would be the greatest achievement any human could ever receive!

The flash of light shone and went off quickly, and when Fatty Han could have a good look at Zhang Yang, he noticed something

odd...

The boss was gone. In its place, there stood a tiny dwarf that did not even reach 1 meter of height. In its hand, it was still holding a magic staff that was so much taller than it was. Everyone quickly checked on its system information.

[Guranda the Chameleon] (Green-Copper)

Level: 25

HP: 250,000

Fatty Han wavered and he cried. “Little Yang! Where is the boss?”

“Can’t you see him standing right in front of me?” Zhang Yang lifted his sword and pointed the dwarf.

The little dwarf opened its tiny mouth and started to insult Zhang Yang.

“Damned Mortal! You’d dare to raise your sword at me! I will crush you! I will smash you!” It raised its staff high and directed it at Zhang Yang’s direction and casted something. A debuff icon appeared on his head.

‘Ding! You have received the effect of <Shadow Decay>. Receive 300 Shadow damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!’

“That’s weird. Wasn’t he a Celestial-tier?” said Fatty Han.

“It’s fake.” Zhang Yang answered him quickly. Zhang Yang quickly noticed something was odd the moment the boss appeared. Mardevich was the strongest of the 7 Spectre Magus Lords who resided in the Malevolent Tower located in the Spectre’s Sacred Land. How could it be sealed in a place like this!

Based on his reasoning, he immediately concluded that this boss was an imposter! With his attack, he had confirmed his suspicion and proved his hypothesis was true! A true Celestial-tier boss would be completely immune to the stun effect! Even the Gray-Silver boss Unduin had the immunity effect!

“F\*ck! Cheeky little dwarf! You dare to cheat me! The old great Han! Is it death that you seek!?” Fatty Han drew his bow furiously and attacked. “Little Fat! F\*ck him up good!”

“Roar!” Little Fat the bear growled, dragging its little white butt and charged onward.

The rest of the team shared the same feelings as Fatty Han; they were furiously angered and attacked to punish the dwarf.

“Bunch of little rascals! I’ll kill you all!” Guranda raised its staff

and pointed it at Zhang Yang again. This time, it started to cast a spell and a progress bar appeared on its head.

“Fatty! Try and interrupt the spell!” Zhang Yang did not know this boss’ abilities nor capabilities. It would be better if he could interrupt the spell and prevent the unknown attack.

Fatty Han quickly casted a <Silencing Shot>.

‘Immune!’

“Shit! It’s useless!” Fatty Han cried out loud and continued his attacks.

‘Ding! Guranda the Chameleon has used <Plague>!’

Five ray of lights appeared and beamed at everyone, casting a debuff on everyone.

[Plague]: You will receive the Plague and be infected with various diseases. All your attacks will be reduced by 5%. You will receive 150 Shadow damage every 3 seconds for 24 seconds. Effect is stackable, removable.

“Little Snow! Dispel all of the debuff!” Zhang Yang quickly ordered. One stack of <Plague> was not much to be afraid of, but when the effect stacked up to 20 layers, you could basically just stop attacking since there would be 0 damage.

Little Snow nodded and quickly casted <Dispel> to remove the debuff. In five seconds, everyone was cleansed.

[Dispel]: Remove a debuff on an ally or remove a buff on the enemy. Cooldown time: 1 second.

“Puny Mortal! You have angered me! Eat my wrath!” Guranda swung its massive staff towards Zhang Yang. Its physical attack was not as strong since it was a magic caster type. Zhang Yang felt annoyed at the fact that he would not gain any Rage for avoiding its attack. Zhang Yang would rather not waste time dealing with its physical attack.

“Raise from the ashes O’ heroes of the past! Serve me!” Guranda chanted a spell and waved its staff. The ground shook and 10 dark pits appeared on the field. White skeleton hands grabbed onto the ledge and crawled out of the pits. One by one, the Skeletons stood above the pits as it closed and disappeared.

“Kill them all!” Guranda bellowed.

FOOM!

Dark flames emerged from the dark eye sockets of those Skeletons and emitted a strong killing intent. The monsters shook their arms and out came a bone-shape sword.

“I don’t like where this is going...” said Fatty Han.

“KIIKIKIIIIKIII” The Skeletons screeched loudly and charged towards the party.

[Skeleton Warrior] (Elite)

Level: 20

HP: 10,000

Zhang Yang quickly stomped the ground and used <Thunder Strike> to lure as much monsters as possible. Once he got a hold on the monsters that were charging on him and Drizzler, he quickly chained his attack with <Charge> and attacked the Skeleton Warriors that were heading towards Little Snow.

“Ignore the minions! Don’t attack them, I haven’t gotten enough aggro yet! Focus on attacking the boss! Fatty, Hundred Shots! Come closer to my side!” Zhang Yang commanded.

Zhang Yang was unable to attack all the monsters at once since both the party and monsters were scattered everywhere. But with everyone gathered together, it made it easier for Zhang Yang to establish a proper crowd control.

‘-698!’

‘-742!’

‘-1480!’

‘.....’

Slash! Zhang Yang used <Horizontal Sweep> and managed to strongly generate aggro for the monsters.

“Use your AoE skills!” said Zhang Yang.

Fatty Han and the team had their skills ready and waiting. When Zhang Yang gave the green light, they unleashed hell from above. Hunters used <Barrage> and Drizzler used <Tornado Cleave>. Instantly, the party’s attack power rose tremendously.

“This is awesome! HAHAAHAHA! Really awesome! I can’t get enough of this! Hmm... Oh... AH...” Drizzler was on cloud nine as she screamed weirdly among the group of monsters. Even so, her scream was overly erotic that it would immediately lead others to think something indecent. It was so weird, even Hundred Shots and Zhang Yang both smiled as they understood the situation. Fatty Han on the other hand was already smiling like a pervert.

“Enough! Drizzler! Stop making that noise!” Embarrassed, Little Snow quickly tried to stop her cousin. Drizzler’s face was flushed in red but she was not aware that her cries were creating an



awkward situation. “B-But it’s really just so addictive AH…”

Eventually, no one cared about her anymore and continued to attack. The summoned minion were quickly killed off by the team’s AoE skills while the boss was reduced down to 67%.

“Impossible! A mere mortal! I was actually hurt by a mere mortal!” Guranda started to look serious. “Looks like I have to stop playing with my victims!”

The boss stopped its attacks and started to chant something in an unknown language. A black light engulfed the boss rendering all attacks from Zhang Yang’s party useless.

‘Immune!’

‘Immune!’

‘Immune!’

“Hold your fire! The boss is about to evolve to the second stage!”

After a few seconds, the light dispersed, revealing a humungous Bone Tiger with sharp spikey bones that protruded out like a spear.

“Holy crap! This boss has the Shape Shifting ability?” Fatty Han dropped his jaw in shock.

“Luckily he didn’t turn into a sexy Sailormoon or it would be hilarious!” Zhang Yang laughed as he continued to swing his sword to attack.

“Grrrrr...” The Bone Tiger growled and jumped at Zhang Yang.

“F\*ck me! The boss actually turned from magic to physical attack!” Zhang Yang let his guard down and let the boss attacked him with its huge fangs.

‘-405!’

‘-417!’

“Haha! Bite that fellow! Haha! Good tiger!” Drizzler cheered.

“Hey! Little brat, I have no quarrel with you! Why would you say something like that?!” Zhang Yang said while he laughed.

“Hmph! Fatty’s mouth is his negative points! As for you, your bad side is your intentions!” Drizzler complained.

“Oh my...” Fatty Han covered his mouth like a woman in shock. He then talked like an old lady. “Oh little Drizzler! Since when did you learn to talk like that?”

“Grr...” After turning into a beast, Guranda had completely lost his ability to speak.

Suddenly, a black light gleamed across the tiger's body and all of the bone spikes protruded further, like it was ready to fire off.

Zhang Yang's heart skipped a beat and quickly yelled. "Everyone get behind me!"

'Ding! Guranda has used <Bone Arrow Assault> Lasts for 10 seconds!'

Shush! Shush! Shush!

Arrow-like spikes continuously flew out from the boss' back and into the sky. The arrows formed a huge circle, as it gathered more and more arrows to become bigger. Up to a moment, all the arrows were unleashed down to the ground, like a rain of arrows.

'-191!'

'-194!'

'-189!'

'...'

Everyone was unable to avoid the attack as it came down from the sky instead of the front as Zhang Yang hoped. Everyone suffered around 200 damage every second. Luckily, Little Snow

was proficient enough to flash cast as many healing spells and other recovery skills as she could. She withheld the <Holy Shield> for the person with the lowest HP in case she could not heal in time.

After 10 seconds, everyone in the party lost close to 2,000 HP. If it was not because of Little Snow's powerful healing power, everyone would have died. Instead, they were left alive with 300 or so remaining HP. Zhang Yang had strong defense, massive HP, and amazing dodging skills; his remaining HP was at least 1,500.

“Little Snow, I need you heal everyone to full health in case of another attack like that! Everyone else, attack faster please! We need to get him back to his original form to prevent more ultimate skills!” said Zhang Yang as he attacked faster and faster.

Everyone else joined his frenzy and attacked the boss as well. 60%, 55%, 50%... eventually the boss' HP dropped down to 33%. It was then a similar black light engulfed the boss that rendered all attacks to be immune.

“I wonder what it would become this time?” said Fatty Han with his eyes wide open.

“Damn! DAMN YOU ALL TO HELL! I WILL KILL YOU! KILL YOU, I MUST!” An extremely thundering voice could be heard and the boss revealed its true form. A huge 7 meters long giant crimson scorpion.

# Chapter 69: Shape Shifting Tool

---

Shing! Shing!

A metallic sound could be heard when the red giant scorpion Guranda snapped its claws.

Fuuh! It moved out of the sudden towards Zhang Yang.

Shush!

The sound of the air being ripped apart by the claw as it missed Zhang Yang's body.

Zhang Yang quickly took a few more steps back and got out of the claw's attack range. But just when he wanted to take a breather, he could feel a strong sense of killing intent from the boss. His was just about to activate <Block> out of instinct.

Suddenly, he could see a shadow resembling a spear piercing through the air towards him. It was the dark red scorpion's tail and it was coming for him.

‘<Block>!’

‘-117!’ <Block> reflect damage.

‘-234!’ <Shield Bash>.

The way Zhang Yang used <Block> and <Shield Bash> consecutively and with such fluidity impressed the party. It was not just those two skills that left their jaws hanging. Zhang Yang was able to do all those things alone and under pressure. Everyone else could only inhale in their breath in amazement. They thought if either one of them replaced that position, they would be completely f\*cked beyond any recognition. Once they had that thought, and still see Zhang Yang alive and kicking, they had nothing but respect for that man.

After Guranda had changed its appearance into a huge scorpion, its attack turned stronger and fiercer, like a spider tank with claws made from steel. Even though Zhang Yang had been moving around at the speed of light, he could not withstand all 3 consecutive attacks of the boss. 2 claws and 1 tail was just too much. With his <Block> constantly on cooldown, he could only dodge two straight attacks and would have to take on the third attack head on.

“This boss is strong!” Fatty Han cried out.

“Please. All bosses are strong. And this one is a Field boss. It doesn’t have a participation limit. You could have unlimited amount of player trying to land a hit on this thing. Some bosses could be killed off with just a player, while others require up to 10, or 100, even 1000 players. Those bosses are just on a whole other level!” Zhang Yang replied even when he was in the midst of battle.

“If this was in a proper dungeon, how many party members

would this roughly take?” Fatty Han asked curiously.

Zhang Yang blocked an attack and dodged the other before he could find some time to reply.

“Approximately 5 to 10, more or less!”

“Tch! Even I could have guessed that.” Drizzler muttered.

In the midst their conversation, an odd red light flashed through the boss’ body.

Before Zhang Yang could even say anything, his instincts kicked in and activated <Block>. The boss suddenly spun its large body as swiftly as a top.

‘Ding! Guranda the Chameleon has used <Blade Dance>, causing 500 physical damage every second to every target in the melee attack range. Last 4 seconds!’

‘-472!’

‘<Block>!’

Pang! Pang! Pang!

Both Zhang Yang and Drizzler suffered around 500 damage from

the spinning monster. Luckily the damage type was physical, and could still be reduced by their armor value. Still, even after the reduced damage, it was still too strong!

“Sister! Heal me! I’m dying here! Ah~~” Drizzler lost her control and started calling out to her cousin.

Little Snow did not immediately react on impulse. Instead, she made quick calculations and casted <Holy Shield> on Drizzler followed by <Holy Prayers>, before finally chanting a healing spell. Zhang Yang received <Regeneration> from her and she had been maintaining it ever since to make sure Zhang Yang never lost his focus.

4 seconds later, the boss’ skill stopped and only focused on trying to snap Zhang Yang into two.

Drizzler had received around 1,900 damage from the boss. However, thanks to Little Snow’s various support, such as the <Holy Shield> that absorbed 600 damage while <Holy Prayer> recovered over 400 health. Along with the constant tick from <Regeneration>, Little Snow has basically shielded Drizzler so extensively that she only took a total of 800 damage from the boss. After <Regeneration> ticked a few times, Drizzler would have been fully healed.

Zhang Yang on the other hand was much stronger and less dependent on her. Zhang Yang already had a solid defense to begin with. He had a 20% damage reduction passive, coupled with his 70 points of Defense value, which meant that he only received 330 damage from the original damage of 500. He had successfully



blocked the first attack and even he did not need to receive healing since he had only taken 3 direct hits which totaled up to 1,000 damage. In contrast to the barrage of blows he had defended himself from, this was akin to a graze. Out of his tanky 1,900 HP, it was pretty severe, but not to the point where he would need immediate healing.

If they had another healer instead of Little Snow, then he or she would panic and the first thing that came to mind would be to blindly heal the main tank instead of carrying out a longer termed, sustained prevention for the main tank which would subsequently have led to the entire party's death. However, in this situation, if the healer had done otherwise and only prioritized the main tank, it would inevitably have led Drizzler to certain death!

The boss's <Blade Dance> was quite frequent. It was activated once roughly every 20 seconds. Drizzler was smart enough to evade the attack once it was activated. Still, she would receive a hit or two, though it will not place her in a dangerous position. Little Snow would only need to cast one <Regeneration> to settle the problem.

On the other hand, the Hunter's pets were completely killed off since they could not recall their pets in time.

25%, 20%, 15%...

The team's firepower was so overpowering that the boss' HP bar was dropping down like an avalanche.

“Hmph! Stupid boss! This little girl will smash you into tiny little pieces!” cried Drizzler. Her attacks were quite eye-catching. She jumped up and down, wielding the long spear in her hands, locked in an elaborate, elegant dance, dealing damage continuously.

5%, 4%, 3%, 2%, 1%!

“ARGH...” As the HP bar dropped down the last drop but not completely drained, Guranda’s body flashed back into his original dwarf form. Before it ran away it screamed pathetically, “M-Mortal! I-I’ll return s-someday!”

As the last syllable died out, it ran back into the magic circle and disappeared in a flash of black light. It dropped a Stone box at the spot of its disappearance.

“Crap! We didn’t manage to kill it!” Fatty Han ran to the altar and observed the magic circle again.

“Can we summon him again and beat him to a pulp?” Fatty Han turned around and asked the party.

“Okay! Okay! Fine by me! We can get another treasure chest!” The mere thought of money in her mind was enough to give Drizzler the motivation to fight the boss again.

Fatty Han then proceeded to bite his fingers again and dripped the flowing blood into the bowl.

1...2...3 seconds ticked past.

Fatty Han waited for another 30 seconds but nothing happened. Not even a slight breeze.

“What the...” Fatty Han bewildered. He quickly turned around only to see Zhang Yang was holding his laughter. Fatty Han immediately knew that he was being fooled. He growl, “Little Yang!”

Zhang Yang’s laughter became more apparent. “The boss isn’t dead, but according to the story setting, it was successfully killed. Why else would it drop a treasure chest here!?” The chest here is equal to its dead body! If you still insist in summoning him back here to fight, according to the regular system refresh rate for a Green-Copper boss, you’d have to wait for two days!”

“F\*CK!” Fatty Han was furious. “Then, why didn’t you stop me just now!?”

“It’s just for the fun of it. You’ll be fine with losing a couple drops of blood, right? Think of it as losing weight!”

“F\*ck you!”

“Alright guys. Open the chest, we still have 3 more floors of bosses to fight!” Hundred Shots quickly tried to calm Fatty Han.

Little Snow and Drizzler were reluctant but were eventually

persuaded to open the chest.

[Chameleon's Headdress] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +1

Use: Allows you to disguise yourself to be one of the following character. 1, Dwarf. 2, Bone Tiger. 3, Scorpion. Last for 5 minutes. Cooldown time: 10 minutes.

Level requirement: 20

“Ha! This is fun! This is fun! I want it! Gimme!” Drizzle quickly cried out like a little girl.

“F\*ck! This is quite an interesting item! I want it as well!” Fatty Han too cried out.

“Pervy bro, you’re already such an old man, why would you take away a children’s toy? Don’t you know shame?” Drizzler scolded him.

Fatty Han on the other hand was so infuriated that his face was completely red.

“I AM ONLY 5 YEARS OLDER THAN YOU!”

“Hmph! Noob tank! What say you!? Who should keep this toy?” Drizzler looked at Zhang Yang with her teeth exposed in a snarl, ready to bite his face off.

Zhang Yang only laughed weakly and said, “You know, I was thinking that we should just sell this toy. I think this item could be sold with ease for a few ten thousand gold coins! Since there are rich players in this game, I think they would buy this to show off!”

According to his previous experience in the game, this little shape shifting tool was actually sold up to 500,000 gold pieces. This was one of the few valuable non-combat item in Cave of Bones. This was also the reason why huge guilds would occupy this place. A mountain of gold coins meant a stack of money!

Drizzler’s eye glinted with the yellow metallic color of gold when she heard its value.

“Y-YYeah! Let’s sell it!”

In the end, Little Snow got hold of the item to be sold off in the auction house. However, before that Little Snow wanted to have a little fun. She then put on the hat and activated its effect.

Poof!

Little Snow turned from a sexy woman to a huge Boney Tiger in a puff of smoke.

“Wuuu...” Drizzler watched in utmost jealousy. “Cousin... I don’t think we should sell this amazing toy!”

Eventually, Drizzler thought it out and the party decided to keep the item instead of selling it. Since the item is not a bound-type item, anyone could use it whenever they feel like it.

“Little Yang, I think next time when the boss respawns, we should come over and kill it! Each of us should have at least one hat to play with!” Fatty Han said with full of passion.

“Hah! Alright then!” Zhang Yang nodded. This kind of non-combat item was quite marketable in the future. Its value would always remain high since it can never be discarded for being over-leveled. Player could use this item regardless of their level since it was an item for fun. The boss would spawn once every 2 day which meant that it would be a few hundred thousand pieces of gold every 2 days. Even in the late stages of the game, it would mean a few hundred thousand gold coins worth of money.

[Skill book: Chain Slash] (Skill Book)

Use: Teaches you <Chain Slash>.

Class requirement: Warrior, Knight, Bandit.

“Eh...noob tank! What’s with this skill? Is it good?” Drizzler asked Zhang Yang. He is a “beta-player”, he must know about this skill!

Zhang Yang laughed and casually passed the skill book to her. “You’ll know it once you’ve learn it!”

Drizzler stuck out her tongue and said, “Hmph! This skill must be pretty useless since you’re so generous with it!”

“Huh!?” Zhang Yang laughed. “Why would you say that?”

“Hm. Previously, when the skill book <Eagle Eye> dropped out, you were so desperate to have it!” Drizzler explained as she just accepted the skill book and learned it immediately.

[Chain Slash]: Deliver two straight attacks with 75% melee damage with each strike. This attack ignores 100% defense and cannot be blocked nor evaded. Cost: 20 Rage, Requirement: Melee weapon. Cool down time: 10 seconds.

“Eh?! This skill is great!” Drizzler posted the skill description after learning it. This skill was perfect for her since her attack interval was very low yet very strong. Now that this skill increased the attack count by 1, it helped in significantly increasing the overall damage output, especially since the skill ignored 100% defense, and was unblockable and unavoidable. This skill would be extra useful when she would face a strong defense class like

Guardians or Defenders.

Zhang Yang had no problem handing over the skill since he already had <Eagle Eye>. Even though it was advisable to have an extra skill, he would be gaining a number of extra skills when he reached a certain level in the future anyway. And once that was to happen, all that he would gain were headaches with that many skills to level up.

After picking up several silver coins, the chest disappeared. The party then walked again towards the end of the second floor and found themselves at an entrance to the next floor where a huge rock was supposed to be.

“Will the entrance close again after all of us go inside?” Fatty Han asked a peculiar question.

“No! Unless the second boss respawns, this entrance will always be here!” said Zhang Yang with utmost confidence.

“Oh!” Fatty Han finally relaxed.

Zhang Yang walked in slowly and carefully as he was almost killed the previous floor. He peeked in carefully from the third floor entrance and scanned the area before stepping through. The third floor was completely empty, there was nothing. Not a single monster was present.



# Chapter 70: Freyna The Shadow Assassin

---

“Eh? That’s weird. How come there aren’t any monsters around?” Curious and childlike, Drizzler squeezed out from behind Zhang Yang and stood in front of him.

Zhang Yang frowned. It is impossible to have no monsters on the field! Either there were really no monsters around or perhaps they were...

Pong!

The sound of a hollow knock could be heard and stars appeared on Drizzler head, indicating a stun effect. Immediately her character began to sway back and forth.

Foosh!

A black clothed figure appeared out of thin air and stood behind Drizzler. It then raised a pair of shiny daggers and started to stab at Drizzler’s back.

“I’m being attack!” Drizzler cried out.

Zhang Yang immediately used <Provoke> and hacked his sword into the monster.

‘-347!’

Being affected by Zhang Yang's <Provoke>, the black clothed man turned around and began to attack Zhang Yang instead.

“Shit! It's a stealth monster!” Fatty Han cried.

[Shadow Assassin] (Normal)

Level: 25

HP: 2,500

The monster was weak and was killed off effortlessly. However, the main problem in this third floor was the fact that they did not know where their targets were nor did they know the number of their enemy! If the number of monsters were the same as the second floor, with the same volume of aggressiveness, they would most definitely be annoyed to hell!

“Let's go!”

The party moved forward, not knowing when nor where the monsters would attack from. However, within just a few steps, they were attacked. The number of monsters varied from time to time. There were times where they were only attacked by 1 monster, while in the worst case scenario, they were attacked by a group of 7 assassins! These assassins had the Bandit's active skills

<Ambush> and <Kidney Shot>.

As the party proceed on, Little Snow and Drizzler reached Level 21 while the 3 guys were almost reaching the next level.

“I’ll be damned. If someone would have come here alone and accidentally ran into 4 to 5 monsters, they would surely have been dead!” said Fatty Han with traces of fear in his voice. At some point before, they were all attacked by a group of 7 assassins simultaneously. Fatty Han got the worst of it and he was left traumatized by them.

“There will be tougher monsters in larger groups in the future dungeons. These kind of monsters are extremely common. What’s more, almost all of the monsters are elite tier, players could be killed off if the party’s tank’s reaction rate is slow.” Zhang Yang walked to the front.

“That’s just wrong!” Fatty Han shook his head.

“If you want to fight a stealth monster properly, you’ll need to farm yourself a [Flashbang]” said Zhang Yang.

“That’s too tough. According to the official database, [Flashbang]’s drop rate is only at 1 over 10 thousand. That drop rate is just too much to handle!”

Lately, Fatty Han had picked up the habit of studying about the game in the official website. He had improved his understanding

about his own class, better than when he was only a beginner.

“Of course the drop rate would be bad! Otherwise, all of the Bandit class members would cease to exist!”

Even though the monsters on this floor were quite tough and troublesome to deal with, the party managed to fight their way to the end of the floor.

“Stop! Don’t go in just yet!” Zhang Yang halted in his steps. “Walk around and make sure that the field is clear of all monsters. I’m pretty sure that this floor’s boss will be in stealth as well. We won’t know when we could trigger the fight. If we did trigger it and accidentally drag in more monsters into the boss’s fight, it would only cause us trouble!”

The party took extreme steps to make sure there were no monsters left out in their way to the end of the floor.

“Where is the boss?” asked Fatty Han quietly as they arrived at the end of the third floor.

“I bet that the boss is hidden in some corner. It will not appear until we stepped into its aggro range!” said Zhang Yang. “I think that we should just move on, the boss will surely appear later!”

Zhang Yang walked ahead of the team. The entire team walked carefully in a single file and into the fourth floor entrance. Out of the sudden, a black shadow flashed across and appeared beside

Hundred Shots. A pair of blade could be seen reflecting some light and Hundred Shots was quickly sent into a stunned status. Damage text appeared rapidly on his head as his HP bar dropped like a landslide.

Zhang Yang was prepared, he quickly activated <Charge> and <Provoke> to grab the monster's aggro away from Hundred Shots.

The shadow quickly turned around and changed its target to Zhang Yang. It's dagger in its hands moved back and forth like a flash of lightning! Zhang Yang could not dodge every attack even though he had maximized his own body to evade. It could not be helped, the character's own Dexterity attribute was not high enough to keep up with his own reaction speed.

Seeing the monster was no longer "raping" him, Hundred Shots left out a sigh of relief. Little Snow quickly healed Hundred Shots and also Zhang Yang at the same time. Hundred Shots was struck to the point of having only 137 remaining HP. If Zhang Yang were to act only a millisecond slower, he would have been killed off!

When Zhang Yang had managed to fight with the monster at a standstill, the party could finally observe the true nature of the monster. The monster was a sexy and slender female NPC wearing an extremely tight unitard that was plastered against her skin, accenting her slender, voluptuous body line. Especially those pair of ripe watermelons!

Even though her body was ironically covered in the most vulgar way imaginable, her face was covered in a black cloth. Her appearance was hidden carefully.

“Woah! That boombalicious body!” Fatty Han drooled.

[Freyne the Shadow Assassin] (Green-Copper)

Level: 25

HP: 250k

“Jealous, Little brat?” said Zhang Yang as he noticed Drizzler was staring at her breasts.

Drizzler was caught off guard and stuttered as she replied.

“W-What..No I...I was just...I...No! I w-was not j-j-jealous! Having such a large b-b-breast is very troublesome! Not only it will cause you to slouch which is bad for your posture, but it would also very tiring, carrying t-t-that thing around! I do not want to have such l-l-large breasts!”

Little Snow laughed arrogantly and puffed out her own chest. The result movement of her voluptuous pair would leave anyone nose bleed in its wake.

“Little brat. Don’t deny your true heart! If what you say is true then try stop doing the “self-massaging exercise”!

“Han Yin Xue! Why must you reveal everything about me?!” Drizzler got angry.

“Little Yang. I think your <Cripple Defense> does live up to its name!” Fatty Han sighed disappointingly.

“Huh? What?”

“F\*ck! You’ve hit her so many times with the <Cripple Defense> but I don’t see any of her armor getting torn apart! What kind of armor reduction is that!?” Fatty Han raged on.

“Dude!” Everyone but Fatty Han scolded.

Freyna whispered something unintelligible and vanished out of sight. Her entire body blended into the darkness.

“Eh? Did she just quit and run?” Fatty Han laughed.

“No! She just turned invisible! Watch your back, she might appear at any time!” Zhang Yang said.

Just after Zhang Yang finished his sentence, Freyna appeared behind Fatty Han and hammered on his head with the back of her dagger. As he staggered in the <Stun> status, she quickly brandished her daggers and dealt a combo-infused flurry of swift cuts and shanks on Fatty Han.

Zhang Yang quickly casted <Provoke> hoping to catch her attention.

‘Immune!’

Little Snow quickly acted in response. First, she casted <Holy Shield> and then <Regeneration> followed with the longest casting time of <Higher Healing>.

The attack on Fatty Han lasted until the <Ambush> skill effect timed out. Only then did Freyna turned her sights on Zhang Yang and started her attack on him. Fatty Han had sustained heavy damage. To think that in that short moment, Fatty Han had received more than 2,300 damage. He would have been killed off if not for Little Snow’s quick reaction.

“Damn! This boss’ sudden burst damage is pretty nasty!” said Hundred Shots.

Zhang Yang nodded in agreement.

“This is the power of a Bandit. It can cause a high sudden burst of damage the moment it comes out of stealth. The chain attack that follows could eliminate half of any class’s HP! However, keep in mind that after the chain attack, the attack would be reduced! When the boss disappears, it will ignore all aggro and randomly pick one player and attack him for 5 seconds! That is why <Ambush> is so frustrating!”



“Hm. Luckily it wasn’t Little Snow. If it did, she would die instantly if she couldn’t heal herself!” said Hundred Shots.

“Haha! Let’s just hope that a woman would not hurt another woman!” Zhang Yang laughed.

“Oh please, why would she hurt me? I’m still a pure young maiden!” Little Snow winked seductively at Zhang Yang.

“Han Yin Xue!” Drizzler got angry.

90%, 80%, 70%...

Upon being afflicted with 5 layers of <Cripple Defense> the boss’ defense was reduced; the party’s strong attack was only made stronger and her HP bar continued dropping at a faster rate than before. However, the most troublesome factor of her was the <Ambush> skill. She could pick anyone out of random and inflict extremely high damage. If Little Snow wavered just a little, that person would definitely die!

50%, 40%, 30%...

Once again Freyna disappeared and enter stealth mode.

“Don’t pick the healer! Don’t pick the healer!” Fatty Han quickly chanted.

Foosh!

Freyna appeared behind Little Snow and knocked her out. She raised her dagger and started inflicting damage.

“F\*CK! F\*CK YOU FATTY HAN!” Zhang Yang cried out.

“Damn your bad mouth! Jinx!” Zhang Yang scolded. It was a pity that Zhang Yang could not use <Sacrifice> to save her. All he could do now was just stare at her.

<Sacrifice> was a Level 40 Guardian skill.

[Sacrifice]: Cover a teammate, sharing all inflicted damage for 5 seconds.

Cooldown time: 1 minute.

Range: 30 meter.

The high burst damage of a Bandit is the natural enemy of all low defense Priests. Before the boss could even finish her combo attack, Little Snow’s HP was reduced to none. With a nudge, her slender body fell on the ground.

‘Ding! Player Little Snow had died!’

“What!? F\*cking boss! How dare you kill my beautiful Little Snow! I will f\*ck you up real good!” Fatty Han screamed as he drew his bow and attacked.

“Hey! Pervy Fatty. You can stop the act now. I’d never like a fat guy!” Little Snow posted in the party channel.

“Oh! Why would you say that! My heart and intentions are pure! Why would I think of having the two of you in my arms!”

“...”

After Little Snow’s death, the boss turned and attack Zhang Yang. Without Little Snow’s healing support, Zhang Yang could still dodge and evade most of the attack, but there were still some attacks that got past his defense and reduced his HP!”

“Don’t waste any time! Attack!”

25%, 20%, 15%!

Freyna suddenly disappeared when Zhang Yang HP dropped down to 700 points. He quickly used the [Coarse Cloth Bandage].

‘+100!’

‘+100!’

‘+100!’

‘...’

Having the title [Physician’s Friend], Zhang Yang’s recovery rate was doubled when he used the [Coarse Cloth Bandage]. While others would only recover 500HP, Zhang Yang could recover up to 1,000HP! He recovered back to full health after only 7 seconds!

“Little Yang! Is that the effect from the reward you got from that bloody quest?” Fatty Han was jealous.

“Yup!”

“F\*ck! I should have done that! Argh! Crap! What a waste!” Fatty Han screamed.

Foosh!

The boss appeared behind Hundred Shots. She raised her dagger, stunned him, and start to attack him with a chain of attack.

Both Zhang Yang and Drizzler quickly used <Charge> and dashed over. Fatty Han quickly drew his bow and attacked.

Not only have they lost their only healer, they would lose this fight if they do not kill her in time!

# Chapter 71: Onward, To The Fourth Floor

---

Being attacked by the boss, it would take a miracle for Hundred Shots to escape unscathed, however, it did provide a valuable opening for the rest of the team to attack the boss.

14%, 13%, 12%!

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots had died!’

Freyna turned and attacked Zhang Yang.

“Huh! This boss is smart! She killed off the easy targets first! Hm! Her IQ must be over 200!” Fatty Han could still find the time to joke.

“Pervy Fatty! Your IQ on the other hand is just only one digit lesser than hers! Only 20!” said Drizzler mockingly.

Fatty Han appeared to be unfazed by her insult. He laughed instead. “Hoho~ I’ve actually graduated properly from high school! I have a certificate!”

“Hah! So what?!” Drizzler was not impressed.

“Well then, shall we try and test our knowledge. Where is your progress on your syllabus?”

Drizzler paused. Right then, she was still in high school and have yet to graduate. She was sure to lose to Fatty Han! Drizzler could only stare venomously at Fatty Han before going back to focus on fighting the boss.

11%, 10%, 9%...

Even though the team had lost 2 players, their total firepower was not greatly affected since one of their losses was a healer!

The boss' HP was still dropping down at a reasonable speed. Zhang Yang had unleashed his full potential to fight the boss, dodging every possible attack. However, he was still receiving damage from the boss. He could not properly maintain his current HP from being completely drained!

Out of the sudden, the boss stopped again and vanished into thin air.

Since he had only used the [Course Rough Bandage] less than 30 seconds ago, he could not use it again since it was still in its cooldown phase. However, Zhang Yang had 1,100 HP remaining while the boss only had 6% left. The fight had become more and more intense. It was now a battle of speed and damage!

Foosh!

Freyna popped out from behind Drizzler and knocked her out.

“Fatty! It’s up to you guys now!”

“Leave it to us!”

6%, 5%, 4%!

By the time Drizzler dropped dead, the boss had about 3% HP left.

“F\*ck! We have to kill her!” said Fatty Han as he drew his bow as haphazardly as ever. “You dared to take away both of my Little Snow and Drizzler! I’d really f\*ck you up good!”

Freyna turned and faced Zhang Yang after killing Drizzler. The sound of her blade clashing with Zhang Yang’s shield could be heard over the entire field.

2%

1%

0%!

Bam! The boss dropped down, leaving Zhang Yang with only around 400 HP left standing. It was not as intense as it would have seemed.

“Well...damn! This boss isn’t that strong but how did we lose so



many players?” Fatty Han said discontentedly.

On the other side, the 3 dead players had released their souls and had begun running to their corpse.

“Hm...This is how the future high level bosses should be like. Bosses that are Yellow-Gold tier and higher are completely immune to any Provoking effect, they are different from this boss who could only be immune to <Provoke> when she is attacking someone in <Ambush>. Other higher level bosses also have this kind of high burst damage skill that could instantly kill a player! The developers are tired of seeing this kind of standard play style where the tanks would hold the aggro, attackers attack, and healers heal. They thought that this kind of play style was too rigid and concrete!”

Fatty Han walked around as he listened.

“However, sooner or later, there will be a time when players are strong enough to even go solo on a boss!” Zhang Yang said as he reminisced about his time in the game 5 years ago. That time, players who were lucky enough to obtain the only Inheritance could out-perform anyone in their party! They were also very strong in dungeon raiding that led to their success. They could activate a long cooldown skill and handle a boss alone!

Fatty Han nodded. He then walked to where the boss’s body was and grinned.

“Hey Little Yang...Do you think I could remove the clothes?”

“What...”

The boss's dead body was certainly alluring. Her clothes were torn apart everywhere, revealing a metallic color of her inner undergarments. Within that sexy armor, it was holding up her “ripe watermelons”, the skin fair and smooth.

“Pui! Bloody perverted fat f\*ck!”

“Eww...pervy Fatty!”

The two ladies who were running to their coprse expressed their disgust.

Zhang Yang on his side frowned. “Come on bro...How many barrels of Viagra did you eat till you got so freaking horny?”

Fatty Han only laughed in response. “Oh! I’m just joking around! It’s not like I’m gonna actually do it! Guys! Come on! I’m just trying to liven things up a little here!”

After a while, the party revived and Drizzler went up to open the corpse.

[Queen's Chest Plate] (Green-Copper, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +2

Vitality: +20

Intelligence: +16

Spirit: +4

Level requirement: 20

Seeing the equipment what Drizzler was holding had no difference compared to an actual woman's undergarment, the 3 males started to grin. Their eyes swiveled back and forth between the bra and Little Snow and imagined how she would look like wearing it. They started to drool. But then the thought of Drizzler putting it on rendered them emotionless.

To have perverted thoughts was only a male's privilege! This had nothing to do with love or loyalty here! They were just thoughts, nothing else!

"I don't need it!" Little Snow bellowed with a note of finality. If she had put on that piece of equipment, she should have just quit her job and become a belly dancer!

"Give it to me then!" said Fatty Han. "I just thought of giving it to someone else!" The girls from Blaze City came into his mind.

Little Snow did not have the face to sell this thing on the auction house. She had no other choice but to pass it to Fatty Han unwillingly.

[Winter's Dagger] (Green-Copper, Dagger)

Weapon attack: 44-60

Attack interval: 1.3 seconds

DPS: 40

Level requirement: 20

“Argh! Another equipment wasted!” Hundred Shots sighed loudly.

Zhang Yang thought a while and said, “Don’t sell it yet. We should put this into the guild’s storage. We can let the guildmates exchange this with their contribution points. We need a party of well-equipped players to fight the Main Wing of Marzerway’s Lair after all.”

Since this mattered in a long run, even being greedy misers, Drizzler and Little Snow agreed to keep it in the guild storage.

“Little Yang, how about Gray-Silver equipment? Are we going to store them in the guild storage as well?” Fatty Han asked.

“We’ll see to it then. If we get a Gray-Silver equipment, that is.”

After distributing the items, the party went on and headed into the fourth floor.

As usual, Zhang Yang led the way and peeked into the entrance carefully. There, approximately 40 to 50 meters away from where he stood, was a humanoid monster that held a sword.

It was a large Skeleton monster that stood at most 4 meters tall. It was heavily equipped with armor, from a helmet on its head to the heavy chest plate on its body. The sword in its hand was long enough to take up two thirds of its own height. It would seem that the monster had been standing there for a while. The sword was completely covered in dust and cobweb that it was no different from the torches that lit the hallway.

Another 30 to 40 meters away from the Skeleton monster was another similar monster standing behind. Based on this, Zhang Yang calculated that there could only be about 10 or more monsters in this floor!

Zhang Yang quickly checked on the monster’s system information.



[Skeleton Guard] (Elite)

Level: 25

HP: 20,000

The rest of the party followed Zhang Yang and came out of the entrance. They stared at the huge monster and could not help but be stunned by its size.

“Sigh...Why would all monsters be larger than players?” said Fatty Han confused.

Drizzler giggled and said, “Well, that’s not entirely true you know. Fatty bro, if you were to gain some weight and put on some muscles, you could be the same as a boss!”

Fatty Han knew that Drizzler was making fun of his weight but instead of being angry or infuriated, Fatty Han was happy, as if he had won a jackpot! His completely unforeseen reaction left Drizzler speechless.

“Let’s go!” Zhang Yang waved his sword and charged towards the monster fearlessly. He had seen many bosses now, why would he be afraid of some Elite-tier monster?

‘<Charge>!’

Zhang Yang chain attacked the monster and dealt a substantial amount of damage.

The hollow eerie eye sockets suddenly lit up with a pair of emerald orbs. The monster let out a loud shriek. Its entire body shook and dust fell off its body. The way it moved slowly was as if the monster was asleep the entire time and had just been aroused from slumber by Zhang Yang's attack. It turned around, lifted its gigantic sword and raised up sparks as it dragged it across the ground, and slashed Zhang Yang at the speed of light.

The power of the swing was displayed immediately when the sword passed through Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang moved away quickly and he could not anticipate the sword would carry some sort of lighting elemental attack that hit him.

Bzz!

Zhang Yang suddenly felt a little numb when suddenly he lost control of his body, he could not even activate block and could only see the huge sword slashing the air, rushing towards him.

‘-160!’

‘-330!’

Luckily the effect only last for a brief millisecond. Zhang Yang gained control of his body and immediately referred back to his

battle log.

‘You have received the effect of <Electric Shock>.’

‘You have received 160 Natural damage (40 points reduced damage effect) from <Electric Shock>.’

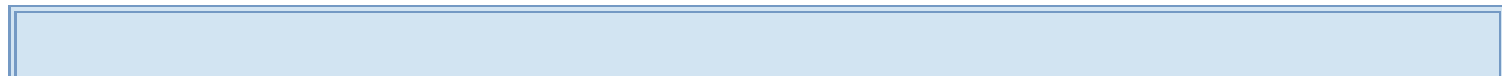
‘You are attacked by the Skeleton Guard, receiving 330 physical damage (170 points reduced damage effect).’

“Electric...Shock?” Zhang Yang muttered. If every attack carried by the monster had the effect of <Electric Shock>, the fight will be completely one sided! He could not even grab hold of the aggro properly!

While he was deep in his thoughts, Hundred Shots and the other had been attacking the monster. These people had such high attack power that they managed to kill the monster off fairly quickly. Zhang Yang then studied the log carefully and found that out of 15 sword swings, only 6 carried the <Electric Shock> effect.

However, the collected data was too isolated and vague, he could not determine whether the activation rate of the <Electric Shock> was truly at 40%.

“Eh?! The monster actually dropped an equipment!” Fatty Han reach out and touched the monster’s corpse. A boot appeared.





[White Skeleton Battle Boots] (Black-Steel, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +3

Vitality: +6

Strength: +4

Level requirement: 20

“How rare this is! Elite monsters are considered to be the stingiest monsters ever and yet here we have one that dropped an equipment!” Zhang Yang laughed. “Fatty Han, keep the equipment first! We will put this in the guild storage as well. Hm...Level 20 Black-Steel equipment would cost 20 guild contribution points! A Green-Copper equipment would cost 40 points! When there are many people wanting to exchange it at once, prioritize the one with the most points!”

“Okay!” Fatty Han replied. Zhang Yang and him loved to fight, always allowing their childish minds to run wild. Sometimes Zhang Yang would be the one that commanded him; sometimes it would be the other way around. Sometimes they would be lenient, sometimes they would be firm. This kind of camaraderie was not weird to them.

“Let’s go then!”

The party pushed forward. Even though the Skeleton Guards were strong they could not endure the party's strong tank and healer. Their current speed was much faster compared to the second and third floor. In just a matter of time, the party managed to arrive at the deepest ground of the fourth floor. The Elite monsters were as stingy as Zhang Yang had said, while only the first Skeleton Guard dropped an equipment, the rest of the monsters on the floor did not drop anything at all.

Zhang Yang had calculated that the activation rate of <Electric Shock> was at around 30%.

On the exit of the fourth floor stood a large Skeleton Warrior similar in appearance. However, this one was different than the others; its body size was twice as large as the Skeleton Guard. Its presence alone was so strong that it gave out an ominous, pressuring aura.

# Chapter 72: Lincar The Slaughterer

---

[Lica The Slaughterer] (Green-Copper)

Level: 25

HP: 250k

“Let’s hope that this boss has the same skill as the Skeleton Guard.” Said Zhang Yang. “The Elite Skeleton Guards attacks are strong but not particularly deadly. But when compared with the boss...that’s a whole different story...”

“Sigh...Looks like the load is on me!” Little Snow winked at Zhang Yang. “Later when we’re done, I expect you to treat me to relaxing spa session!”

Fatty Han eyes gleamed!

“Requesting to tag along!” He raised his flabby arm up high.

Drizzler snorted and said, “Fatty Bro, where you should go is not the spa but a gym!”

“Hmph! I exercise every day! Now that you mentioned it, I remember back then when I’m at the gym doing my workout,

there will always be ladies starting at my sexy butt. Argh, I was so ashamed!”

“Yeah! Like that would happen! Only in your dreams!” Drizzler laughed and everyone else followed.

“Alright, let’s get started!” Zhang Yang unsheathe his sword.

Zhang Yang walked a few steps and entered the aggro range, triggering the boss. The giant Skeleton growled in a deep, thundering voice, and the entire cave resonated with its sheer power. The blackened eye sockets lit up in emerald fire.

Lincar the Slaughterer unsheathed its sword and behaved almost exactly like the Skeleton Guards, slicing the floor with its sword, producing a spark of lighting.

Zhang Yang quickly dodged and jumped to the other end. Fortunately, that attack did not activate the <Electric Shock> effect.

The battle started as the boss cracked open its jaw to speak.

“ALL. THAT. LIVES. MUST. FALL. TO. THE. ASHES!” roared Lincar as it swings it sword towards Zhang Yang.

“Tch! A boss that talks a lot bleeds a lot!” Fatty Han laughed.

“Hehe! Big ass boss! Give me all of your equipment!” Drizzler laughed as well.

“Muahah! That’s right! You’d better listen to what my little Drizzler says!”

Being a computer program, Lincar the Slaughterer did not talk or debate with a player, it only cared to do the one thing that it was programmed to to; eliminate the players with its best effort.

Lincar dragged its sword and raised it up high. Just when Zhang Yang was about to dodge the highly telegraphed attack, a flash of blue light struck him, sending a surge of electricity that rendered him completely immobile! Zhang Yang could not even move a finger!

‘-160!’

‘-748!’

Zhang Yang received two direct hits from the boss, the lower one from the <Electric Shock> and the higher damage from the normal attack.

Zhang Yang heart sank. He then realized that he received 700 over damage, even with his 20% damage reduction skill and 70 points Defense status. That would mean that the boss’s unsuppressed damage would reach up to 1,000 damage!

“Ha! HA! HAAA! PUNY. WEAK. MORTAL. BEING.” Lincar spoke in a weird manner, one word at a time, slow and heavily enunciated. Every syllable was heavily oppressive. Suddenly, its emerald eyes blazed fiercely and the sword in its hand ignited into similar emerald green fire.

‘Ding! Lincar the Slaughterer has used <Soul Strike>. All melee attacks will have an extra 30% Shadow attack. Lasts for 1 minute!’

“Shit! It’s strong!”

“DIE!” Lincar the Slaughterer bellowed as it swung its sword, cutting through air, leaving a trail of emerald light in its path.

Zhang Yang frantically moved around, dodging those that he can and used <Block> against those that he could not. Even though the sword attacks could be easily blocked with <Block>, he could not prevent the damage completely since the <Block> did not nullify the Shadow damage it carried. Every time the enemy sword swung, Zhang Yang would always receive around 250 Shadow damage.

“Pick up the pace!” Zhang Yang screamed.

Bzz!

A flash of blue light flashed as Zhang Yang was hit again by <Electric Shock>. Paralyzed and helpless, Zhang Yang was slashed 3 times by the boss.

‘-160!’

‘-250!’

‘-767!’

Little Snow hurriedly healed Zhang Yang with everything she had; she could not afford to let him die!

“HAHAHA! Weaklings! Scream and wail by my sword!” After a few speeches, the boss could finally deliver a proper sentence. It then raised its sword up to its forehead and a progress bar appeared above its head!

Without delay, Fatty Han and Hundred Shots quickly shot a <Silencing Shot> to it without Zhang Yang needing to remind.

‘Immune!’

“Oh crap! What is he up to?!” Fatty Han muttered.

The skill took 3 seconds to cast; it was not too long, neither too short, however what was even more surprising was the fact that a huge meteor appeared in the sky and smashed down on Zhang Yang and Drizzler.

BOOM!

‘-2,500!’

‘-2,000!’

‘Ding! Player Drizzler had died!’

‘Ding! Player Zhang Yang had died!’

“F\*ck! What power!” Fatty Han gazed at the boss’s 73% remaining HP and immediately lost all hope, choosing to give up.

The entire team was killed in the blink of an eye.

“Noob tank! How did you and Drizzler die?” At the graveyard, Little Snow asked Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang quickly refer to the battle log and checked.

‘You have received 2,000 Fire damage (500 point reduced damage) from <Meteor Strike>.’

Drizzler followed suit and found out that she had also received 2,500 damage from the same skill.

“How do we fight this?” Fatty Han said. With only 1,900 HP, not even Zhang Yang could endure the skill.



“We can... Little Snow just needs to heal us to full health at the moment of that <Meteor Strike> skill and also cast a <Holy Shield>!” Zhang Yang replied.

Little Snow’s magic attack had exceeded 300 and her <Holy Shield> could absorb up to 600 over damage. Its endurance could help increase the limits of one’s maximum HP!

After the team revived and recovered to full health, the boss returned to its previous posture, standing still like a statue, emotionless.

After a minute, everyone returned to their full health.

“Little brat, I want you to pay full attention. When the boss starts casting the skill, you need to withdraw as fast as possible!” said Zhang Yang.

“Okay!” Drizzler nodded.

Zhang Yang walked ahead and started the battle.

90%, 80%...So far so good...

Suddenly, the boss spoke a smooth taunt and started to chant a spell. Drizzler quickly ran away from her current position. The total spell incantation was 3 seconds, providing enough time for her to reach a same place if her reflexes were swift enough.

BOOM!

The boss completed the incantation and a huge rock fell down from the sky, hitting Zhang Yang on the head.

‘-3,386!’

Zhang Yang crumpled to the ground, completely burnt into a crisp.

‘Ding! Player Zhan Yu has died!’

“Weak little beings! All of you will die!” Lincar started its massacre and killed everyone before they could react.

“Argh...what a lost! We were killed twice now!” Little Snow sighed.

“Why has the damage increased?!” Fatty Han questioned.

Zhang Yang referred to the battle log again, he intended to find out the reason behind it.

‘You have received 3386 Fire damage (1,000 point reduced damage, 614 damage absorb by <Holy Shield>) from <Meteor Strike>.’

Zhang Yang calculated and found it the truth behind its skill! The total damage will always be 5,000!

“Guys! I’ve found out! The boss’s skill has a fixed damage! It will always be 5,000 damage. If the skill hits anyone in the area, the damage will be distributed equally to everyone!”

The first time they were strike by the skill, both Zhang Yang and Drizzler received 2,500 damage each. The second time, since Zhang Yang was the only one who tanked the skill, he alone received all 5,000 damage! That was why he died!

Now that he understood the boss’ mechanism, he could then device a plan to counter it.

“Guys! Change of plans! When the boss starts to chant the skill, I need everyone to gather to my position! If it’s 5 of us, everyone should receive only 1,000 damage! If Little Snow could pre-cast us with <Regeneration>, we could all recover to full health in a blink!”

“Sounds good to me!”

“Okay!

Everyone agreed and quickly revived and recuperated.

“Let’s go!”

Zhang Yang started the fight.

“Rape his ass!”

Everyone joined the fight once Zhang Yang activated his <Charge>.

The boss fight started for the third time and it progressed slowly, with the boss gradually losing HP.

90%, 80%, 70%!

Lincar raised its sword and chanted a spell.

“Everyone! Gather!” Zhang Yang quickly called out. He turned around and started running back while Little Snow and the range players ran towards him. With everyone gathered together, Little Snow quickly cast <Regeneration> on everyone.

BOOM!

The huge meteor strike and everyone received damage.

‘-1000!’

‘-1000!’

‘-1000!’

‘-1000!’

‘-800!’

After unleashing its skill Lincar growled and went back to attacking Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang used <Charge> again and resumed on the offensive.

“Cousin, the guy named Lu called again, he said that he will come over in a few days!” said Drizzler as she swung at the boss.

“What?!” Little Snow raged. “How could he be so shameless?!”

“Hehe! It can’t be helped since you’re so beautiful. That guy will never give up since he is a fly!” Drizzler giggled.

Little Snow clenched her fist. “Hmph hmph...If that guy would even try to do anything at all, I’ll will smash his face in! What an arrogant man! He thinks that all the women would grovel at his feet since he has such a young and handsome face! Pui! It irritates me!”

Fatty Han quick interjected. “Little Snow! Tell me who the scoundrel is that dared to disturb you! I’ll personally beat the shit out of him!”

“Pervy Fatty! If you were to help out, does it count as a self-induced Trojan horse? To let the danger into your own house?” Drizzler giggled.

“Hmph! I am a man of honor and pride! People even call me the King Arthur of Honesty! Do you think I would do something as dishonorable as that?!”

“F\*ck! Shut the hell up and move your fat ass!” Zhang yang screamed. The boss was about to unleash its skill again.

Everyone quickly stopped their conversation and sprinted towards Zhang Yang to share the burden of the <Meteor Strike> damage. With only 30% HP left, the boss’ doom seemed imminent.

“Seriously, if things get out of hand, you can rely on Fatty Han to help you!” said Zhang Yang. He had high hopes on these two girls in the Professional League, he did not want anything bad happening to them!

Zhang Yang could not remember seeing the name Little Snow nor Drizzler in his previous life. He thought that they might really have met with some malicious events in the past that had caused them to drown among the nameless crowd. On the other hand, Fatty Han was quite dependable since he was famous in society around his area. Whenever he said something, people would listen,

or perhaps in that annoying man's case, shiver.

Little Snow shook her head and still clenched her fist. “Tsk tsk tsk...This elder cousin here is a Black Belt Karate fighter. Do you think that a simple guy like him could do anything to me?”

While they were having their conversation, the boss unleashed <Meteor> once, not long after having its HP dropping down to 5%.

When it died, the boss gave out quite a huge chunk of experience to the point where Zhang Yang, Hundred Shots, and Fatty Han levelled up.

# Chapter 73: Magic Scroll

---

“I wonder what kind of crazy item this boss would drop...” Fatty Han was eager to open the corpse, anxiously anticipating the loot.

“Little brat! Open the corpse!” Zhang Yang moved aside and gestured her to proceed.

Drizzler helped herself to the body and claimed the prize.

[Beginner's God Oil: Light as a Feather] (Useable)

Use: Strengthen your boots. Permanently increasing your movement speed by 5%.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh. “Hah! It actually would appear here!”

“Is this any good?” Drizzler asked. She did not think that 5% increase in movement speed is something amazing.

“In future battles...” Zhang Yang stopped after 3 words. Movement speed was a very important factor that could help in winning a fight. With a slightly faster movement speed, you could dodge an enemy attack or chase after an enemy to deliver the last fatal strike! However, the Professional League would only be available after 5 months or so. A beta player should not have any



knowledge about the League!

“A warrior is famous for being slow. If one applies the 5% movement speed bonus, one could evade easier! It would be an advantage during PK!” Zhang Yang quickly rephrased his sentence.

“God oil huh...Why does the thought of Indian Assam came into my mind?” Fatty Han laughed. “I must say...the infamous Indian God Oil is not for speed, but endurance and strength! If you \*\*\*\* too quickly, aren't you being a fast gunner?”

“Just go to hell...”

Since everyone had no interest in this item, Zhang Yang automatically obtained it. He thought that his current Level 20 boots was not worth using the oil on. He would rather wait until he obtained a Gray-Silver boots and then use it with the oil!

However, the oil was still a beginner's grade. There were higher and stronger grades. The highest grade could even increase up to 15% movement speed, and that would provide a noticeable speed increase.

[Mountain Cleaving Blade] (Green-Copper, Two-handed sword)

Weapon attack: 180-216

Attack interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 52

Level requirement: 20

“Wah! I want it! Gimme! Gimme!” Drizzler squealed.

“Eh? Why would you need it? Aren’t you wielding a Level 20 Green-Copper weapon right now?” said Zhang Yang even though he knew the reason. He wanted to gauge Drizzler’s understanding.

Drizzler rolled her eyes and said, “My current weapon has an attack interval of 3.5 seconds, that new weapon has 3.8 seconds! If a weapon attack interval is longer, the skill damage would be higher! As a Guardian, what would you know about a Berserker huh!?” Drizzler raised her nose high.

Zhang Yang shook his head and laughed. He had never thought that he would receive a lecture about the game mechanics.

Drizzler did not behave as greedily as he thought she would. After equipping the new equipment, she expressed her desire to deposit the [Spider’s Long Spear] into the guild storage.

[Magic Scroll: Rising Morale (Level 1)] (Usable)

Use: Encourage your teammates, increasing all damage and healing rate by 5%, last for 5 minutes. Effects cannot be stacked.

Charge remaining: 3/3

Level requirement: 20

Note: This magic scroll was made personally by the great Necromancer Almark. You still smell the lingering scent of putrefaction in the air!

“This is a very useful item! Especially during a boss fight! This little item here could make a whole lot of difference!” said Zhang Yang happily. Never look down at the tiny 5% damage increase; if they were to use it in a 50-man dungeon, their attack could be increased by 5% fifty-fold. They could even turn the tide when fighting a difficult boss!

No wonder this place was always occupied by huge guilds! They were also hunting for this item as well! Those guilds have always been at each other's necks for the right to farm at this place! This little piece of scroll was the reason behind their quarrel. Not to mention the shape shifting tool that played a role in their skirmish as well!

This little playground would belong to them!

Zhang Yang thought that he had to establish a certain power to

occupy this field so ensure a successful capture! It was and always will be a treasure mine!

Since everyone belonged to the same team, they had no qualms about the distribution of loots. They also wanted to establish a certain amount respect for the party leader, thus they offered the scroll to Zhang Yang. He on the other hand suspected that their inventory was already full, that they only offered the item to him because they could not take in more items!

“A bunch of f\*ckers!” Zhang Yang grit his teeth.

“Okay! Let’s go people! To the fifth floor now!”

The 4 of them giggled quietly and walked down the stone stairs the lead to the fifth floor. Vastly more experienced than before, the crowd walked carefully as ever when they approached the entrance. However, when they peeked into the door, they could only see a plain field. The field was not big; it was about the size of a football field. The visibility was not very reassuring even when there were plenty of lit torches hanging around the place. They could make out something in the middle of the field, in the midst of thick, green colored gas that spread across the entire field.

“No monster huh.” Fatty Han muttered and he pushed Zhang Yang towards the field.

“F\*ck!” Zhang Yang was not ready for it. The moment his body entered the field and made contact with the green gas, a debuff appeared on his head.

[Deadly Poison]: Causes the target to receive 500 Natural damage every 3 seconds until the target leaves the effective area.

Zhang Yang frantically jumped back onto the stairs. The debuff disappeared immediately after but not before inflicting 400 damage on Zhang Yang.

“This entire area is poisoned! We need to consume the antidote that the NPC had given us!”

Drizzler quickly took the antidote out and wanted to immediately use it when Zhang Yang stopped her.

“Hold your horses there. We still do not know where the boss is! Since the antidote could only be used 3 times and is restricted to a time limit as well, we might have to return to make more from the NPC if we use them all.”

“Is that the boss? That shady figure in the center of the field?”

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, “Little Snow, put a <Holy Shield> and <Regeneration> on me. I’m going in to check it out.”

Little Snow nodded and waved her hands, casting a shield and a recovery spell on him.

“Don’t die on me now, noob tank!”

“Don’t jinx it!” Zhang Yang grit his teeth. With a quick step, Zhang Yang ran into the center of the field.

Damage absorb!

3 seconds later, a damage text popped out on his head.

‘-187!’

Another 3 seconds passed and the shield was dispelled. Zhang Yang started to receive damage. On the other hand, <Regeneration> started to tick and healed Zhang Yang.

‘-400!’

‘+129!’

Zhang Yang finally got closer and he got a clear view of the shady figure. It was indeed, the boss!

The shadowy figure was a rider on a skeletal horse. The skeleton stood rigid and had flaming green fire burning in its eye sockets. There were red flames spewing out from its nostrils. The developers really put their back in designing this monster!

The rider on the horse was completely covered in a crimson blood color armor. On the right side of the horse's saddle was a long sword and on the left side was shield with a griffin symbol embroidered on it. The unblinking eyes sent a chill down Zhang Yang's spine.

[Shurian, The Fallen Holy Knight] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 30

HP: 400k

Once Zhang Yang had read the boss' information, he quickly turned and headed back as fast as he could. All the way through, he was taking a lot of damage.

“That's weird. The boss was certainly a Gray-Silver tier but there was nothing in the quest description that talked about a knight. It did mention a Necromancer Zac...” Zhang Yang whispered.

Fatty Han on the other hand, was happy with the news. “Haha! Isn't that great! We can defeat two Gray-Silver bosses!”

Zhang Yang shook his head silently. He still thought that was something was wrong but he could not put a finger on it.

“So...how do we fight it? What's the plan?”

Everyone turned to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang twitched. Even though he had been reborn to repeat his life again, that did not mean that he would magically know everything about every boss! He stopped to think for a while.

“I have no idea what skills this boss has. We could only find out about it when we fight it! Alright, here is the plan. We’ll take the potion and quickly rush to fight the boss as fast as we can! There cannot be any time wasted! Until the antidote’s duration runs out, do not use another charge until I say so! There is a possibility that we can’t even kill it! And when that happens, we cannot afford to waste time!”

“Okay!” Everyone nodded.

“On the count of 3, we’ll take the antidote simultaneously and rush in!”

“1!”

“2!”

“3!”

Zhang Yang quickly used the [Properly-Made Antidote] and rushed into the fifth floor, charging towards the center and onto



the boss. Fatty Han and the rest consumed the antidote and followed closely behind.

“Wow! Such a cool horse! I want it!” Drizzler screamed. “Noob tank! I want it! I want that horsie! I want! I want!”

Fatty Han laughed cynically. “Me too! Officer! Give me!”

“You f\*cking fat f\*ck!”

Zhang Yang originally did not have any thoughts on the skeleton horse but when Drizzler was screaming like a baby, he had to explained it to her. “Normally, a player can only buy a horse from an NPC after achieving Level 40. A player can also obtain it 5 levels lower, only when the guild has achieved Level 2 with full experience points! There is also another way actually, which is to farm a mount directly from boss! Still, a Level 30 boss does have the chance to drop a mount. However, even though the boss is riding a mount, it doesn’t necessarily mean that it will drop a mount!”

“Haha! All the more reason to kill it!” Fatty Han got excited. So far as to the progress of the game, players could only depend on their own two feet to move around. If they could get their hands on a horse... imagine how grand it would be, sitting on a horse... stationed in front of a bank or the most crowded auction house! If only he could get his hand on the exact one right in front of his eyes! How many players would rush to him? Just to get a closer look at the awesome ride!

Zhang Yang continued to charge towards the boss to start the battle.

“Even though there is a chance the boss could drop a mount, it would be too microscopic to even happen! Say if the chance for a Pet Monster to drop is 1 out of 10,000, then a mount’s drop rate would be 100 times rarer than that!”

A regular Gray-Silver boss has a large aggro trigger range to begin with, and with this boss’ level being much higher than Zhang Yang’s, it kicked in immediately as the party approached them. The horse neighed loudly at a high-pitched tone, rearing on its hind legs! Blazing, violent fire erupted from all 4 hooves of the horse. It then charged towards at an unbelievable speed!

Its neigh was as loud as the thundering night sky, echoing through the entire field like a violent storm, bringing destruction to the barren land!

The fight has begun!

## Chapter 74: Shurian

---

Zhang Yang quickly used <Charge>. He did not expect to land a successful stun on a Gray-Silver boss; he only wanted to generate enough aggro to draw its full attention. If it were to strike anyone aside from the tank, it would be safe to say that certain death would be imminent!

Just after <Charge> made contact, Zhang Yang quickly landed a normal attack and activated <Provoke>.

‘-310!’

‘Immune!’

Argh, <Provoke> is ineffective against this boss; and such a strong defense at that! By the looks of it, there could be over 100 points into it!

Zhang Yang then switched to <Cripple Defense> to quickly reduce 50% of its defense, allowing the rest of the party to deal more damage.

With the limited usage of the antidote and the overwhelming amount of HP, the party knew that they had to put all their effort in to kill the boss in time, or the antidote will wear off and they would die from the poison.

Shurian drew its giant sword and wielded its shield. With a light

huff and puff, the rider pulled the horse up to its hind legs, raising it up high and growling furiously!

Shush! Kriin... The rider, dragging its long sword on the ground, charged towards Zhang Yang and swung it once it was close enough. The swing was so fast and wide that Zhang Yang knew he could not dodge it and quickly activated <Block>

“<Block!>”

“-984!”

Weirdly enough, Zhang Yang blocked the attack but Drizzler, who was standing beside him, received heavy damage.

“Little brat, go stand behind the boss and fight him there! This boss’ attack has a <Splash> effect, so anyone standing too close to its target receives the same damage as well!”

Drizzler quickly obeyed and jumped back a few steps. “Tch! Noob tank! I was attacked because of you!”

“Hah!” Zhang Yang scoffed. He continued to stack 5 layers of <Cripple Defense> on the boss. Even when the boss had 100 Defense value or more, with the 5 layers of <Cripple Defense> and <Eagle Eye>, Zhang Yang’s attacks increased dramatically as it completely ignored all defense.

“Futile resistance! Wail in pain at the depths of the abyss!”

Shurian spoke softly as it swung its sword fatally at Zhang Yang.

His reaction rate was very fast; however, his in-game character could not match his actual speed. There was only a 50/50 chance that he could dodge the boss' quick attacks. With his HP dropping like an open faucet, Little Snow was on high alert to ensure he did not die.

98%, 96%, 94%...

The boss had just too much HP. Even with the armor reduction, the party's strong attack power could only bring down its health as fast as a snail!

“Foolish beings! You dare to challenge the mighty Shurian? Die by the hands of the Abyssal Shadow!” Shurian let out an automated speech as soon as his HP dropped down to 90%. He gained another skill!

Shush! A black skull burst out from the boss' body and hit Zhang Yang.

“-400!”

Zhang Yang quickly checked the battle log.

-You have received the effect of <Death Shadow>, receiving 500 Shadow damage (100 points reduced damage).

“Give me a break! I can’t keep up any longer!” Little Snow cried with her eyes full of tears. Her job was already tough enough, and it got tougher with the boss’ new skill. Luckily, the new skill’s activation rate was not too frequent, triggering only once every 10 seconds or so; but to accumulate that much of damage from the boss’ regular attacks and <Death Shadow>, Little Snow was indeed unable to keep up with the damage and left Zhang Yang in a very precarious situation.

89%, 87%, 85%!

“Come forth, my loyal servants! Serve and fight for your only lord!” Shurian raised its sword into the sky and two pillars of dark light blasted from both sides of the blade.

‘Ding! Shurian has summoned Death Servant!’

Two Skeleton monsters crawled out from the ground and rushed towards Shurian.

[Death Servant] (Normal)

Level: 25

HP: 3,000

“Hundred Shots, Fatty! Take down those minions!” Zhang Yang commanded.

He knew not what those minions could do, but he was not going to sit around to find out as they were summoned by the boss itself. He dared not send Drizzler to fight too since there was a chance that the minions would explode!

Both Hunters switched their targets, taking one minion each. Even so, with their divided firepower, it would take at least 20 seconds to kill of 3,000 HP. There was something odd about the minions though; even when they were attacked, they ignored the attacker and ran towards Shurian.

The boss laughed maniacally as it swung at one of the minion, turning the poor soul into a pillar of dark light.

Shoom!

‘+50,000’

The boss recovered its HP to 97%!

‘Ding! Shurian has used <Absorb Soul>, recovering 50,000 HP!’

The boss swung again at the other minion and fully healed itself with another ‘+50,000’!

“Oh, f\*ck!” the party cried.

“It’s alright, guys! Just treat it as a restart!” Zhang Yang explained.

“The next time Shurian summons the minions again, Hundred Shots and Fatty will both hit on just the left minion! Little brat, I want you to <Charge> to the right minion and control it for a while. Hundred! Fatty! Once you’ve killed your minion, help with Drizzler’s immediately! I’ll try my best to drag the boss away from the minion and give you more time and space to deal with them!”

Zhang Yang turned around to find Little Snow and screamed, “Little Snow! How’s your mana?”

“I’m good! I still have around 85%. I can still fight on with a mana potion!”

When a Priest reached Level 20, they could learn the skill <Meditate>, allowing them to constantly recover Mana Points even during the battle; the recovery rate increased with their Spirit value. Little Snow had the second best equipment among the party, only to rival Zhang Yang as he held the best. That was why her mana recovery rate with high. Her current strength could now have easily be ranked as the best Priest in the White Jade Castle.

98%, 95%, 90%... slowly and steadily, the party attacked the boss and brought down its HP once more.



“Come forth, my loyal servants! Serve and fight for your only lord!” Shurian raised its sword once again, summoning two Skeleton minions to his aid.

‘Ding! Shurian has summoned Death Servant!’

Two summoned minions appeared on the far right and left of the field and began rushing towards the center where Shurian was. Hundred Shots and Fatty Han quickly turned and attacked the minion on the left.

‘<Concussion Shot>!’

[Concussion Shot]: Deal 100% ranged damage to a target and reduce 50% movement speed for 4 seconds.

Cooldown time: 30 seconds

Range: 30 meters

The two Hunters fired as many arrows as they could. After 4 seconds, Fatty Han shot another <Concussion Shot> to further slow it down. After the second shot, the monster moved back at its original speed for only another 3 to 4 seconds before it was defeated.

Zhang Yang was at the other end of the field, luring the boss to

the maximum distance he could get to separate the boss from its minions. The atmosphere was tense but was immediately lifted when Drizzler and the two Hunters killed the last minion standing.

“Aw, yiss!” Everyone cheered happily, as if they had already won the battle.

“F\*cking good job, guys! Don’t stop! Keep it going!”

84%, 80%, 75%!

Shurian pulled up the horse and stood tall. It then pointed its sword at Hundred Shots and said, “Hundred Shots! Bow before your master!”

‘Ding! Player Hundred Shots is affected with <Shadow Control>!’

A black shadowed skeleton floated behind Hundred Shots, forcing Hundred Shots to turn towards Fatty Han and attacked him.

“Holy shit! What on earth is that?!” Fatty Han was shot at like a beehive but he could not return fire; he could only attack the boss with all his might.

“I’m being controlled!” Hundred Shots posted in the party channel.

Zhang Yang quickly replied, “Take a look at the skill description! Is there a time limit? Could it be dispelled?”

The skill will expire and dispel automatically if there was a time limit, otherwise, players would have to dispel it with a special method like killing the target or using a special tool.

“Zhan Yu! There’s a time limit, and it’s about 15 seconds! It can’t be dispelled!”

That’s good. 15 seconds is not as long as it seems.

Zhang Yang called out, “Little Snow, you need to put more effort in healing! We have a traitor now amongst us!”

Hundred Shots laughed, “Hey! It’s not me!”

With an extra enemy to handle, Little Snow’s burden doubled! Luckily, the controlled Hundred Shots did not have a fixed target; he merely turned to one target to attack once and then changed target after. Little Snow simply casted <Regeneration> on everyone and that removed Hundred Shots as a threat to the team. It was good luck that he did not team up with the boss to attack Zhang Yang, or else he would have not survived the onslaught.

After the unfortunate spell, 15 seconds went past and Hundred Shots returned to normal, and the attacking rhythm went back to its original pace.

72%, 71%, 70%...

“Come forth my loyal servants! Serve and fight for your only lord!” Shurian raised its sword for a third time. Zhang Yang concluded that the boss only activated this skill at every 15% HP interval.

Sticking to the plan, Hundred Shots and Fatty took one minion while Drizzler handled the other, and the battle progressed smoothly.

“Haha! Smelly, rotting boss! You better give up that cool horse!” Drizzler’s eyes were fixated on the horse that she wanted to own so eagerly.

Two minutes had past and the boss’ HP was brought down to 55%. It summoned its minions once more but they were killed off in the same manner.

“Guys, don’t lower your guard!” Zhang Yang quickly poured cold water on their overly-excited heads. “When the boss’ HP is at 50%, I’m sure there’s going to be another controlling skill. I’m not sure if there isn’t any other ultimate skill! We have to be wary!”

54%, 53%, 52%, 51%, 50%!

“Drizzler, bow down to me!” Shurian pointed its sword to Drizzler to cast the skill. It then got down from its horse and bellowed, “Shadow Moon, fight with me!”

“Shi ling ling...” the skeleton horse let out a weird breath and raised its front hooves and charged towards Zhang Yang.

The tide of the battle has now been turned, from a 5-on-1, to a 4-on-3!

# Chapter 75: Crisis In The Storm

---

[Shadow Moon, Shurian's Mount] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 25

HP: 300k

Two Gray-Silver bosses on his right and a controlled Drizzler on his left, Zhang Yang was cornered with danger on both sides!

Shush! The enemy attacked!

Pushing himself to the limits, Zhang Yang dodged every possible attack to reduce the maximum damage received!

Being the closest to Zhang Yang, Drizzler's melee attack reached first, and in a blink of an eye, Zhang Yang was cornered like a chicken in a cage. He did not even have enough space to properly move around!

He quickly stomped the ground and casted <Thunder Strike>, effectively damaging all 3 targets. However, the slow effect only worked on Drizzler and the horse, as the main boss was completely immune to it. Zhang Yang could not have asked for more as he only needed to slow down two out of the three enemies. He quickly slid out of the danger zone and dragged all 3 of them towards the

right side of the battlefield to ensure the boss' attacking range could only hit him alone.

4 seconds later, Drizzler and Shadow Moon regained their speed and charged towards Zhang Yang. He quickly activated <Block> and dodged a series of attacks. When <Thunder Strike> was available again, he quickly used it and continued to [kite](#) the boss.

15 seconds after, Drizzler regained control of her own character and Zhang Yang had one less burden to worry about.

Zhang Yang activated <Horizontal Sweep> which he had been holding back since Drizzler was their enemy as he was actually afraid that he might kill her by accident. Now that she was back to their side, he could unleash hell on the enemy.

“Focus on the boss! Ignore the horse!” said Zhang Yang. If Shadow Moon had less than 100k HP, he might consider to kill the horse first; but that horse had an overwhelming 300k HP! Zhang Yang immediately skipped that thought.

“Yeah! Don't even touch the horse! That's mine to take!” Drizzler exclaimed.

Even though Shadow Moon was considered a summoned monster, it was still a Gray-Silver boss! Its damage was high enough that it can deal 1,000 damage in a kick! If Zhang Yang was careless and allowed himself to receive both Shadow Moon and Shurian's attack, he will definitely be sent to the graveyard.

“Holy shit...this is intense!” Fatty Han took a deep breath. He was afraid that Zhang Yang might make a mistake that would kill the team.

This situation allowed Zhang Yang to display his unusual combat tactics. He used <Thunder Strike> not as a means of attack, but to slow down Shadow Moon’s attacks on him. He also strategically used <Block> only to safeguard himself whenever he was sure he could not evade an attack. His ability to utilize his skills were beyond anyone’s capability. Still, his HP bar was riding a roller-coaster; going up and down at an incredible speed! Nonetheless, he was still standing strong! If another party had tried to take on this challenge, their tank could not possibly kite two bosses simultaneously while maintaining his own life!

“Little Yang, you have truly impressed me!” Fatty Han let out a sigh of relief.

“Impress, my ass! Attack the boss!” Zhang Yang did not hold back his words whenever he was talking to his “brother”.

48%, 46%, 44%... the boss’ HP continued to go down at a crawling speed.

“Come forth my loyal servants! Serve and fight for your only lord!” Shurian summoned the minions for the fifth time.

‘Ding! Shurian has summoned Death Servant!’



Everyone carried out their tasks; even Little Snow stopped her support to cast a <Divine Punishment> on the monster. They managed to quickly kill off the two summons, not giving any chance for Shurian to heal himself.

“Pesky little beings! I had enough of your stench! Rot in hell!” Shurian roared. Dark clouds started to seep into the cave through the slit in the walls.

‘Ding! Shurian has used <Demonic Rain>!’

Zhang Yang looked up to the clouds while kiting the boss.

“Be careful of those clouds! I’m sure there’s something bad about them!”

Just as he finished his sentence, the clouds started to drip black color rain drops, showering two thirds of the entire field.

‘-300!’

‘-300!’

Everyone was on their feet and started to running to safety. However, some of them did not make it in time and was damaged by the rain for 300 Shadow damage!

With the burden of healing skyrocketing, Little Snow’s Mana bar

went down like a landslide.

“Move quicker guys! Avoid the rain, or else I’m going to run out of Mana real quick!” Little Snow cried.

“Hahaha! A bunch of weakly lowly beings! Cry for your life! Wail in pain!” Shurian brandish its sword and laughed like a mad king.

“Shit! When will this shitty rain stop?!” Fatty Han groaned.

Zhang Yang slowly started to kite the boss towards the entrance of the fifth floor.

“Check the entrance! Please see whether the door is close!” Zhang Yang was thinking that they could all repeat the previous floor tactics, to hide behind the entrance and attack the boss from a safe distance.

After withdrawing a few steps, Hundred Shots turned around and sighed.

“The door is closed!”

Zhang Yang let out a sigh of disappointment and turned to face the boss. He thought he could save the trouble but now he had to put more effort to dodge both Shurian and Shadow Moon’s attack while looking out for the rain from the sky. What a pain!

Still, it was sensible that the developers discouraged players to make use of the terrain bug to make killing the boss any easier. It looks like the entrance could only be opened when either the boss or the entire party was killed.

Since the entire party had to look out for the rain, the party damage dropped tremendously. Previously, they were already at a turtle-crawling speed, now they could be even slower than that. The boss's HP dropped slowly... 1% at a time.

By the time the boss had 30% left, everyone's antidote effect had almost reached its time limit. Zhang Yang noticed it and quickly yelled. "Guys! Take another antidote!"

Zhang Yang felt a little regret for not taking a few more of those [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]! 100 Shadow resistance could reduce at least 100 Shadow damage! That would make a whole lot of difference!

27%, 26%, 25%!

"Come forth my loyal servants! Serve and fight for your only lord!" Shurian summoned the minion again, and simultaneously, pointed its sword at Fatty Han.

"Slim and Handsome! Bow down and serve your lord!"

'Ding! Player Slim and Handsome is now affected by <Shadow Control>!'

“Crap! The damage would not be enough!” Fatty Han complained as he could not control his character. He raised the bow in his hands and took aim at Little Snow.

Zhang Yang quickly held his steps and called out. “Hundred Shots! Little brat! Both of you take on the left minion! Brat, don’t use your <Charge>! Keep it for later!”

“Okay!”

Hundred Shots quickly shot a <Concussion Shot>, slowing down the monster on the left. Drizzler arrived just in time when it was slowed to slice the monster.

Zhang Yang on the other hand was kiting the boss and Shadow Moon towards Drizzler. The minion on the right was heading towards him at an incredible speed! In just 4 seconds, it was almost 10 meters away from the boss!

<Charge>!

Zhang Yang bashed the second minion and laid down a <Thunder Strike>, quickly chaining his attack with another normal attack and a <Horizontal Sweep>. His combo dealt up to 1,300 HP. Since skill activation was an instant act, it did not clash with a normal attack. All of Zhang Yang’s attacks were almost in an instant!

Zhang Yang turned around and continued to kite both the boss

and Shadow Moon away from the pursuing minion. 2 seconds later, the minion recovered from the stun and started to head towards its master. However, its movement speed was slowed by <Thunder Strike>!

“Little Yang! That was a great move! As expected of this great Fatty Master who had taught you that!” Fatty Han snorted, taking all credit for Zhang Yang’s incredible feat.

On the other side of the field, Hundred Shots and Drizzler were fighting with their lives on the line! The petty 3,000 HP felt like almost 300,000 in their eyes!

4 seconds later, the second minion regained its normal movement speed and started to get closer to the boss.

“Little brat! Use <Charge> on the other minion now!” Zhang Yang kept calm even when danger was imminent. He continued to guide the party.

Drizzler gave up on the minion with 500 HP left to its death and headed towards the second minion! She quickly used <Charge> when she got in range and stunned the minion to get into her stance and attack.

On the other side of the battle field, Little Snow found an opportunity to chant <Divide Punishment> and casted it on the first minion! Hundred Shots drew his bow and attacked the minion in the same time, sending the demonic creature back to whence it once came!

“That’s good! Keep it going! Kill the next one!” Zhang Yang was very pleased by their performance.

2 seconds later, the second minion recovered from the stun and started to dash toward the boss. Even though Zhang Yang had been kiting Shurian all the time, the second minion managed to catch up to him in just 3 seconds!

Hundred Shots quickly chased after the second minion to attack. This minion was brutally damaged by Zhang Yang, having only 1,500 HP left to its demise. Drizzler had damaged it as well, leaving only 700 HP left! However, the minion’s movement speed was too fast! Without any slow effect on it, Drizzler could not even catch up with it!

Which left Hundred Shots alone to able to strike it!

Shush!

An arrow flew across the air and landed on the minion.

‘-208!’

It looks like there was no stopping it from reaching its destination!

“Hahaha!” Shurian laughed madly. It raised its sword up high and

was about to slice the incoming minion!

‘-710!’

‘-731!’

‘-728!’

“Fuuh! Looks like I’d made it in time!”

In a split second, Zhang Yang flew across the field and activated <Horizontal Sweep>, simultaneously attacking all 3 foes with high damage!

The second minion fell defeated before it could serve its purpose.

The boss’ sword swing only hit the air around it. It groaned in anger!

“F\*cking beautiful!”

Everyone praised Zhang Yang for his last minute rescue.

“Haha! It’s nothing! Don’t stop now! Attack the boss! Victory is just ahead of us!” Zhang Yang laughed it off.

24%, 22%, 20%...

Everything was smooth...until when the boss' HP dropped to 10%!

“Shadow Moon! Come to me! Together we will trample these annoying bugs to hell!” Shurian somersaulted back and landed onto Shadow Moon's back. The pale white sword turned bloodied-red!

‘Ding! Shurian has gone berserk! All attacks have been increased by 50%! Attack interval is reduced by 50%!’

“@#\$%! The boss berserk!?”

Kite or Kiting is the act of luring and dragging an enemy towards the user's designated direction.



## Chapter 76: Handsome Reward

---

The battle with Shurian was already tough to begin with and it got much worse when it entered Berserk state. Every swing of its sword felt like a crashing airplane; even the space around the sword was being distorted!

“Little Snow! Focus your heal on me!” Zhang Yang cried.

The final moment of the fight was the most important but it was the most dangerous too. I all came down to this moment. One wrong move, one missed step, and it will be the end of the party!

Zhang Yang emptied his mind and focused on evading every single one of the boss’ attack!

‘Dodge!’

‘Dodge!’

‘<Block>!’

‘-1,184!’

It only took one successful hit for Zhang Yang to lose over 60% of his HP. Were he to absorb full damage including the 600 Shadow damage and the falling rain, he would have certainly died!

Little Snow went all out. She did not even care to calculate to save Mana points, or time. All she knew that she had to do all that it took to prevent Zhang Yang from dying!

9%, 8%, 7%!

The boss' HP dropped but Little Snow's MP dropped faster!

“Fight on guys! Only 20,000 HP left! It's almost dead!” Zhang Yang boosted their confidence to excite the party. Even though they were still standing strong and not on the verge of death, they could still feel a tremendous amount of stress, pressure, and fatigue in comparison to a thousand battles.

However, now that the battle has almost reached its end, the ranged attackers were extremely relaxed! The boss no longer casted <Shadow Control> nor did it summon anymore minions. As long as they could keep watch for the rain, they would be essentially out of harm's way. On the other extreme end, if Zhang Yang ever missed a block or Little Snow was a millisecond slow in casting her heal, the entire team could be wiped out!

5%, 4%, 3%, 2%!

The tension has never been that high! The party mustered any ounce of strength they had left to finish the fight! No one wanted to fail in this fight when there was only 2% HP left!

1% left!

3,000!

2,000!

1,000!

589!

210!

0!

‘Ding! You and the party members around you have successfully killed Shurian. Obtained 80,050 Experience points (50 points party bonus)!’

As the system notification rang, the boss fell off its horse and slammed against the ground. The horse stomped the ground and groaned while a magic circle appeared underneath it and a pillar of dark light blasted towards the sky. The horse vanished without a trace.

Tired and breathless, Drizzler knelt down to rest, but as soon as she saw her horse being taken away, she quickly jumped to her feet and wailed.

“Argh... my horsie... gimme back my horsie!” She quickly dashed

towards the magic circle but when she arrived, it disappeared as well.

“Wuu...” Drizzler actually cried. Tears was flowing down her cheek! “I want my horsie...Gimme hic back my hic horsie...”

With no enemy left to defeat, the green mist dispersed and eventually disappeared, leaving the air clean and free of any contaminant.

Fatty Han went over and soothe Drizzler. “Little Drizzler, don’t be sad anymore. Here, I’ll be your horsie.” He actually went on all fours.

Seeing Fatty Han actually going to that extent, Drizzler could not help but to laugh it off. She then tried her best to glare angrily at him. “Do you really think that I am still a 3-year old baby?”

...

With that level of crying and wailing, who wouldn’t think that way?

Everyone else was thinking the same thing but to save the trouble of debating with her afterwards, they kept it to themselves.

Foosh!

A wind blew by and a ghostly figure of an old man appeared from nowhere. It then floated towards the party and bowed with a sense of appreciation.

“I thank you all for defeating the demon!”

Everyone was confused at first, but they quickly looked up and read his title.

[Stark, Antelope Village Member] (Normal)

Level: 1

HP: 0/50

It was a ghost, but it was an unusual thing for them; but when the NPC finished its speech, a yellow question mark appeared on his head!

“The quest NPC!?” Everyone exchanged the same look and quickly opened the quest log, only to see that their quest [Rescue the Villager’s Soul] has been competed! Neither one of them understood what was going on. They were tasked to kill the Necromancer Zac and rescue the villagers’ souls, so how could the quest be completed when they now have killed a totally different boss?

Zhang Yang thought for a while and talked to the ghost.

“We were sent here by a young girl name called Emmy from the Antelope Village!”

“What?! Emmy?! My dearest Emmy!” Stark looked both shocked and happy. “How was she? Is she alive?!”

Zhang Yang shook his head, “Sadly, no. She’s dead.”

Stark lowered his head. It was obvious that he was feeling down since his character started to fade in and out repeatedly. After a while, he raised his head and spoke.

“Heroes! What you did was brave and outstanding! I cannot ask anything more from you but please, I still have one more request for you! You need to rescue the villagers’ souls. There are still traps set by that evil Necromancer. He is... he is too dark... Everything about him reeks of evil! He will do something to those innocent villagers and condemn them to a fate worse than hell!”

‘Ding! You have completed a main story quest: Rescue the Villagers’ Souls. Obtained 50,000 Experience Points! You have obtained a reward : Luck +1.’

‘Ding! Stark has a quest for you: Pursue the Evil Necromancer Zac. Will you accept it? This is a main story quest. Complete the quest to receive a luxurious reward!’

“Argh... It’s still ongoing! How long is this freaking main story quest?” Fatty Han complaint.

“Oh well. Let’s not quarrel over simple things. Just accept it first!” That being said, Zhang Yang was also not fond of the quest length.

Stark thanked the party and left the place; probably headed towards his daughter soul to rest in peace.

[Pursue the Evil Necromancer Zac] (Difficulty level: A)

Quest description: Once you have located the Evil Necromancer Zac, see to it that you could save the souls that he had imprisoned!

Progress: Locate the Evil Necromancer Zac 0/1

“This has no end! The game map is just too huge! How are we supposed to find him without any leads?” said Fatty Han.

Zhang Yang replied him, “We’ll put this aside for now, there will be some sort of hint mentioned on other quests! Besides, the quest was only to locate not exterminate. Furthermore, the quest difficulty level is A, which means that the place that we’re supposed to look for should be higher level than our current level! And besides, we got a Luck attribute as a reward! We didn’t lose

anything here!”

1 point of Luck attribute was actually nothing, but with enough accumulation, it will naturally display its effectiveness!

Fatty Han did not like the answer he got and muttered unwillingly on the side.

Zhang Yang laughed.

“Since we have defeated a Gray-Silver boss, let’s obtain our reward now, shall we?”

When Zhang Yang mentioned the word “reward”, Drizzler’s spirits were lifted a little and she proceeded to grab the chance to open the corpse.

“Mine! I’ll open it! Let me! Let me!”

[Athena, Bow of the White Bones] (Gray-Silver, Ranged weapon)

Weapon attack: 306-366

Attack interval: 2.8 seconds



DPS: 120

<Level 1 Socket>

<Level 1 Socket>

Equip effect: Increase 1% critical chance.

Level requirement: 30

“Holy f\*ckin’ moly! This weapon is OP!” Fatty Han quickly forgot his frustration about the quest length and was excited to see the new bow that popped out.

“Zhan Yu. What is this socket thing for?” Hundred Shots questioned.

“Socket are for Gemstones upgrade. There are many types of Gemstones, such as Dexterity Gemstone, Intelligence Gemstone, and more. You can choose to have many different types of upgrade! If you slot in a +10 Intelligence Gemstone into an available slot, you will gain additional 10 Intelligence attribute. Gemstones have 8 tiers. A high-level Slot can fit in a low-level Gemstone, not the other way around.” Zhang Yang explained.

“Low level Gemstones can be bought from the Gem Shop in the city. High level Gemstones can be obtained from defeating bosses, completing main story quests, hidden quests, or even break a

Hardcore Mode record!” Zhang Yang added.

“Hundred Shots bro! This time I’ll fight for this item. I’m not going to let this off! Let’s roll!”

“You’re on!” Hundred Shot replied

Hundred Shots, 78 points.

Fatty Han, 3 points.

“Hahahahahaha!” Drizzler laughed until she fell on the floor, rolling. “Pervy Fatty! Now you know how karma tastes like!”

Fatty Han laughed it off. He knew that there would be another chance for him to get the item when the boss respawned.

Hundred Shots kept the bow in his inventory as he could only equip it when we would be Level 30.

Drizzler snickered.

“Hehehe! My hands are full of luck aren’t they!”

“Hmph! In that case, if you ever open anything lower than a Gray-Silver, we will cut off that hand of yours!” Zhang Yang raised an eyebrow.

“Tch... You’re the lowest!” Drizzler pouted her lips like a sore loser. She reached out her hand again to open the corpse.

[White Bone Necklace] (Gray-Silver, Necklace)

Vitality: +18

Intelligence: +9

Spirit: +3

<Level 1 Socket>

Equip effect: For each time you cast a spell, there will be a fixed chance to increase 100 magic attack. Last for 10 seconds. Effect cannot be stacked.

Level requirement: 30

“Sister! You’re so lucky to be the only magic user here. No one else here will fight with you for any magic type equipment!” said Drizzler. There was a hint of jealousy in her voice.

Little Snow was actually smiling sweetly but when Drizzler mentioned that, her smile turned even wider.

[Chaos Gem] (Usable)

Use: Permanently increase your inventory by 10 slots.

“Increase inventory size! This is very useful!”

“Yeah. Let’s us all roll for it!”

As they obtained more and more extravagant items, Zhang Yang’s understanding to why guilds would occupy this place increased even more. This treasure mine just kept getting better and better!

Everyone rolled but Little Snow obtained the item with a perfect 100 score.

[Skillbook: Vanguard’s Aggression] (Skillbook)

Use: Teaches you Vanguard’s Aggression

Requirement: Guardian, Defender.

“Huh? Tanks only?” Everyone quickly urged Zhang Yang to learn

the skill and expose the skill ability.

Zhang Yang was surprised and happy. He had always wanted to have this skill in his previous life, and he would never have thought that it would appear here!

Every time a field boss was killed the first time, the item quantity and drop rate would always be better. Once the boss was respawned and killed the second time, the drop rate would become normal again.

He picked up the book and learned the skill, and then posted the skill description in the party channel.

Vanguard's Aggression: Cast a 3 x 3-meter protection barrier. Every ally that is in the barrier will receive 90% reduced damage. However, the caster will receive 100% increased damage. Last for 10 seconds.

Cooldown time: 10 seconds.

## Chapter 77: The Skeletal War Horse!

---

Vanguard's Aggression. The name itself suggested the skill's ability to risk the caster himself to protect the others!

"With this skill, the team's survival rate will increase tremendously!" Hundred Shots got excited. He was in fact, part of the team. If there was anything that could be done to improve the team's efficiency, he would definitely be happy for it!

"But, the noob tank is more likely to die!" Little Snow sighed, "Looks like there'll be more work for me again!"

"It is alright, <Shield Wall> can be learned when I reached Level 30. My HP will not be dropping too much when I activate these two skills together!" Zhang Yang said while smiling.

"Hmph! I just hope that's the case!"

Although they already picked up four items from the corpse, as this was Shurian's first death, there were still more items to obtain from him!

[Absolute Defense Ring] (Gray-Silver, Ring)

Vitality: +12

Strength: +8

Equipment: 20 points Defense attribute will be granted for every successful <Block>. The maximum stacked effect is 5. Lasts for 30 seconds.

Level Requirement: 30

“What in the world... How can the Gray-Silver equipment be so powerful?” Fatty Han stared at the ring with his eyes wide open. The Black-Steel and Green-Copper only had random bonus attributes, but Gray-Silver equipment’s special effect was very strong!

“That’s why equipment is the foundation to be a professional player!” The name of the ring itself was assigned for the tank. Zhang Yang took the ring since no one else in the team was suitable to wear it. “But, if I were to be fighting with you, I can take off all my equipment and fight you with only a weapon in my hand!”

“Haha! Looking down at me huh!” Fatty Han said.

[Skeletal Cape] (Gray-Silver, Cape)

Vitality: +10

Strength: +10

Equip effect: Increase 2% critical rate.

Level Requirement: 30

Normally, a Hunter would not be suitable to use pure strength equipment. Zhang Yang gave up his roll and let Drizzler obtain that cape. Unfortunately, even after receiving their battle loot, they did not reach the level requirement to equip it all.

[Treasure Map Piece (II)] (Gray-Silver)

Use: Put together all 3 parts of the [Treasure Map Piece] and obtain a [Complete Treasure Map].

“Let me have it!” Zhang Yang said, “I have the [Treasure Map Piece] I and III with me, so I can make up a complete treasure map!”

Four of them gave up their rolls and Zhang Yang received the [Treasure Map Piece]. He immediately used the item and a progress bar appeared on the side. Two seconds later, three parts of the [Treasure Map Piece] disappeared and a complete treasure map was formed.



[Gray-Silver Treasure Map]: You have read and research on many maps and finally deciphered the secrets of the treasure map. The treasure is located in the Valley of Lost Souls.

After opening the treasure map, an old parchment appeared. There was an “X” marked on the top right of the map and certainly, it was where the treasure would be located at.

“I wonder what’s inside the treasure chest.” As always, Drizzler loved anything related to treasure chest.

Zhang Yang casually traded the treasure map to Drizzler and said, “If you want to know, dig it out yourself!” Sometimes players could get good stuff from the treasure chest or sometimes get struck by a trap filled with monsters or status effects.

“Okay, okay!” Drizzler hurriedly took over the treasure map. She was so happy that she smiled from ear to ear.

“Little Yang, you are being biased! But, this is for the growth of [Loli](#), I like it!” Fatty Han accidentally had a slip of the tongue.

“Rot in hell Fatty!”

Fatty Han had to be beaten up so that he could finally be well disciplined.

“That’s all?” Zhang Yang asked when he saw Drizzler stopped opening the corpse.

“That’s all!” Drizzler shook her head.

“That’s not right. The corpse was supposed to disappear after everything have been looted. You must have missed something!” Zhang Yang crouched down and started to touch under the Boss’ body.

The expression on Zhang Yang’s face changed suddenly.

“What happened?” The party asked.

“I think... We hit the jackpot!” Zhang Yang could hardly contain his excitement and revealed what was on his hand. At the same time, a Roll-the-Dice window popped up on everyone’s interface.

[The Leash of Skeletal War Horse] (Mount)

Use: Teach you to summon the Skeletal War Horse.

Level Requirement: 30

Item bound after used.

It actually dropped a mount!

Five of them looked at each other. After some silence, they all cheered loudly.

That Boss' Mount was something extremely rare, and everyone would wish to have it! Everyone knew that the drop rate of the mount was less than 1 out of a million. Although they were cheering for the item to drop, none of them actually thought that the mount would appear!

"1 out of a million, and yet here it is! What unbelievable luck!" Zhang Yang murmured.

"What a fortune!" Fatty Han's eyes were already blinded.

They were silent all of a sudden. Because of the rarity of the mount, everyone wanted it so bad but no one dared to ask the others to give up the mount for themselves.

Zhang Yang gathered his thoughts and said, "The mount is rare and I understand that everyone wishes to have it. Thus, no one is allowed to pass their roll. Everyone roll the dice and the mount belongs to whoever rolls the highest number! We shall do this fair and square! We are a team! I know that the drop rate of this special mount is low, but as long as we are still a team, we can still take on other bosses! Who knows? By that time, we can even ride dragons, phoenixes or even tigers!"

“Yes! We are a team!”

Everyone came to a realization that so long the squad was strong enough, they would still have the chance to get the rare items!

Five of them rolled the dice respectively.

Little Snow, 97 Points.

Drizzler, 12 Points.

Hundred Shots, 58 Points.

Fatty Han, 44 Points.

Zhang Yang, 100 Points!

“Crap! Little Yang! You used up all your luck in this life for this roll!” Fatty Han drooled as he said.

Zhang Yang smiled. He did not care much about the mount since Level 100 players could get a Flying Mount. By then, who would still ride a regular mount then?

He did say that the mount belonged to whoever rolled the highest number and was not allowed to transfer the mount to anyone else. Therefore, he just accepted the mount as it was better not to break

his own rules.

If the rest of the party knew what Zhang Yang was thinking then, they would perhaps just, in a simpler manner, f\*ck him inside out.

Damn, you should have just given it up if you did not want it!

The Boss's corpse disappeared immediately and five of them completed the adventure with a happy ending.

“Little Yang, you must hurry up and get to Level 30 so that you can bring me around the Capital for at least ten rounds to show off!” said Fatty Han as he wiped off the tears and snorted.

Zhang Yang consoled him and said, “Perhaps the boss will drop the mount again next time!”

“In your dreams!” This time, four of them booed Zhang Yang together. Did he really think that it was so easy to drop an extraordinary mount?

Five of them tore the [Teleportation Scroll] simultaneously and returned to White Jade Castle. They then proceeded to the Plains Cloud Mountain to beat Martyr Unduin.

Zhang Yang and the girls had killed Martyr Unduin before using the terrain bug, but they kept it as secret from the others. Why would they share their method to the others when they could quietly kill him off and claim the goods for themselves?

The huge rock that was the Achilles Heel of Martyr Unduin was still there. No matter how powerful Unduin was, he could not escape his fate. The five of them worked together and killed Unduin under ten minutes.

However, since this was the second time Unduin was defeated, the drops were much lesser than before. The skill book <Eagle Eye> that Drizzler and Fatty Han were so envious of did not appear. That skill book drop rate was slightly higher than [The Leash of Skeletal War Horse], but it still did not appear here!

Zhang Yang's luck was good and he obtained a Gray-Silver glove.

[Fist of Penitence] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +24

Strength: +12

Dexterity: +4

Level Requirement: 20

Zhang Yang equipped the glove and his basic attributes rose.

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 23

HP: 2,140

Vitality: 127

Dexterity: 48

Defense: 76

Luck: 4

Melee Damage: 362—384

Critical Rate: 11%

Lucky Strike: 0.4%

By the time everyone was done, it was almost 7:00pm! Zhang Yang hurriedly disbanded the party and asked everyone to have their dinner and to rest. After a short discussion, Zhang Yang

announced in the guild channel: There will be a Hardcore Mode of Bangar Crypt raid at 9:00 PM. As usual, whoever has the higher contribution points in the guild will have the priority to join in the raid.

After making the announcement, he decided to disconnect from the game.

During a boss fight, the most stressful player would have to be the tank as he was not allowed to be careless. In addition, Zhang Yang needed to command the team and it was even more tiring.

“I should find someone who can command and lead the team next time. Otherwise, I will be exhausted while doing both the tank and commanding roles.” Zhang Yang finished his lunchbox and laid on the sofa. He put his feet on the coffee table and happily enjoyed his hot tea.

Zhang Yang disliked smoking but he really loved drinking tea. Because of this, Fatty Han said that Zhang Yang behaved like an old man.

In his previous life, famous commanders could be found in strong guilds. Presumably, they must be trained since the low levels and must be the key players of the guilds. Thus, it made it even harder to coax them over to join Zhang Yang’s side.

It seemed that Zhang Yang needed to train a commander of his own.



Among the four teammates in the squad, Drizzler was not suitable to be a commander as she was not mindful and impatient. Zhang Yang ignored considering Little Snow as a commander because being a healer was much harder as a tank; it would be much of a burden for her to be a commander. As for Fatty Han, although he had a lot of improvement, he did not have the talent to lead a team. Perhaps he could lead the team for the siege wars, but in a dungeon raid, a commander must have a keen sense of observation, be able to calculate, motivate the teammates and be able to dispense the rewards and punishments fairly. Unfortunately, Fatty Han had none of that!

Hundred Shots? He was not passionate enough. If he were to lead the team, the team would be spiritless. Even if he led the team and successfully killed the bosses but the team would just fall apart after a few rounds.

It was not easy!

Zhang Yang rested for a while and he logged in at 9:00 PM. It was the same as yesterday; Zhang Yang led a team and Little Snow led another team. However, Little Snow and her teammates were unwilling to compete with Zhang Yang this round.

By combining their AoE skill damage, Drizzler, Fatty Han, and Hundred Shots were stronger than Zhang Yang! However, which tank could be as strong as Zhang Yang to perform the One Straight Flush method?

In this dungeon raid, Zhang Yang carefully observed his teammates' performances. He sent private messages with

compliments to the few who performed well. They were excited after having a conversation with Zhang Yang.

Who was Zhang Yang? He was a powerful man who had the first clear for the Hardcore Mode Dungeon Raids three times continuously. Who would not be happy after being complimented by such a powerful person?

Zhang Yang noticed a phenomenon that happened in the guild. He realized that the levelling speed of the guild members were fine. Normally, a player between Level 11 to Level 20 would require about one to two days to gain a level, but a few people actually gained two levels since yesterday. They were obviously interested in Marzerway's Lair.

Besides, it was good since the guild's EXP has increased to 29%.

Loli – Japanese origin noun to describe an underage and petite girl.

# Chapter 78: Alliance Proposal

---

Early the next day, Zhang Yang practiced his usual boxing and long-distance running. All in all, it took slightly over an hour. He logged on to the game after eating breakfast.

First, Zhang Yang went through the Front and Main Wing Hardcore Mode dungeon raids with Drizzler and the others. After dismissing the team, Zhang Yang found a few news waiting for him when he returned to the Capital.

The Dominators, Sky High and Crimson Rage cleared the Marzerway's Lair Hard Mode this morning. The Main Wing Hardcore Mode is now defeated, keep the momentum going with the victories and attack the next wing!

Fatty Han was in a panic when he read the message and said, "Little Yang, we have to be quick. Otherwise, the First Clear Achievement of the dungeon raids will belong to others!"

"Don't be so anxious. Only the five of us are above Level 20. Look at the levels of those guys from The Dominators, Sky High and Crimson Rage. The top five players are only at most, Level 17!" Zhang Yang smiled and he was not anxious at all.

The Dominators, Sky High and Crimson Rage were really strong guilds, as evidenced by them clearing the Marzerway's Lair Hard Mode without using any [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. Their capabilities were certainly impressive! However, they still needed the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to clear the Marzerway's Lair

## Hardcore Mode!

In Zhang Yang's past life, it had been made certain as many teams had been wiped out, without the aid of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]!

According to the '5-years game review' article, all the strong guilds were unable to clear the Marzerway's Lair Hardcore Mode despite their best efforts. There were no further development for 17 days before the recipe of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] was found. [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] had then started a burst of activity in the market. After a day, a party who called themselves "The Glory", cleared the Marzerway's Lair Hardcore Mode!

The Glory was in Violet Star City, one of the main cities of China server. Each main city contained their respective set of area maps exclusively for those below Level 50, players of different cities would not interact with each other until then. Thus, Zhang Yang was not afraid of inadvertently altering the timeline via another butterfly effect in the other seven main cities of China region.

White Jade Castle was the only thing he needed to worry about because the progress of the game might be further affected due to his presence. He was worried that the second recipe of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] would appear earlier in the White Jade Castle!

If this is really happening, then the future he knew and the future that awaited him would be different!

“Noob tanker, if there is nothing else, I’m going to shop with my cousin!” Drizzler spoke in the party channel.

Zhang Yang smiled and replied, “Be careful, do not leave behind the one who has no sense of direction.”

Little Snow, annoyed by Zhang Yang, grit her teeth and the both of them disconnected from the game together.

Hundred Shots mentioned that he had spent too much time on the game for the last two days, so he also quickly disconnected from the game to spend some time with his wife and son. However, Fatty Han remained connected. Rather, he simply fired a quib at Zhang Yang before heading to the Massage Parlor for chicks.

“Hoes before bros...” Zhang Yang groaned, shaking his head while heading to the Auction House by himself.

Zhang Yang’s storage space was already full of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. Originally, he thought of ceasing on his stocking up and initiating sales of the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] when more players had turned Level 20, and were headed for Marzerway’s Lair Dungeon like how it was right now. He could have started saving up for his first set of equipment with a synergized cycle of buying ingredients, synthesizing, and then selling [Beginning Anti-Shadow Potion.]

Those plans did not account for him suddenly becoming Guild Master of the Lone Desert Smoke. Thus, he also gained the authority to manage the guild’s storage!

In ‘God’s Miracle’, the system would provide a collective inventory of 1000 slots when a guild was established. This was the guild’s storage. To expand the guild’s storage, a 1000 Gold coins was needed for second inventory, another ten times that amount for a third, yet another ten times of that for a fourth, and so on. The cost would consecutively snowball into one million Gold coins for the final upgrade. However, each guild could only have ten storage inventories at most.

The Lone Desert Smoke’s storage was in a mess and it was full of trash like health recovering snacks, fish, tiger tooth, ores and etc! Zhang Yang shook his head, bemusedly ordering the guild to remove the trash.

Ten minutes later, Zhang Yang had amended the guild’s storage management authority, Members had the authority to “Check”; Officers had the authority to “Check” and “Store” while the Vice Guild Master had the full authority to “Check”, “Store” and “Draw Out”.

In the future, the storages were only allowed to store equipment, consumable, gemstones and other valuable items. Guild members were allowed to buy the items using the guild’s contribution point. The level of wealth in a guild’s storage correlated to the capability of a guild, as both cause, and effect. The former was due to guild members being motivated when they see a storage full of valuable items!

Zhang Yang spent another 1000 gold coins for the second storage inventory and set the authority in a way that no one but the Guild

Master alone could even “Check” the storage.

With the extra 1000 slots in a storage, certainly, Zhang Yang could grab all the [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower] he wanted! The prices of these two herbs were dropping on last two days, as Zhang Yang’s purchases halted when his storage reached its limit. The prices of these two herbs would undoubtedly increase again as he resumes his bulk purchasing.

The majority of the Alchemy profession players believed that it was a prospective profiteer’s attempt to manipulate the market, so they decided not to buy any [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower] even though the prices kept on increasing. Because of this, Zhang Yang easily stocked up on [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower] without any competition. His materials secured, he went on to produce potions en masse, one after another.

After emptying the auction house of all the [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flower], Zhang Yang opened up the “Search” interface in auction house to check on the Alchemy and Smithing recipes.

On the Alchemy side, no recipes other than beginner leveled ones were on sale. There were, however, a few [Level 2 Whetstone] recipes and the prices ranged from 100 – 300 gold coins.

This [Level 2 Whetstone] recipe drop rate was high. Even though the price of 100 gold coins was considered rather high, Zhang Yang had the cash to spare, so without wasting time, he went ahead and bought the cheapest [Level 2 Whetstone] recipe. It arrived in his mailbox and he quickly learned the recipe.

[Level 2 Whetstone] (Consumable)

Use: Sharpens a weapon and increases damage by 20 points.

Although the damage increase wasn't significant, it was still better than nothing. More importantly, this was the most cost-saving method of advancing the Smithing mastery from Amateur to Advanced.

Forming a [Level 2 Whetstone] required two [Green Copper Bars], so Zhang Yang looked at the price in the Auction House and he contacted Mining Specialist via private messaging, "Do you have time?"

After a while, Mining Specialist replied, "You! I haven't heard from you for a few days now! I had believed that I have lost you to the other sellers. I would never have thought that you would be one of the celebrities in the First Clear Dungeon Raid Ranking!"

Zhang Yang said, "Nah, I've been busy with dungeon raids. I had no time to practice Smithing! I need a lot of [Green Copper Bar]s, do you have the stock?"

"Hmph, do not scorn a professional miner!" Professional Miner immediately replied and asked, "How many do you need?"



Two [Green Copper Bar]s were required to cast a whetstone and 1000 points of mastery required 2000 Green Copper Bars, so Zhang Yang wanted 100 stacks of Green Copper Bar. Zhang Yang replied, “Um, 100 stacks first!”

“Sheesh!” Professional Miner sent him a message with many ellipses and exclamation marks. After a while, Professional Miner said, “Hmph, you are always making things hard for me. 100 stacks of [Green Copper Bar]s... did you think they are as common as [Iron Bar]s? [Green Copper Bar] is a Level 2 Ore, besides, it does not have many spawn points and the southern area is full of monsters.”

“Okay, fine. Tell me directly, how many stacks you can give?”

“Hmph, it is a good thing that you came to me. If you went to someone else, it wouldn’t be half bad if they could provide you one to two stacks.”

“Stop the bullshit with the self-flattery. How many stacks do you actually have?”

“Seven stacks!”

It was not enough at all! Zhang Yang said anyway, “Okay, mail them to me! What is the cost per stack?”

“Ha ha, we have been trading for a while now and I’ll be upfront with you. How about 2 gold coins per stack?”

It was slightly cheaper than those selling in the auction house! Zhang Yang replied “Deal” and ended the conversation.

Although he needed to compete with Floating Up, the demand of [Earthen Round Shield] was still high. But the price has not increased at all. Zhang Yang tried to place an entry of the [Earthen Round Shield] with an opening price of 1000 gold coins, but after bidding for a day, 600 gold coins was as high as it went, according to the other entries.

When Zhang Yang had led the team to Bangar Crypt Hardcore Mode during the last two days, he had obtained five [Refine Copper Bars]. Some [Refined Copper Bar]s from Fatty Han’s team were also passed to him, so he had eleven [Refined Copper Bar]s in total! Zhang Yang sold the [Refined Copper Bar]s in the auction house and he took 1000 gold coins to store in guild’s storage as repair allowances for tanks and healers.

When Zhang Yang was about to go grind monsters for some experience points as a means to burn time before logging out for lunch, he received a friend request.

It was requested by The Dominators’ guild master, Humbly Gentleman.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and selected “Accept”.

“Ha ha, we intended to invite you to join my guild for about two days ago but we never thought that Lone Desert Smoke would have

invited you first!” This time Humbly Gentleman did not send private message to Zhang Yang but spoke aloud via voice chat, “I am not trying to slander Lone Desert Smoke but they are just a second-rate guild. They will hold you back!”

Zhang Yang smiled and replied, “Which guilds did not start as second-rates?”

The same would have surely applied to The Dominators as well.

Humbly Gentleman laughed and said, “Originally, I had hoped to be able to convince you to give up on Lone Desert Smoke and join The Dominators, but it looks like there’s no chance of that happening now! Luckily, this was not the main purpose of me contacting you today. Otherwise, I would be in quite an embarrassing situation now!”

“Oh. Guild master Humbly Gentlemen, making any wagers again then?” Zhang Yang asked excitedly.

Humbly Gentleman could not help it, a lump that had never really went away reformed in his throat when he recalled losing 20,000 gold coins to Zhang Yang from the bad bet. It had left him in a slump for days! Although every player who turned Level 20 could unlock the gold coins exchange service, as long as the players had the money, they would never be in fear of experiencing gold coin shortages. However, it was not easy for a normal player to waste about 160,000 dollars in exchange of 20,000 gold coins in-game currency!

Although The Dominators was a sponsored guild and it was impossible for them to invest something with no return. Thus, these 20,000 Gold coins was paid by Humbly Gentlemen on his own so it was really made him miserable!

“It’s not anything like that” Humble Gentlemen forced a little smile and said, “We had an idea after trying the Marzerway's Lair Hardcore mode!”

“Oh?”

“Guild master Zhan Yu, I roughly understand the situation in your guild. There are only five people at or above Level 20 in your guild and at least three days are needed to make up a team of 20 members, each of them being Level 20 at least! In addition of that, a lot of equipment are also needed for the members before they are qualified to explore the Marzerway's Lair Hardcore mode!”

“With that said, do you have any good proposal?”

“He he, I did think of one!” Humbly Gentleman paused for a brief second and said, “The capabilities of the five of you are immense and I can gather another 10 guild members, fully equipped, who will be able to provide similar ability to the five of u. Isn’t it better if we work together to clear the Marzerway's Lair Hardcore Mode?”

Humbly Gentlemen was greatly unnerved as Sky High and Crimson Rage performed very well during the first clearance of Main Wing Hardcore Mode. Sky High and Crimson Rage were now

in the fifth stage of Marzerway's Lair Hardcore mode but The Dominators were still stuck in the third stage of Marzerway's Lair Hardcore mode! If The Dominators continued being the way they are without searching for other solutions then they will surely lose the First Clear Achievement of Marzerway's Lair Hardcore mode!

Humbly Gentlemen had given it deep thought at length, and he firmly believed that only Zhang Yang and his team would be able to help The Dominators win the First Clear Achievement Marzerway's Lair Hardcore mode! Besides, he also knew that Zhan Yu was shorthanded for Marzerway's Lair Hardcore mode, and Humbly Gentlemen really needed a top professional player. With this combination, all of them will definitely be in a win-win situation!

## Chapter 79: A Guest From Far Away

---

Zhang Yang thought for a while and asked, “To address the elephant in the room, if we killed Marzerway together, which guild name would be used for first clearance announcement?”

“Of course it is us, The Dominators!” Humbly Gentlemen took it for granted and said dismissively, “But, surely, you will be rewarded handsomely, you have my word!”

How much could they possibly offer? Be it 10,000 or even 80,000 gold coins it won't suffice! This is because a First Clear Achievement was particularly important to increase the reputation of a guild and any measly amount of gold would not be equal to it!

Zhang Yang smiled and replied, “I am sorry and we are very much interested in the First Clear Achievement as well!”

The reputation of the Lone Desert Smoke had shot up in the China server after they cleared the two Hardcore mode dungeon raids consecutively. Besides, the requests from others to join their guild had been pouring in these two days. If it were not for Zhang Yang; s insistence on building the guild with elites, the maximum number of the members permitted in a beginner-rate guild would have been fully occupied!

To create a strong guild, Zhang Yang would need to spread his name across the server so there was no way he would allow The Dominators to use their name instead of his Lone Desert Smoke name! On the other hand, Zhang Yang had at least a 90% guarantee

of being the first to clear the Main Wing Hardcore Mode, so why should Zhang Yang work with The Dominators?

Humbly Gentlemen was shocked beyond measure, never even considering the fact that Zhang Yang would refuse his win-win situation proposal so blatantly, without hesitation!

Humbly Gentlemen, having been guild master of The Dominators for many years in past games, his members amounted to the tens of thousands! Humbly Gentlemen was very ambitious in 'God's Miracle' and he wanted to build a huge "The Dominators" alliance. He also wanted to seize the eight main cities of the China server and eventually dominate the whole of the China server and have everyone patronage The Dominators and The Dominators only!

From the ironically named Humbly Gentlemen's point of view, he was used to giving orders very often and only the China server's top guild masters like Sky High, Crimson Rage, The Glory and Blue Sea were qualified to stand on equal ground as him. Besides, it was Zhang Yang's privilege for Humbly Gentlemen to take the initiative to contact him. Thus, Zhang Yang should have been in awe and ready to cooperate out of the honour of being addressed by one such as him.

Humbly Gentlemen could not stop the unhappiness from rising. However, he did his best and said as diplomatically as possible, "Guild master Zhan Yu, you should have a clear estimation of yourself. Otherwise, you will get yourself into trouble!"

Zhang Yang laughed and thought in his mind, that Humbly

Gentlemen was the one who requested for an alliance and when he was refused, he dared impugn on others? Zhang Yang smiled and said, “People die, whether they are courageous or cowardly, and life is short, we should have dreams and goals!”

“Ha ha ha!” Humbly Gentlemen laughed hollowly, “Then, Guild master Zhan Yu, I hope all your wishes come true!”

After that, he turned off his voice chat and ended the conversation with Zhang Yang.

Since Zhang Yang refused Humbly Gentlemen proposal, perhaps Humbly Gentlemen would be plotting something on him in the future! In his previous life, Clear Water had struggled with second-rate and third-rate guilds and he had no opportunities of dealing with strong guild like The Dominators. Who would have thought that the guild master of the highly renowned guild, The Dominators had such a personality!

He was not afraid of anyone as he had always been a loner previously and now he had the Lone Desert Smoke as his backup. There were at least five thousand members in his guild and they could definitely hold their own if The Dominators really challenged them! The core investors of The Dominators had not yet fully immersed themselves into this game, as long as Zhang Yang had enough time, he would not fear even the full power The Dominators that he had once witnessed in his previous life.

The best way to respond to the scorn from Humbly Gentlemen was to get the First Clear Achievement Main Wing Hardcore mode and prove him wrong to underestimate Lone Desert Smoke!



However, the Lone Desert Smoke was not a professional guild, other than the highly active grinders, the rest of the members' level were just normal. That was a problem, as there would be a 50-man dungeon raids in the future and to level these teammates appropriately would take at least a month, so they would actually miss the chances to get the First Clear Achievement!

Still, Zhang Yang believed that as long as he got the First Main Wing Hardcore Mode Clearance, it would increase the passion of the members in terms of training as well. Thus, he would not need to worry about getting enough high-level players on time!

...

Half an hour later, Mining Specialist sent the [Green Copper Bars] and Zhang Yang paid upon delivery. Zhang Yang proceeded to the Blacksmith Shop to smith [Level 2 Whetstone]. He could actually increase his Smithing mastery and the [Level 2 Whetstone] also had its own uses.

He sold all the [Level 1 Whetstones] from his inventory to the NPC at the cheapest price. He had no choice as that was the only cost-saving method to increase his Smithing mastery to Amateur level. Even if he sold to the others with the lowest price, not many players would be willing to buy as most of the Smithing players would produce and sell the [Level 1 Whetstones] on their own.

“Guild master, there is a player from Blood Moon City, he had camp in our city and announced that he would defeat all the

professional players in our city. He is very arrogant!” Zhang Yang received a private message.

“Eh?” Zhang Yang could not help but have his curiosity piqued, wondering how any player could have been so free to come all the way from Blood Moon City to White Jade Castle.

The China region was like an octagonal map, the eight main cities were distributed on every edge of the map and every main city had its own individual area. Towards the center was the above Level 50 training area and at the very core of the China region, were the higher the leveled areas of the map.

Geographically, the main cities closest to the White Jade Castle were Tranquil Wind City and Blood Moon City, but things were never that simple! This was because if the players wanted to travel between main cities, they needed leave their own assigned city’s area then pass through the dangerous Level 50 training area to reach another main city!

Indeed, every main city had their own teleportation portals for players to teleport to other seven main cities but it could only be used by Level 50 players and above! Zhang Yang could not fathom the very existence of a Level 50 player at this stage of the game! As evidenced by his memory, this was only achieved almost half a year from now, which means that the player who came to set up the arena, had to have passed through the dangerous and high leveled training areas of the map in order to arrive at White Jade Castle!

Who in the world has time for that?

All that time could have been used for training and clearing dungeons!

“What is the player’s name?” Zhang Yang inquired.

“...Ghostly Leaf!”

Ghostly Leaf! Zhang Yang eyes widened, as Ghostly Leaf had been a famous player in his previous life. He was also called “The Ghost Killer”, his was a Phantom Assassin and it was rumoured that he had inherited “Ghost Blood” gave him an edge at assassination! He was ranked seventh in the Top 10 Ranking for Thieves’ in the China server. Besides, he was the top Thief in the guild Radiance, ‘Bai Wei’s Team’s main force and also a famous S-Class Professional League player!

Zhang Yang found that it was really interesting for this future famous player to come to White Jade Castle and start an uproar.

“Is he strong?” Zhang Yang asked again in the private message.

“En, he is very strong! He already won 17 times continuously in the battle arena. Besides, some of his opponents are key players from Sky High and The Dominators!”

Battling was not allowed in the main city but there was a battle arena to satisfy the players who loved to battle. The battle arena built in imitation of the ancient Roman Coliseum, and there were

two battle modes, “Brawl” and “Death match”.

**Brawl:** The system will stop the battling when the results are shown and any negative effects sustained by the participants of the duel would be removed.

**Death Match:** The match ends with one of the players’ death. The dead player would still drop a level but the winner will not be afflicted with the red title penalty.

Besides the personal storage and auction house, the battle arena was one of the most popular areas in the main city. This was because battle arena could be used to battle and also created the platform for wagers that included gold coins, equipment, potions and etc. All of these were protected by the system, as long as everyone chipped in before the battle, the system would automatically lock the “Bets” and automatically distributed the rewards after the results were shown. Thus, no scams ever occurred!

Zhang Yang was in the A-Class Professional League in his previous life and certainly, he had no opportunities to battle with Ghostly Leaf. This was a golden opportunity! Without further ado, he rushed to the northeast direction to the battle arena. Since Ghostly Leaf came to his city, he should at least give Ghostly Leaf a good welcome and grab this learning opportunity!

When he reached the battle arena, he realized that it was already crowded with people. The air was thick with the murmur of various discussions.

“Damn, which room is that guy in? I want to f\*ck him back off Blood Moon City! He dares to scorn us!”

“That fellow is really strong! He already defeated Piggy Third Brother!”

“Piggy Third Brother is not a professional player. Our Brother Piglet, Brother Brute Bull and Brother Dragon from The Dominators are only professional players in name. That fellow just defeated a few low-leveled noob players, how can he be considered strong?”

“Damn you, who dared humiliate our Piggy Third Brother?”

“Stop arguing, whoever who has the guts, go ahead destroy Ghostly Leaf! Damn it, you guys just add more shame to White Jade Castle, letting a foreigner kill so many of our people!”

“What's the situation now? Who is battling?”

“9 Head Hydra from Sky High!”

“...”

Battle arena could hold any amount of players during the battle. Whenever a battle match was added, the system would provide a new competition space, called the anonymous' room. So, the

players would not need to worry about queuing up for participation! Players could also choose to view the matches and it was easy as long as they knew the “Room” number they wanted to view, then they could view all aspects of the battle match as an omniscient spectator. It was provided in public rooms while password-locked rooms, naturally provided entry only if you knew the password.

Players who just wanted to view the battle matches did not even have to come physically to the arena. They could just open up the Control interface and select the “Battle Arena” option and key in or select the “Room” number to view the battle match via live feed. But Zhang Yang wanted to battle and learn what he can from the experience, so he had rushed over to battle arena.

Zhang Yang opened up the “Battle Arena” option, keyed in “Ghostly Leaf” in the search bar and the results were shown: Room number 238, Ghostly Leaf versus 9 Head Hydra (Brawl Mode). He quickly entered the room and sat on the virtual battle arena stage to view the battle match.

In the battle arena, there was an Elf male player constantly moving like a shadow, swarming and attacking a Dwarf male player who used a shield. The Elf player’s footwork and maneuvers were really fast like the wind itself. He attacked and stepped back in a flash. He wielded dual daggers, continuously performing hits and runs on the back of the Dwarf player as the latter whirled about desperately, causing new damage value numbers to appear even before the previous ones had vanished.

Zhang Yang did not need to see the remaining HP of these two

players. He already knew that the Elf player was going to be victorious at the end of the battle! The Dwarf player was not making use of his shield one bit. Furthermore, with the constant backstabbing from the Elf, all the defense that came from the shield had been rendered completely useless!

Both of these players had their names publicly displayed: “Ghostly Leaf, Elf Thief, Level 21, <Radiance>, and “9 Head Hydra, Dwarf Knight, Level 20, <Sky High>”.

# Chapter 80: Queen Of The Shadow Dance

---

Zhang Yang raised an eye brow, intrigued. An unmistakable gleam radiated from the thief's equipment. He noticed that Ghostly Leaf was wearing a complete set of Green-Copper equipment, with at least 3 of them being Thief-class specialized set equipment! Zhang Yang concluded that Ghostly Leaf's guild, Radiance, was much stronger than Sky High or even The Dominators. He believed this due to the equipment that Ghostly Leaf was wearing. Typically, since the equipment could only be obtained from raiding the Hard mode of Marzerway's Lair, this could only mean that Ghostly Leaf had been part of a group that has already performed the raid several hours ahead or even 1 day before the other two guilds.

The Dominators themselves had only just successfully raided Hard mode today! Radiance must have already, by all means, raided the Lair yesterday! Another testimony to their power was this one member of theirs to run from Crimson Moon City over to White Jade Castle, on foot. It was a journey that would have taken at least an entire day and night, and that was a rather generous estimate! Till now, the actual duration of such a journey was still unclear; since no one had ever tested it out.

This was why it was so strange. Ghostly Leaf was only level 21. For him to travel over a level 30 hunting ground, definitely triggering monsters' aggro, let alone the level 50 grounds with even higher radius of triggering...how did he manage to travel all the way from city to city in such a short amount of time?

It was truly puzzling indeed...unless...



## Destination Teleportation Scroll!

It was different compared to regular [Teleportation Scroll]s since a [Destination Teleportation Scroll] can teleport a player to a specific city instead of the nearest one! However, this little item is extremely rare! There was the Specialized Teleportation Port that allows only level 50 players or higher to travel across any major city, limited to only the specific server!

However, a [Destination Teleportation Scroll] allows a player to teleport to all 64 main cities of all 8 major servers!

F\*ck! What a waste of precious treasure! This was once an important key in winning a World War. A bunch of Thief players would use this item to sneak themselves into the enemy main city and built a Teleportation Port for their own army in the cover of stealth! An invisible Trojan Horse!

Just when Zhang Yang sigh in disappointment, Ghostly Leaf had successfully killed 9 Head Hydra. Based on the common player's playstyle, a Thief, especially Phantom Assassins, had always been the number 1 bane of Guardian or Defender characters. Phantom Assassins had a dagger specialization skill; and out of 10, 9 Phantom Assassin would equip dual daggers since they had short attack intervals and a more consistent damage output within the damage range (Maximum and Minimum damage as seen in weapon attack stat). There was a chance that a bandit class attack could not penetrate the shield defense.

However Ghostly Leaf was very efficient in moving his position in battle. He managed stick to the back of the Knight throughout the battle and had unleashed his attacks there! He had ignored the shield defense effect and dealt high damage even with just his normal attacks; his skills were even more terrifying to look at!

The battle was over when Hydra surrendered willingly. Everyone, including the audience were moved out of the battle room and back to their places of origin.

“Hur hur! Looks like this is all White Jade Castle has to offer huh! Come on, entertain me now! I want professional players! Not some beginners! I want to fight Zhan Yu! I heard that guy is f\*cking strong! He was able to take on 3 dungeon’s First Clear Achievement in one shot! Where are you! Come and fight me!” Ghostly Leaf started to taunt provocatively in the local channel.

Everyone started to respond venomously to his provocation, throwing insults and curses back at him.

“Don’t think that you’re almighty now when you’ve only just beaten a few of us! There are many more professional players here in White Jade Castle!”

“There’s no need for Zhan Yu to come out! I can defeat you with just one finger!”

“The big mouth guy is in room 213!”

“Which guild has lost their mad dog! Quickly make announcements to help them reclaim it back!”

“Stupid dog! Go back to your Crimson Moon City and bark there!”

“...”

The channel was continuously filled with more insults and curse words. The chat log was quickly being overwritten every split second!

Zhang Yang could no longer hold it in. He sent a battle request to Ghostly Leaf but instead of him responding, a system message appeared.

‘Request failed. The player that you have request has accepted another battle request from another player!’

Zhang Yang raised his head to read the huge announcement board on the battle arena. A quick message appeared reading: Room 89 Ghostly Leaf Versus Frost Night (Deathmatch). Battle starts after 5 minutes.

The 5 minutes’ preparation time was to allow other spectator to place their bets and wagers. Typical bets were only between players themselves. However, whenever a top-class players battles, the system itself will host and allow players to place their bets and wagers.

In the future when the Professional League starts, almost all battle bets were hosted by the system.

Huh. Frost...Night!?

Zhang Yang heart sunk! He never thought that he would witness another player who was bound to be famous in the future!

Popularity-wise, Frost Night was even more famous than Ghostly Leaf! She was the top in the China server top 10 Thieves! Players called her “Queen of the Shadow Dance”, traceless, undetectable, and always in the shadows, lurking in the dark. You would never know when she appears! You would never know when she would strike! People who were killed by her did not even see her coming!

This Queen had always been a loner. She had never joined guilds nor participated in any League competition yet she would dominate the entirety of China and had consistently ranked at the top of the Thieves list.

This fight, Frost Night Versus Ghostly Leaf is an extraordinary event! The heat and passion of the audience could rival the even chaos of Mars colliding with Earth!

Zhang Yang raised his eyebrows at the turn of events, brushing his chin like an old bearded man, lost in thought. Since she never joined any guild, did he have a chance of recruiting her?

Since the appearance Ghostly Leaf's latest challenger, everyone had started to question her origin, her strength. However, since she was a "member" of the White Jade Castle, the crowd naturally cheered for her.

As an audience, Zhang Yang could enter the arena before the fighters could. He quickly sat down and wait for the clash to begin.

5 minutes passed and the two players appeared at the battle field entrance.

Kang Kang Kang!

The chains of the door rang and the cage was closed behind them, sealing all possible means of escape!

This was a Deathmatch! The match could only be over when one player dies!

Frost Night, Female Elf, Level 21 Bandit.

Her face was covered in a thick black cloth. Zhang Yang could not see how she looked like but what he could see was her devilish body. That slim waist, thick butt, those long and beautiful legs, and those bombs on her chest that only rivaled by Little Snow!

Both of the contenders were at the same level but Frost Night's equipment was inferior to that of Ghostly Leaf's. She was wearing a mixture of level 10 Green-Copper equipment and level 20 Black-

Steel equipment. Stats-wise, she could not possibly equal to Ghostly Leaf and his complete level 20 Green-Copper equipment set!

How could the future Queen of Shadow Dance possibly win this match with that get-up?

Zhang Yang watched eagerly.

Battle starts in 19, 19, 17...

5,4,3,2,1,0!

Poof!

Both of them simultaneously entered stealth mode, vanishing from the field. The entire battle arena was empty and quiet like a graveyard. Nothing but the sound of sand being blown by the wind remained.

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds...

1 minute, 2 minutes, 3 minutes...

As the clock ticked away, there were still no traces of either of them anywhere. If not for the Deathmatch rule hanging on the announcement board, they could have left the arena for a cup of tea and the players would not even notice! Some of the spectators

had started to complain among each other. The good thing was that nobody can post or talk in the local public channel and disrupt the atmosphere.

While everyone else was busy complaining among each other, Zhang Yang had his eyes wide open. Even though he could not see anything in the field, he knew perfectly well that the fight was going on intensely. Everyone knew that whenever a Thief breaks out from his stealth mode, it will be his chance to deal a great burst damage. But when the match was between two Thieves, the tension was even greater than an airplane cable! Whoever gets the first chance to capitalize on the moment to forcefully break the other person's stealth, they would have the leading advantage while the other would greatly suffer or perhaps even die instantly.

Poof!

Two figure suddenly appeared out of thin air. Ghostly Leaf was staggering about, he had stars circling around his head! He was stunned! Frost Night, lurking behind him, brandished her daggers, dealing a huge amount of damage!

As expected of the Queen, her abilities in stealth and stealth detection was beyond even Ghostly Leaf's.

Zhang Yang pointed a finger at Ghostly Leaf selecting the interaction menu to check on his status effects.

[Ambush]: Stuns the target for 4 seconds. Can only be activated during <Stealth>, increases combo count by two.

A series of combo attacks had left Ghostly Leaf with roughly two-thirds of his HP, after only 4 seconds of being stunned. He regained control quickly but as soon as he tried to do something, Frost Night quickly reversed the grip of her dagger and jabbed his waist with the other end of the dagger. He was stunned for another time before he could do anything.

[Kidney Shot]: Stuns the target. The stunned duration depends on the combo count. 1 combo count: 2 seconds' stun. 2 combo count: 3 seconds' stun. 3 combo count: 4 seconds' stun. 4 combo count: 5 seconds' stun. 5 combo count: 6 seconds' stun.

Frost Night had accumulated up to 5 combo count and Ghost Leaf had been consequently stunned for another 6 seconds! It was another 6 seconds of knifeplay!

However, her Stamina gauge was used up completely. It was slowly filling up again, at about 10 points a second. There was a 4 seconds 20% attack buff that was called the Berserk state, which occurs whenever a thief breaks out of Stealth mode using an attack, but that effect has since expired. Her attack had returned to normal but since she had a luxurious 6 seconds to do as she pleased, she had already taken away another third of his HP.

Frost Night had full HP but her Stamina was drained; while Ghostly Leaf had only one third of his HP left but his Stamina was yet to be touched! However, taking the differences of their vastly different equipment into consideration, it was not accurate to



determine their HP based on percentage.

Frost Night, HP: 1020/1020

Ghostly Leaf, HP: 680/2030

There was only a 400 HP difference between them.

Once he recovered from the stun, he quickly moved to a safe distance and consumed a healing potion.

“+100!”

At the same time, a smile was slowly forming on his lips as if the tide was already turning to his advantage.

“Haha! It’s my turn now bitch! You’re quite strong since you could damage me to this extent. BUT! VICTORY IS...”

Poof!

Frost Night flicked her right arm and she was suddenly covered in a smoke screen and disappeared from sight.

Bandit’s forceful stealth technique - <Vanish>.

Ghostly Leaf sudden stopped his speech!

He panicked and quick spun around, wildly swinging his dagger, trying to forcefully break her stealth. However, his effort was fruitless! Ghostly Leaf groaned angrily. How could she have learnt the skill <Vanish> at level 21 when that skill could only be unlocked at level 30!? Was she cheating?!

After he went around trying to search for her in vain, he finally stopped moving to use his [Bandage] to heal. However, he still had the DoT poison effect on him. He could not heal because the healing process would be interrupted by the damage!

He waited for another 15 seconds until the DoT effect stopped and began healing himself. He bent down and carefully listened for any possible movement around him.

Poof! Frost Night suddenly appeared behind him just as stars appeared on his head again! The debuff <Ambush> appeared on his head again!

Shush! Shush! Shush!

Frost Night mercilessly slashed him. Her stamina had already completely recovered and she repeated what she did for the first flurry of attacks she had thrown out in the beginning.

With only half his HP left, Ghostly Leaf could not survive after

taking that much damage and crumpled to the ground, defeated without even throwing out a single attack.

With that, the battle between two superstars concluded with Frost Night claiming utter victory!

# Chapter 81: Another Fight

---

As the battle ended, everyone had teleported back to where they were before.

Without a doubt, Frost Night's victory had roused the crowd. Their passion could barely be contained by the very sky itself! Audiences started to fill the public channel with spams of insults and jeers.

“Hmph! Now you know how strong are the players in White Jade Castle! Go back to Crimson Moon City with the tail between your legs!”

“Haha! You couldn't even win a girl! What can you say now huh!”

“Beauty Frost Night! Be my girl!”

“Crawl back to whence you came sucker!”

“...”

Ghostly Leaf was lost in silence for a moment, thoughts running in his head that nobody could have guessed, but after a while, he cried out. “Did you all seriously just send a girl to defend your pride? How could you still call yourselves men!? To think that you would send a girl to defeat me, are you all still babies suckling on yo mama's tits?! ZHAN YU! WHERE THE F\*CK ARE YOU! COME AND FIGHT ME, ZHAN YU! ZHAN YU!”

Seeing that Ghostly Leaf was still unrepentant, everyone doubled the intensity of their insults.

Just as Zhang Yang was about to send a private message to him, Ghostly Leaf had sent a battle request.

‘Ding! Player Ghostly Leaf has sent you a battle request (Deathmatch). Do you accept?’

To send a battle request, both players must be in the battle arena. You could just insert the name of your opponent or the name of the party you are about to challenge to initiate a one to one fight or a party to party fight. This bloody bugger must have just written down his name without confirming his presence in the battle arena beforehand.

Since Zhang Yang now confirmed that Frost Night was in White Jade City, he could contact her any time after the match. He nonchalantly accepted the request.

‘Ding! You have accepted Player Ghostly Leaf’s battle request (Deathmatch). The match will start in 5 minutes. Please make your preparations!’

The battle arena’s announcement board appeared a message saying: Room 89, Zhan Yu VS Ghostly Leaf (Deathmatch). Starts in 5 minutes.

Some people quickly noticed this and made a ruckus about it. The local channel became messy again and soon, almost everyone in the city knew about the match. The current strongest player in White Jade Castle vs the hot-blooded punk from Crimson Moon City.

Unlike Frost Night who was still a stranger to all, Zhan Yu this name had been the center of conversation throughout the entire China server. Everyone wanted to know how could a Guardian obtain 3 consecutive First Clear Achievement. Now that there was a chance to see him personally in action, no one could miss this golden opportunity!

“Hahaha! You finally showed up, scaredy-cat! I will crush you like a bug!” Ghostly Leaf sent a private message.

Zhang Yang was stunned by this unprovoked hostility towards him. Neither of them knows each other to bear any vengeance or enmity...However he came across the answer to his own question. He was the famous tanker who had claimed the 3 First Clear Achievements consecutively and had gained the attention of every player in China server. He must have indirectly earned the ire from the other guilds that wanted to claim that achievement.

This player must be here to cause a commotion. He must have thought that if he could kill Zhang Yang off a few levels, he would be able to buy some time for him to raid the Marzerway's Lair Main Wing!

Hah!

Zhang Yang smiled quietly. To think that Radiance would actually go to the extent of sending their future, and possibly already rising superstar over here to commit their underhanded tactics! However, they must have had a certain level of confidence to not even consider the thought of him losing and getting himself down to level 20 or lower, to the point of being unable to participate in the raid for Marzerway's Lair.

Did they put too much trust on this punk?

Zhang Yang had a sudden thought and sent him a private message. "Wanna bet?"

"Hmph! You think you have what it takes?" Ghostly Leaf replied with another question. He must be in over his head, or perhaps the previous loss had not been fully processed yet.

A fight between 2 Bandits highly depended on luck. Whoever first disabled the opponent's stealth will be the winner. Furthermore, the opponent had the skill <Vanish> at level 21. He lost but he was not content with the unfair circumstances!

Zhang Yang replied. "If you lose, I want the [Destination Teleportation Scroll] that you have!"

"Eh?! How did you know..." He was obviously shocked. He replied after a short delay. "I only have 2 left. I'll need one to go back home! I can only put 1 up for wager!"

“Hahahaha! So you know that you’re gonna lose!” Zhang Yang laughed provokingly.

Ghostly Leaf wavered. He did not dare bet on all the scrolls at hand. He actually was scared of losing!

“Alright fine! 1 scroll will do just fine!” Zhang Yang did not want to push him into a corner. He might call off the bet.

Ghostly Leaf said, “If you lose, I want....I want your shield!”

Hmph! He knew it! He was here to delay Zhang Yang! However... to think that he wanted his shield...How naïve! Did he not know that Zhang Yang was the one who made 80% of all the shields in this city!

Both party then proceed to place their items on the system. Once they had confirmed their selection, the system locked in their items so that nothing could be done to it. The item that were locked cannot be “Used”, “Traded”, “Sold” or “Destroyed”.

...4 minutes till the battle starts. 3 minutes...2 minutes...1 minute!

...5,4,3,2,1,0!

Shush! Zhang Yang could only see a flash of light and he was



teleported into a corner of the battle arena. Behind him was a hallway and leads to outside of the battle arena. Since the pathway was not sealed, he could leave the battle. However, he will be considered to be forfeited the fight and lost his bet. The good thing was that he would not die, and therefore retain his level.

In front of him, he could see Ghostly Leaf on the other side of the arena. They were blocked by an invisible wall. They could only look but not approach each other.

‘Ding! You have 20 seconds left to prepare!’

...

3!

2!

1!

‘Ding! Battle start!’

Kang Kang Kang! The iron bars descended behind them and the invisible wall was removed.

Poof!

Ghostly Leaf immediately disappeared.

Zhang Yang did not panic like the average player, he walked to the front with a smug on his face.

“You bastard! See how I’ll stab you endlessly!” Ghostly Leaf sneaked closer to Zhang Yang, but when he saw the smug look on his face, he felt humiliated. He wanted to just stomp on that pretty boy’s little face as hard as he can!

10 meters, 8 meters, 5 meters...

As he approached Zhang Yang closer and closer, his eyes became more aggressive and vicious. The only thing in his sight was Zhang Yang’s bare back. He raised his dagger, ready to unleash hell onto him.

4 meters, 3 meters, 2 meters. He was almost approaching his attacking range!

But just as when Ghostly Leaf wanted to activate <Ambush>, he saw a bright light flashing in his eyes.

Eh? <Ambush> could not be activated! He was out of the stealth mode!

“-394!”

Ghostly Leaf face turned pale as he saw his HP was hacked away by 20%.

He screamed frantically. “Holy @#!\*@!! What are you!? You’re not a Guardian!”

Even a Berserker with a two-handed weapon could not deal such insanely high damage! But more importantly, how did the opponent broke his invisibility? He was actually behind him all the time. That was a 0% chance of him even detecting his location!

Zhang Yang laughed maniacally. That single strike had generated 27 Rage, enough for him to cast another skill!

“-797!”

<Horizontal Sweep>!

“Mother\*\*\*\*” Ghostly Leaf could not help but to cursed. He could understand if the previous strike a critical chance, but how could he explain the second strike?! That was definitely not a critical hit! He knew that a critical strike is calculated by doubling the damage count after the armor value was deducted from the initial amount! There is no way that a critical hit would be an odd number!

If he could cause close to 800 damage without a critical hit, how much would it be when it actually strikes a critical shot?

Ghostly Leaf withdrew quickly and took a health potion. He

raised his daggers and asked immediately. “What kind of weapon are you using!? And also, what skill did you use to hit me the second time?” He was sure that the first attack was a normal attack since Warrior could not cast any skill without generating any Rage.

Zhang Yang activated <Block> without answering him. He had no interest in talking with the punk.

<Block>! +10 Rage

“-117!” <Block> reflect damage!

“-244!” <Shield Bash>.

Zhang Yang swung his sword and attacked Ghostly Leaf with a normal attack.

“-389!”

With a maximum HP of 2000, Ghostly Leaf was now left with only 200HP. If Zhang Yang just landed another attack, Ghostly Leaf will be sent to meet the Goddess...

“Send my regards to your guild master Sword Of Light!” said Zhang Yang as he brandish his sword and activated <Force Strike>.

“-379!”

Ghostly Leaf was defeated mercilessly!

Ghostly Leaf was not alone, everyone else who witness the battle was left dumbfounded. How could a Guardian deal such high damage!? Is he still considered to be a Guardian? Hell no! It's time to train a new Guardian as well!

Shush! Zhang Yang was teleported out of the battle arena along with his new trophy, a [Destination Teleportation Scroll]!

“Zhan Yu! I'm not done yet! One more! One more battle!” Ghostly Leaf sent a private message.

Zhang Yang shook his head. “You're now only level 20, will your current equipment even work?”

After he was killed by Frost Night and Zhang Yang, Ghostly Leaf had dropped from level 21 to level 19. His currently equipment level requirement was level 20. Even though he was wearing it, the equipment effect was locked out. Wearing it would be purely for aesthetics, attribute-wise he would be as good as being naked!

“Just you wait! I'll be back for you!” Ghostly Leaf teleported back to Crimson Moon City.

“Remember to bring more scrolls yeah!”

Zhang Yang's last words to him was drove the prick in his heart further in. After everything that happen, Ghostly Leaf felt like

Zhang Yang was there only to squeeze out more money from him.

Back to White Jade Castle, the local channel was filled with chatters of Zhang Yang's legendary tale of "Defense of Zhan Yu".

Zhang Yang had defended the city from the enemy! He was naturally dubbed as the White Jade Castle's Hero! The man of the people! The pride of White Jade Castle! His name and reputation sky rocketed throughout the entire city!

The gods were being nice to him. All he ever wanted was to obtain the [Destination Teleportation Scroll] yet what he got was more than he bargained. He actually became the city's hero!

Zhang Yang shook his head and loosened his shoulders. He quickly sent a private message to Frost Night.

"Hello! Can I talk with you for a bit?"

After quite some time, she replied back. "Speak your mind!"

3 words, yet it was filled with the weight of the world. He could actually feel the coldness in her words. Hm...not bad. She chose her name right.

"Ahh...Ah! Right. I'd see that you have some skills. Coincidentally, my party lacks with people of your talents! Would you like to join us in raiding Marzerway's Lair, Hardcore mode the day after tomorrow?"

Zhang Yang had secured his decision to pull in his future-to-be Queen of the Shadow Dance!

## Chapter 82: Decide With A Battle!

---

“No!” Frost Night rejected Zhang Yang’s invitation outrightly.

“But. If you defeat me in a battle, I’ll participate in just one raid!” she added after a little while.

“Ok!” Zhang Yang nodded.

‘Ding! Player Frost Night has sent a battle request (Brawl). Will you accept it?’

Zhang Yang accepted the request and the system announced their fight on the arena announcement board.

Room 179, Zhan Yu Versus Frost Night (Brawl). Battle starts in 5 minutes

The arena got rowdy again. The crowd from the battle before had not yet dispersed after the match and had remained around the arena. They quickly noticed the announcement and the atmosphere that never had the chance to settle down quickly burst into an uproar again. On one side was the fresh, still unknown merciless challenger while on the other was the all-time people’s champion. Both had killed Ghostly Leaf with an extraordinary feats in their own right. To think that these two fighters would actually fight each other. This fight would be the battle of the ages to come.



One by one, friends called on more friends, guild mates called on more guild mates to come over, and the events snowballed into chaos. In merely 3 minutes, room 179 was occupied with more than 10000 spectators! 5 minutes later, Frost Night and Zhang Yang was teleported in to the battle field.

Count down start!

5,4,3,2,1,0!

Poof!

Frost Night disappeared without a trace.

Zhang Yang did not dare to lower his guard, even though her equipment was weaker and Ghostly Leaf, her skills were on a completely different level! Especially when she had the skill <Vanish> that could be consecutively used twice in a row.

Outside the field, every spectator's eyes were glued to field, paying close attention any sudden changes. Frost Night might appear anytime and kill Zhang Yang before he could even draw breath!

The tension got more and more intense with each passing moment.

Foosh!

A shadowy figure appeared behind Zhang Yang and struck the back of his head! Simultaneously, Zhang Yang sword was already flying through the air and just as the back of the dagger made contact with his head, Zhang Yang's sword struck Frost Night.

“-387!”

“<Ambush>!”

Both of their attack seemed to have landed at the same time. Frost Night lost a huge portion of her HP while Zhang Yang was stunned for 4 seconds!

A loud unison gasp could be heard from the audience.

“These two players are hella strong!”

“Damn! Zhan Yu could even detect a hidden Thief! What kind of force user is he?!”

“Frost Night is considered as strong as he is, if she could even stun him!”

“That weapon that Zhan Yu is holding must be some sort of high tier weapon. What else could explain the ridiculous damage done to Frost Night?”

“I see your point there, fellow player. But Frost Night is now in a dangerous position. If she could not kill Zhan Yu in that 4 second opening, she would be in a huge disadvantage!”

“Your argument is invalid my young apprentice. You seemed to ignored the law...”

As the audience started to discuss among themselves, Frost Night kept calm and quickly consumed a health potion. She then raised her dagger and stabbed Zhang Yang’s back, the beginning a chain of damage. Each damage was not particularly high but her attacks were fast and continuous, the accumulated damage amounted to quite a bit!

After 4 seconds, the stun was lifted, but before Zhang Yang could turn, Frost Night had landed a <Kidney Shot>, knocking him out and stunned for 6 seconds.

Zhang Yang is an armored class character. Furthermore, he had 20% damage reduction passive skill, his armor and defense was not something a Thief could compare to! Frost Night could deal more than 1300 damage to Ghostly Leaf, but when she faced Zhang Yang, she could only deal about 800 damage to him, that was only less than one third of Zhang Yang total HP!

Frost Night still remained calm. The moment the 6 seconds’ stun ended, she quickly flicked her right arm and activate <Vanish>.

Zhang Yang grinned. He slashed his sword horizontally and stomped the ground firmly at the place where Frost Night

disappeared, casting <Horizontal Sweep> and <Thunder Strike>. Being damaged for 10 seconds without any opportunity to resist, Zhang Yang had generated more Rage than his gauge could hold in.

“-765!”

“-117!”

Frost Night was forcefully broken out of her invisibility, her HP was emptied instantly. She surrendered.

Shush! Two of them were teleported out of the field.

“One more!” Frost Night sent a private message to Zhang Yang.

“Oh. But if you lose, you owe me two raids now!” Zhang Yang laughed.

“.....Fine!”

After agreeing, the both of them entered the fight again and battled.

In the second round, Frost Night learnt from her mistake. This time when <Kidney Shot> 6 seconds’ stun was at its last second, she stopped attacking and immediately used <Vanish> to disappear.

When he recovered from the stun effect he quickly headed to where she disappeared and ran around there. He slashed out <Horizontal Sweep> and killed her again.

“How did you find me!?” Frost Night had to ask.

Zhang Yang had been fighting Bandits for at least 3 years, thus he had developed a kind of trick to locate a hidden Thief! The worse side effect of stealth was the movement speed reduction. Once you have turned invisible, your speed will be reduced by half. Once other had seen you disappear, they can easily locate your position quite fast.

“Private and Confidential!”

Frost Night grit her teeth furiously. “Tch! One day, I will defeat you!”

Such strong determination! Zhang Yang laughed. “You cannot beat me! Your equipment is still too weak! Otherwise, you could have defeated me the first time when you had stunlocked me! Follow me into dungeons for a few times and you’ll get the equipment you need to defeat me!”

Frost Night was speechless for a few moments. “I’ve lost two rounds. That’s two dungeons raid I owe you...Call me when you’re going for the dungeon!”

She did not want to continue fighting Zhang Yang when she had

roughly gauged the difference in equipment between the two of them.

Zhang Yang smiled and sent a friend request.

She did not reject nor accept it immediately, but instead replied with a question mark.

“?”

Zhang Yang explained. “Let’s just add each other, it’ll be easier for me to find you the next time!”

Frost Night walked away without saying anything.

Zhang Yang sighed. He thought that she would reject his request but eventually, he received a system notification.

‘Ding! Player Frost Night has accepted your friendship request!’

Nice! This girl is now in his hands! Just like a mice that entered the trap, she will not be able to escape from him now!

Zhang Yang snickered like a fool who won a jackpot. After a while, he opened the guild window and wrote a new announcement: “There will raid for Marzerway’s Lair, Main Wing 2 days from now. The raiding party will have the following fixed members: Zhan Yu, Drizzler, Little Snow, Slim and Handsome,

Hundred Shots. The party requires the following character class: 1 Tanker, 3 Healer, 11 Attacker. Whoever who could reach level 20 by the day after tomorrow and wishes to participate in the exploration party could register their names as such. Tankers report to Zhan Yu, Healers report to Little Snow, Attackers report to Drizzler, Slim and Handsome, and Hundred Shots. Registered players will be narrowed down and only the best will be chosen to participate.”

Excitement filled the guild once Zhang Yang posted the new announcement on the guild notice. Everyone wanted to joined the expedition, sure of themselves to conquer the dungeon once their submissions were accepted.

“Haha! Good luck, and train faster, guys!” Zhang Yang posted in the guild channel and went to the Desolated Ghostly Flatland to grind his level.

In his bag, there was the unusable Skeleton Warhorse. It could be used only when Zhang Yang reaches level 30. That was why he wanted to grind as fast as he can. Imagine what kind of reaction will he garner when he takes a stroll around White Jade City with that horse.

“What a pity...if only I could sell this off...” Zhang Yang mused.

If only he could take the horse up to the auction house and sell it off, he would be literally killed by the hands of Little Snow and Drizzler!

Zhang Yang spent the entire day just to grind, grind, and grind. Nothing else. To gain one level after level 20 is truly terrifying. If he were put everything he had just into grinding, he would need two days or so to gain one level! By the time, Zhang Yang logged off to have his dinner, he was only at level 23, with 42% Experience points in the progress bar.

After his dinner, Zhang Yang spent some time on the internet and hang out at the forums. He found out that the Ghostly Leaf case had been a heated topic in the forums since morning. Some said that he wanted to be a lone hero, to try to fight for glory of being able to kill every single player in the city alone! While some were explaining his behavior, others were busy throwing insults and flaming his actions. Why would he travel all the way to White Jade Castle to fight? Has he already fought all and won every one there in Crimson Moon City? If that was the case, him being defeated would mean there are no strong players in Crimson Moon City!

There were players who supported him, but the odds were overwhelming.

Zhang Yang had a good laughed and logged back into the game. Zhang Yang, Little Snow, Drizzeler, Fatty Han, and Hundred Shots each led a team to raid Bangar Crypt. Once they were done with that, Zhang Yang summoned the 5 of them to the battle arena for PK training. There, he found out that besides Fatty Han, the rest of the party were quite skillful in fighting players. They could be even stronger with more training. Fatty Han however, was completely oblivious in PK style of fighting. He only knew how to attack without the sense of moving his position, like a human turret. Hunter is a ranged character, he would need to maintain a certain



distance between the target to allow maximum attacking potential. This common knowledge was not in Fatty Han's mind when he attacked like a fixed machine gun. Even though he knew how to utilized <Concussion Shot> he did not fully utilize the skill's slowing effect to ran away from the target.

Once cornered, a Hunter would be completely useless.

Zhang Yang tirelessly adviced Fatty Han to keep his distance, to be light on his feet, and to move dynamically. But what entered from the right ear will smoothly flows out from the left ears like a good beer bong. Fatty Han could not follow his orders properly nor remember the fighting tactic! Zhang Yang was at a loss. He did not know what else to do! It was him that suggested Fatty Han start off as a Hunter because he knew very well that Fatty Han would never excel in PK!

A diamond cannot shine without polishing. But no matter how much effort you put in polishing a brick, it would never shine bright like a diamond!

This fat f\*ck could only raid dungeons and not participate in any battle arena fights. Zhang Yang could not involve him in any future Professional League competition!

Zhang Yang really wanted to drag this brother to join the competition but a Professional League needed a team, and the team need to cooperate perfectly to win any fights. Zhang Yang could not be selfish and include a liability like Fatty Han in the team, which would lead to the team's demise. Sigh!

After the day was over, Lone Desert Smoke's experience point had reached 42%, and at this rate, it would take just another 4 to 5 days' time to reach the maximum experience point.

For the next following 2 days, Zhang Yang was only busy collecting herbs, selling shields, buying stacks of minerals plates from Mining Specialist, and leveling up his Smithing mastery. Two nights later, 15th of July, 15 days after the launching of the game, Lone Desert Smoke had produced 24 Level 20 players! Zhang Yang himself had reached level 24 with 47% experience points!

Now that it's time to do the party member selections, Zhang Yang and the 4 of them chose the party members carefully. However, truthfully speaking, it was not a selection, but to find 5 members to remove from the team since they needed to leave one spot open for Frost Night. Once they were done with the team organization, Zhang Yang ordered everyone to log out earlier today and have a good night rest. The upcoming battle would be most arduous.

Zhang Yang sent a private message to Frost Night before he logged out.

“Hey, we are going to raid Marzerway's Lair Main Wing tomorrow morning 9am. Don't forget to gather at Snow Sprite City dungeon entrance!”

“Noted. I'll take a work leave tomorrow!”

Requesting a leave just for the sake of gaming, [much determination, very gamer](#), so Frost Night.

Doge meme which is rather prevalent on the internet, involves a shiba inu's adorable face along with captions in fragmented sentences such as "Much wow, so woof." etc.

## Chapter 83: Assault

---

The next day, Zhang Yang logged in and joined the other 18 members of the guild and headed into Snow Sprite City. Frost Snow did not join the rest of them but she waited instead at the dungeon entrance for the party to enter. From the initial point, the party have killed their way towards the inner part of the city to complete the pre-requisite quest of the dungeon. After only 7 to 8 minutes, the quest has been completed and they headed into the dungeon.

“Be careful, there are at least 7 other Bandits lurking around here!” Frost Night suddenly announced in the party channel.

Zhang Yang was shocked and quickly screamed, “Everyone! To me, NOW!”

Some of them heard his call and complied, while the others were oblivious and ignored his call.

Just then, 7 to 8 figures appeared behind 3 of the day dreamers.

Pak Pak Pak! The Bandits casted <Ambush> and started to attack them.

‘Ding! The party Flamboyant Uncle has initiated an attack on your party. You have 10 minutes to counter attack!’

“F\*cking hell!” Zhang Yang cursed. He quickly casted

<Vanguard's Aggression> and covered the 3 party members and at the same time dashing towards the attacker and cried, “Attack! Kill them all!”

The party was in complete chaos for a brief moment, but when Zhang Yang laid down his command, everyone started to cast their AoE skill towards the attackers.

The opponents had a total of 8 Bandits. After all 3 of Zhang Yang’s party members were stunned by <Ambush>, the Bandits activated <Blade Dance> simultaneously.

[Blade Dance]: Attack all targets within the attacking range. Deal 100% melee damage (Deals the accumulated melee damage of both Main Weapon and Secondary Weapon. If only one weapon is equipped, deal the same amount of damage as the melee damage.)

Requirement: Melee weapon.

Cost: 60 Stamina.

One Bandit’s <Blade Dance> could deal about 200 damage, but when 8 Bandits casted <Blade Dance> together, the stacked damage could exceed 1,600! They could kill all 3 of the party members!

But Zhang Yang was too quick for them. The moment the enemy

appeared, Zhang Yang had already casted <Vanguard's Aggression>, covering the three members under a transparent light barrier, thus receiving only 10% of all damage dealt!

“F\*ck. What skill is this?!” One of them spoke.

“Sneaky bastard!” Zhang Yang immediately used <Charge> the moment he entered the effective distance. He swung his sword, generating enough Rage to cast <Horizontal Sweep>.

All of them had their profile information hidden, obviously trying to hide their origin.

‘-754!’

‘-798!’

‘-768!’

‘-2391!’

‘...’

8 damage texts appeared and one of them showed such high damage that it immediately killed one of the enemy! It was a lucky strike!

“Damn son. Little Yang, please do ask me to PK with you!” Fatty Han could not help but feel intimidated! That crazy killing power is so strong that Zhang Yang could just kill off anyone within his sight.

“Relax dude! It’s not like a lucky strike comes around every day!” Before Zhang Yang could start his second attack, the remaining 7 enemy were all killed by everyone’s AoE skills.

“Why would they sneak up on us?” Drizzler turned to look at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang smiled bitterly. “Someone’s being a sore loser. They tried to mess with us so that we would not be able to claim this dungeon’s First Clear Achievement!”

Frost Night was the first one to cry out in rage. “Despicable!”

Even though her face was completely covered, but they could feel the rage that was within her. She looked like she was one of those people who could not accept cheating; a woman of justice!

Drizzler’s reaction was somewhat slower than an average person. She gasped and clapped her hands. “So, you’re saying that there are guilds out there that wanted to stop us from getting the First Clear Achievement and sent these guys to mess with us? Hm... Hm... I understand that our guild’s one weakness is that we lack high level players, that only today we could gather enough players at Level 20. So, if anyone us was killed and lose even just a level, we could not enter the dungeon anymore!”

Zhang Yang sighed disappointingly. “I really pity the teachers that taught you life lessons. How could you not understand this simple matter? Argh... it’s so hard to be a teacher!”

Drizzler got angry and her face turned red. Still, she could not find the words to refute him. She only raised her head and said “Hmph!” loudly and walked away. Looks like Zhang Yang hit the jackpot.

“I wonder what guild are they from?” said Hundred Shots.

“Well, Crimson Rage are all females...”

“It must be either The Dominators or Sky High!”

“It could have been The Dominators!” said Zhang Yang. He thought it that way since the alliance between Humbly Gentleman was a failure and he did leave with an unsatisfied manner. This was probably his way of answering Zhang Yang’s rejection. If he was indeed the culprit behind this attack, he would be considered brilliant. As long as any Lone Desert Smoke members were killed off by a few, Zhang Yang could not have been able to proceed with the dungeon raid!

The only thing they could not account for was Zhang Yang’s new skill <Vanguard’s Aggression> that foiled the attack! Hmm... hmm... The Dominators, you have strike us now but watch your back!



Zhang Yang cleared his throat and said, “Split up into four teams and fight the Front Wing and Middle Wing in Normal difficulty. You must do this to get the entrance qualification to the Main Wing. The other reason is to get used to all four of the bosses’ skills. The Main Wing boss Marzerway will use all four of them. I want all of you to get used to it so that we could perform better in the Main Wing. Alright, the team distribution should be me, Ironhill, 2 Pigs with Hunters as tanks, and the healer should be...”

“Damn! Little Yang! Pigs with Hunters? What the f\*ck!?” Fatty Han got angry.

“Oops. Sorry. Let me rephrase that. Hunters with 2 pigs...” Zhang Yang laughed. He assigned the team to have tanks and healers to make sure every party has its [proper build](#).

“Why don’t we just fight Hard or Hardcore Mode?” Someone questioned the thought since Normal mode was so easy that anyone else could have led the party instead of the legendary Zhan Yu.

“It’s a waste of time. Our main goal is just to get the entrance qualifications! Furthermore, the Hunter’s... pigs could only tank as much as Normal difficulty. Besides, Normal, Hard, or even Hardcore Mode bosses use the same skills, just having different damage output. So learn the skills properly; Normal Mode would be the best bet so that if anyone screws up their role or make a mistake, your party won’t be killed off!” Zhang Yang explained.

“Ok! Let’s raid!”

‘Ding! You have entered Marzerway’s Lair: Front Wing (Normal Mode)!’

Zhang Yang’s own party consisted of Drizzler, Frost Night, Angel Descend, and Face Floored. He intentionally placed Drizzler and Frost Night into his team, not because he was interested in them, but was because of their powerful attacking powers. He was afraid that other tanks could not hold on to the aggro.

In reality, Angel Descend and Face Floored were good friends, and they were Spellcaster and Priest respectively. Both of them are male and their names were quite funny when they were put together. Face floored (when) angel descended. Haha!

“Let’s start!” Zhang Yang unsheathed his sword and used <Charge> to start the fight. This round, even if it was a Normal Mode, he did not dare to kite the monsters all the way since they will self-destruct on death. Though the damage was significantly lesser in Normal Mode, even he could not handle all the explosions at the same time and be killed off.

“Frost Night, why did you choose that [IGN](#)?” Drizzler asked curiously like a child. Being the only girls in the party, Drizzler felt comfortable to chat with her.

“Why are you so quiet?”

“Why did you cover your face with that cloth?”

“How did you know this noob tank? I tell you, this guy has a friend that is a horny pervert. You’d better watch your back!”

“How old are you? Are you working? Or still in school?”

“...”

Drizzler kept on bombarding her with questions that it became annoying. Luckily the only questions that she did not ask were ultra-private information like her 3 sizes or her virginity...

However, Frost Night was well behaved. Even after being bombarded with questions, she did not reply a single one. Instead, she continuously danced around with her daggers, fully focused on killing monsters.

“Little brat! If you continue on to be that noisy, your damage output is going to lose to everyone else!” Zhang Yang quickly interjected before she was about to open her mouth.

“W-what?! That’s impossible!” she cried and quickly opened the Damage Statistic.

[Damage Statistic]

Zhan Yu, 38%

Frost Night, 29%

Drizzler, 22%

Angel Descend, 11%

“Eh?” Drizzler blinked her eyes repeatedly. “Your equipment is much weaker than mine. But how could you deal so much damage?!”

Frost Night remained quiet as ever. Zhang Yang replied in her stead. “That’s because someone else was fully focus on attacking! Sigh...They say kids who can’t study well are very good in gaming. And then there’s you! The curious case of Drizzler who is both weak in studies and gaming. You’re like a piece of rock in the desert! Useless!”

Drizzler raged. “Who says I’m useless!? I’m just not fully focused, that’s it! One more thing. I’m not a kid!”

“Argh! Let’s fight again!” Drizzler looked at Frost Night confidently. She has completely fallen into Zhang Yang’s provocation.

Frost Night was still silent. However, Drizzler mistook her silence as consent and she finally kept her mouth shut. After

closing the Damage Statistic, she cried out loudly and started to attack faster than before.

What followed proved that in the gaming world, the winner will always have the best equipment. Frost Night was and will be the Queen of Shadow Dance, but as of now, her equipment was much weaker than Drizzler's. After killing the second boss, she lost by only 2% damage output! She was not a sore loser like Drizzler; even though her face was completely covered, her eyes radiated with a fiery battle spirit.

Drizzler was as happy as ever. Such a naïve little girl... When she wins, she's happy. But when she loses, she'll snort, sulk, and put on a sour face.

Zhang Yang felt sad for her. How could a girl like her, someone who was so realistic and naïve, still exist in this kind of society!? If Drizzler were to join the society now, it would not take even a day for her to be eaten alive!

After they had finished with the Front Wing, the party moved on to the Middle Wing. As this team had 3 strong players in it, they were the fastest in terms of progress among the 4 parties that went in.

When they entered the dungeon, Drizzler and Frost Night went on to have their fight. Even though Frost Night looked very cold and unresponsive, silent without uttering a single word, her intent to win the match was burning strong. Even when her equipment was weak, she had never thought of any reason to lose the fight. This forced Drizzler to be at her best; she did not dare to even slack

for a second, fearing that Frost Night might surpass her at any moment.

On the other hand, Angel Descend successfully became side character. He did not even care to join in the fight. He only did his part, casting some hail on the monsters.

In just 15 minutes, the party successfully conquered the Middle Wing. This feat was quite impressive that even Zhang Yang had to praise their effort.

A proper built party must have at least 1 tanker and 1 healer while the rest of the member should be attackers.

IGN is a common term for In Game Name.

## Chapter 84: Main Wing! Here We Come!

---

After clearing both Front Wing and the Middle Wing dungeons, Zhang Yang and his party gathered in front of the last dungeon.

After 5 minutes or so, the second team led by Hundred Shots came out, followed by Fatty Han's team, and the last team was Ironhill's. In this small dungeon, the performance of the tank will determine the success of the team. That is why even though Ironhill's team had a strong supporter like Little Snow, it would be useless since their team's tank was not strong enough.

"I assume by now everyone fully understands the boss' mechanics." Zhang Yang asked. "If that's the case, go and complete the quest and let's go to the Main Wing!"

"Woohoo! Equipment!"

"First Clear!"

Everyone's morale was high as they marched into the Main Wing with high spirits.

The dungeon was set in a palace, and Zhang Yang with his party were standing in the center of a huge courtyard. Ahead of them was the palace's Main Wing and it was there Marzerway resided!

Zhang Yang cleared his throat, signaling the starting of his speech.

“Ahem I’ll now explain the strategy to fight. This boss has a total of 5 stages. At the first stage, he will take the form of the Water Spirit and had all of the Water Spirit boss’ skill. In this stage, it is important to interrupt its skill casting. Hundred Shots, Comet Tears and Big Ben, you guys are the first team to fire the first volley of <Silencing Shot>, the second volley team will be Fatty Han, Iron Heart and Burnt Snow. One more thing, always be on alert to evade the <Ice Ring>!”

“The second stage...”

Zhang Yang paused immediately and smiled. “You know what? Let’s just focus on practicing at the first stage!”

“Ok! Let’s go!”

The party went forward until they could finally see Marzerway’s own body.

From the looks of it, he seemed like a middle-aged man no older than thirty. A deep purplish red robe adorned his slim and tall body, having a sort of an appearance of a well-studied philosopher, and he held a long wooden staff on his left hand. With the way he portrayed himself, he did not give off the vibe of a mass-murderer.

[Marzerway the Fallen]

Level: 25



HP: 1,000,000

“Team 1 move to the North! Team 2 take the East! Team 3, South! Team 4, attack from the West! Once you have arrived at your position, we will begin the attack!” said Zhang Yang as he dashed toward the boss.

“Impudent fools, you dare to disturb my rest! Weaklings that seek death, I shall grant you your wish! Hmm... hmm...With the power of water alone, I shall cleanse you off this earth!” Marzerway started its attack.

Once Zhang Yang and Marzerway’s distance were close enough, Zhang Yang activated <Charge>, followed by a normal attack and <Provoke>.

‘-332!’

‘Immune!’

With that alone, Zhang Yang gained important information, learning that it had immunity against <Provoke> along with having 100 Defense value.

Still, Marzerway’s aggro was on Zhang Yang, and he raised his staff to smack him.

As a magic-based boss, Marzerway's attack speed was slow enough that Zhang Yang could evade it whenever he wanted to! But he did not, and instead took a full hit to understand how strong the boss' physical attack was. As Sun Tzu explained in his Art of War, 'know your enemy and yourself and you'll win a hundred war'.

'-448!'

Zhang Yang took damage without any resistance. He never had thought that a magic based boss would have such high physical attack. Marzerway was truly strong!

With that, Zhang Yang gained 30 Rage.

'<Cripple Defense>!'

'-141!' <Cripple Defense> damage.

'-714!' <Horizontal Sweep>.

To counter a high defense boss, Zhang Yang first prioritized stacking <Cripple Defense> to maximize the party's damage output.

Once the boss' defense was reduced by 50%, the party began to deal higher damage.

“Weak little humans, I will freeze you ‘til the depth of your soul!” Marzerway stopped his physical attacks and started to cast a spell.

Pew!

After 3 second casting, Marzerway fired an ice arrow and hit Zhang Yang.

‘-1200!’

“What the hell! Why would his attacks be much stronger than the 5-man dungeon boss Water Spirit?!” After fighting the element spirits for several days, Little Snow had a better understanding to all skill damages as a healer.

“Hmm. This is a 20-man dungeon, of course the attack will be higher!” said Zhang Yang.

Even though this boss was much stronger than the Hardcore bosses, Zhang Yang was able to fight with lesser stress as the team had 4 healers. The healing load was shared among them and it lessened the burden on Little Snow.

99%, 98%, 97%...

The boss’ HP was just too much. Even with 20 players attacking constantly, the HP reduction rate was the slowest he had ever seen!

“Slumber in eternal winter!” Marzerway cried out as he spread out his arms, casting 8 visible rings of ice onto the battle field.

‘Ding! Marzerway has used <Ice Ring>!’

“Pay attention to the floor! Move away if there’s an ice ring!” Zhang Yang could only scream to remind the party, not having all day to supervise one by one.

3 seconds after the skill had been activated, 8 icy orbs formed.

‘-2500!’

‘-2500!’

‘Ding! Player Four Hairs has died!’

‘Ding! Player Golden Big Ben has died!’

Crap! Two down!

Holding in his anger, Zhang Yang asked. “How did you two die?! Didn’t I tell you all to be careful of the rings?!”

“Sorry, boss. I was completely immersed in attacking!”

“Me too!”

Zhang Yang shook his head angrily. He wanted to unleash his rage but he suppressed the urge. It was not the time be playing the blame game; the teamwork might just be affected.

Zhang Yang took a deep breath and said, “Just be careful next time. One more careless mistake and you’ll have your guild contributions deducted!”

“Understood!”

Both dead players accepted Zhang Yang’s reproach but whether their apologies were sincere or if it was just for the sake of it, nobody knew but them.

Sigh... to think that Zhang Yang had assigned Big Ben to the “interruption” team.

“Defiant Monk, you’re now assigned to the “Interruption” team, go and get together with Hundred Shots!”

“Roger that!” Defiant Monk listened obediently to Zhang Yang since they got along some time ago.

So far, the only classes that had interruption skills were Spellcasters, Hunters, and Thieves. Hunters required Focus while Thieves required Stamina. Both classes cost system had a maximum of 100 points and they could recover 10 points every second. Casting the interruption skill <Silencing Shot> or the <Low

Kick> both required 25 Focus for Hunters and 25 Stamina for Thieves. They would need to make sure they had sufficient Focus to make sure the cycle did not stop.

A Spellcaster's interruption skill <Counter Magic> required Mana. As long there was sufficient Mana and the skill was not in cooldown, you could stop a channeling spell by casting it before the spell could be completed. By far, a Spellcaster was the most suitable to be the "interrupter".

There were 4 Spellcasters in the party. Zhang Yang assigned 2 to Hundred Shots and the other 2 to Fatty Han. Now that they lost a member, Zhang Yang had to assign Defiant Monk as replacement.

But was it really necessary to have three players simultaneously casting three "interruption" spells?

One, to avoid a possible chance of missing; and two, the casting speed was much faster than the Water Spirit boss. One man alone could miss out the chance to stop the spell.

As the fight continued on, Marzerway has casted <Ice Ring> twice. Zhang Yang kept reminding the team so that no one else would get hit by any of the spell.

"Hmmp! A bunch of noisy little pests! I'll drown you all in a hail storm!"

Marzerway raised its staff up high and started to chant a spell.

Hundred Shots quickly called out as he casted a <Silencing Shot>.

“Interrupt together!”

However, the assigned players were Defiant Monk and Comet Tears, and only Defiant Monk activated his <Silencing Shot>; the Spellcaster was still casting a <Fireball>!

Luckily, <Silencing Shot> hit its target, stopping the <Hail Storm> from being casted.

“Comet Tears, why didn’t you cast <Counter Magic>!?”

The Spellcaster quietly muttered. “I wanted to finish my <Fireball> before I cast an interruption spell. But since you guys had already casted your skill, I didn’t think mine was necessary.”

Hundred Shots stared at him angrily and scolded. “Do not make the same mistake ever again! Just because you wanted to attack, you could have caused the entire team to be killed! As a member of a party, you must bear the responsibility of a team member! You cannot just go around and act on your own accord!”

Comet Tears appeared to be in despair after that rebuke.

“Alright, what’s done is done. No use crying over a spilt milk. Cheer up. There’s more interruptions coming later!” Hundred Shots turned soft.

Zhang Yang was genuinely surprised to see that Hundred Shots could also be stern! If he were to give him some lessons, there was a chance that Hundred Shots could be a good leader!

After the small commotion, the interruption team became fairly serious and performed extraordinary. They never allowed Marzerway to successfully cast a single time!

90%...85%...80%!

Even with Zhang Yang's repeated remainder, there were still careless players that died by the <Ice Ring>. A total of 3 players had died and one of them was a healer. They had now lost 5 members!

After a while, Marzerway roared. "I have underestimated you all! Heed my call, O God of the Earthly Spirit! Become one with me and crush these proudly beings!"

The boss has entered the second stage!

Pak!

Marzerway turned into a physical attack monster. He swung his staff and Zhang Yang had star circling on top of his head! Zhang Yang was hit by <Smash> and had been stunned! Marzerway's physical attack suddenly increased, and he then focused only on Zhang Yang and dealt a series of heavy attacks.



‘-704!’

‘+402!’ Little Snow <Higher Healing>.

‘+80!’ Face Floored <Regeneration>.

‘-735!’

‘-747!’

‘+240!’ Face Floored <Higher Healing>.

‘+207!’ Vanilla Ice Cream <Holy Light>.

‘-711!’

In just 2 seconds, Marzerway attacked 4 times, totaling up to 3,000 over damage! Luckily, his team had 3 other healers that instantly healed him over the attacks and saved him from death!

Zhang Yang quickly activated <Block> the second he recovered from the stun effect, providing an opening for the healers to do their job.

“Attackers would only need to focus on evading the spikes on the floor! Little Snow, just like the last time, when the boss stuns me, use <Holy Prayers> on me!” Zhang Yang cried out.

“The second stage is very simple! The boss is just like a wooden pole!”

# Chapter 85: Exploration

---

The second stage of the boss was fairly easy; from the attackers' perspective, that was. In the healers' eyes, they were having the time of their life healing like there was no tomorrow!

The boss was just too powerful! His staff looked like it was made from wood but it felt like it was really just the Monkey King Sun Wo Kong's golden staff. Zhang Yang's HP was being whacked down like how Sun Wo Kong whacked the high heavens upside down!

“Damn you, Zhan Yu! [Why are you so squishy like a tofu!?](#)” Little Snow complained violently.

Zhang Yang smiled bitterly. He thought to himself, “Hmph! Keep on complaining, b\*tch! If I were to trade with another tank, you wouldn't even have time to open your mouth at all! You'd be too busy healing crazily. The moment you're distracted, you'd be sure to have the tank killed!”

Being attacked by Sun Wu... Marzerway, Zhang Yang did not have any spare time to do anything else. He was fully focused on doing one thing, evading every attack. He could not even spare some energy to open his mouth to remind the party members nor command them!

“Be pierced to death by my rocks!” Marzerway bellowed. He waved his staff around and 12 circular dark pits with a diameter of 3 meters wide appeared randomly on the battle field.

“MOVE, MOVE, MOVE!” Zhang Yang was so preoccupied that he could only scream as loud as he could.

‘Ding! Marzerway has used <Earth Spear>!’

Almost everyone was able to dodge in time, but there was a small group of players that were slower and became inflicted with the slow effect, eventually being pierced by the spikes that jolted out from the pit. One by one they were attacked and the damage text appeared on their head.

‘-400!’

‘-400!’

This skill’s attack rate was one strike per second, and since the slower players were inflicted by slow, they took 3 to 4 attacks before they could escape the pit’s attack radius.

Luckily the healers were efficient enough to heal them in time or they would be killed too!

But this placed the healers in a worse position. They were already busy enough taking care of the main tank, but when they had to babysit the rest of the party, the entire healer’s team was turned upside down.

Fatty Han sucked in a cold breath and said, “Damn, being poked so many times, I think my ass\*le is bleeding now!”

“Hell no! It’s the balls that’s hurting!”

“Wrong! Even your balls are now in pieces!”

Zhang Yang was infuriated with the party’s halfhearted behavior.

“SHUT THE HELL UP AND PAY ATTENTION!”

Everyone froze.

“Focus on the boss and predict what skills he will cast next! How many of you really memorized the skills from before?! How you could still miss it and get killed!? Didn’t I asked you to get used to the boss’ skills?! Why did I bring you to the Normal Mode for?! Fishing for girls?! The next person who gets hit by any skill is a pig head!”

After hearing Zhang Yang’s rage-induced scolding, the party did not dare to joke around anymore. All of them started to pay attention and attacked the boss. Zhang Yang truthfully did not want to put a wet blanket on their fun, but before enjoying the moment, they needed to first ensure the dungeon’s victory! Of course Zhang Yang would get angry! They were in the exploration team yet none of them seemed to understand the importance of it! Someone of them even behaved like the boss would automatically

drop dead without them needing to lend a hand!

“Strength! I will show you my strength! Bear witness to the power of Marzerway!”

The boss smacked Zhang Yang strongly and his body shook a little from it! The boss expanded in size!

‘Ding! Marzerway has gained <Growth> effect (1 stack). All physical attacks have been increased by 5%!’

“Pick up the pace! We must quickly end this stage within 2 minutes! Do not let him grow up to 10 stacks or else no one in this world could endure his attacks!”

Everyone started to give all that they had! Arrows flew, spells were shot, and blades were clashing!

76%, 74%, 72%...

“Be pierced to death by my rocks!”

“...”

“Strength! I will show you my strength! Bear witness to the power of Marzerway!”

“ ... ”

64%, 63%, 62%!

Marzerway gained 10 levels of <Growth>, his attacks were increased by 50%, <Earth Spear>'s damage per second increased to 600! Those who were slower and did not manage to avoid the pits were killed off instantly. Many of the players here had recently just reached Level 20, so their weapons and armors were quite mediocre; their HP was only a little over 1,000.

60%...

The boss finally entered the third stage. But the initial number of players were reduced by a whole lot. Right now, the only players remaining accumulated to one third of the original number!

“Little Yang, should we just give up and try again?” Fatty Han asked.

Zhang Yang shook his head. “No. We continue. Treat this as practice!”

They already lost 7 members and they boss had only lost 40% HP. The following events to come would definitely be harder and uglier.

Luckily, when the boss entered the third stage, he did not carry over the 11 stacks of <Growth>. Unless the team could end the stage

quickly without any trouble or death, the <Growth> bonus effect would definitely pose as a threat for Zhang Yang.

“O Spirt of Fire and Immolation! Be one with me!”

Marzerway raised his staff high and struck the ground with great strength. A wall of fire emerged from the ground and blasted everywhere, with him as the center of it.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

All melee range players including Zhang Yang were knocked back 3 meters away!

‘Ding! Marzerway has used <Knockback>!’

‘Ding! You are now affected with <Combustible>. All fire attacks received will be increased by 50%!’

Zhang Yang quickly dashed forward and used <Charge> to attack when he was in the melee attack range.

Marzerway reverted back to a magic-based boss when he entered the third stage. After he struck Zhang Yang a few times, he quickly casted a <Flame Shot>.

Boom!



Zhang Yang received a devastating 1,500 damage in just one attack.

One of the characteristics of a magic attack type was that it will use physical attacks once in a while. The damage was unlike the physical attack type, where it could feel as heavy as a bulldozer! But even so, physical attacks were no match for a magic attack type that could chain a combo!

For example, after the boss casted a <Flame Shot>, he could cast another <Knockback> which could kill a tank with a 90% success rate! A tank would need to depend heavily on his equipment to survive. If his HP was not high enough, he could not even fight the boss at all!

“Healers! Please listen carefully. I want you all to make sure my HP is full before the boss cast a <Flame Shot>! To everyone else, do not die! This is an order!” said Zhang Yang.

His current maximum HP was 2,200. If he were to be carrying <Combustible>, he would receive 1,500 damage from <Flame Shot> and 600 damage from <Knockback>. He could be killed with just another light attack from the boss, and that was why Zhang Yang had to maintain full HP!

In the third stage, the boss would gain one <Sacrifice> buff that increased 50% damage whenever someone dies. Unless they could quickly force the boss to enter the fourth stage, the team would be walking on fire whenever anyone dies!

“O Flames of truth! Cleanse the souls of these sinful beings!” Marzerway raised his staff. 16 rivers of molten lava burst out from his body and flowed onto the battle field, covering the ground with burning lava.

‘Ding! Marzerway has used <Lava Flow>!’

“Avoid it! Avoid it!”

Zhang Yang kited the boss to a safe location. This skill did not need the boss to continuously channel. As long as it was casted, it would continuously flow out from a fixed location until the end of the duration. The party was in total chaos; some managed to avoid the lava while others were in such a panic that they accidentally walked into the lava and died.

‘Ding! Player 4th Grandfather had died!’

“Hahaha! The power of the soul shall grant me more power!” Marzerway laughed cynically.

‘Ding! Marzerway has gained a <Sacrifice> effect. All attacks have been increased by 50%!’

Boom! A <Flame Shot> was casted and it hit Zhang Yang.

‘-2,250!’ Zhang Yang was instantly killed!

Ironhill quickly took over his role but Drizzler, Frost Night, Fatty Han, and Hundred Shots had more aggro than he did. Marzerway did not attack him, and instead casted a <Flame Shot> and killed Drizzler.

When the boss turned to face Frost Night, she quickly whipped her right hand and disappeared with <Vanish>.

Marzerway then quickly switched his attack target and shot two <Flame Shot> killing off both Fatty Han and Hundred Shots.

The situation was f\*cked up beyond any recognition. Marzerway now had 5 stacks of <Sacrifice> effect. He could just kill anyone in sight with just the <Knockback> alone.

Complete annihilation!

In the graveyard, Zhang Yang could not bring himself to scold the party. He only laughed and said, “Oh well, I guess we did quite well for our virgin battle! Still, those who died before me, please pay attention. If you ever make any careless mistake like that ever again, the first offence will cost you 20 guild contribution points. The second offense will cost you 50 and that’ll be the last straw. If you commit the third offence, consider yourself kicked out from this party! I’d rather wait a few more days than fighting a fruitless battle!”

The players that died in the early stages dropped their head low. They had to take some form of punishment for making fatal mistakes.

“Still, I had to admit that I made a mistake at the battle arrangement!” Zhang Yang self-critic.

“Later, all melee attackers shall stand behind the boss and attack. All range attackers must get together with Little Snow! I will tag her with the ‘Ball’ symbol. So, when you see the ‘Ball’ move, I don’t care whether you are taking a shit, I want you to follow the ‘Ball’! If you could not even follow this, I’d have no other way to lead you!”

“You idiot! Change the symbol!” Little Snow was not fond of the symbol and stared at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang was confused. “Huh? What...?”

Fatty Han scratched his head for a while and finally understood why Little Snow was angry.

“Little Yang. Don’t use ‘Ball’ since...well...” He pointed at Little Snow. His fingers was a little lower, towards her chest.

“Ah... right. Okay.”

Zhang Yang understood what he meant and laughed bitterly. He then changed the “Ball” into a “Star” instead.

“Ok... Follow the star!”

“Follow the star! The Super Star!” Fatty Han started to act like a woman and cat-walked around while shaking his hips. Everyone laughed.

“Pervy Fatty! Just drop dead!”

Everyone revived and went back into the dungeon.

Zhang Yang drew out his sword and struck it into the ground.

“Cheer up guys! We can do this! Let’s go!”

The second battle started with Zhang Yang’s standard <Charge>.

The first stage went fairly well, and everyone did their job properly; the interruption team managed to prevent every spell from being casted. The melee attackers followed Zhang Yang’s instructions and attacked from behind the boss whilst following Zhang Yang as he kited Marzerway. With this strategy, they could evade every <Ice Ring> casted by the boss. Ranged attackers stuck to Little Snow like glue, following her everywhere she went. Listening to Zhang Yang this time ensured that no one got hurt at all!

Still, even though no one died, the team’s attacking power seemed to drop tremendously!

Zhang Yang opened the Damage statistic and found out that the problem was from the ranged attackers. They were probably thinking too much on avoiding the skills rather than focusing on attacks. However, Zhang Yang could not ask too much of them. It was good progress when no one died. He could not expect them to be as good as Hundred Shots or Frost Night.

Zhang Yang was afraid that the low damage rate would allow the boss to gain <Growth> in the second stage, but the problem could be solved even though they had lost several party members. The boss entered the third stage with 11 stacks of <Growth> and 60% HP!

Gamer's term; squishy like a tofu meant the player had low defense that he or she would easily have their HP drop at a tremendous speed.

## Chapter 86: The Rewards Of The Failure

---

The reason team could do so well was all thanks to the powerful damage output from these five people including Zhang Yang, Drizzler, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han and Frost Night. Their total damage was much higher than the remaining ten damage dealers!

The capability of the team was still guaranteed as long as there was a powerful damage output from five of them as the team's foundation, even if the other party members were not as powerful.

Little Snow was like a flag, and everyone followed her wherever she went and it was like playing the "Eagle catches the chicks" game which everyone found hilarious.

The third stage of Marzerway was still as exhausting as <Flame Shot> and <Knockback> could instantly kill 80% of the tank's HP! The four healers in the team were trying very hard to heal Zhang Yang's HP. Even though he was dealing with <Flame Shot>, even if he was hit with the combo, he could have 100 HP remaining!

Because of this remaining 100 HP, they were able successfully proceed to the fourth stage of Marzerway!

"The great Air Spirit, unite with me and kill all these corrupted sinners!" Marzerway raised his wand and roared like a beast.

Zhang Yang frowned as the difficulty of the Marzerway was mainly concentrated in fourth and fifth stage! The fifth stage was slightly easy as Marzerway could be defeated by using [Beginner

Anti-Shadow Potion]. Thus, the fourth stage would be the hardest for them!

Evading <Air Bomb> and destroying the <Summoned Cloud> were the tests for an individual's combat capabilities. However, these tests would most likely collapse the team!

“All melee attackers, go back to the ranged positions first!” Zhang Yang started to adjust strategy tactics.

The Thieves, Berserker and the tank Defender that was Ironhill went back to the ranged position.

“The Spirit of the Air will purify all of your souls!” Marzerway shouted loudly. Ten white balloons gradually floated out from his body and split into different directions.

“Ding! Marzerway has casted <Air Bomb>!”

Zhang Yang immediately kited Marzerway away and said: “Okay, melee attackers, come over and continue with the damage output!”

Due to the high number of melee attackers, if they did not retreat to the ranged position first, they would easily be hit by the <Air Bomb> and it would not even need to chase after them.

“Ranged positions, split and do not stand together!” Zhang Yang shouted.



If they all crowded together, the <Air Bomb> would accumulate and crowd around them, forming into a giant net. The <Air Bomb> would gradually nibble away the players' activity space and finally force the players into a dead corner!

The speed of the <Air Bomb> was fortunately not as quick, making it easy for the players to evade it, as long as they did not blindly attack Marzerway.

“Stupid fellow, I want to bombard your soul into pieces!” Marzerway roared loudly and a blast of white air wave suddenly struck directly on Zhang Yang.

‘-1,524’.

Zhang Yang's mouth twitched a little as the <Sonic Pierce> from Marzerway was very powerful!

From the healers' team, Little Snow immediately healed Zhang Yang's HP back to full.

“Hundred Shots, Fatty Han and Defiant Monk, are you guys clear about what I had explained previously?” Zhang Yang asked in the team.

“Yeah!” Three of them nodded their head at the same time.

“Okay, Marzerway is going to cast <Summoned Cloud>. We’ll have to depend on you guys to see whether the <Summoned Cloud> can be destroyed as soon as possible!”

After a while, Marzerway shouted again: “Let’s have some fun!”

Marzerway waved the wand, three <Summoned Cloud> immediately floated from its body and gradually floated on top of his head.

“Ding! Marzerway has casted <Summoned Cloud>!”

“All ranged positions, I’ve marked a cross symbol on the monsters!” Hundred Shots shouted and marked one of the <Summoned Cloud> with a cross symbol at the same time. “Fire!”

[Summoned Cloud] (Elite)

Level: 1

HP: 10,000

From a 5-man dungeon to a 20-man dungeon, the <Summoned Cloud> amount had increased a lot and the HP also increased several folds!

By listening Hundred Shots' command, the ranged attacking team immediately switched their targets and bombarded the <Summoned Cloud> that was marked with the cross symbol. Those that had fought the Middle Wing Normal Mode knew the true strength of the <Summoned Cloud>.

Pa! The first <Summoned Cloud> was destroyed.

Pa! Another <Summoned Cloud> was destroyed!

However, the ranged team's damage output was still quite weak. The third <Summoned Cloud> still had at least 4000 HP while chasing after a player.

“Ding! Player Iron Hand Chicken Catcher hit by <Summoned Cloud>: Rotten stink, stunned for 10 seconds!”

Suddenly, every single <Air Bomb> changed targets and surged towards that player.

“Everybody, gather to my side!” Zhang Yang shouted loudly.

Except for the stunned player, the rest of the people quickly moved closer to Zhang Yang's position.

“Heal! Heal me at your full force!” Zhang Yang used <Vanguard's Aggression> and guarded all nineteen people within the protection barrier.

‘-1,200!’

‘-120!’

‘-120!’

‘...’

‘-1,920!’

The first <Air Bomb> exploded and caused 1,200 damage to Iron Hand Chicken Catcher. The rest of the people were guarded within the protection barrier so the damage dealt was reduced to 10% and the HP deduction was extremely limited! However, Zhang Yang was suffering and his HP almost dropped to zero!

Zhang Yang immediately used <Block> and waited for the healing spell’s channel duration!

Another <Air Bomb> exploded on Iron Hand Chicken Catcher and the damage value filled up the screen again.

‘-1,200!’

‘-120!’

‘...’

Zhang Yang had just healed up to about 1,500 HP when another 1,920 damage value from the <Air Bomb> hit him again, killing him in the process!

The team was wiped out!

It would be dangerous using <Vanguard's Aggression> without <Shield Wall>!

At the Graveyard, Little Snow thought for a while and said: “Can we kill the person directly bounded by the <Summoned Cloud>? That way, the <Air Bomb> will not explode!”

Zhang Yang stunned and said: “I never thought about this before!”

In fact, Zhang Yang did not experience a lot of low-level Hardcore mode dungeons. When he joined the game in his previous life, ‘God’s Miracle’ was already operating in its third year. At that moment, he just went on for low-level Hard mode dungeons as long as his equipment could be used for training. He would not bother to go for low-level Hardcore mode dungeons unless there was someone to lead him. When his level was much higher, he began leading the “beginners” to the low-level dungeons where he did not need to consider strategy tactics or details at all!

Little Snow’s suggestion was excellent, but it would mean having

lesser teammates, especially when it came to the ranged damage dealers. Ultimately, it would mean destroying the <Summoned Cloud> would be slower as well! Having lesser teammates to that extent would certainly collapse the party.

(Even though the player would be killed by another player in the dungeon, they would not drop a level!)

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said: “First of all, we still have to try our very best to destroy all of the <Summoned Cloud> first. If there really is no other choice and it chased after a player, only then would we attack the stunned player!”

“Let’s go people!”

They resurrected to re-enter the dungeon and ate some HP recovering snacks to gain back their health.

Zhang Yang took out the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] from his inventory and distributed two per person to the party and said: “Hold them tight, drink this medicine together when I tell you to drink and do not use this potion at any other time!”

Everyone was puzzled but they took the medicine and kept it well.

The last stage would be the fifth stage, and Marzerway would just cast Area of Effect (AoE) <Shadow Arrows> and with no other tactics. This meant that the team would just need to keep on

dealing damage and healing.

“Let’s start people!”

The third battle started again.

The first stage, passed smoothly.

The second stage, barely passed.

The third stage, breathtakingly passed.

The most dangerous that is the fourth stage started!

...

“Let’s have some fun!” The same speech prompted from Marzerway and he casted three <Summoned Cloud>.

“All ranged players, focus on the marked cross symbol on the monsters!” Hundred Shots temporary held a command job and cooperated with Zhang Yang.

The first <Summoned Cloud> was destroyed... The second <Summoned Cloud> was destroyed as well... the third <Summoned Cloud> still had about 3,000 HP and chased after Ironhill with great speed and caused him to be stunned.

“Kill him!” Zhang Yang cried out, as he swung his sword and slashed the Defender.

Although the pitiful Ironhill was a tank with thick armor and shield, he was not able to defend the powerful damage output and died after two to three hits!

The surged <Air Bomb> then spread out as they lost their target. They slowly floated in the air and searched for a new one.

“Yes!” All of them were excited and exclaimed like they had just defeated Marzerway.

“Well, let’s once again begin to deal some damage on Marzerway! The <Summoned Cloud> is casted every half of a minute, so we have to be quick and try our very best to get through the fifth stage. Otherwise, reducing party members will wipe us out as well!”

“Yes!”

38%, 36%, 34%... Marzerway casted <Summoned Cloud> for the second time.

Although the party had lost a teammate, the overall damage output was not severely affected as the second tank had basically nothing much to do!



The first <Summoned Cloud>, destroyed!

The second <Summoned Cloud>, destroyed!

The third <Summoned Cloud> had about 3,000 HP and surged towards Fatty Han!

“Kill!”

Fatty Han died.

32%, 30%, 29%... Marzerway threw another three <Summoned Cloud>!

The damage output had now been reduced after losing Fatty Han. After destroying the second <Summoned Cloud>, the last <Summoned Cloud> chased after Angel Descend and caused her to be stunned. Before Angel Descend's HP dropped to zero, Little Snow was also stunned!

The party hurriedly killed two of them and caused the strength of the team to dramatically be reduced, since now the main healer died too. The stress of healing was increased to such an extent that the healers could not cope with it anymore!

They barely reduced Marzerway by 4% HP and when Marzerway casted another <Summoned Cloud> for the fourth time, but now the team finally collapsed and was wiped out.

“Little Snow, practice like the 5-man dungeon. You help destroy <Summoned Cloud> as well when the <Summoned Cloud> is casted!” Zhang Yang started to fine tune the strategy at the Graveyard.

“Cheh, there’s no need to wait for your command, I started to destroy them long before!” Little Snow showed an arrogant face to him.

That was a bad news then!

“Noob tank, use that scroll!” Drizzler suggested.

[Magic Scroll: Rising Morale (Level 1)], increase 5% of team damage and lasts for 5 minutes!

Zhang Yang frowned. Aside from the purpose of practicing, he did not wish to use that scroll so fast. But he did consider about the rest of the party other than the original five. The rest of their equipment were not strong enough and they even needed to exploit the extra damage. The only way was to rely on the external force!

“Alright, I will use the scroll when we enter the fourth stage! The other three Hunters must be on alert. When entering the fourth stage, the Hunters just need to use the normal attack and keep the Focus Points and skill cooldowns for the <Summoned Cloud>! <Summoned Cloud> is casted every 30 seconds and every round after we destroy them, the Hunters can attack Marzerway for

about 20 seconds. After that, the Hunters need to keep the Focus Points and skill cooldowns again and wait for the next <Summoned Cloud>!”

“Understood!”

“All right, let’s continue people!”

They resurrected, entered the dungeon, and ate HP recovering snacks again. After a few times of being wiped out, most of the party members already decided not to just rely on the main force but started to put effort into this battle because they felt helpless, miserable and angry. Alongside with the team’s desire to defeat Marzerway, their fighting spirit rose once again and the team’s unity became stronger!

That was good news for Zhang Yang.

# Chapter 87: The Final Beheading

---

The battle started again.

Everything went smoothly as all the teammates paid more attention to their movements and positioning. Even if Little Snow had not been around to act as a homing beacon, most of them hardly repeated their mistakes in dying pointlessly due to ice ring, lava and spikes.

The crucial fourth stage loomed before them in no time!

When Zhang Yang saw Marzerway starting his scripted dialogue, he immediately selected [Magic Scroll: Rising Morale (Level 1)]; and a golden light surged through all of the party members buffing everyone with an effect.

[Rising Morale]: Increases damage and healing effect by 5%, lasts for 5 minutes.

Marzerway cast three <Summoned Cloud> and the ranged attackers changed their target. The three Hunters followed exactly what Zhang Yang told them just now, which to keep the skills out of cooldown and to Focus point. Abruptly, they nuked a great deal of damage and quickly destroyed the first and second <Summoned Cloud>!

The most dangerous was the third <Summoned Cloud>. When it nearly hit one of the teammates with the distance of 1 meter away, “Pa!” the <Summoned Cloud> was successfully struck and broken.

“Hooray!”

“Ha ha!”

“Made it just in time!”

They cheered repeatedly as this was the first time they destroyed all three <Summoned Cloud> without any loss, and certainly it boosted their morale!

“Well done team, maintain the momentum! Come on melees, show us some strength now as the ranged positions already settled <Summoned Cloud> for us. We depend on you guys now to defeat Marzerway!” Zhang Yang smiled and said.

38%, 36%, 34%, Marzerway cast the second wave of <Summoned Cloud> again. The three Hunters already prepared and kept the Focus point and skill cooldown for it. As long as the <Summoned Cloud> was cast, then they would destroy them directly!

Hundred Shots and Fatty Han’s equipment was definitely considered as top level among the current players, thus, they had absolutely amazing nuking power. As long as both of them did no mistakes, it would be unlikely for unexpected incidents to occur when destroying <Summoned Cloud>!

Marzerway’s HP kept dropping after it cast the fourth wave of <Summoned Cloud>, all the way down to 22%!

But at that moment, the unexpected did happen. Both Fatty Han and Hundred Shots, actually missed with their skills at the same time. It delayed their <Summoned Cloud> extermination duties by a whole 3 seconds!

The third <Summoned Cloud> was not destroyed on time. With about 1000HP remaining, it went on and struck Angel Descend!

“Hurry, kill the Spellcaster!”

Spellcasters with low HP stood no chance against assaults from entire parties and it was no different for this one, who was brought to the ground, dead even before he fell.

“Let’s keep the damage output up. When Marzerway’s HP drops by another 2%, we’ll enter the fifth stage!”

Finally.

“Filthy mortals, to actually force me to this point, now I will let you guys experience my real strength!” Marzerway raised its wand and a huge black hole appeared on its back!

Marzerway transformed into its fifth stage and all of <Air Bomb>s suddenly disappeared!

Zhang Yang immediately shouted loudly: “Everyone, drink the

medicine!”

[Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] (Consumable)

Use: Adds 100 Dark Resistance points, lasts for 2 minutes.  
Cooldown time: 2 minutes.

Level Requirement: 10

A casting progress bar appeared on top of Marzerway head, 2 seconds later and it cast the skill. “Whoosh”, twenty-two <Shadow Arrows> shot out from the void of that black hole and hit every living player, including the three Hunter’s pets.

“-200!”

“-200!”

...

“-200” number appeared on all of the teammates head. Except for Zhang Yang and Ironhill, their damages were 160 and 170 respectively.

“Two Priests, please cast <Regeneration> on everyone and heal the Warriors as well. Also, try your best to keep everyone’s

remaining HP at similar levels! Little Snow, keep the <Holy Shield> for those who unable to recover on time! Everyone, gather near Marzerway and when everyone's overall HP is getting too low, I will guard everyone using <Vanguard's Aggression>!" Zhang Yang's tone was shrill with excitement, Marzerway's defeat was getting close!

"Wow, Leader Zhan Yu, this medicine is very powerful, it directly reduces 100 Damage Point from that ridiculous attack!"

"Ha Ha, we can defeat Marzerway for sure!"

"First Clear Achievement, here we come!"

"Strike, strike with all your might!"

Zhang Yang was feeling a little relieved from his otherwise tensed up nervousness, but this was not the time to celebrate yet. He quickly said: "Do not be conceited, we must defeat Marzerway within 150 seconds. Otherwise, the damage of those attacks will be doubled and it'll be all over for us then!"

200 damage per hit sounded somewhat minuscule in the case of this Gray-Silver Boss but it became another matter entirely with the volume of <Shadow Arrows> this thing was releasing! Marzerway would produce <Shadow Arrows> to it's capacity as long as it was not the only being in the area that drew breath, thus, the total damage far exceeded any healing efforts the team could pull off.



Hence, everyone's collective HP was dropping, slowly, but very surely!

18%, 16%, 14% ...

When Marzerway HP dropped to 10%, everyone HP remained at around 300 except for Zhang Yang. He calmly used <Vanguard's Aggression> and contained everyone within its protective barrier.

Although his damage taken increased by a 100%, it was a measly addition of 320, going up from 160. A guardian like him could shrug those blows off like nothing!

Those who stood within the protection barrier, were taking as little as 20 points per <Shadow Arrow>! Little Snow and another three healers hurriedly recovered everyone's HP. In the span of 10 seconds, they were able to get everyone's HP above 50%!

<Vanguard's Aggression> skill was an unexpected, but pleasant surprise as Zhang Yang had previously planned a strategy that would result in most of the party save for a few key DPS members dead by the end of the fight. It was a necessary sacrifice, and it wouldn't have been too difficult to take off the remaining 20000 HP within 150 seconds!

However due to the existence of <Vanguard's Aggression>, all that planning and strategy was for naught (and a good thing too it was)! The final stage of Mazerway's boss subjugation became a walk in the park!

10 seconds later, all of the teammates HP had recovered up to at least 700!

8%, 6%, 4%!

Victory was already in sight!

3%!

2%!

1%!

0%!

“No, No, I will not be defeated, I will not be defeated!” Marzerway roared angrily but it could only helplessly fall to the ground as its body gave way!

Bosses only existed in the game to be killed by the players no matter the grade, be it Celestial or Black-Steel, they were fated to be destroyed!

‘Ding! The party you are in has killed Marzerway! Obtained 52682 EXP (50 points Party Bonus)!’

‘Ding! The party you are in obtained the Marzerway’s Lair: First

Clearance of Main Wing (Hardcore Mode)! This result will be recorded in the First Clearance Hardcore Mode Achievement Board! As the party leader, please key in your team name!

Zhang Yang calmly key in the words “Lone Desert Smoke”, suddenly, the server rapidly made the announcements on the screen with red words!

‘Server Announcement: Party Lone Desert Smoke has successfully obtained First Clearance of Marzerway’s Lair Main Wing (Hardcore Mode)! This result will be recorded in the First Clearance Hardcore Mode Achievement Board (China Server)! Please express our respect to them!’

‘Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu (Party Leader) has successfully obtained First Clearance of Marzerway’s Lair Main Wing (Hardcore Mode! Obtained 10 Gold Coins, 1 Skill Point, 500 Reputation Points across all races in the league and “Hero of White Jade Castle” title!’

‘Server Announcement: Player Ironhill (Party Member) obtained ...’

Since after Zhang Yang and his people got the First Clear Achievement of Front and Middle Wings Hardcore mode and the China server global channel was cheerless. But in this moment, the server kept on announced the First Clear Achievement of Main Wing (Hardcore Mode) and suddenly surprised all the players!

“It is the Lone Desert Smoke gang again!”

“So strong, that is a 20-man dungeon which is much tougher compared to the the previous dungeons!”

“Wow, brother Zhan Yu, be my lover!”

“Is Lone Desert Smoke still recruiting?”

“Damn it, these are the people from the guild in White Jade Castle. Why are you shouting in Tranquil Wind City, they can’t even hear you!”

“...”

The chat channel of Lone Desert Smoke was full of cheers and laughter. The members were ecstatic with joy, as the already great reputation and track record of the guild, attained even greater heights.

Everyone in the dungeon was extremely happy, especially after so many failures in the mission, it only made the taste of victory all the more sweeter!

Zhang Yang sent a private message to Frost Night and said, “Babe, come to our guild!”

“...why should I?!”

“Uh, not many tanks can keep up with your aggro other than myself! It will be agonizing to hold back on your damage output when attacking monsters every single time!” Zhang Yang had to reel her in with another method as she was too rational to fall for the ‘hey we make a great team, we should keep working together’ trick.

“On the other hand, it is impossible for you to defeat me with your current equipment! Your equipment level will never get up to mine if you do not join a regular, strong team for dungeon runs!” Zhang Yang tried to trick her in terms numbers, of statistics based on equipment, “Do you still want to defeat me?”

“Humph! Of course I will!” Frost Night coldly replied.

“Then what are you hesitating about?”

“Hmph, do not think I don’t see what you’re up to! I will join your guild but only until I finally defeat you!”

Zhang Yang was elated beyond words. Guardians naturally held an advantage over thieves - if you knew how to use them. When it comes to both equipment and capabilities we’re almost at the same level! It will be impossible for you to defeat me, you will obediently stay in the guild and join my crusade for Team League!

He sent a guild invitation to Frost Night. Without a blink, she “Accept”ed immediately.

“Welcome!”

“Welcome!”

“Hello, pretty Frost Night!”

Many people in the guild channel started to greet Frost Night.

“Noob tank, ask them to get out of the way, I want to touch the corpse for the loot!” A group of people had surrounded Marzerway’s corpse and Drizzler could hardly find her way to squeeze through.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “All right, everyone steps backwards first and let our “Great Lucky Hands” get our loot!”

Drizzler triumphantly accepted the “Great Lucky Hands” title, unabashed. She started to distribute loots after everyone had stepped backwards. Zhang Yang used Leader’s Distribution for this time so she had to send the equipment one by one to the team channel first. Thus, the equipment would not appear on the teammates’ Control interface and the Dice Roll window would not pop up either.

Unlike the other bosses out in the field, bosses in the dungeon do not drop a jumbo loot at first kills. That was why Marzerway only dropped seven equipment and six of them were Set-equipment, which were the Warrior’s boots, knight’s helmet, Thief’s

breastplate and glove, Hunter's breastplate and Spellcaster's boots.

The other equipment was a shield.

Six equipment were distributed according to the guild's contribution points. Zhang Yang did not compete for the boots with Drizzler but he took the shield.

[Combined Elemental Shield] (Gray-Silver, Shield)

Defense: +200

Vitality: +80

Equipment: <Block> skill level +1.

Level Requirement: 20

Awesome!

# Chapter 88: Mess With Me? I'll Mess With You!

---

The announcement of Lone Desert Smoke's achievement spread abruptly across the entire server. Those who were still in the middle of raiding the same dungeon were devastated!

The entire China server had at least 20 to 30 elite guilds and their own exploration teams had been stranded at the fifth stage of the dungeon. The fifth stage was the last round it was the only remaining obstacle that kept them from the highest glory! But, no matter what they did, they just could not pass that stage!

Most of them had the idea that they were failing their chances due to the lack of strong equipment which led to players being unable to perform at their best. This led them to rely on brute force. The stronger guilds could only fight until the boss was reduced to 10% HP made no progress beyond that.

Perhaps they had thought that was a matter of farming for some stronger equipment, or a matter of the party's class arrangement. But just as they were still cracking their heads for more brilliant ideas, Zhang Yang's guild had claimed the First Clear Achievement.

It could have been dismissed as beginner's luck the first or second time, but when Lone Desert Smoke took the First Clear Achievement for the third time in a row, no one could ever look at them the same way as before!



Lone Desert Smoke, all this while still being dismissed with skepticism, was now being flooded with guild applications! No one dared doubt the capability of this guild any longer! The name Zhan Yu had engraved deeply into everyone's hearts. Every guild master now acknowledged the rise of a new competitor, Zhan Yu's very own Lone Desert Smoke!

...

After equipping the new shield, Zhang Yang HP shot up to 2740 HP and his defense rose similarly to 236! Now, he could leisurely take several hits from a Hardcore boss!

Once the loot was distributed, Zhang Yang brought the team to fight the Hard mode of the Main Wing and collected an additional 6 pieces of Green-Copper equipment for the team. Even though the equipment there were weaker than Gray-Silver, it was still on par as 5-man Hardcore dungeon equipment drops. Furthermore, they were set equipment! The best news was that different tiered equipment could still activate the set equipment effect! For example, if the player was wearing Gray-Silver boots, a Black-Steel helm, and a Green-Copper chest plate, the 3-set equipment effect would still trigger! The only condition was that the equipment had to be in the same set, if the player had collected 5 different tiers of the same equipment set, he could still trigger the set equipment effect!

Among the party members, the little brat was the luckiest. She had gotten a pair of boots from the Hardcore mode and another piece of the set from the Hard mode! She managed to activate the first set equipment effect! Once they had completed the Hard

mode, Zhang Yang disbanded the party and allowed the member to go off on their own. However, he kept his 4 friends close at hand, with the addition of Frost Snow.

“We are going to fight the Skeleton Horse Knight at the Cave of Bones!”

“Aw Yiss! Horsie!” Drizzler leaped and jumped around with joy.

They had headed down to the Cave of Bones yesterday to fight, only to find that none of the bosses on the 5 floors had respawned. Everyone concluded that since the final boss was a Gray-Silver tier, it had effected all the other bosses upon death, and they would respawn at the same time as it does, which was 3 days.

The first time they had raided this cave, they had a tough time. But now, they fought and went down each floor with ease since thanks to their vastly improved equipment. Not to mention, they had a new strong attacker in their team!

However, luck was not on their side this time. After killing 4 bosses from 4 floors, there were no signs of any Shape-Shifting or Magic Scrolls, or even the Indian God Oil! The reason why they could get so many item the previous time was probably because that was the first time the boss died. Now that this was the second time they are fighting, the drop rate must have reduced!

When the party arrived at the fifth floor, Zhang Yang was worried that they might be unable to endure the poison effect of the mist since they did not have the antidote to counter its effects.

But when the party entered the area, there was no such mist whatsoever. The air was clean and fresh. The effect must have been a quest triggered scenario, or else the party would have had to depend on level 50 equipment to fight this boss!

This round, Zhang Yang had brought along his [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], and so the party manage to kill of Shurian with ease. This time, Shurian was as stingy as the upcoming floor boss. It only dropped 3 Gray-Silver equipment which were taken by Drizzler, Little Snow and Frost Night. The body disappeared after all equipment had been distributed.

It was already 2pm by the time they were finished with the Cave of Bones. Zhang Yang disbanded the party and everyone logged out to have their lunch. Zhang Yang logged back in after having a good meal and adequate rest.

As he was strolling in the city, Zhang Yang suddenly recalled the encounter with Humbly Gentleman and his trickery to sabotage his raid.

Hehehe...In that case, time to let him suffer for a bit. Humiliation and regret! Let him suffer in poverty!

Zhang Yang opened his friend list and found that Humbly Gentleman was online. He grinned sinisterly to himself and send a private message.

“Guildmaster Humbly Gentleman! Are you busy right now?”

“My my, it’s the famous Zhan Yu!” He replied swiftly. “Haha! Oh my! I forgot to congratulate you for obtaining another First Clear achievement!”

“Ahahaha! It’s nothing really. It was pure luck, I must admit! Fortune happened to smile upon me!” Zhang Yang sent over the description of the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to him and said, “I was really fortunate to have been able to farm this peculiar item! Without it, I’d have never have been able to get pass the fifth stage of Marzerway!”

Humly Gentleman face was completely drained of color.

Just the day before yesterday, Humbly Gentleman’s guild The Dominator has tried to take on the Hardcore mode of Marzerway’s Lair. They were completely wiped off after 30 seconds into the fifth stage! They had tried many methods. They had tried increasing the healer count in the party but because of the high number of healers in the party, the attacking power was so low that they could not even get through the 4 stages before the final one! The next time, they tried a more conventional arrangement and focused on raw attacking power instead. Still even though they could keep the party alive till the last stage, they still could not kill the boss within 2 minutes. Once the boss cast a huge AOE skill, everyone was killed. The more survivors only meant more death!

No matter how many time they revised their battle plan, the god-like fifth stage was impenetrable!

Now that Humbly Gentleman had seen the potion’s properties, he was completely stunned! If only they had this item as well when

they raided the dungeon, they would have already claimed the First Clear Achievement without cracking their brains for ideas!

WHY! WHY! God damn it! Why is that cheeky brat is so god damned lucky!

Inside, Humbly Gentleman was so angry that he would have punched Zhang Yang in the face if he was standing right in front of him! It took all his will to maintain his composure and say, “Zhan Yu! Let’s make a deal. Could you sell a bunch of these potions to our guild?”

Hmph! I was waiting for you to say that! Zhang Yang purposely delayed his reply. “Guildmaster Humbly Gentleman, I’d only have a few of these left for the next raid. The ingredients for the potion are extremely hard to come by.”

“Haha! The 20-man dungeon would only respawn after 3 days! You would have that much time to farm for the ingredients no?” Humbly Gentleman tried to reason with Zhang Yang. Even though he could not get the First Clear Achievement, he could still be the second guild to clear the dungeon, he could surpass both Crimson Rage and Sky High!

Furthermore, there is always the speed record! If he could gather a bunch of Gray-Silver equipment to strengthen his team, he could easily beat the time record of the 5-man dungeon!

The third reason involved his longer termed planning-he could prepare his guild for the level 30 dungeon First Clear Achievement!

Try raiding the dungeon with a Green-Copper equipment instead of the Gray-Silver equipment. The difference would be heaven and earth!

That was why, no matter how high a price Zhang Yang set, Humbly Gentleman would gladly accept it!

Zhang Yang acted coyly. “Well...since you insist, I could...sell you some! However...the price would be...erhm...”

Humbly Gentleman cursed aloud on his side where Zhang Yang could not hear. Damn! What’s with this dilly dallying?! All you wanted is money right!? Tch!

Even though he wanted to say that out loud, he would have never stoop as lowly as that. He calmed himself down and speak carefully.

“How many bottles do you have there?”

“100!”

Humbly Gentleman started to calculate. With the help of this potion, his guild’s team capability could easily raid the dungeon without much problem! So far, his team consisted of players at around level 22, and it would take about 15 days before he could bring the team’s player level to 30. If they would take 2 days to raise one level.

The dungeon would respawn every 3 days, this would mean at least 5 raids. 100 bottle would be just the right amount!

What a coincidence! Humbly Gentleman smiled with satisfaction and replied Zhang Yang. “Ah. I see. In that case, I like to buy them all!”

Hehehe the number 100 was not just a random thought, Zhang Yang had already predicted Humbly Gentleman going through that exact calculation.

He quickly replied, “Oh no! I can’t just sell them all! The ingredient is just that hard to farm. If I were to sell them all to you, what’s going to happen on my end here?!”

“Hehehe. Your guild had already claimed the First Clear Achievement! You would not need to raid the dungeon anymore now do you?”

There was a short pause in the conversation. Zhang Yang was waiting for him to make the first move.

“I’ll pay 10000 gold for it! 10000 gold! How does that sound?”

“Erhm...10000 gold is just...I mean, money is not a problem...but the ingredients are just too hard to come by!”

“Erhm..2. No! 50000 gold!” Humbly Gentleman grit his teeth till the point that you can actually see some pieces of enamel chipping

off.

“Hm...Very well then...” Zhang Yang pretended to accept the offer with a heavy heart. But on his side, Zhang Yang smiling from ear to ear.

So far, the exchange ratio for gold piece to real-life currency was 1:7, and 50000 gold pieces would cost approximately over 300 thousand dollars! Truthfully, Zhang Yang did not care about the money he was earning from this single trade. That’s because the money he is bound to earn would exceed that amount by the millions when more players begin farming the dungeon for the first set equipment in the game!

Zhang Yang only want to mess with him since he was being such a hypocrite. To think that he would dare name himself Humbly Gentleman when in reality, he was such a jerk.

“Well. I guess I should mail you the item with the fees as well.”

“Alright. Please hurry!”

Zhang Yang closed the deal with Humbly Gentleman and started to search another name and sent a private message to Snow Seeker.

“Guildmaster Snow Seeker, may I interest you with this item?” He posted the item over to her.



After a while, she replied. “At first I was wondering about how you guys manage to survive past the fifth stage of Marzerway. Now that you have sent me this, my question were answered.”

“Haha! You guess right. I was just lucky! So how about it? Would you like to stock up a little?”

“Name your price!” Snow Seeker was alert and straight to the point. She did not try to go around the bush, trying to get to his better side.

“1 gold coin per bottle!”

1 gold coin per bottle was the same price in his previous life. Zhang Yang gave her this offer since he did not want to take advantage of her guild. Since he had already had his fun tormenting his real target, selling 1 bottle for 1 gold would rub additional salt on his wound.

“Alright. I’ll take that offer. How many bottle could you sell?” Snow Seeker was thinking much further than Humbly Gentleman was. Of course there was no doubt that the exploration team would require the potion to raid the dungeon. However, there were also normal players in their guild who could take the potion to raid the Hard or even Normal mode! A guild could have only a certain number of elites, not every player in an elite would be equally strong. The building blocks of a strong guild are the normal players. Without them, the few numbers of elite could not even make up a proper guild!

“1 thousand, 10 thousand, you name it! I have it!” Zhang Yang replied.

“Hahah! Looks like we’ve got ourselves a millionaire over here!” Snow Seeker had already forecasted the probability of his market value. Top guilds would only need this potion when they raid the Hardcore mode, but many regular players around could also buy this potion to raid Hard more or even Normal mode! It’s always better to use the potion since it could lower the difficulty of the dungeon and increase the success rate of conquering the dungeon!

Furthermore, the item was not that expensive. It’s only 1 gold! That would only cost 7 dollars in the real world! You could even have the chance to get yourself a set equipment!

Come on, bro! It’s a set equipment! The game’s first set equipment! You don’t have it? Well, you’re out then!

Besides, normal players made up most of the game’s population! There are almost 40 million players in the entire game! The amount of the players have almost doubled since the server was initially launched! Just White Jade Castle alone had 500 thousand players occupying this city! If each player bought 1 bottle from him, he would have earned 500 thousand gold coins!

One successfully dungeon raid would drop only 6 pieces of set equipment! In a 20-man party, you would need to raid at least 15 to 16 times to have everyone equipped with a full set of the equipment! To have that many potions would cost them at least 80 million gold coins!

Holy smokes! If Snow Seeker did not calculate its probability, she would not have known its impending fortune! Even if the ratio dropped down to an exchange rate of 1:1, Zhang Yang would still earn at least 80 million dollar!

Still, it was just her estimation, there were still other factors that might come into play. For example, the time taken to make a potion. There was a limit to how many Zhang Yang could produce.

“Ahem So, I’ll send you 1 thousand bottles of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion], is that correct?”

“Yes! I’ll pay by mail. Thank you for your hard work Guild master Zhan Yu!”

“Thanks!”

“Bye!”

Humbly Gentleman, you son of a bitch, I’ll see to it that you’ll cry a river by the time you find out that you have been duped!

Zhang Yang searched for another name and sent another private message.

“Hello! Guildmaster Sky Shaman! Are you busy right now...?”

# Chapter 89: Distributor

---

Zhang Yang first sent 1000 bottles to both Snow Seeker of the Crimson Rage and Sky Shaman of the Sky High. After approximately 10 minutes, only did he send 100 bottles to Humbly Gentleman. What that needed to be done has been done. There was nothing he could have done if Crimson Rage or Sky High still somehow manage to fall behind The Dominators.

Anything that could be done for level 20 had been done thoroughly enough. The only thing left was the Hardcore mode speed record! However, Zhang Yang was not keen to obtain that achievement, the reward was not luxurious enough for him!

On the other hand, there's the case where things might get a little dull! If only him alone was responsible for claiming the First Clear Achievement or even the Speed Achievement, there would be no chance for other guild to grab the spotlight. Even the audience would feel bored if Zhang Yang was the only one remaining in the limelight.

There was also another matter. If you don't provide some chances for others, others will not give the chance for you as well! Other guilds might form an alliance solely to take down his guild! Even with his overwhelming ability, he could not fight with everyone! That is why, Zhang Yang prioritized on only getting the First Clear Achievement. The Speed Achievement, was just there for fun, as an optional pursuit. There was no need to make it the top of his priorities!

He called all 4 of his friends to join him in grinding at the

Desolated Ghostly Flatlands. He had already set his goals for the two level 30 dungeons in the Shadowmoon Castle. He already had 5 qualified party members for the 10-man dungeon. He only needed to find 4 more to form the team.

Frost Night rejected the grinding invitation, saying that she had to go back to work.

Zhang Yang could not help but question her ability. This woman worked full-time, how did she even manage to increase her level so rapidly?

Zhang Yang logged in after dinner and formed 3 parties to raid the Bangar Crypt. The other party was led by Ironhills as the main tanker, with Little Snow as the healer. Zhang Yang wanted improve the entire guild's fighting ability. He could not completely depend on his friends to dominate the limelight.

After the dungeon runs, Zhang Yang went back to grind. By 10pm, he had reached level 24 with 91% experience points, almost touching the tip of level 25. He then logged off and went to hang out in the web.

He went on to the official site and found an interesting news!

The American movie company Miramax Studios will collaborate with the game developers Dream Technology to produce an in-game shooting production called "A Knight's Soul"! The script, director, and actors were all already decided and the shooting will start soon!

This particular news had heated up fans of the game. Some comment, while others complaint. Some showed their interest while other expressed the impending failure of the production. There were so many opinions littering the forum!

Zhang Yang only sighed heavily. This event was exactly as it was in his “history”.

“A Knight’s Soul” was the first movie to be produced inside ‘God’s Miracle’. Borrowing the game’s unrivaled realistic scenery and human characters, they had successfully produced a historical movie! The movie was deemed to be very successful because of their exceptional utilization of the elements in the game. The real world ticket profits had exceeded over 700 million USD while the in-game “movie tickets” had reached an astonishing number of 8.8 billion gold coins!

The event only happened 6 months after when the exchange rate dropped to a rate of 1:1. 8.6 billion gold coins could be exchanged for 1.5 billion dollars!

To think that the original production cost was only 2 million USD!

It’s safe to say that “A Knight’s Soul” was not only a successful business expenditure, it was the stepping stone for the entire movie industry as well! After Miramax studios showed their successful profit, other movie producers started to follow their footsteps and begin to move their projects towards ‘God’s Miracle’!

There were countless benefit in producing a movie with 'God's Miracle' but the main advantages are as follows:

### Low Production Cost

You could easily replicate the scenery of earthquakes, crumbling earth crust, explosion scenes, or even Armageddon itself! They could be easily reproduced in the game! On the other hand, actors could have their appearance easily modified to be as handsome or as beautiful as they wanted it to be! Dream Technology could work hand in hand with the producers to replicate any elements of the movies they wanted. They could even manipulate the building structure to be ancient-themed or create an entire post-apocalyptic dystopia, or a streamlined sci-fi skyline! They could also produce unlimited number of NPCs to act as extras! They could literally produce a second earth!

### Realism

While producing a horror movie in real life, some additional expenditures have to be dedicated to the horrifyingly creative and ever-ingenuous death scenes. The acting and effects would have a limit to it. However, in 'God's Miracle', there are no limits! You can kill a person by any means possible! After all, the character would only need to revive after getting killed! After the success of "A Knight's Soul", many movie producers had shifted their projects involving collaborations with 'God's Miracle', putting a large effect onto the society. Jobs like make-up artists, stunt doubles, special effects team and so on lost their jobs! Soon, the democratic country, the people that were mainly effected had

joined together to pass a bill to stop or limit any movie production that involved collaboration with ‘God’s Miracle’. However, their appeal was completely denied. All 14 members of the jury happened to be loyal players of ‘God’s Miracle’.

To watch a movie in ‘God’s Miracle’ is absolutely stunning. The audience could see 360-degree scenery, which is more ‘3D’ than an actual 3D movie!

It did not stop there! More and more industries had their eyes on this game and many had already transferred over! Some of them were publishers, advertisement companies, music record companies and many more! By then, ‘God’s Miracle’ was no longer just a “game”, it had morphed into a super enterprise, giving birth to a whole new world of culture!

That would all happen in just 6 months!

Zhang Yang took another deep breath. The premiere of “A Knight’s Soul” will launch at the same time as the game’s first update. This update would include the launching of the Professional League as well as the implementation of an improved battle system, and many more in one game-changing patch!

Zhang Yang opened his friend list and went to the tab in which he had categorized all his classmates and acquaintances from school. He found that practically all 37 students were online together. 10pm was still considerably early and was the most active time for all night owls.



“...Argh! I’m only level 19! Tomorrow I’m going to raid Marzerway’s Lair!”

“Hey guys! Yesterday, I manage to farm a Green-Copper boots! I’m telling ya! Its damned OP!”

“...”

“Hey! Li Qi just got in! Perfect timing. Ask him to join the Brilliant Star guild, he won’t need to worry about not having equipment anymore!”

“Hey hey. I’m only a member of the 3rd party! There are still 20 over elites on the other group!”

“Eh! Guys! Look! Zhang Yang finally logged in! You little bastard! Graduation day was 100 years ago dude! Why are you only online now!”

Li Shang Yuan was the first person who called out to him. Zhang Yang quickly greet him back.

After Zhang Yang replied, he added, “Yo! Ex-class monitor! Did you play ‘God’s Miracle’?”

“Yeah I did. Awesome game. I’m playing together with my work colleague! Hah! I’d just logged off the game not two minutes ago! You could have met me in the game earlier!”

Li Shang Yuan paused a while and recalled something. “That’s right, didn’t you once say that you wanted to be play the game for a living! So...how are you now?”

Zhang Yang snickered. “Well, I’m still alive. So, that a plus for me! Li Shang Yuan, what city are you in now?”

“Tranquil Wind City, you?”

“I’m in White Jade Castle!” Zhang Yang grinned as he answered, “I could use your help for a thing. Could you do me a favour?”

“Sure! Speak your request!” Li Shang Yuan had always been a straight forward man. He had always been the man to walk the talk. No hesitation!

Zhang Yang nodded his head in satisfaction. He had found the right guy for his to carry out his plans.

“I have here an item that is very popular now in the market. But I could not make much in my city alone. I’m asking you to help me to sell some off in your city as well, as well as gather some ingredients!”

“Hoho! Sure, I’ll help you! Just mail them over to me. Oh, what kind of item is that? How do plan to sell them?”

Zhang Yang replied. “The item is [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. It will increase 100 Shadow resistance. You can sell them off in the auction house for 1 gold each!”

“Zhang Yang! My dear lord! That is just too expensive! 1 gold each!? Bro, when I buy some level 20 skill I would only have about 7 to 8 gold left! I can’t even repair my equipment with this sorry amount that I have!” Li Shang Yuan expressed his doubt.

Zhang Yang only laughed. “It’s alright! Just try and sell the item with that price! It’s fine if the item doesn’t sell But if it does sell well, shall we split the profit 70/30?”

“Haha! This is but minor deal. I’ll follow what you say!”

“Come on man! That amount is huge, not something as minor as you think it is!”

“Urgh...fine! In that case, lets not go with 70/30. You could just pay me with what you see fit!”

Right now, Li Shang Yuan could still not see the amount he was about to make.

“Alright then, I’ll send it over tomorrow!”

Once Tranquil Wing City was dealt with, Zhang Yang proceeded to find more ex-classmates, at the very least, he needed to find those who were close to him or he could trust. One by one, he

asked whether they were playing ‘God’s Miracle’ and which city they are in. After 10 people or so, beside Emerald City, he managed to find “Distributors” for all 6 main cities!

He went around and asked more people but he could not find a single player who was in Emerald City. Zhang Yang scrolled down and check the rest of the student list. Neither of them was close enough for him to bother messaging them individually. He then switched to the public channel and posted. “To all friends that are playing ‘God’s Miracle’, is there anyone who are in Emerald City?”

After a while, there were some replies.

“I’m in the Black Dragon City! Why’d you ask?”

“What’s so special about Emerald City?”

“Zhang Yang! What is your current level!? We are now ranking the Leveling King! So far, Li Shang Yuan ranked first with level 21! Tell us yours!”

...

There were many who replied but none of them was about Emerald City! Zhang Yang could not help but feel disappointed. There were so many people in the beginner village, but why has none of them picked Emerald City!? What’s wrong with it? Does everyone hate the color green now?

“Uhm...I’m in Emerald City!”

Among the chatter, Zhang Yang spotted a tiny little message. Zhang Yang selected the message and found of the person behind the screen was his university lecturer Yu Li! The same person he will have one night stand with 5 years later!

Yu Li had always been “hidden” but she had suddenly revealed herself!

“Woah woah woah! It’s Miss Yu Li!”

“Hi Miss Yu Li!”

“Miss Yu Li! How I’d missed you!”

“Wow! I’d never had thought that even Miss Yu Li would play “God’s Miracle’! What is your IGN?”

Only guys would show such excitement! These bunch of horny guys were the one with the hots for this sexy teacher! She could easily be the illegal “drug” for boys!

# Chapter 90: Infuriated Humbly Gentleman

---

The public channel started to get rowdy when Miss Yu Li revealed her existence. Zhang Yang had to message her privately to avoid unnecessary chatter. “Miss Yu, I’d like your help in selling some stuff in Emerald City!”

“Ok. Sure.”

She only replied back after quite some time. She was probably busy replying those nosy bastards from earlier.

“Zhang Yang, have you found a job yet?” She asked.

Would this stint in “God’s Miracle” count as one? Zhang Yang replied. “I’m still getting myself hooked up with the game. I’m still trying to find some method to earn money here!”

“That won’t do! Little Zhang Yang! You’re wasting the 4 years of time in your university! Yet now you’re wasting your time in this game! Is this how you’re repaying your parents?” Once a teacher, always a teacher. Yu Li immediately started to lecture Zhang Yang about life lessons. Zhang Yang wanted to just press the log out button and be done with it, he was in no mood to put himself through this mental assault. However, for the sake of Emerald City, he had to endure this. It took a while, but Yu Li was finally willing to accept the job, but it was not that simple. She would help Zhang Yang to sell those potion under some ridiculous conditions. If the potion sales were bad, Zhang Yang would have to give up on his ridiculous dreams to be a professional gamer and start

searching for a real job!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily but couldn't help feeling thankful for her lecture. Zhang Yang had never been fond to listen to her life lessons but he knew that Yu Li was only being concerned. The future and well-being of her students was her priority. That is how Yu Li is, and Zhang Yang understood that clearly.

It was extremely beneficial for Yu Li to take this job as one of Zhang Yang's distributor. It was predictable that within the next few days, this potion will be a complete hit in the market around the globe and its profits would exceed the millions. Since Zhang Yang had agreed to share the profit 9:1 with them; with the prospects being that profitable, Yu Li could depend on this pot of gold to avoid becoming what she would be in the future!

However, things got out of hand when not only Yu Li insisted to reject her share of profit, she had also lectured him on his capitalistic ideals, going against her position as a teacher of the society! She also insisted that Zhang Yang stopped forcing her to accept her share or she would not help him sell the potions altogether!

Zhang Yang obediently accepted her conditions. He believed there could be a way for her to make a fortune, regardless.

...

Zhang Yang lingered for a little while more and went to bed after a good relaxing shower. The next morning, Zhang Yang went out

his house to practice his jog-punching, the art of shadowboxing while jogging simultaneously. He logged in at 9am sharp after having his breakfast.

“You stinking piece of shit! You actually dared to cheat me!?”

Zhang Yang logged in and the first thing he saw was Humbly Gentleman’s message. “You f\*cking low-life! Just because you achieved a few bloody Achievements, you think you can do whatever you want?! Who do you think you are! I can simply crush your low ranked guild with a flick of my fingers! Give me back the money you robbed me of, and add another 10000 to that for compensation! Or else, you won’t be able to handle what I’m about to bring down on your house!”

Last night, when Humbly Gentleman had received the 100 bottles of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] and paid the staggering 50000 gold coins to Zhang Yang, he quickly gathered a team and successfully raided the Hardcore mode Main Wing of Marzerway’s Nest!

Humbly Gentleman was delighted. He laughed at Zhang Yang’s short sightedness as he was about to send the recording of his successful raid to Sky High and Crimson Rage to humiliate them! But who knew, before he could send the recording, he had received a news from his spies placed in both rival guilds. Both guilds had successfully raided the Hardcore mode of the dungeon 10 minutes earlier before he did!

Humbly Gentleman was infuriated! He could never believe that both guilds had gotten their hands on the potion recipe and



managed to be one step ahead of him! This must be the act of Zhang Yang!

Greedy little fox! He did not mind the price he paid for the potions but Zhang Yang actually sold the potions to his rivals as well! Humbly Gentleman had offered such a high price in the first place to empty Zhang Yang's stock! This was to ensure that his guild be the first to complete their sets of Gray-Silver set equipment! He could have been ready for the level 30 dungeon raid!

But he was played out like a fool! All 3 guilds were raiding the dungeon in the same time! He had spent so much money for some pointless results! Of course he'd be infuriated at the very least! Furthermore, the money for the potion came from his own personal wallet! He could at least request for reimbursement for the potion if he had been the second guild to successfully raided the dungeon! Now that he was the fourth guild to perform the deed, how could he ask for any reimbursement!?

Zhang Yang merely laughed it off. This guy...could he be asking for a battle to set things straight?

“Guild master Humbly Gentleman! Surely 50000 gold coins is nothing but spare change to a rich gentleman like you!”

“You prick! Give me back my money!” He roared. “If you insist on playing this game, I'll get Sky High as well as Crimson Rage to expose your trickery! Do you think you will be able to endure attacks from us 3 big guilds?”

Humbly Gentleman was under the impression that Zhang Yang had simultaneously cheated all 3 guilds. That was why he wanted to get the two other guilds to be involved in this little skirmish. He wanted to inflict an overwhelming, crushing pressure on Zhang Yang! However, if he only knew that he was the only person Zhang Yang had cheated, the expression on his face could have won “Face of the Year”!

Zhang Yang only shook his head. How could someone as grumpy and ill-tempered as Humbly Gentleman could be the guild master of a future super guild?

“Ehm... If I remembered correctly, I recall that I did not want to sell you the potions in the first place. It was because of your insistent begging that I finally parted with 100 bottles! How could you suddenly push the blame back to me?”

“You...” Humbly Gentleman could not come up with another word. The amount of rage in him was taking his breath away! “Zhan Yu! Are you going to pay me back!?”

“Sky High guild master, there are things that better remain in the dark. Don’t you agree? For example, the case of several hidden Bandits that had ambushed my guild yesterday! I don’t think the gentlemanly guild master of The Dominators would not have planned something like this now would he...”

Humbly Gentleman stunned. How could he have figured it out?

To remain anonymous, Humbly Gentleman had even expelled the Bandits from the guild for their “mission”. He would then recruit them back into the guild once the task was done. Tch! Which cowardly bastard spilled the beans!

“Tch!” His secret exposed, there was no reason for Humbly Gentleman to further involve himself with Zhang Yang anymore. He knew that Zhang Yang would certainly not return his money back. Obviously, it was Zhang Yang’s way of getting back at him! He disconnected his conversation with him abruptly and headed towards the other two guilds to pitch his proposal.

However, what happened next left him even more disappointed. Shy Shaman ended the conversation with his last words being, “F\*cking hypocrite!”

Snow Seeker held the conversation as politely as she could but she did not show any interest in Humbly Gentleman’s idea. Humbly Gentleman could not have been in more despair. Lone Desert Smoke was already on the rise and yet The Dominator was still growing from its seedling. Many old members were still playing other games and had yet to join this one. If they were to initiate a guild war between each other with such a late start, there would be no winners in the end!

As a sponsored guild, they could not initiate a fight with other guilds. They could try and oppose them fair and square but not to the point where he would get hurt! If Humbly Gentleman would forcefully start the war with Zhang Yang’s guild, he could be fired by the sponsors! Currently, there was nothing he can do but lick his own wounds.

Humbly Gentleman could do nothing but clench his fist. He could only wait until every single member of the original The Dominator gathers together to restore the true power of the guild and take down that Lone Desert Smoke!

...

Zhang Yang retrieve the mails he received yesterday and withdrew a total of 52000 gold coins from yesterday's trades. He then proceeded to withdraw stacks of potion from the storage and sent them to the distributors he assigned yesterday. He also put some up at the auction house and sold them for 1 gold each.

Just when the "gang" logged in, Zhang Yang added all of them into his party and raided the Front Wing and Middle Wing Hardcore mode of Marzerway's Lair.

In the middle of the dungeon run, Zhang Yang had received many friend requests from all his university friends. One by one Zhang Yang accepted the friend request and was bombarded with private messages.

"What the hell! You're that Zhan Yu! Seriously!? I see that you're doing quite well huh! 3 consecutive First Clear Achievements, and the first to kill a field boss! Hmph! I'm starting to think that the hidden named player could be you as well!"

"Zhang Yang! Brother Zhang! I'll join you in the near future! Please carry me through dungeons for equipment!"

“Zhang Yang! I also want a First Clear Achievement!”

Zhang Yang ignored most of the messages and focused on the dungeon. After only a brief moment, Li Shang Yuan sent a message.

“Zhang Yang! The potion! They’re all sold out! I sold them for 1 gold each and they were all bought off almost instantly! My god! How could people spend so much money on this potion! What can this miracle potion do?!”

Zhang Yang laughed. The only people who could and would buy the potion were people from exploration parties of big guilds, scouting the Hardcore mode of Marzerway’s Lair. Middle-tiered guilds would buy them for the exploration party of Hard mode only. No matter how good the sales were today, it could not be compared when the game reached its maturity stage where the common players would be the prime consumer of this potion!

Zhang Yang thought for a while and replied, “Haha! That’s great news. Let’s try increasing the price to 2 gold coins per bottle. If the potions are sold off at the same speed, try increasing it even more! Let’s see how far can we raise the price to the market’s limit!”

He remembered that in the future, [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] would be sold at a flat rate of 1 gold per bottle. But that would be in the far future where the game had almost reached its full maturity! So far, with the game being recently launched, the set equipment was as important as gold itself! Besides, there were

no high-level players to help raid the dungeon for the low-level players, so this potion could still have a high profit margin!

Li Shang Yuan snickered on his side. “Hehe. Bro, you sneaky bastard!”

“Hey! When the demand is high, the prices go up!”

Not long after, Zhao Xiao Song, Zhou Zhi Yuan, and more distributors came in with similar reports. Zhang Yang then repeated his suggestion to hike up the prices. When almost all of his distributors had reported to him, Yu Li had yet to report her situation. She also did not send him any friend requests. He did not know whether or not she was online. Zhang Yang had sent a friend request over but she had not responded. He thought that she might still be in class and decided to send a mail to her later when he heads back to the city.

After he was done with the dungeon, he went back to the city and retrieve his mail. The potions that he had sold at the auction house were completely sold out. He had put up a total of 5 stacks of potion and had earned himself 100 gold coins.

Zhang Yang then called Fatty Han over and asked him to sell 100 bottle for him at a rate of 7:3 in terms of profit sharing. Zhang Yang wanted to give Fatty Han a 5:5 rate but he knew Fatty Han would never agree with it. He then settled with 7:3 sharing. However, Fatty Han would still not accept it. After he knew that Zhang Yang had 7 other distributors, he forced Zhang Yang to give him a 9:1 sharing and finally agreed to sell it for him.

He predicted that within 2 to 3 days, the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] sales would reach its peak, until more players reach level 30. With levels on their side, most players could survive Marzerway with ease, thus dropping the sales down a little.

Still, the number of players had yet to reach the game history's peak point. 3 years into the future, there would be around 1 billion players registered in the game. Even though the majority of the players would not waste several days of time and effort raiding their way for the first set equipment, a minority would still go for it! That would still grant him huge profits!

However, when the time comes, Zhang Yang would definitely lose his monopoly. His profits would definitely decline. But with such huge number of players, he would still have consistent sales.

# Chapter 91: Hot Sales

---

“Zhang Yang! I’ve sold all the potions you gave me! Out of the 100 stacks you gave me, I tried selling them at different prices. 6 stacks were sold at 1 gold coins. 3 stacks were sold at 2 gold each, 4 stacks were sold at 3 gold coins each, and most of the potions were sold for 4 gold coins each! I manage to sell only a few bottles for 5 gold each but the number was negligible. Looks like the current market would only be willing to buy the potions for 4 gold coins each! Either way, the total profit was 6714 gold! Motherf\*cker, the auction house 10% service charge is just shitty as hell! Anyway, I followed your instructions and used 100 gold coins to buy [Brassica Weed] and [Ginkgo Flowers]. I’ve taken my part of the profit and have already mailed the rest of the money and ingredients to you!”

“Haha! Zhang Yang! Guess how many potions I managed to sell today? All! All of them I’m telling you! God! I’d never thought that this potion can be so popular! I’d even received a guild invitation from Iron Blood guild officer! They said they would provide me a slot for their exploration party only if I could provide a steady supply of the potion!”

“F\*ck! Zhang Yang, everything is on you the next time we meet! That potion is selling like hotcakes! There were so many guild masters messaging me privately, asking for potions in bulk!”

“Zhang Yang...”

Zhang Yang had received the money and ingredient from every distributor he had assigned. For that one night alone, the sales of the potion was as he predicted. Still, the main purchasing



customers were all mainly from big and medium sized guilds. Majority of the players did not buy much since most of them were still oblivious about the nature dungeon they were bound to face!

After deducting 100 gold from each city distributor for ingredient's purchasing, Zhang Yang had calculated that he would have amassed a total of 48000 gold coins. Add that number with the 50000 gold he had obtained that morning, he would have come close to 100000 gold coins!

The current exchange rate was 1 gold coins to 7 dollars, which means his current savings had reached almost 700000 dollars! Even though the 50000 gold coins he earned was an extra bonus, he could earn even more when the majority of the casual players begins raiding Marzerway's Lair.

The first step was a complete success!

However, it was far from his end-term goal of becoming a billionaire! Luckily, he still had a lot more time to work on it as the market was filled with more chances in the future! It all depended on him making the effort to grab the opportunity!

Zhang Yang had a total of 1400 stacks of potions and today, he had sold more than 800 bottles and sent 500 stacks to his distributors, leaving him with very little stock. He had to start making more!

It takes only 1 second to make one bottle of potion. He could make 60 bottles in 1 minute, which meant only 3600 bottles in an

hour. That's only 180 stacks! When he levels up his crafting level from Beginner to Amateur, the time to make a potion would be reduced by half! Zhang Yang started making potions at 10pm and made 200 stacks of potions for the remaining distributors to sell. After making potions for another hour, Zhang Yang could no longer endure his fatigue any longer and decided to log out and get some sleep.

On his bed, Zhang Yang thought that if he does not sleep and continued to make more potions for the entire night, he could have crafted more than 4000 stacks of potion in a day. This would raise his profit to the roof! Even though 4000 stacks seems a lot, it was only a total of 80000 bottles of potion, this number would only satisfy White Jade City alone in a time of such a sales boom!

Besides, he could not possibly spend the entire day solely on making potion! He needed to make sure he still had time to grind his level as well!

There was a method to help him solve his problem, and that was to raise his Alchemy to Advanced. When a player's Alchemy skill reaches the Advanced level, he could synthesize higher-leveled items and also able to make two items simultaneously!

When the player's crafting skill reaches Professional tier, he could make 4 items at the same time. Specialists could make 6, a Master could make 8, and the Grandmasters could make 10 items in the same time!

So far, it was impossible to reach Professional-tier since there were no high-leveled item recipes in the market. However, there

were Amateur-tiered recipes being sold in the auction house at the moment! Still, there was another problem. The ingredients required to craft any Amateur level recipe item are much more expensive and rare than a Beginner level recipe item. It's extremely arduous to raise 1000 mastery point in order to increase his skill level!

Tomorrow, he would buy himself an Amateur-tiered recipe and focus fully on raising his skill level to Advanced! The clock is ticking, and every single second meant money!

After sleeping through the night, Zhang Yang finally caved in and skipped his morning exercise to saving precious time. He wolfed down his breakfast and logged into the game. At his current level, every second was one bottle of potion and that was worth at least 4 dollars and 28 cents, he could not afford to let that fly!

The moment his character spawned in the city, he quickly ran to the auction house and bought 3 types of Amateur-tiered recipe, retrieved the items at the mailbox, and searched for their ingredients. The 3 recipes were as such - Level 2 Healing Potion, Level 2 Magic Potion, and Level 2 Strength Potion. The ingredients he required were Lily Grass, White Apricot, Vanilla Grass, Love Vine, and Rainbow Orchid.

Zhang Yang search for them one at a time and found out that they were being sold on the auction house but the amount was only a handful, and at a high price too. Zhang Yang wavered for an instance, before steeling himself and emptying the auction house. He went over to the Alchemy Shop and bought a bunch of empty bottles and started to make potions. At a bottle per second, he used

up all of the ingredients to make about 200 bottles of potions! He was still lacking about 800 mastery points to reach Advance-tier!

Zhang Yang opened his friend list and only 3 out of 6 of his distributors were online. (Yu Li was not in the list)

He quickly sent each of them a private message asking them to buy the 5 ingredients that he needed and to mail them back to him as soon as possible.

While they were busy searching for ingredients, he did not waste any time and started to make [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. After 40 minutes, a mail notification rang and Zhang Yang quickly retrieved the mail, collecting all ingredients and making more potions to increase his mastery. Half an hour later, he had again used all the ingredient and made about 700 bottles of potion! He was only a few steps away from becoming an Advance-tier in Alchemy!

Another distributor logged in in the nick of time and Zhang Yang quickly repeated his request. After an hour so or, he managed to raise his mastery and became an Advanced-level Alchemist!

Soon after, Drizzler and the “gang” logged in. Zhang Yang immediately called out to them and asked them to raid dungeons with Ironhills as the tanker. He was too busy making potions to join them!

There was a problem. Everyone was quite used to having Zhang Yang as their main tank, and so, they encountered some problems

with Ironhills tanking. He'd sometimes loses aggro and the worst case scenarios included total party wipeouts. Little Snow made the mistake assuming that Ironhills was as good as Zhang Yang, not healing Ironhills as often as needed. It appears that Ironhills wasn't made of iron and crumbled to the ground repeatedly.

Everyone did not have the guts to criticize Ironhills, but vented their frustrations on Zhang Yang instead. After fighting as hard as they can, they had only managed to successfully raid two dungeons by 1pm. Everyone was already worn out from the strenuous overexertion.

After everyone took a breather and Fatty Han had his lunch, Zhang Yang quickly tugged the latter aside.. First, he gave him 100 stacks of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] to sell them off. Next, he asked him to help him earn combat experience. Zhang Yang would only need to be in the same field making potions, while Fatty Han would kill monsters, sharing the experience points with him.

Fatty Han did no mind to help him at all! It was not because he was earning money from Zhang Yang. Even if there was no benefit in helping Zhang Yang, Fatty Han would still help him out as a brother-in-arms!

As the day ended, Zhang Yang had reached level 25 with 22% experience point, approximately 30% less than he would normally gain by himself.

Although he was losing out in terms of leveling, the same could not be said fortune-wise. Despite his diminished speed of leveling, Zhang Yang managed to make 4500 stacks of [Beginner Anti-

Shadow Potion] when the time was already 11pm. He distributed them to his distributor evenly soon after.

Ever since the sales of yesterday's potion, the market demand had increased significantly. All 8 main cities had bought a total of 250 stacks today. Zhang Yang predicted that within the next 3 days, mainstream players would have surpassed the level 20 bracket and the demand for [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] would be bound to increase even moreso!

The Main Wing dungeon boss would respawn soon. However, on that particular day, Frost Night would be busy with her day job, as are most of the casual guild members. Zhang Yang would have to postpone the dungeon raid and have it later on that night.

When the “gang” finally knew that Zhang Yang had been busy making potions for the past few day, they voluntarily offered their help to raise his level while he made more potions. They first went to Cave of Bones and then massacred the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands. Zhang Yang would only need to help out when they were fighting the boss. At other times, he could fully concentrate on making potions while the party ran around killing monsters for him.

This time, they were lucky enough to obtain a Shape Shifting hat. The little brat claimed the item for herself as she insisted on playing with it. The moment she got hold of it, she changed into a tiger, and then a scorpion, scurrying around happily.

At the end of the day, Zhang Yang's experience bar rose from 22% to 65%. It was still slower than his own speed, but adequate

enough. When night time fell, Zhang Yang gathered 20 players and raided Marzerway's Lair in Hardcore Mode. After suffering defeat twice in a row, Zhang Yang finally used a magic scroll to boost the party's attack power! Only then, did the party successfully take down Marzerway! However, Zhang Yang strongly believed that after the third attempt at farming equipment, the ranged attackers would have an attack upgrade, rendering the scroll unnecessary!

This time, Marzerway was kind enough to warriors! He dropped two warrior equipment - boots and helmet. Since Drizzler had the boots, she only took the helmet. Only one more piece was needed to trigger the first set effect!

[Brave Boots] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +24

Strength: +12

Dexterity: +4

Level requirement: 20

Bravery effect (1/5):

3 set effect: Every time you received an attack, there will be a 50% chance to heal 100 HP.

5 set effect: All damage output increases by 10%

After Zhang Yang equipped the boots, he quickly used the “Indian God Oil” on the boots and increased its movement speed by 5%.

At the end of the day, most of the casual player had reached level 20 and were starting to make their way to the Front Wing and Middle Wing of Marzerway’s Lair. The scramble for the first set equipment was just beginning! The demand for [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] was rising up like Jack’s beanstalk, beyond the clouds, beyond Zhang Yang’s own production capacity! Zhang Yang hated himself for not being able to learn the “Shadow Clone Ninjitsu”. There was no way for him alone to create a supply for this overwhelming demand!

On the other hand, the ingredients for the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] was revealed to the public, causing the respective ingredients to rise in value. Before the uprising, the price of each stack was only 20 silver. Now it had risen to 10 gold coins per stack! However, these two herbs were considered to be extremely common. There were too many of them all around the market. Zhang Yang could lower the price by lowering the demand. His manipulation eventually dropped the prices down to 3 gold coins a stack.

The players who earned their gold coins through herbs made



quite a substantial amount of profit. But their earnings would not even come close to Zhang Yang's. If they were make comparisons, Zhang Yang earning would be like the economy of the entirety of China while those herb sellers would be akin to roadside peddlers.

The herbs Fatty Han had stockpiled long ago was finally making use of itself! He had spent a small fortune buying those herbs. However, with the movement of prices in consideration, it was well worth the investment.

Zhang Yang worked on overdrive and managed squeeze out 5000 stacks of [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]. With the rising cost of production, Zhang Yang was still capable of making around 300000 gold coins a day, which was equivalent of 2 million dollars!

This period of gold falling from the skies would probably last for another 20 days. 20 days would be enough for Zhang Yang to become a multibillionaire!

# Chapter 92: Multimillionaire

---

They arrived at the Cave of Bones in the Desolated Ghostly Flatlands three days later.

“Hey, Idiot Zhan Yu, share the profits with me!” Little Snow put both her hands on her waist, revealing more of her bosoms. Drizzler calmed her down immediately.

“Little Snow, please be a gentlewoman! Be a gentlewoman!”

While making the medicine, Zhang Yang looked up and had a glance of her “assets”. In his mind, he had a thought that time is like a woman’s cleavage; it will appear once squeezed! We against the time, so we have to hurry. We’re going to need to squeeze out more like Little Snow’s cleavage to have enough!

Little Snow caught Zhang Yang looking, and she chuckled while saying, “Is it that nice to look at?”

“Yeah... perfectly rounded, crystal clear and very attractive!” Zhang Yang replied with compliments.

“Pervert!” Drizzler despised Zhang Yang for saying such things, but she enviously gazed at Little Snow’s bosoms too.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, “I was talking about her eyes!”

“Hey, idiot! Don’t try to change the topic! Hurry up and share the profits with me! I looted that Alchemy recipe; the ‘Great Lucky Hands’!”

Little Snow and Drizzler knew that the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] was massively sold in the market these few days were the ones made by Zhang Yang. Being a money grubber and having recalled that she gave the recipe to him, Little Snow felt a deep sense of grief.

“Alright, here’s a reward from me, then!” Zhang Yang traded 54 silver coins to her.

“Damn you, Zhan Yu! Are you trying to challenge me?!” Little Snow hummed. She scammed him of 54 gold coins before; what a stingy guy!

“To be honest, Zhan Yu really picked up a goldmine this time!” Hundred Shots smiled broadly. From his expression, he showed how happy he was for Zhang Yang without any sense of jealousy in mind.

Drizzler could not help but to ask, “Noob tank, how much gold coins have you actually earned?”

Zhang Yang did not want to hide from them and gave his honest answer. “It wasn’t selling well for the past few days, but it started selling out two days ago and after deducting the profit sharing and commissions, I could earn 300,000 gold coins in a day!” With the majority of normal players rushing to Level 20, Zhang Yang’s asset

greatly rose to 6 million in just these three days.

“According to my calculations, before most players could even achieve Level 30, this idiot here could earn nearly 40 million!” Little Snow was quite shocked as it was not a small amount for her; even more so having earned it within a month!

At this point, even Fatty Han could not help to speak out despite being quite the quiet one in front of a crowd, “Lovely Little Snow, why don’t you follow our Little Yang and be the wife of a multimillionaire?”

But Fatty Han earned some from it as well. With Zhang Yang having seven “distributor” friends and Fatty being his best friend, how could Zhang Yang not share the profit with him? Half of the overall amount of medicine were sold in White Jade Castle and the other half in the other seven main cities, and they shared 10 percent of the profit. Fatty earned the most as he had a net profit of nearly 50,000 gold coins within these three days, equaling to 300,000 to 400,000 dollars!

“Tch!” Drizzler immediately pursed her lips with utter disdain. “40 million is just a small amount. My cousin’s assets are-”

“Drizzler!” Little Snow chided loudly before Drilzler continued talking loudly.

Though they did not get to know how much her assets were worth, they could guess from Drizzler’s tone that it would definitely be more than 40 million; far more than 40 million!

Zhang Yang's curiosity increased and wondered, didn't I meet another person like Lin Yu with hundreds of millions worth of assets, being a daughter of a rich family as well?

"Idiot Zhan Yu, the profit sharing is not necessary now but you have to treat me a meal!" Little Snow was still unwilling to forgive him.

"Good! Treat us a meal!" Drizzler's eyes shone.

Zhang Yang was left helpless. These cousins could be filthy rich, but they're still trying to swindle money out of me? Aren't these money-grubbers being a little too stingy?

"Fine, where shall we eat?" Zhang Yang just simply promised them. Even though the money was important, he realized that adequate relaxation was necessary, not to overwork himself. There would definitely be more business opportunities in 'God's Miracle' in the future.

"Blue Sky Pub!"

Zhang Yang frowned. "Pub?"

"Why? What's the problem with that place?" Little Snow's beautiful eyes widened.

“Nothing. I just never thought you ladies would like going to pubs!”

“Hehe!” Drizzler smiled and interrupted. “Actually, I’m the one who wants to witness a pub! But we heard that a pub is not safe at times, so we want you, the strong young man, to bring us there!”

“Aren’t you afraid that I could be a bad guy?”

“After a few days of observation, Little Snow and I decided that you’re reliable, and not despicable and rotten to the core like some Fatty!” Drizzler blurted out, completely disregarding if Fatty was even there or not.

Fatty Han suddenly cried out, throwing himself to Zhang Yang’s leg and said, “Little Yang, you’re the one who led me astray! When we were four years old, you brought me into those female bathing rooms and my boner was as hard as a rock looking at those aunties! My God!”

Hundred Shots shot his arrow aside, laughed maniacally and said, “Fatty, I never thought that you’d have such a tragic life experience!”

“Fatty Shit, I warn you! You’re not allowed to talk dirty in front of Drizzler anymore!” Little Snow was very serious about this.

Zhang Yang shook his head. “Children nowadays have been corrupted by bad examples on the internet even before we do.

What things are there that they do not understand?”

“Hmph, he’s still not allowed to talk dirty!” Little Snow said arrogantly.

Drizzler stood behind Little Snow and responded, “Yes, that’s right and you guys should not pollute a clean and pure soul!”

“Hey, I’ve been feeling that something’s not right here!” Zhang Yang suddenly said.

“Is there something not right?”

“How many of us are here actually?”

“Five!”

“Wrong, it’s six!”

Zhang Yang and the four of them looked at the sixth person simultaneously; Frost Night. This cool woman kept her mouth shut, being stern and not bothered about their talking or joking around. However, she was not distrusted by them and cruelly killed the monsters which then scattered to pieces.

“Noob tank. She’s really not an NPC?” Drizzler gazed in awe at Frost Night’s back, because she herself could die if she did not speak for a long time!

“No, she’s not, and she’s just a little cool, okay?”

“Tch, she still looks like an NPC, regardless. Other than that, she could be a robot! Beep boop. I am robot No. 6870. Requesting orders.” Drizzler imitated the tone of a robot and spoke word for word.

Zhang Yang laughed, turned around and said, “Robot No. 68\0, come massage your master’s back!”

“Go to hell!”

“By the way, what time are we going to the pub?”

“We’ll go after killing Marzerway!”

“Too bad I can’t join since I can’t come over from Yanjing!” Hundred Shots regrettably said.

Fatty Han tapped on Hundred Shots’ shoulder, “Haha! Hundred Shots, you already have a wife and son and you still want to court a lonely young woman in a pub? Harmony is important!”

In the midst of talking and laughing, they carried forward the fight. Zhang Yang continued to make the medicine while the rest were left to kill the monsters. He would only stop making medicine if he had to perform his role as a tank when facing a boss. They



were fortunate enough after successfully after defeating all four stages of bosses to get a [Transform Hat] and a scroll!

### [Magic Scroll: Weakness (Level 1)]

Use: Use [Weakness (Level 1)] on target, causing the target's damage and healing effects to be reduced by 10% and lasts for 60 seconds. This effect cannot be stacked together with any other similar type of effects. The bigger the gap between your level and target's level, the higher the failure rate of this magic effect.

Level Requirement: 20

This is a good item! Zhang Yang praised the item in his heart and kept it into his inventory.

After killing Shurian, the team looted a [Chaos Gem] and Zhang Yang successfully obtained it with 99 points from the dice roll. After using the gem, his inventory space was extended by 50 slots, slightly relieving his worry for inventory spaces.

‘Server announcement: Sword and Fire Mercenary successfully broke the new ranking of Fastest Marzerway's Lair, Front Wing (Hardcore mode) Clearance. This glorious achievement will be recorded in the Fastest Hardcore Clearance Ranking Board (China Server) and please congratulate them!’

‘Server announcement: Player Dominating Blade (Party Leader) broke the new ranking of Fastest Marzerway’s Lair, Front Wing (Hardcore mode) Clearance. Obtained 10 gold coins, 1 piece of [Level 2 Gemstone] and 250 Reputation Points across all races in the league are awarded from the system reward!’

‘Server announcement: Player 44 Bandit (Party Member) broke the new ranking...’

At that moment, the world channel was once again filled nonstop with the server announcement’s red texts!

Drizzler stuck her tongue out and said, “Sword and Fire Mercenary, they’re so powerful!”

Hundred Shots looked to Zhang Yang, “Their result was 17 minutes and 34 seconds! What do you think about their speed?”

Zhang Yang gently frowned. The duration set by the system for the Fastest Hardcore Mode Clearance was 220 minutes. Even if the “Trash” mercenaries shortened the duration record by 2 minutes, under the limited situations, it was still commendable if anyone could take it down even a second further!

They were indeed the famous team in the previous life! They almost took up all the 5-man and 10-man dungeons’ First Clear Achievement. If it were not for having insufficient manpower, they would have taken up the 20-man and 50-man dungeons’ First

Clear Achievement as well! In this life, Zhang Yang foresaw this predicament and grabbed all the current First Clear Achievement for the dungeons, which led the elite team to begin raiding the dungeons for the Fastest Clear Achievement!

“It’s still okay!” Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, “If we’ve prepared sufficiently and adjusted our class’ positions wisely, I bet we can make it under 15 minutes!”

‘Server announcement: Sword and Fire Mercenary successfully broke the new ranking of Fastest Marzerway’s Lair, Middle Wing (Hardcore mode) Clearance. This glorious achievement will be recorded in the Fastest Hardcore Clearance Ranking Board (China Server) and please congratulate them!’

‘Server announcement: Player Floating Up (Party Leader) broke the new ranking of Fastest Marzerway’s Lair, Middle Wing (Hardcore mode) Clearance. Obtained 10 Gold Coins, 1 piece of [Level 2 Gemstone] and 250 Reputation points across all races in the league are awarded from the system reward!’

‘...’

In another few minutes, the world channel began to fill up once again with the server announcement’s red texts!

“Now they’re the opponents!” Hundred Shots gasped in shock.

Zhang Yang frowned once more. Lone Desert Smoke was definitely stronger than Sword and Fire Mercenary in terms of capability for the 5-man team, but they had ten members who were able to fight, and Lone Desert Smoke could not be stronger than them in terms of teamwork strength! Aside from that, Zhang Yang only had six members including Frost Night and still lacked four more members that were able to fight!

Another two Level 30 dungeons were 10-man dungeons and the current situations was against their odds! Besides, the bosses in those dungeons were different from Marzerway, not being able to be killed by any particular items or medicines only and the players would need to kill the boss “fairly”!

The competitive pressure suddenly grew!

## Chapter 93: The Pub

---

“Guild Master, the people of Sword and Fire Mercenary just filled a screen of red texts in the Capital. They wanted to challenge you to their Fastest Hardcore Clear Ranking and gloat at us!” Someone spoke out in the guild channel. With everyone talking at the same time, it was hard to get the content of the message. The person then sent a private message to Zhang Yang and repeated what they said.

Zhang Yang delivered the message to his party members and it sparked anger in all of them.

“What the hell! They think they’re so strong for breaking the new ranking? They’re just following our steps!” Fatty Han spoke angrily.

“Hey, noob tank! This is intolerable. We have to break the new ranking and show it to them!” Drizzler chipped in as well.

“Okay! After killing Marzerway and looting some equipment set, I’ll study the strategy tonight and we’ll break the new ranking tomorrow morning!”

The 20-man Main Wing dungeon raid started at 7:00pm sharp. With the party members’ equipment and their skillful fighting style, they successfully killed Marzerway without using their magic scrolls and looted two Warrior equipment set along with a two-handed weapon.

Both of the Warrior equipment set were chest plates that could only be used by Zhang Yang and Drizzler. Aside from that, Drizzler also owned a two-handed weapon and she could finally challenge up to Zhang Yang's damage.

[Brave Chest Plate] (Gray-Silver, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +12

Vitality: +48

Strength: +24

Dexterity: +8

Level Requirement: 20

Brave Set Equipment (2/5)

[Hammer of the Fallen Knight] (Gray-Silver, Two-handed Hammer)

Weapon Attack: 343-405

Attack Interval: 3.6 seconds

DPS: 104

Equipment: Each attack has a 5% chance to make the target dizzy for 1 second.

Level Requirement: 20

After clearing the Hardcore Mode, Zhang Yang did not continue with Marzerway but told Ironhill to train the guild members that can fight by leading them into a dungeon raid.

Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, Drizzler and Little Snow then disconnected from the game and met up at Blue Sky Pub as promised.

Zhang Yang was waiting at the residential area's entrance for a while when he saw Fatty Han coming over. They tried to grab a taxi but most drivers dared not to stop their car after seeing Fatty Han's body size in fear of him damaging their cars.

Fatty Han got upset and yelled loudly, even showing his middle finger to those that drove away.

Finally, after ten taxis later, a kind taxi driver appeared and was willing to pick them up.

“Fatty, you should lose some weight!” Zhang Yang placed the back of his palm onto his forehead and sighed with relief.

Fatty Han refused without thinking twice. “How can I lose weight? This is my signature! Besides, after losing weight, how can you still address me as Fatty? It’ll be so awkward!”

“Fine, but if you still continue to gain weight, which girl will dare to be your girlfriend?”

Fatty Han’s face turned gloomy. It was actually alright to be a little fat, but it was really rare to see someone his size!

Suzhou city was not too big, and so long there was no traffic jams, they could arrive at any corner of the city in just 20 minutes. They soon reached Blue Sky Pub’s entrance after.

They paid the taxi fare and then walked into the pub. Zhang Yang phoned up Drizzler and Little Snow using his cellphone. Drizzler gave him her number in case they could not recognize each other but warned him not to let Fatty Han have her number. How could he do that, when Fatty Han already grabbed his cellphone and recorded the number when they were already in the taxi?

The call got through but they informed that they would be coming out a while later as they were still picking clothes.

The guys went on to have a seat first and ordered beer.



After a while, a pretty girl with sexy long legs came over with the beers. “Hey, handsome guy. First time here? I don’t think I’ve seen you before!” Dressed in a miniskirt, black silk stockings, high heels and a sleeveless garment, she revealed her plump bosom and her flattened, fat-free belly. Not perfect, but her beauty was pretty above average.

Fatty Han immediately went into his “wolf mode”, drooling and staring at her legs.

“Hehe, it is our first time here!” Zhang Yang nodded his head and acted natural to avoid any awkwardness. It really was his first time here, but in his previous life, he often visited the pub before he settled down on his feelings. Besides, many lonely young women and urban white-collared ladies were swooning over him for his sturdy, muscular physique and handsome look. It was safe to say he had no stage fright at all at this point.

The gorgeous waitress served Zhang Yang with a sweet smile, then twisted her curves and plump booty and walked back to the bar.

“Little Yang, you have all the luck to be adored by a pretty girl! She’s definitely attracted to you! As long as you wanted to, you could definitely ‘have fun’ tonight!” Fatty Han was really envious.

Zhang Yang laughed. “No! Fatty, aren’t you falling in love with Liu Jing?”

“Damn it, it was a long time ago! I’ve already broken up with that money-minded lady long time ago! Hehe, however, she was an expert at giving head and I’ve been yearning for it for quite some time!” Fatty Han spoke with a look of reminiscing the past.

“Hahaha!” Zhang Yang could not help it and laughed even louder. “I sympathize her for searching for such a small bug under a pile of fats. Her vision was definitely 20-20!”

“F\*ck off!”

After a breath of fragrance swung over, the long-legged waitress came over again and walked over to their table side. She quietly delivered him a small note and used her plump booty to gently rub Zhang Yang’s arm and she twisted away once more.

“Wow, holy shit!” Fatty Han immediately grabbed the small note and read, “‘I’m off work at 11:00pm, wait for me!’ Damn, Little Yang, I curse you have a rapid cum and can’t get it up after!”

Zhang Yang could only laugh again. “Fatty Shit, you’re jealous of me!”

“Damn, it’s the first time I realized you have the potential to be a gigolo! Fine, I’ll be your manager and I’ll get you some rich women as your customers!” Fatty Han is pretty evil!

They finished the beers between jokes but Drizzler and Little Snow still have not shown up yet. Zhang Yang rang them up again

and they were finally heading over.

“Let me go!”

A light yell came from behind them, so Zhang Yang and Fatty Han turned around and saw the long-legged waitress' wrist being clutched by a frivolously behaved young man at the next table accompanied by three other young men with tattoos all over their body.

“B\*tch, you think you could just walk away after splashing beer on our Brother Hair?” A young man sat cross-legged, smoking cigarette in his mouth and his eyes were staring at the waitress' assets.

The young man that was clutching on her wrist suddenly reached out his other hand and slapped her behind which made a loud, crisp sound. He laughed evilly and said, “What are you pretending for? I'm touching your ass, what can you do about it? If you're daring enough, splash beer on me again! You look like a b\*tch, and you still want to pretend to be innocent? Believe it or not, I'll rape you here and now!”

“Hahaha!” The four men laughed coldly and one of them said, “Brother Hair, how does it feel?”

“Tender and elastic. It feels awesome!” Brother Hair, still holding her wrist placed his hand that he used to slap at his nose to sniff said, “It's still fragrant! Damn, it even has a lewd smell!”

“Hahaha!”

The waitress was anxious and splashed beer on him when he was harassing her. However, she knew she could not afford to offend them, so she had to endure the humiliation and humbly asked, “Brother Hair, you’re an open-minded person. Please forgive me!”

“Fine!” Brother Hair waved his hand and a young man immediately delivered a glass of liquor to him. He gave it to her and said, “Finish up this glass of liquor and I’ll forgive you!”

The waitress was powerless. She held up the liquor and slightly hesitated before drinking it. Facing upward, she drank the entire glass; liquor passing through her throat and causing her to choke and cough nonstop! She turned the cup upside down and said, “Brother Hair, satisfied now?”

“Haha!” Brother Hair pulled her closer forcefully, and not being able to stand straight anymore, she fell into his embrace. She wanted to struggle but her limbs had no more strength. She wanted to yell, but she could not make a single sound! She was entering a nightmare, having only to see and hear but she could not talk or move like a puppet.

There must be something wrong with that glass of liquor, she thought. Since she served the liquor to them, they must have spiked it with some drug before serving her glass!

As she thought about what the four young men were about to do to her, her heart felt hurt as she could not even more not speak.

She could only feebly turn her eyes elsewhere.

“Now, now, sister, you should not drink so much liquor as you can’t hold your alcohol! Look at you, you’re so drunk now!” Brother Hair hugged her, pretending to be caring and loudly said, “Let’s go home!”

The four of them hugged and supported the waitress with their hands and walked out of the pub. They acted natural to avoid suspicion as it was normal for people to be drunk in a pub.

As soon as they got out, they held the long-legged waitress into a dark alley.

“Brother Hair, are we not going back?”

“Let’s have fun first. I can’t wait anymore, I want to blow my load first!”

“Brother Hair, this lady’s shape is fine. Long legs, plump bosom and a curvy ass. It’ll definitely feel good to have sex with her!”

“What are you worried about? After me, everyone gets a chance to try!”

The four of them went into the dark alley and put the waitress on a trash can and tore off her clothes.

“Oh, if everyone gets a chance, then both of us should have joined you guys!”

A mocking tone came from behind them and the four of them were shocked.

Brother Hair turned around immediately, and under the dim street light he saw a huge fat guy standing there with his hands crossed at his chest. He also vaguely saw a stout shadow standing behind the huge body.

Just the two of them? Brother Hair and his people were less worried having only saw the two of them. One of the young men walked towards them and said, “You could live longer if you don’t butt your nose into other people’s business. You better get the hell out of here!”

The huge fat guy was Han Guang. He grinned and could roughly see the agitated eyes of the beautiful waitress through the group. “When I was still a gangster, you guys were still playing with the dirt in the playground! It’s been a long time since I’ve last done street fighting. How about this, I break a leg of each one of you and make it an exercise for my own bones!”

## Chapter 94: Two Ladies' Arrival

---

“Shit, the fatty is insulting us!” A young man took out a long iron bar from his back and started to act like a hero, and he charged towards Fatty Han’s direction. “I’m going to kill you!”

Fatty Han lightly stepped aside and the iron bar struck his arm. He grinned as if the iron did not hit him at all! As Fatty Han mentioned before, due to the fats in his entire body, he could not feel any pain in fights!

The young man was left helpless and stunned. Fatty Han lifted his foot and stepped on the young man’s foot. “AH!” He suddenly uttered a painful cry, dropping the iron bar onto the floor. He began rolling around on the ground with both his hands hugging his foot. It could be broken as it was obviously bent!

The other three young men panicked and were frightened when they saw Fatty Han’s fierce and violent side. Brother Hair pretended to be courageous and said, “You... we’re the gang under Brother Ma. Do you dare offend Brother Ma?”

“Damn you, be it Brother Ma, or Brother Cow, I’ll beat anyone as soon as I see any of you!” Fatty Han charged at them like a huge bulldozer, rapidly rolling in and crushing three of them forcefully, easily breaking another three more feet!

All of a sudden, the four men in the alley were hugging their injured feet, wailing in sorrow with tears flowing from their eyes.

“Look at you guys, so useless!” Fatty Han’s face showed disappointment. “In my years, I broke two of my ribs and still continued fighting with the people. It’s only a small matter if your leg broke!”

Zhang Yang then spoke, Fatty, go get a taxi. Find a hotel room and settle this lady down first!”

Fatty Han nodded his head, carried the long-legged waitress and said, “Don’t worry, I’m a good guy! I’ll bring you to a hotel room and I’ll wait for you to wake up from the drug effect first!”

“Haha! Usually it’s the girl that decides whether you’re good or not but you actually gave yourself the ‘good guy’ title. Yeah, that’s really unusual!” Zhang Yang smiled and said.

“Scram!”

Fatty Han did not delay any more time and took the taxi with the waitress and left the pub. Zhang Yang laughed and went back in.

He intentionally let him personally appear and settle the hooligans to let the lady have a sense of gratitude towards Fatty Han! He knew if Fatty Han liked her as well, they were best buddies and he was thinking for the sake of Fatty Han’s happiness.

If Fatty Han had any great ability, Zhang Yang thought that he could “roll” on the bed with her tonight! But having Zhang Yang imagining Fatty Han’s super plump body covering the whole bed,



he could not help but to spit and say, “Oh my god, so bad luck!”

“Beep! Beep! Beep!”

His cell phone was ringing and he then picked it up. Drizzler and Little Snow finally arrived and were waiting for him at the entrance of the pub.

When Zhang Yang stepped out, he saw two pretty girls standing at the entrance! One of them was mature and curvaceous, and she looked to be about 23 or 24 years of age. Dressed in her black skirt that accentuated her slender legs, curved booty, and slim waist that matched her 36E bosom, she was even more soul-stirring!

Her perfect and refined facial features that had beautiful eyes and lips that were flame-red were very sexy!

The little pretty girl looked like she was 16 or 17 years old with her innocent face. Though she was pretty, her skinny body did not really make her special as compared with the matured one.

They held beautiful and luxury handbags; Gucci and Chanel respectively.

Zhang Yang walked near to them and heard the little one talking on the phone, “Noob tank, are you out yet? Are you out yet? Are you out yet?” She asked over and over again and laughed nonstop.

Zhang Yang to her back but kept his mouth shut and stood there

with his hands crossed. The mature girl noticed and glanced at him but she never thought that he was the “noob tank” that they were searching for, so she just smiled and not nudge the little girl about it.

“Noob tank, noob tank, noob tank!” The girl started to sing while she was calling him.

Zhang Yang shook his head and laughed. He placed his cellphone to her ear.

The little girl was stunned at first and pursed her lips when she realized that something was not right. 10 seconds later, she jumped, turned around and stared at Zhang Yang.

“Eh, you’re the noob tank?” She scanned Zhang Yang from top to bottom.

Zhang Yang sighed and said with a ridiculing tone, “You little brat, it’s not easy to raise you! You actually did not get abducted!”

“Idiot tank!” The pretty little girl got arrogant and said, “Let me re-introduce, my name is Wei Yan Er, and this me my cousin, Han Yin Xue!”

It was no longer a secret that her name was Han Yin Xue, because whenever the little bray was angry with Little Snow, she would grit her teeth and shout her actual name. Even though Zhang Yang had long ago guessed that Han Yin Xue might her appearance to

appear somewhat ordinary, he never thought that she could be so gorgeous when meeting in person!

“My name is Zhang Yang, also called Zhan Yu, and noob tank!” Zhang Yang laughed.

“Let’s go! Let’s go in! I want to have a look at the pub!” Wei Yan Er was cheerful and full of energy. She pulled Han Yin Xue’s sleeve and walked in.

“You little brat, don’t pull me so hard! What if the sleeve tore off?” Han Yin Xue immediately exclaimed.

“Hehe!”

The three of them walked in, and the two girls, especially Han Yin Xue, attracted all the men’s attention regardless of whether they took a quick look or just ogled at her.

Han Yin Xue ordered a martini, Zhang Yang got a beer and Wei Yan Er was just drinking a Sprite with a straw. She wanted to actually try alcohol but Han Yin Xue stopped her so she got upset and ignored them both.

While Zhang Yang and Han Yin Xue chatted for a while, a man could not bear with her prettiness that he came over and tried to strike up a conversation with her. She generally refused him by saying Zhang Yang was her boyfriend. Another guy came over and tried to chat up Wei Yan Er this time, but she was cunning as well.

She used Zhang Yang as her “boyfriend” to deter them. The rejected men glared at Zhang Yang with envious and jealous eyes. In their mind, they were probably thinking, brother, you’re too greedy. You already have such an enticing girl and you still want to have the little one? You’re so voracious to have two girls at the same time! I curse for you not to be able to get it up!

“You girls are so cruel! I bet if I walk out of the pub now, I’m going to be pounced on by the other men!” Zhang Yang laughed. “Did you two do it on purpose?”

Han Yin Xue and Wei Yan Er laughed like a blossomed flower.

After their conversation, Zhang Yang knew that Han Yin Xue was a top student that just came back from UK, studying Business Management and she was currently unemployed, resting at home. Wei Yan Er was just an ordinary high school girl on her summer holiday so she came over to stay at her cousin’s place.

As they talked, joked, and laughed, more single people visited the pub to spend their lonely night at about 10:00pm, and the atmosphere of became more uncertain. Han Yin Xue was worried that Wei Yan Er would follow the bad examples so she insisted on them heading home.

But Han Yin Xue could not hold her liquor at all, and her footsteps were not steady anymore. When Zhang Yang saw that she was almost drunk and her insisting on driving home, he stopped them in case they would get into an accident because of this!

It was no wonder Zhang Yang never heard of these two girls' name in his previous life. Perhaps this pitiful little brat died due to her cousin!

“Little brat, do you know how to drive?” Zhang Yang asked.

Wei Yan Er shook her head. “My dad didn’t allow me to learn driving yet!”

Zhang Yang sighed, and said, “Hey, drunk girl, go and sit at the back. I’ll send both of you home!”

Han Yin Xue’s cheeks turned red, making her even more attractive than before. She squinted her lovely eyes, laughed foolishly and said, “Stupid guy, are you trying to get a chance to go to our house? Yan Er, get the pepper spray and use it on him!”

“Yes!” Wei Yan Er was always spirited when it came to monkey businesses like this. She immediately took out the pepper spray from Han Yin Xue’s handbag and triumphantly waving it in front of Zhang Yang.

Looking at her, he said, “Little brat, think carefully. If she drives while being drunk, you girls might hit into an electric pole! It’s okay if a girl dies on the spot, but what if she hit her face and became disfigured like this...” Zhang Yang pulled his cheek and made a contorted expression. Shocked, Wei Yan Er suddenly threw the pepper spray on the ground.

“Cousin, I command you to sit at the back immediately!”

“Hey, sunny side-up, you’re brave now, huh? How can you talk to me like that?” Han Yin Xue was inebriated as she reached out to pinch Wei Yan Er’s face.

“Han Yin Xue, go to hell! You’re such a cow, how can you be so heavy?!” Wei Yan Er tried to move Han Yin Xue directly into the back seat but it was exhausting to do so.

Zhang Yang shook his head and opened the car’s back door. “Let me move her to the back!” He directly pulled Han Yin Xue from the driver’s seat to the back and closed the door.

He then drove the car skillfully and headed for their home.

In his previous life, he bought a luxury car that was the same brand as the one he was now driving and it was his precious. After so many days of not driving, made him miss his car even more.

Zhang Yang stopped under a residential building that was 30 stories high. Wei Yan Er helped Han Yin Xue out from the car and into the residential building.

“Yan Er, let’s scare people with some ghost make up!” Han Yin Xue laughed foolishly.

Wei Yan Er's eyes radiated. "Let's go! Let's change our clothes first!"

Zhang Yang thought of leaving as soon as he sent them home, but hearing what they just said made him think that they would be coming out once again to be up to no good. Zhang Yang merely found a spot and stood there to see what they would do.

After a while, the two girls were dressed in white, head with disheveled hair and ghostly make-up on their face. From the pretty face they once had, it was now pale white.

They laughed foolishly and guarded the entrance of the elevator.

"Ding!"

As the elevator door opened, a rich lady in her 30's walked out, holding her Chihuahua. The two fluttered to her side, slowly turning their head and looked at her with their eyeballs rolled upward, only showing the whites of their eyes!

"Oh my god!" The rich lady was terrified. Shocked, she threw her pet dog upwards and ran back into the elevator, frantically pressing the button. "Pa! Pa! Pa!"

The Chihuahua somersaulted a couple of times before landing and ran back into the elevator as well, barking at the girls. "Bark! Bark! Bark!"

Han Yin Xue and Wei Yan Er were laughing uncontrollably.

But Zhang Yang was bored and started counting the number of people that were surprised by these two. Within half an hour, there were already eleven people frightened back into the elevator!



# Chapter 95: Not Afraid Of Ghosts

---

Zhang Yang had just about enough. Just when he finally decided to leave, the door of the elevator opened and the two troublemakers hopped out again.

A policewoman walked out of the door, glanced at them, and moved on as if nothing had happened.

The two girls did not like her reaction, and they tried to move in closer to her. Wei Yan Er was dressed as a zombie, and she reached both her hands out to grab the policewoman's shoulder.

Swoosh! Pak!

The policewoman swiftly turned around and caught her hand before Wei Yan Er could make any contact. She locked her shoulder and flipped her off her feet, causing her to fall onto the ground hard.

“Argh...” The little brat was tears. Her hand rubbed her painful butt. Her cute and happy little expression was now replaced with a painful one. Tears flowed down her cheek, removing a part of her thick make-up.

“Hmph! Dressing like a ghost in the middle of the night! You’re disturbing the residents who live here!” The policewomen scoffed coldly and took out a pair of handcuffs. “I’ll just bring you to the police station!”

“Hold up there!” Zhang Yang quickly stepped in. “Excuse me, officer! They’re just playing around. They don’t mean any harm to anyone! Try to reason with them! Maybe they just went slightly overboard!”

“Hmph! She was about to assault a poli-” She raised her head. Zhang Yang and her finally met face to face. She was completely stunned when they saw each other.

He was the man that had defeated me in the alley! Not to mention, he... he... grabbed...

She was the policewoman that Zhang Yang met when he encountered the scammers in the streets! The beautiful and sexy, but cold and arrogant policewoman!

“Hmm... Hmm! It’s you!” Her face tensed up as she looked at Zhang Yang with serious eyes.

Ka chack!

She cuffed Wei Yan Er and let her be; she won’t be leaving anytime now. The policewoman rolled up her sleeves and stared Zhang Yang with a strong killing intent.

Sigh...What a shitty coincidence! He would not have left the car if he knew this would have happened!

Zhang Yang heavily sighed.

The policewoman kept quiet. She kicked off the ground and dashed towards Zhang Yang like a leopard going for the kill. She swung her leg out flying, aiming for his shoulder!

Zhang Yang had his dose of fighting experience with this woman. He knew that he should not underestimate her, which meant no room for mistake. He tensed up, gathered his focus and quickly raised his hands to block the kick.

When the first attack missed, the woman flipped around and went for her next attack! Furious as ever!

Zhang Yang was not a just a random street fighter. He was a member of the Wushu Club that beat the National Wushu Tournament all time champion down to a pulp. His strength was not something you could find randomly at anywhere in the world! But when these two titans clashed, their fight could be described like a tiger going at a lion; extremely intense!

Han Yin Xue immediately sobered up from the surprise “attack”. She quickly ran up to Wei Yan Er to help her up.

“Sister...wuu... My butt felt like it was cracked in two!” cried Wei Yan Er.

“Stupid little girl! You have two butt cheeks there!”

Ah... it was over. The policewoman must have caused this little girl to be the complete idiot of the century!

Han Yin Xue raised both her legs, lifting her skirt and almost revealing what lied beneath, and took off both of her high heels. She held them in her hands, preparing to hit the policewoman with it if she insisted on dragging her little Wei Yan Er to the police station.

After battling and trading blows for a while, Zhang Yang had finally gotten the upper hand! Zhang Yang had the body of a man that had always been stronger than a woman; even when his arts and skills were not as strong as a military man, he could still overpower with sheer strength.

Zhang Yang dodged and attacked, jumped and kick, and finally managed to pin the woman to a wall with a headbutt. He quickly reached out his hand and firmly grabbed her neck before she could turn around! She did not want to give in just yet, as she raised her leg backwards, trying to kick him at the very least. However, Zhang Yang was quick enough, and he was able to dodge the kick and quickly trap her leg between his thighs.

“Let go!” The policewomen cried out while panting tiredly.

“Sigh... If I let go, would you still fight?” Zhang Yang asked.

“Of course!”

Stupid! Why would you say it out loud?! At least try to keep it to yourself. How can I let you go now?

Zhang Yang shook his head and sighed. “Look, we have absolutely no reason to fight. Why would you come to me and start to fight like your life depended on it? Why don’t we put this all behind us and be friends? They say that we should solve a problem rather than letting it grow worse. If we continue this fight, an eye for an eye and soon the whole world will be blind.”

“Hmph! I don’t care! Try and hold me for the rest of your life, then!!” the woman scorned.

How stubborn could this woman be! Argh!

Zhang Yang got furious and yelled back at her. “Fine! I’ll hold you on for the rest of my life! Let’s see who will give up!”

Both of them were so busy at each other’s neck that neither of them realized their current position and their conversation could have a double meaning. After a while, the policewoman’s face flushed with embarrassment.

Holding on to her neck and legs, Zhang Yang could feel her tensed body suddenly relax and turned as soft as cotton.

Gah! That’s just so sexy!

“Officer! My cousin and I were just playing around! Please don’t

take us to the station!” Both Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue walked over to her. The little girl raised her hands up, with her apologetic face full of honesty. Her makeup was completely removed, revealing a clean, natural beauty.

The policewoman turned and snorted. But she quickly turned back and stared at her intensely and said, “You’re Drizzler?”

“Eh? How did you know my IGN?” Wei Yan Er startled. Just when she was about to raise her hand higher, she pulled the clutches between her hands as she was still in handcuffs, and nearly scratch herself.

“And you’re Little Snow?” She turned her gaze towards Han Yin Xue, or rather her breasts, since those were the things that stood out most.

They were always her most prideful “weapons”, but when they were stared at by a woman, it felt a little strange, as it was not the usual stare she would normally get. She took a step back and covered her chest with her hands and whispered to Wei Yan Er, “She’s not into girls now, is she?”

Zhang Yang stuttered. “Y-You... Are you playing ‘God’s Miracle’ as well?”

This kind of cold and arrogant woman, who had never seen smiling the entire time could actually be a gamer? Zhang Yang could not help but to think that he was actually dreaming right now!

“And you’re Zhan Yu, I suppose.” The woman turned back to him and stared menacingly. “I’ll beat you one day!”

Zhang Yang jumped. He let her go and withdrew. He picked up his courage and cried. “You are Frost Night!”

“Eh?! You’re really Frost Night? Oh my! You’re so beautiful! And I’d always thought that underneath that piece of black cloth was someone ugly!” As expected of a little kid, she always said what immediately came to her mind. There was no secret that she would keep from the world.

The policewoman turned back and flexed her arms and feet. She pointed at Wei Yan Er and scolded. “Next time, don’t go around troubling the neighbors!”

“Yes...” Wei Yan Er dropped her head and accepted the scolding obediently. She then raised her hands and said, “Miss Officer, could you please let me go? My wrists are hurting!”

“Hey! Little brat! How could you suddenly say something like that!” Zhang Yang teased.

“Hmph!” Wei Yan Er rolled her eyes.

The policewoman took out her keys and opened the cuffs. She then turned around and asked Zhang Yang.

“Do you live here?”

“He doesn’t live here! We do!” Wei Yan Er quickly interjected. “Miss Officer, you just came out from the elevator just now, did you came over for a case or do you live here as well?”

“I live here.” She answered coldly.

Zhang Yang could not help to think that this place was not a random place that anyone could just live in. This place was considered to be the “uptown” of the entire Zhou Su City! Each house here could cost at least 10 million dollars! How could a police officer like her have the money to live here?

Could she be the lover of some billionaire or a greedy government officer? Tsk tsk tsk...Such a pity. Such a beautiful lady and yet she would waste her youth for this... Zhang Yang could not help but to look at her in a different perspective.

Zhang Yang’s sudden change in perception was just for a second. A moment where no one could have even picked it up. Being as sharp as she was, she avidly managed to catch his thoughts and suddenly turned colder.

“You... you must be living a boring life that makes you want to die now, do you?”

What was that? Is she really an officer of the law or a street gangster?



However, Zhang Yang was not afraid. He only snickered evilly and said, “Hey, be nice. I’m still your guild master. If you’ve wronged me, I’ll make sure you’ll never get any equipment!”

“What kind of person are you? You sick bastard!” Wei Yan Er rolled her eyes at him and changed her look at the officer with great admiration. “Miss Officer, you’re so cool! You even know how to fight like a pro, unlike my cousin here who can only boast about her black belt karate crap. She can’t even beat me!”

“You little brat! Do you really want me to mess up your life?!” Han Yin Xue finally voiced out after being quiet for the entire scene.

“Cousin, I really think that you should get a breast reduction surgery! Or else you’re gonna have saggy breast by the age of 30! By then, you can’t even fight, what more properly walk!” Wei Yan Er said with a serious tone.

“Pfft!” Zhang Yang could not hold it in and choked. He laughed loudly and said, “Kids these days are really just plain scary, aren’t they!”

“Stinking brat! If I don’t teach you a lesson today, you’ll never learn how to behave properly next time!” Han Yin Xue growled. With one hand on her waist, and the other pointing at her chest, she said, “Look at these! How could you say that they would sag huh?!”

These two sisters are just the best!

“Miss Officer, which floor did you live in? Can I go and visit sometime?” Wei Yan Er’s innocent smile was just too pure to ignore. This little brat really knew how to take advantage of her cuteness to get close to others.

“Please stop calling me Miss Officer. It’s annoying. My name is Sun Xin Yu!” To be able to make her be treated like an acquaintance instead of a complete stranger was a feat that even Zhang Yang had to be impressed with.

This girl could someday win an Oscar Award!

“Haha! Looks like we have been fighting the wrong side after all. We are all a big family!” Living among each other, they should not start war when there was no reason to. Zhang Yang laughed and started to walk back. “You ladies have a lovely night. I have go back now to make more potions! Remember to bring me grinding tomorrow yeah! See you then!”

“Since when were a family, noob tank?!” Wei Yan Er rushed to Zhang Yang and pulled a face.

“I have to go now! You guys head back! Remember, no more pranking!” Sun Xin Yu ordered coldly.

“Okay...” Wei Yan Er answered like a baby. Her thought was wandering elsewhere, namely, how to bring Sun Xin Yu to play

along with her. With her subzero cold expression, she could easily be the best ghost there was!

Just when Zhang Yang exited the building, Sun Xin Yu managed to catch up to him and said, “No matter in the game or in real life, I will defeat you!”

This woman was just so prideful!

“In that case, you have to put some effort into it! See you tomorrow!” Zhang Yang did not even turn back to look at her. He only walked on and waved goodbye.

## Chapter 96: Speed Achievement

---

Ever since the incident at the club, Fatty Han had been missing in action for the next two days, before finally popping online, during the afternoon of the third day.

“Fatty, are you all shriveled up now? Be careful not to break your hips!” Zhang Yang teased.

“Little Yang! Only today have I finally understood why men love hearing girls say “I want it”, but what that follows next, “I want more” is a nightmare! I’m telling you! For the past two days, I’ve had to listen to her saying “I want more” for 17 times! SE-VEN-TEEN TIMES! God! I’m all skinny right now!” Fatty Han “complained” about his proud achievement.

“Hah! Congratulations on popping your cheery!” Zhang Yang laughed.

Even though Fatty Han had always layered his speech with dirty talk, he never had been able to walk the talk. He has never carried out his spoken intentions. The closest friend he had was just someone called Jean, or was it Jenny...

Fatty Han snickered. “Little Yang! As a little brother, you must not talk like that to your elder! You’re still but a virgin! Alright, looks like this brother has to bring you to a hotel grand opening, it’s happening tonight! I heard that there will even be western chicks! Haha! Imagine having your cherry popped by a girl from overseas! Little Yang, you’ll make your country proud!”

“Get lost!”

“Hehe!” Fatty Han was happy. He had good news to share. “Just now when I checked my weight, I found out that I’ve lost 3 kilos! Girls are really like black holes, she has sucked all of my future generations if you know what I mean!”

“Fatty, I have always known you to be a pervert. But I would never have thought that your perversion could reach to this level! It’s my loss!”

“Hahaha! Oh right! Yun Yun has many friends around, I could hook you up with them if you want.”

“Please don’t. Keep them to yourself. Who knows, perhaps you could go for a threesome or foursome, even, sometime in the future.”

As they joked around, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue logged in. Once they were partied up together, they bombarded Fatty Han.

“Pervy Fatty! It’s your fault! Why didn’t you log in yesterday! We could not break the dungeon speed record! Now, everyone is talking about how puny we are! They are also saying that we are even weaker than the mercenary group, which was why we never accepted the speed record challenge!” Drizzler complained.

Fatty Han was smiling widely from ear to ear since he had such a

good time. He could not find the bearings to get angry at all.

“Chill. Fatty bro is here today! Let’s give them a show to remember forever! Oh right, wasn’t Frost Night with you guys all the time, why didn’t you just party up with her and take the speed record?”

“Sister Sun has been busy!” Wei Yun Er shook her head.

“Sister Sun? Who is that?” Fatty Han did not know that Frost Night was called Sun.

“Sun is Frost Night!” Zhang Yang answered him and turned to Drizzler. “Why is she so busy?”

“Something to do with gang fights. She’s had her hands full with that!” By the sound of it, it looked like Wei Yan Er had been hanging out closely with Sun Xin Yu.

“Oh right!” Han Yin Xue suddenly looked serious. “She wanted me to tell you not to mess around at any night clubs or anything like that. You might get caught!”

“Are you sure she said that? Or are you only speaking on her behalf?” The ice cold lady would never had said anything like that!

“Erhm...I erhm...I could tell from the look of her face!”

“Oh right! How was it that night? Did you guys actually meet up with each other?” Fatty Han suddenly recalled.

“Nishishishi...Once the noob tank saw my cousin, he was so excited that he actually had a nose bleed! He lost so much blood that he is now an even noober tank!” Wei Yan Er teased Zhang Yang.

“Is that so...” Fatty Han observed Han Yin Xue intently, his face full of suspicion.

“I never would have thought that Little Yang had so little willpower...”

Han Yin Xue had a devilish body for sure, but her complexion was only normal at the very least. She had those alluring eyes, but that could not have caused him to have a nose bleed! Fatty Han could not imagine it since he had never actually saw Han Yin Xue in reality.

“Fatty, did that girl suck out your intelligence as well while doing it? Do you seriously believe what that little brat just said?” Zhang Yang shook his head disapprovingly.

“Woah! Pervy Fatty! Were you with your girlfriend for the past two days!?” Wei Yan Er tried to butt into his private life. “Where does she live? Is she fatter than you are?”

“Please...that girl has the body of a super model!” Fatty Han said

proudly. “Her 3 sizes are 34C-23-33. How ‘bout that? Impressed?”

Wei Yan Er had always hated it when people started to compare body figures with her. She rolled up her sleeves and showed her fist to Fatty Han. “Pervy Fatty, do you want to know how hard I can punch?”

By the time they had their fun joking around, Hundred Shots logged in and the team started to head over to the hunting fields.

So far, Zhang Yang and Hundred Shots were at Level 28 while the rest were at Level 27. Even though Sun Xin Yu was rarely online, she managed to keep up with them at Level 27.

The guild’s experience points had reached the maximum points for the first level. Everyone in the guild had two benefits to enjoy. All experience points obtained from monsters or quests were increased by 10%. All equipment repairing fees were reduced by 5%.

Additionally, the guild shop had started selling items to all members of the guild. The shop had special items, but they were low in stock. Most items will only be unlocked when the guild reaches Level 2. For example, the Windy Wolf Mount! However, to achieve a Level 2 guild, they would need to obtain the Level 2 [Guild Upgrade Order]. As far as Zhang Yang knew, this item could be found at the Hardcore Mode of the Shadowmoon Castle, in separate pieces, as loot from the last boss.

Because the Order could only be farmed in the Hardcore Mode,



most guilds would have to raise their members' average level to the mid-fifties to farm the dungeon. They could also buy the Order as a last resort if their luck was terrible. However, at this stage, nobody had any idea how high the pieces of [Guild Upgrade Order] could be sold! There was no known price for the item in the market.

There were tens of thousands of big or small guilds in this game, but how many party could really be capable of raiding that dungeon? Furthermore, the item's drop rate was not fixed! There was a chance for the item not to drop at all!

Sun Xin Yu did not log in the entire day. Perhaps she was so preoccupied with work that she could not play the game. It was a good thing too. Zhang Yang did not have to crack his head too much in selecting from his current party when it came to the speed run.

If she had been online, Zhang Yang would had have to leave one member out. Even if they remained passive about it, nobody would be happy about being kicked selectively for a favoured player. Zhang Yang wanted to avoid that situation.

For the past few days, Zhang Yang had learned and made [Level 2 Dexterity Potion] and [Level 2 Intelligence Potion]. He kept some especially for the party members. They might not be necessary for normal monster fights, but when it came to attempting the dungeon speed record, every tiny upgrade was worth it. A [Level 2 Dexterity Potion] only provided a bonus of 10 Dexterity points. Even though it's a very small bonus, it still counted!

The party started their attempt at 7pm sharp.

They raided the Hardcore Mode of Marzerway's Lair for 4 times already. As they were the main attacking force of the guild, they also accumulated a lot of guild contribution points! Not one party member had been left out from claiming the loot exclusive to the Hardcore Mode. Wei Yan Er was the luckiest of them all. She was only lacking one more Gray-Silver set equipment to complete her set while Zhang Yang was only lacking a helmet. The rest of the party all had at least 3 pieces of the set equipment. Their levels and attack power were strong enough to handle the entire dungeon with ease.

Zhang Yang started the timer and initiated the raid. By the time the party had killed their way till the second boss, Zhang Yang cried out. "Stop. Stop. Stop! Time out! 3 minutes break!"

"What?" Everyone was confused. They were here to break the speed record, but why were they stopping for a 3 minute break? What the hell?!

"We're too god damned fast!" Zhang Yang exclaimed.

Everyone was even confused. Isn't being fast a good thing?

Zhang Yang saw the confused faces around him and laughed. He quickly quoted, "Nothing lasts forever, everything falls from grace". Our target was only to break the Sword and Fire Mercenary's time record! We should not be too greedy. It's only enough that we defeat them, not more than that! Understand?"

Han Ying Xue was the first to respond, “Oh. We have already obtained 3 First Clears from the Level 20 dungeon. Now that we have done that, the other guilds can only claim one more thing. That would be the dungeon Speed Achievement! It’s one thing for us to beat their record reasonably where others would still have a chance. But if we set the gap way too high, others will be floored by it, and in a bad way too. If they see no chance of breaking our record, they could only direct their ire elsewhere and name us public enemy number 1. Soon, they will gang up and try to wage war with us!”

“That is why, we must give them room to claim some glory for themselves. Otherwise, it could end up badly for us!” Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, “This is like piracy on the internet. If the main publisher is too greedy, more consumers will turn to sites like Pirate Bay! The main victims would be themselves in the end. Since they aren’t earning anything from their customers, they would be digging their own graves! That is why, we cannot be too greedy with all the glory, we have to leave achievements behind for others!”

Wei Yan Er looked at Han Yin Xue with her eyes wide open, full of admiration. “Wow! Sister, I would have never known that you’re so smart!”

Han Yin Xue lifted her chest that caused her breasts to jiggle. “Of course I am!”

Neither of the guys could find the nerve to open their mouth once they saw the heavy bounce of her well-endowed bosoms.

“Ahem, it’s about time. Let’s go!” Zhang Yang unsheathed his blade and charged at the boss.

The last battle started.

After 1 minute into the fight...

“Please, show some restraint! Don’t be too aggressive! We only need to beat the record by 10 seconds!” Zhang Yang continuously reminded the party as their attacks rained down, sending the boss’ HP down like an avalanche.

With some careful micromanagement on Zhang Yang’s part, Wei Yan Er and the rest managed to hold back on their attacks. They finally managed to beat the boss 7 seconds earlier than the stipulated time! That meant that the party had defeated the speed record of Sword and Fire Mercenary by 17 seconds!

‘Ding! You and the party members around have broken the speed record of Marzerway’s Lair: Main Wing (Hardcore Mode)! This result will be recorded in the Hardcore Speed Achievement Board! As the party leader, please key in your team name!’

Zhang Yang keyed in “Lone Desert Smoke” and the server’s channel was filled with server-wide announcements!

However, the reward for breaking the speed record had been reduced. Everyone got 10 gold pieces, 250 Reputation points, and a

[Level 2 Gemstone] by class category. Zhang Yang obtained a Vitality Gem which provided +20 Vitally effect. Wei Yan Er obtained a +10 Strength Gemstone, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han both obtained a +10 Dexterity Gemstone, and Han Ying Xue obtained a +10 Intelligence Gemstone.

“Sister! Look at these stones! Kyaa! They are so shiny and beautiful!” Wei Yan Er screamed like a little girl as she observed the Gemstones.

“Keep that thing! Shouldn’t you be ashamed of yourself?!” Zhang Yang sighed and shook his head. He said, “Level 4 Gemstones and anything lower can be bought at any Gemstone Shop! This one piece here costs 100 gold pieces at most! Oh right! You have those equipment that can equip Gemstones, have you put them to use?”

Hundred Shots shook his head. “Not yet. I haven’t reach the level yet! My socket is still empty!”

The rest of the party also shook their heads.

“Just go and insert. There is actually a success rate for slotting in a Gemstone. You’ll need money to buy Gemstone. You’ll also need money to insert a Gemstone, and it would not be 100%! Level 1 Gemstones have a 10% failure rate, Level 2 Gemstone have a 20% failure rate, that failure rate will go all the way up with the Level 8 Gemstones at the top having a failure rate of 90%! What a load of fortune wasted there!” Zhang Yang complained.

# Chapter 97: Level 30 Job Quest

---

Lone Desert Smoke has successfully broken the speed record for Marzerway's Lair Hardcore Mode! Rumors of how Zhang Yang's feeble team, merely lucky in their triple chain of First Clear Achievements had dispersed. Their achievements invoked a burning fury in all the other guilds. One by one, they tried to break the record themselves.

Zhang Yang's speed record did not hold up for long. Only half a day later, their record was replaced by Breaking Dawn, who broke it by 9 seconds! Several hours later, Crimson Rage broke the record, clocking a time that would last longer. They had successfully raided the dungeon in only 17 minutes and 2 seconds! However, even this speed record was broken and the process repeated itself, each time with a difference of just a few seconds! Still the record was continually broken to a point where the strong and the weak began showing their differences.

Since Zhang Yang's team managed to break the record once, they had no intention of staying at that point. They had their levels to grind up! With the frenzied rate the Speed Record changing hands, no one would dare to claim that their speed record was unbreakable! However, a dungeon's First Clear Achievement was very much different from the Speed Achievement. Once taken away, it was the end for the others, no one else could ever claim it again.

For the past few days, Zhang Yang had been receiving a steady income of 300,000 gold coins into his savings. However, the gold to dollar exchange rate had decreased to 6:1. It had slightly affected his savings but the amount was still remotely large.

The second recipe for [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] was found in Violet Star City. Even though Zhang Yang finally had a competitor, both of them still could not fulfill the demands for the potion, which did not affect Zhang Yang's own sales. Days like that would last for at least 10 days or so, whereby more players would have achieved the level of 30. By then, they would not need to depend on the potion to raid the Hard Mode Marzerway's Lair.

Deep down, Zhang Yang wanted the days of him making potions like crazy to end quicker. His fortune may have been piling up like mountains, but he had been so preoccupied with making potions to the point where the progress bar of the synthesis would remain as an afterimage beneath his closed eyelids whenever he tried to sleep.

On the last day of July, when most of the server was deep asleep, Zhang Yang had raided Marzerway's Lair one more time and gained a level, finally reaching Level 30!

His luck chose that special moment to also give him the last piece of his set equipment, fully triggering the set effect! For the past two raids, Marzerway had been exceedingly stingy to him, never dropping the required helmet equipment that Zhang Yang needed the most.

And so, his [final stats](#) were as such:

HP: 4,350

Strength: 191

Dexterity: 74

Defense: 260

Melee damage: 445-467

Critical chance: 12%

Before this, Hundred Shots was the first to achieve Level 30 before Zhang Yang. Fatty Han and the rest were still at Level 29. At best, they would only reach Level 30 by tomorrow night. Zhang Yang had managed to pick out 4 other capable players who logged in consistently and had decent fighting skills, to temporarily fill in the blank spots in his team to raid the Shadowmoon Castle dungeon.

However so, despite the best efforts of this selected four, they were still under Level 27. They would need at least another four days to reach Level 30! From Zhang Yang's recollection of his alternate history, Crimson Rage's main force will reach Level 30 in two days. Once their team was properly assembled, they would move with 20 members in 2 separate 10-man parties to raid the dungeon.

These two 10-man dungeons were different from Bangar Crypt or



Marzerway in a way where there were no terrain bugs to exploit nor were there any special potions required to survive. These two dungeons could be easily conquered once players were fairly well equipped, and had sufficient knowledge on the boss' skills. This was the most classic and straightforward dungeon in the game so far.

No matter the case, Zhang Yang had no intention of surrendering the dungeon's First Clear to anyone else. He will raid the dungeon tomorrow, even if he only had 6 people!

When he arrived back at the city, the first thing Zhang Yang did was to ride on his Skeletal War Horse.

“Neigh...!” The horse snorted, standing behind Zhang Yang with its fiery flames emitting from all its hooves. The huge beast of bleach-white bones was a sight to behold. The emerald flames glowed wildly from those eye sockets! The moment it appeared, everyone started gathering to have a look at the magnificent mount. They were all shocked to suddenly see a monster appear in the middle of the town!

“Little Yang! God damn! I'm so jealous!” Fatty Han cried as he approached and rubbed his hands on the horse until he was satisfied.

“Oh well, since I can't ride this. I'll ride my own girl back at home!”

“Please Fatty. You're so pitiful that I'm dying here.”

Zhang Yang got on the horse and carefully maneuvered it. The horse bellowed loudly, raised its flaming hooves, and started to gallop across the city.

“Wow! What NPC is that? I’ve never seen it around before!”

“Look at that ride! It’s not the usual horse you see around! It’s the Skeletal War Horse!”

“Oh man! I want it so bad now!”

“So cool! So awesome!”

Zhang Yang arrived at the auction house and stood in front of it. He then revealed his profile name.

Zhan Yu, Crypt Slaughterer, Physician’s Friend, Hero of White Jade Castle, Level 30, <Lone Desert Smoke>.

With the long chain of titles and his magnificent horse, he had successfully captured the attention of players who were on their way to the auction house.

“WTF! That’s not an NPC!”

“Hey look, is the famous Zhan Yu! As expected of the guy who achieved so much, just look at those titles!”

“That skeleton horse looks so damn cool!”

“I thought you could only ride a mount at Level 40?”

“Dude! What are you talking about? That guy is Zhan Yu! Of course he could have a mount at Level 30!”

“Whoever gifts me this kind of mount, I’ll sleep with him for 3 nights!”

“F\*ck! With your looks, no one would be willing to do it with you for even 10 dollars! Keep living in your dreams, ugly bitch!”

...

Personally, Zhang Yang was against riding out in the open. He was forced to promote their guild by both Han Yin Xue and Wei Yan Er.

He was not willing to stand out in the crowd but he was less willing to withstand the bombardment from every single one of his “gang” members. Some of them basically told him to whore himself out for the greater good, to help the guild to promote their name. Zhang Yang had absolutely no say in the matter. He had to listen to their requests obediently and rode the horse out there like an exhibition’s display. His situation was not unlike the gigantic robot model in Japan, completely surrounded by fans enjoying the view.

“Damn you, little brat!”

The spectators grew larger and larger. Even though Zhang Yang had disabled private messaging from strangers, he was still barraged with so many friend requests that his view was practically blocked by the pop ups! Zhang Yang could no longer endure this public embarrassment. He quickly hid his profile, got off the horse before unsummoning it, and ran off by himself.

Wei Yan Er was giggling like a mad girl. “Haha! You took my precious horsie! This is the price to pay!”

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, “I have nothing to say to you! Guys, listen up. There is a job quest in Level 30. The quest is fairly easy and straight forward. All you have to do is defeat an NPC! However, the quest can only be done alone without any help! The quest has 4 difficulty levels. Different difficulties will reward you with different Skill strengths! S difficulty could only be accepted at Level 30. A difficulty can be delayed till you’re Level 35, B difficulty could be taken late at Level 40 while C difficulty could be taken anytime, even after Level 300!”

“S difficulty is truly difficult, but I strongly suggest that you take this option. The difference between the rewards is just too much to ignore. Do it for the sake of your own futures! Just endure it! There is another catch. For the entire duration of the quest, your character will be the same as not wearing any equipment at all! All equipment bonus attributes will be [muted](#). This quest will fully test a player’s skill!”

“Interesting! Very interesting! I will go and try it out!” Wei Yan Er cheered. “Sister, let’s go and grind for a bit! The noob tank had been leeching3 our experience points for several days now! If he hadn’t, we would already be Level 30!”

Zhang Yang laughed. He summoned the Skeletal War Horse and rode all the way to Warrior’s Home, to meet the pretty class instructor.

Emmy was still wearing the same revealing armor and the ever-present crowd of horny guys surrounded her as usual. The only difference between those players and Zhang Yang was that from his own perspective, he could see a huge glowing yellow exclamation mark floating on her head.

Zhang Yang first learned the Level 30 warrior skill <Shield Wall> and continued the conversation after to start the quest.

“Zhan Yu! Your excellent growth in strength has been most impressive. The empire will always need warriors like you to protect the land from spectres, demons, and other threats to the empire’s interest! However, you will still need to undergo a test and based on your results, I will teach you a class skill!”

Emmy placed one hand on her waist and bent over. Zhang Yang could clearly see her cleavage, deep down into darkness.

“Are you ready for it?”

“Yes!” Zhang Yang instantly replied.

“There are four quests here for you to choose! Different quests will have different levels of difficulty. However, I’ll have to see your willpower, only then will I grant you a strong skill!”

“S level difficulty! Must be completed by Level 30!”

“A level difficulty! Must be completed by Level 40!”

“B level difficulty! Must be completed by Level 50!”

“C level difficulty! No level limit!”

Zhang Yang did not even need to stop and think, he immediately picked the S level difficulty.

“Wise decision, young warrior! You have an indomitable heart of a true warrior, but now, I want to see whether you have the capability to finish this quest! If you’re ready, you can talk to me anytime and I will open the training gates for you!” said Emmy.

‘Ding! You have accepted the quest: The path forward (S level)! This quest must be completed at Level 30, the quest will be automatically deleted when the character gains a level!’

The quest limited the character to only be able to complete the quest at their current level; they have blocked off players with

higher levels from coming back to complete the quest with their level advantage.

Zhang Yang drew a long breath and said, “Respected instructor, I’m ready for my test!”

Emmy nodded and took out a huge, green crystal. She held the crystal with both her hands and started to chant a spell in an unknown language.

Is she a warrior? Or a magician? Or perhaps both? Zhang Yang thought absent-mindedly.

A progress bar appeared on her head. She carried out the chant slowly and only finished the spell 30 seconds later. A green orb of light appeared in front of Zhang Yang. The orb was so huge that it was enough to let 3 men walk across simultaneously.

Zhang Yang stretched his legs and stepped into the orb. After a flash of bright light that quickly faded away, Zhang Yang was now in the middle of a huge battle arena. It looked like the same battle arena that Ancient Rome used to have gladiators fight each other. The audience set was completely filled with races of all types. Aside from the 4 main races of the world, there were also Dragons, Elementals, Gnomes and many other extremely rare races.

“Welcome! To the Battle Arena! To all fighters out there! There are no other rules but to kill, or be killed! If you want to leave this place alive, you have to be the last man standing! May the God of War bless you!”

The sound of the announcer echoed across the arena. There was no telling where the voice came from!

Kang Kang Kang...!

The sound of a metal gate dropping down could be heard from a corner of the arena.

“GRROOOOAN!”

A thundering growl echoed through and a huge 3-meter-tall blue-skinned giant rushed out of the pathway furiously.

“HULL!” The giant had glowing bloodshot eyes. It raised its fist and smashed it down on the ground, sending shockwaves through the floor! Above its head was written the name tagged “Blue Giant Hull”.

Is the developer trying a little too hard to copy Marvel’s Hulk?”

‘Ding! The Deathmatch will begin in 10...9...8...”

‘3...2...1!”

“GRAHHHHH!”



Boom!

It smashed the ground, propelling itself, and charged towards Zhang Yang.

From Zhang Yang's perspective, he was staring at a huge mountain moving on its own, seeking to trample him.

### Translator's Notes

Stats – The short form of statistic, is the full attribute of the character information.

Muted – Mute or muted is the nullification effect of an equipment during a special event or scenario. If all equipment is muted, your character will still be wearing the equipment but the bonus attribute it carries will not be added into the character's attribution.

# Chapter 98: Blue Giant Hull

[Blue Giant Hull] (Elite)

Level: 30

HP: 30,000

Defense: 0

Melee damage: 500

Attack interval: 2 seconds

Immediately after entering the battle, Zhang Yang’s equipment was all muted. Every skill level was reset down to Level 1! To ensure a fair battle among all players, every player that underwent this test would have the same stats. All players would have equal Attack power, HP, and MP.

[Player: Zhan Yu]

Level: 30

HP: 3,000

Defense: 0

Strength: 100

Melee damage: 100

Attack interval: 2 seconds

Critical chance: 0

Lucky strike chance: 0

The monster he was about to fight was much stronger than he was! If they were to compare with each other, numerically:

$30,000 \times 500 : 3,000 \times 10$

That's 50:1! The player would not have a chance based on statistics alone!

Furthermore, when Zhang Yang had entered this battle field, all buffs and boons were [purged](#). All items in the inventory would be locked out from use. The only good thing in this field was that the system did not lock the 3 optional skills he had! <Vanguard's Aggression> and <Eagle Eye> may not be useful against this monster, but <Horizontal Sweep> would serve him well enough!

In his previous life, Zhang Yang had been trying repeatedly to clear this quest in S level difficulty. But since his skill was not as polished as he was now, the best results he could manage was to bring the boss down to 37% of its HP. However, he was not patient enough to endure it and ended up completing the A level difficulty.

However, as he played on, he had regretted that decision thoroughly. He should have simply endured the hardship and completed the quest in S level difficulty! Even though the quest rewarded everyone with the same skill, the difficulty level determined the strength of the skill! If he had been patient enough, he could have cleared the quest. But since he was still new to the game and way behind the first generation of players, he thought that a single difficulty level would not do much harm. He lived to regret that decision!

The reward was a skill called <Destructive Smash>. Back then, what Zhang Yang had obtained was from the A level difficulty quest.

[Destructive Smash]: Immediately attacks a target with destructive strike, causing 150% melee damage and reduces all healing effects received by 50%. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Cost: 30 Rage

Requires: Melee weapon

Cooldown time: 8 seconds.

Less than 100 players around the world had cleared the S level difficulty, and out of that, only 10 players in entire China! These 10 players would be the S tier Professional League battle team's trump card!

Zhang Yang gathered his thoughts and focused on the battlefield. The opponent attacked with its fists. Zhang Yang activated <Block>, gaining 10 Rage and dealing 100 damage in reflect damage. He pivoted and swung his sword in a backhand, dealing another 100 damage and gaining additional 25 Rage.

Boom!

Zhang Yang stomped on the ground and activated <Thunder Strike>.

'-100!'

'-200!' <Shield Bash>.

The blue giant began moving in slow motion, debuffed with a <Slow> status.

Zhang Yang quickly turned around and started to run away, increasing the gap between them.

He was completely outmatched in terms of attack power and HP. He could not just simply take the monster head on! He needed a plan of attack! This giant monster's attack speed was another damned matter altogether. No human could evade its light-speed attacks. One could only survive this Deathmatch by properly utilizing the skills of a warrior!

5 seconds after, the slow effect wore off and the giant, in huge giant stomps, quickly caught up to Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang kept calm and waited until the distance between the two of them was reduced to about 3 meters, before using <Charge> to stun the giant. He then dealt a normal attack and gained 40 Rage, just enough for him to cast a <Horizontal Sweep>.

‘-100!’ Normal attack.

‘-200!’ <Horizontal Sweep>.

Zhang Yang did not fret; he ran and kept his distance again from the monster.

Once Hull recovered from the stun, it moved its massive feet and gave chase.

In only 3 seconds, Zhang Yang was beneath Hull's shadow, the blue giant growling loudly and raising both its fists, ready to flatten Zhang Yang.

<Block>! +10 Rage.

‘-100!’ <Block> reflect damage.

‘-100!’ Normal attack.

‘-200!’ <Shield Bash>.

Zhang Yang ran away again. One second passed and his <Thunder Strike> was ready to be used again. He stomped the ground and reapplied the slow effect on the monster, before running circles around the monster.

The monster suddenly growled deafeningly and his body started to give off a faint, blood-red glow.

‘Ding! Blue Giant Hull has gained <Enraged>! All attacks increased by 10%. Lasts for 10 seconds!’

Zhang Yang remained calm, unwavering, and focused. With the 5-seconds of slow effect on the monster, Zhang Yang could properly maintain a safe distance from death. The cooldown time for his <Thunder Strike> was 8 seconds, which meant that there was a 3-second gap where he would be within reach of the beast! Zhang Yang could use <Block> to protect himself during that time in case the monster catches up. This was his plan, to kite the monster around.

However, to properly execute the kiting strategy required a good,

calculative mind. He would need to properly calculate the time and match the rhythm of the fight to cast <Thunder Strike> accurately. Since this skill was an AoE attack and debuff, he needed to gauge his distance. Cast it too far away and it wouldn't affect the monster. Too close and he would be struck even if <Thunder Strike> hit. This quest would not only test a player's skill but also his patience. There was no other way but to slow the monster down and gradually attack the monster until all 30,000 HP is drained. If he slipped up even once, everything would be a waste and he would have to start the fight all over again.

Zhang Yang was only dealing bouts of 100 and 200 damages to Hull each time he attacked. Even though it may seem insignificant, but the overall damage accumulated was good enough to gradually cut its HP down. Zhang Yang was doing a good job so far. After only 5 minutes, Hull's HP was reduced down to 11%.

Still, Zhang Yang did not dare to lower his guard. On the contrary, he gathered his mind and focused even harder.

10%!

'Ding! Blue Giant Hull has gain <Uncontrollable Rage>. Gained immunity to all debuff and +100% attack damage!'

The last 3,000 HP; the most dangerous part of the entire battle! Since Zhang Yang could no longer rely on any slow and stun effect, he had to fully endure the giant's monstrous speed and colossal attacks!



Zhang Yang first activated <Block> to negate the first attack and took the chance to deal as much damage as he can.

‘-100!’ <Block> reflect damage.

‘-200!’ <Shield Bash>.

‘-100!’ Normal attack.

‘-200!’ <Horizontal Sweep>.

‘-100!’ <Thunder Strike>.

‘-100!’ <Force Strike>.

Zhang Yang dealt a total of 900 damage just as he completely used up all his Rage.

Two seconds later, the blue giant growled and swung its fists to pulverize Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang immediately activated <Shield Wall>.

[Shield Wall] (Level 1): You are protected by a shield. All ill effects purged, and reducing all incoming attacks by 75%. Lasts for 10 seconds.

Requires: Shield.

Cool down time: 10 minutes.

‘-200!’

The damage Zhang Yang was receiving had already gone through significant reduction, thanks to <Shield Oath> and <Shield Wall>. He ended up receiving only 20% of the onslaught. (Shield Oath Level 1). He then begun his counter attack. The last ten seconds was where the curtain closes, it was now up to the amount of damage he could deal before the 10 seconds ends.

8 seconds, Zhang Yang: HP 2,600, Blue Giant Hull: HP 1,700!

6 seconds, Zhang Yang: HP 2,400, Blue Giant Hull: HP 1,600!

4 seconds, Zhang Yang: HP 2,200, Blue Giant Hull: HP 1,300!

2 seconds, Zhang Yang: HP 2,000, Blue Giant Hull: HP 1,200!

<Shield Wall> duration ends! Zhang Yang will now receive damage in almost all it's entirety!

<Block>!

‘-100!’ <Block> reflect damage.

‘-200!’ <Shield Bash>

‘-100!’ Normal attack.

The giant roared and smashed Zhang Yang with its fists.

‘-800!’ With no way of defending himself, Zhang Yang finally received a direct hit. His Rage was completely filled. Remaining calm, Zhang Yang returned fire!

‘-100!’ <Force Strike>.

‘-100!’ Normal attack.

‘-100!’ <Force Strike>.

Zhang Yang: 1,200 HP.

Blue Giant Hull: 500 HP.

‘-800!’

This time, Zhang Yang let everything lose like a Berserker. Every

time he received a hit from Hull, his Rage instantly filled up!

‘-100!’ Normal attack.

‘-200!’ <Horizontal Sweep>.

‘-100!’ <Force Strike>.

‘-100!’ <Force Strike>.

“GRAaaa...”

Thud!

The monster fell, defeated. The colossal body slammed against the ground and sent a slight tremor throughout the arena.

Zhang Yang drew a deep breath and let out a sigh of relief. His pulse shot up as he did a double take on his HP bar, with only 400 HP remaining.

“Cheers for the mighty warrior!” A round of a applause rang throughout the entire arena as the many races gave him a standing ovation!

“Zhan Yu!”

“Zhan Yu!”

“Zhan Yu!”

He knew that this was all scripted, nothing more than a programmed response to a player’s victory. Still, he reveled in the applause and bathed in its afterglow. He felt as if he had teleported back to ancient Rome and became one of the gladiator champions.

Foosh!

A sudden flash of light blinded him momentarily and Zhang Yang was teleported back to the city, standing in front of the sexy Warrior class Instructor, Emmy.

“Congratulations young warrior! You have passed the most difficult test! Praise the God of War, I believe that one day you could be a great hero of the land!” said Emmy with great excitement. Who said that NPCs couldn’t bootlick.

‘Ding! You have completed the quest: The Path Forward (S level)!’

‘Ding! You have obtained a system reward: Luck +1!’

‘Ding! You have learnt a new skill: Destructive Smash!’

Zhang Yang quickly opened his Skill Window to check on his skill

description. He had to see for himself, the power of a skill gained from an S class quest!

[Destructive Smash]: Performs a destructive strike at a target, dealing 200% melee damage and cause all healing received reduced by 75%. Last for 10 seconds. Effect cannot be stacked.

Cost: 30 Rage

Requires: Melee weapon.

Cool down time: 8 seconds

The high attack was nothing to be surprised about. The main factor that made this skill so strong was the reduced healing effect it inflicted on its targets! In dungeons, there were bosses that leeched HP from its enemies, while many others had healing skills! However, if he were to use this skill on such bosses, they could only heal by about 25% of their original power!

On the other hand, in the Professional League, this skill had always been considered to be an overpowered skill. In every 5v5 team battle, there would always be a warrior in the team, and it was all because of this skill's power and potential. Some of teams did not even need you to be strong and powerful. All you had to do was to make sure that every opponent player was struck with the healing reduction effect!

Normally, the majority of players would only complete the B level difficulty quest and obtain the <Destructive Smash> which had only 25% healing reduction effect. Only a handful of people could complete the A level difficulty, with a rate as low as one out of a thousand!

According to Zhang Yang's memories, there was only one person who completed the quest in S level difficulty and he was called One Sword Stroke the "Peerless Blockade". This guild master of Imperial Sk, naturally became China's number 1 tank! He was the team captain of "Sky and Ocean Electronic", the strongest S-level Professional League battle team in the China server.

According to rumors that spread across the internet, One Sword Stroke was Sky and Ocean Electronic's only successor, his real name was Cheng Ran. People called him 'Son of the Heaven'.

Zhang Yang looked at the time. It was almost for him to step out and show his achievement off to the world!

Purged: Purged is the verb used to get rid of any beneficial effect on a player.

# Chapter 99: Super Healer!

---

“Zhan Yu, this S level quest is really tough!” Still lost in his sea of thoughts, Zhang Yang received a private message from Hundred Shots.

He laughed a little. Was it called S level for nothing? There were only very few people in the entirety of China who could finish this quest! Well, if the quest was positioned somewhere further down the progress of the game, there could have been more people completing this quest as many would already have gotten used to the controls of the game, thereby having the skills, intuition, controls, and attack plan to make it possible! This early in the game, nobody would truly be skilled!

Hundred Shots was bound to be one of the famous players from China! He was the top among the Top 10 Hunters! However, his strength would lie on the little red pet dragon. When the dragon would have popped out, he would rule the world! Even if he was slightly lacking in individual skill, his dragon more than made up for it!

Zhang Yang mulled over it for a while and replied, “Just try your best and give it a few more rounds. The Level 30 skill is extremely important! Try your best to get the S level difficulty reward!”

“Okay!” Hundred Shots was a man who cared about his self-worth. He clearly understood that Zhang Yang was a man of talent and kill. He wanted to stay beside him through thick and thin. Even if he could never be as strong as Zhang Yang, the least he could do was to avoid being dead weight.



Zhang Yang had never played as a Hunter before, so there was no way he could provide any advice on the Hunter questline. Zhang Yang could only ask for him to have a deeper understanding of his class skills. The developers would not simply design the game to have players equipped with a particular set of skills at a particular moment of the game for nothing! The quests have been tailored specially to accommodate the use of everything they had been given. The raw materials were laid out on the workbench, one only had to use them wisely!

This class quest was to test each player's knowledge on their own class skills!

Fatty Han, Han Yin Xue, and Wei Yan Er were still busy grinding their level up to Level 30. Zhang Yang left them be, there was no benefit to gain from pestering them about the quest. He then went on to craft more potions, ready to be sent out to the 7 main cities, where more gold would end up in his hands still.

Beep!

The messenger rang and Zhang Yang quickly answered the call. There was no need to worry about the the person at the other end of the line, for only those who were added into his friend list could contact him.

“Yo! Zhan Yu!”

Zhang Yang was startled, he did not expect a phone call from this

person out of his list of acquaintances. “Yo! Crimson Fire guild master!” The person over the phone was the guild master of Lost Paradise, someone he had partied with back at Bangar Crypt.

“Ahhh...Back then, I would have never thought that this person who ran dungeons with me would become the man who would defeat so many super guilds in this China Server! There are only a few people in this world that I admire. I must tell you that my bar was set at quite a high standard. You sir, surpassed that and beyond!” Crimson Fire’s tone sounded a little too boastful.

Zhang Yang laughed. “Haha! You said it. I’m so happy that I could just float away now!”

“If only I’d known sooner, I would have rather given up my position as a guild master to have you in my guild!” His tone had changed, layered with regret.

When Crimson Fire first met Zhang Yang, he had already set his eyes on him. But he could have never expected Zhang Yang to be at this level! Initially, he wanted to pull him in and have him as part of his guild, however he believed that keeping the authority of guild master in his hand was more important.

But now, regret was not even close enough to describe how he felt!

What was the purpose of a Professional Guild? Was not it for name, glory, and money!?

With all that said, he could have given up on his position as the guild master and hid behind the scene. Since the sponsors were in direct contact with him, he would still be the boss of the guild as long as the guild maintained its rank!

If the guild name were to spread out further, the sponsorship fees would also increase! If they could match the level of super guilds, being a millionaire was not just a dream anymore!

But now that he had missed that golden opportunity, how could he not regret?!

Ah...the original guild master of Lone Desert Smoke was far smarter than he was. She was willing to give up the position of the guild master to Zhang Yang and trade that position for a huge amount of money! Smart! No, genius!

However, what that Crimson Fire did not know was that Wei Yan Er had passed the guild master position to Zhang Yang on a whim. Yes! She felt it was troublesome! If Crimson Fire had known this, would he go bang his head on a wall?

“Erhm? Why would the guild master of Crimson Fire grace me with his presence? Is there anything I can do to help you?” Zhang Yang never liked to beat around the bush, he thought it was only troublesome to do so. He would rather have a conversation with someone as straightforward as Wei Yan Er.

Crimson Fire gathered his thoughts and said, “I represent Lost Paradise, seeking an alliance with Lone Desert Smoke! Perhaps we

could help each other out in the future! This is the purpose of my call!”

Zhang Yang thought of it for a while and said, “This is a good thing. Okay! I agree! May we help each other out! We are now a family!”

After some light banter, Crimson Fire hung up, saying that he had to bring his team to raid a dungeon.

In the afternoon, Fatty Han, Wei Yan Er, and Han Yin Xue had reached Level 30. Zhang Yang instructed them to undergo the S level difficulty class quest. Hundred Shots had been trying his best since morning until the afternoon with no luck. He said that he had died a few hundred times!

After 3pm, Sun Xin Yu logged in and went to grind alone. She did not take long and managed to reach Level 30 as well!

Curious, Zhang Yang asked her. “Are you finally free now? How is it that you could log in at such an early hour?”

“Work shift!” Sun Xin Yu replied coldly.

Hmph! Ice Queen! I hope that you’ll have a chatterbox of a husband who annoys the hell out of you!

Zhang Yang acknowledged her reply with a simple exclamation, “Oh!”. But his curiosity was not yet satiated and he pressed on.

“You haven’t been online for long, how could you level up so damn fast?”

Sun Xin Yu silently posted an item description on the chat window.

[Heaven’s Pearl] (Special Item)

Item description: Grants you an extra 50% experience point from monsters or quests.

Bound.

F\*ck! How could such a godly item exist?! No wonder she had been leveling at such fast pace, spending so little time! However, it was no longer a mystery on how she could remain at the top of the Level Ranking Board, guildless as she was!

Guild members would have experience point bonuses as the guild levelled up. A Level 1 guild would have a 10% experience point bonus, Level 2 guilds double that amount at 20%, and it went on up to a 100% bonus points at Level 10! However, Guild Upgrade Orders from Level 5 onwards were freakishly tough to farm! In his previous life, the strongest guild in the entire game was only at Level 7!

“Where did you get this?” Zhang Yang asked. Such a valuable

item would ultimately have the lowest drop rate ever! She could be holding the only one in the entirety of China! With Sun Xin Yu's solitary nature, she would not have shared the news with anyone else. No wonder Zhang Yang had never heard of this item before in his previous life!

“Reward from a hidden quest!”

“Ah!” Zhang Yang sighed heavily. Hidden quest. It was no wonder. She was holding the only one in the entire China! No one else would have had the chance to obtain it anymore!

“I'm going to do my class quest now. Do not bother me or... I'll kill you!” snapped Sun Xin Yu coldly before she left the conversation without another word.

Zhang Yang was bored, since everyone was doing their respective class quests and should not be disturbed as well. Zhang Yang was always smart enough to not talk in the party channel. He continued to make potions.

“Wah! This is frustrating!” Fatty Han roared “WTF! I just equipped my hard-earned Gray-Silver equipment! And now the system won't allow me to use them?! F\*ck! One attack was only 100 damage! How long am I supposed to continue to fight? 1 year?!”

“You stupid fat pig! I failed my quest because of your sudden screaming!”

“Cousin...you startled me...I died as well!”

“You guys...”

Everyone failed their quest ever since the dummy Fatty Han started a ruckus in the party channel.

“Pervy Fatty! If you ever disturb us again, I’ll rip your balls off!” Wei Yan Er scolded.

Fatty Han suddenly tightened his legs closer and quietly obeyed. His happiness was only just blossoming. The erectile problem should not exist now, it should only be a problem when he would be 50 years old!

After all that happened, everyone was smart enough to mute their chatting system to avoid being distracted.

Zhang Yang knew that Fatty Han’s capabilities was no match with the S level difficulty. He sighed and sent a private message to him.

“Hey Fatty, try and change the difficulty.”

“WTF? Are you looking down at me?”

“You’re absolutely correct!”

“Haha! You sure know me well brother! Alright, I’ll confess. I attempted the quest 16 times already and the best I could do was with 97% of the boss HP still remaining! Little Yang! What do you think? What difficulty level should I do?” One of Fatty Han’s greatest attitude was that he had never been dishonest to himself nor anyone else. If he was bad, he would not try to hide it. He would not try to keep his shortcomings in the dark for the sake of his pride.

“Try C!”

“Is there a slightly simpler one?” Fatty Han asked.

“B is easier!”

“Ok!” Fatty Han took the bait and went on to met his respective class instructor.

After a while, he had managed to complete the quest. A level B difficulty was not easy, but since Fatty Han had been following Zhang Yang to many raids, he was skilled enough to handle a level B difficulty.

“Little Yang! I’ve gained a new skill!” Fatty Han posted the skill description to Zhang Yang, like it was a trophy of some kind.

[Beast Link]: Obtained the power of a wild beast! 25% of all received damage will be shared to your pet! Increases your



ranged attack damage by 50%. Last for 10 seconds.

Cooldown time: 3 minutes.

As expected of a level B difficulty reward, it was pathetic! If he were to complete the S level difficulty, he would have the skill power raised to 75% shared damage and a 100% increase in attack power!

However, there were only a handful of players who could defeat a S level difficulty, Zhang Yang did not chastise him for it. On the other hand, he had high expectations from Sun Xin Yu. Someone like her could possibly beat the S difficulty quest! She was the future number 1 Thief after all. No one could beat her in the underlying knowledge of Thieves! If she could not clear the S level difficulty quest, no other thieves would.

To Zhang Yang surprise, the third person to complete the class quest was Han Xin Yue!

“I’m beat! I finally healed the freaking donkey!” She complained.

That was...quick?

Zhang Yang could not help but frown. “What difficulty did you picked?” he asked suspiciously.

“Didn’t you ask me to pick the S level difficulty? Did I pick the

wrong one?” She replied.

Zhang Yang was surprised. He immediately straightened up. “So, you’re saying that you completed the S level difficulty quest?”

“Stupid Zhang Yang! What am I? A kid? Of course I did! Hmph!” Han Xin Yu snapped.

Zhang Yang laughed it off.

“Ahahaha. I was only asking. Oh right! What was your quest?”

“There were two NPCs fighting each other. My job was to make sure one of them does not die, and that he kills the other NPC, that's it!” Han Xin Yue said it so flippantly as if it was the most common thing in the world.

As expected of the team healer! No, Super Healer! No! Not even that! She was the Goddess of Healing herself! She should just hang her gigantic cups and let the world healers worship them! Those were the best in the world!

Zhang Yang sighed in awe. He had always known that Han Yin Xue was a strong healer in the team. But to think that she would even reach to this level on her own was beyond his imagination! Looks like he struck the jackpot!

“What skill did you get for your reward?” Zhang Yang asked.

# Chapter 100: Shadowmoon Castle

---

[Divine Soul (Passive)]: Your heart and soul is filled with faith and devotion. All spells and skill costs are reduced by 75%.

Zhang Yang's mind went blank the moment he saw the skill description.

A 75% spell cost reduction! She could now deal 4 times the amount of healing! What an OP skill!

His voice shaking in uncontrollable excitement, Zhang Yang said, "Honestly, I had never held such high hopes for us to clear the Level 30 dungeon. But now that you have this passive skill, our chances to clear the dungeon has now increased 5-fold!"

The ideal 6-man party for this dungeon was supposed to be comprised of 2 tanks, 2 healers, and 6 attackers. In his case, Zhang Yang alone could take the place of both tanks. Now that Han Yin Xue gained the passive skill, she could also take the role of both healers as well! On the other hand, Zhang Yang himself was a unique tank with strong offensive powers! That would mean that their 6-man team could match the strength of a 10-man party!

Zhang Yang had a sudden change of mind. He had wanted to search for another 4 players to fill in the empty slot to make it a whole 10-man party anyway, but to have that many players in the party would increase the chances of them making mistakes as well! One must not fear the godly strength of the enemy more than the

useless imbeciles and incompetent partners in battle! Since his team could now ignore the shortage of 4 other players, he would rather proceed with this group of trustworthy six than adding unnecessary risks into his party. Without any further ado, he initiated the raid of the Shadowmoon Castle.

The most crippling factor in a dungeon raid was not the mistake of a party as a whole; it was the mistake he as the vanguard would make alone that could start a domino effect, leading to the fall of the entire team!

Zhang Yang spent his time making more of the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] while waiting for the rest of the remaining party member to complete their class quests. If they could complete it before sunset, the success rate of clearing the dungeon would be even higher!

However, it was a pity that even after dinner time, the remaining 3 party members were still struggling to complete the quest. Zhang Yang could not help but admire Han Yin Xue. She was truly born to be a healer!

She had just only gotten her hands on the game and yet she could perform professionally. In contrast, Zhang Yang already had acquired, rather unfairly, 5 years worth of experience prior to his rebirth, and it was only by that advantage that enabled him to successfully clear the S-level difficulty!

Han Yin Xue and her wonderful healing! The one true goddess of healing!

After they had their dinner, Zhang Yang gathered everyone and started their journey to the castle.

According to the lore, long before anyone had known, there was a village that worshipped the Wolf God. Every year, they would hold a ceremony and offered many valuables to him. Because of that, they were all blessed by the Wolf God and were able to borrow his powers to obtain incredible strength. There was no battle that they could not win. However, intoxicated by countless victories, these people started to forget about their benefactor and lost faith in the Wolf God.

Enraged by their betrayal, the God cursed the entire village, turning its inhabitants into mindless werewolves. Unable to revert back to their human forms, the villagers secluded themselves from all civilization and hid themselves far in the wilds. They created their own sanctuary, a lair known as the Shadowmoon Castle.

This castle had two dungeons; the Garden, and the Castle, and both were built for 10-man parties and both had 5 bosses each. These dungeons contained by far the most bosses in a dungeon.

The entrance of the dungeon did not require any prerequisite quest. Any party could just enter the dungeon as they wished. However, only Level 30 players and above were eligible to raid the Garden, while the Castle dungeon would require Level 40 players.

The party took the Gryphon service and flew across mountains before needing to take a hike on foot, to the top of the mountain,

where the Castle was.

Just as the party got off the Gryphon, Zhang Yang saw there were other players around. It was a team of 10-men that belonged to the The Dominators!

There was a saying, the more you hate someone, the more you will meet him in the street!

Humbly Gentleman walked out among the crowd with a smile on his face. “Oh! Look here, it’s the famous guild master Zhan Yu! Eh? What’s wrong? Lone Desert Smoke could only dispatch this many members? Hahaha, with the 6 of you only, you guys might as well just farm at Marzerway’s Lair!”

Humbly Gentleman would actually dare to act “Humbly” in front of so many people...

No wonder Sky Shaman would always call him a hypocrite.

Zhang Yang laughed back. “Hahaha. You jest! Humbly Gentleman guild master, would you like to buy more of the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion]?”

Humbly Gentleman’s suddenly changed his expression. He was busy in his conceited world of self-entitlement back then, but was tricked by Zhang Yang instead. The scam humiliated him most shamefully! Now that Zhang Yang was rubbing salt on his still open wound, Humbly Gentleman got angry. His eyes were burning

with the flames of rage and intense killing intent. He was actually close to attacking there and then, with Zhang Yang's party being outnumbered!

However, Humbly Gentleman was a calculative man. He did not just jump into action without having everything well thought out. 10 versus 6. Humbly Gentleman was clearly having the upper hand in numbers, but Zhang Yang's team was extremely strong. They would put up a good fight which would be a huge disadvantage to The Dominators.

Humbly Gentleman's guild was not in a position where he could suffer any losses! Lose just one man and his entire party could not raid Shadowmoon Castle! Humbly Gentleman had placed high hopes to conquer this dungeon before anyone else could claim the First Clear Achievement.

If only Lone Desert Smoke and The Dominators were the only two guilds fighting for fame and glory, Humbly Gentleman would not mind having any random skirmish! But in White Jade Castle alone, he had to contend with Crimson Rage and Sky High as well! To have this fight with Zhang Yang would only bring nothing but disadvantage to him, and benefit the third parties. This was not a wise course of action! There were also other 8 major cities in the entire China server, with at least 20 other guilds that were at the same level as him! With the battle for the top being so intense, how could he do anything that would lead the guild to suffer?

Obviously, Humbly Gentleman decided to just let this off for now. Since he was not some hot-head brat, he deduced that he was in no position to make a move now!

He stared at Zhang Yang viciously and said, “I would really love to see how the 6 of you take on a 10-man party dungeon!”

With that, he waved his hands and led the party up the mountain towards the castle. Time waited for no man, every second counted. The fastest guild was Sky High that had already started the raid 30 minutes ago. Crimson Rage might catch up with them anytime soon!

“Let’s go!” said Zhang Yang as he led his team up the mountain.

Soon, the party arrived at the top, there stood a large emerald stone castle. The castle door was opened wide and there were two teleportation doors on the left and right. One led to the Garden and other led to the Castle Interior.

“Zhan Yu, which one should we enter?” Han Yin Xue asked.

“We could choose either one. The left door would be the Garden and the right one would be the Castle Inte...F\*ck! You made me mess up! The Castle Interior dungeon is the Level 40 dungeon! We cannot enter that!” Zhang Yang cried.

“Stupid Zhang Yang! Who do you want to f\*ck with!?” Han Yin Xue placed both her hands on her waist. She wanted to pose like she was mad but no matter how she adjusted, her facial features looked like they could never produce anything remotely angry. Rather, she looked like she was flirting instead of being angry. There were no traces of any anger within her, only seduction.



Wei Yan Er wanted to play along and somehow managed to have Sun Xin Yu to joined her. All 3 ladies of the party were staring madly at him. One carried a form of noble scorn, one was innocently mad, and the last one was ice cold. Each of them had their own trademark style. It was really sight to enjoy, rather.

“Alright! Alright! Let’s not waste anymore time shall we? Let’s raid!”

Battles for the best guild were always intense, older guilds (from other games) knew each other by name and performed with consistency. Newer guilds were also holding their ground! Just like Zhang Yang’s previous life, One Sword Stroke of Imperial Sky, China’s number 1 tank had led his guild to glory by taking many dungeon’s First Clear Achievements. His strength was not something that anyone could rival. On the other hand, the Sword and Fire Mercenary was the strongest among all 5-man party and 10-man party, they were incredibly strong in their own right.

Still, Zhang Yang was confident of his own godly “Blocking” skill!

When he reached Level 30, the system awarded him with 3 skill points, plus the addition of 4 skill points he had obtained from 4 dungeons’ First Clear Achievements, an additional skill point from the hidden quest reward, as well as the shield bonus attribute that raised the <Block> level by 1. Altogether, Zhang Yang’s <Block> had reached Level 9. The skill’s cool down was reduced to 2 seconds only!

Technically, Zhang Yang could depend on this skill alone to fight any physical attack type boss with brute force! No matter how OP that this may have seemed, this jubilant period would not last forever. 5 months later, the release of the game's first patch, this skill was severely [nerfed](#). The initial cool down of the skill was prolonged to 15 seconds, causing many Guardian players to be deprived of their endless <Block> [spamming](#). A 1 second <Block> cooldown was considered to be over powered. It was so strong to the point where practically all physical attack type bosses were rendered useless in the face of this attack nullifying skill! During the revising of the game bosses and character classes, the game developers finally dropped the hammer of justice on the head of all Guardians!

Since the hammer has yet to fall onto his head, Zhang Yang's 2 second <Block> cooldown was enough to render most of the physically attacking bosses useless!

‘Ding! You have entered the Shadowmoon Castle: Garden (Hardcore Mode)!’

Zhang Yang and his team arrived at a huge garden. There was a huge courtyard and in the center of it, a water fountain. Beside the fountain, stood an old man dressed up rather lavishly like a butler from a noble family.

There were 5 pathways that were leading out of the Garden and Zhang Yang's party was standing on one of them. The pathway they were standing on led to the exit of the dungeon. They would automatically forfeit the dungeon raid once they withdraw.

Everyone could not help but look at the butler since he was standing out.

[Chief Butler Mack] (Gray-Silver)

Level: 34

HP: 3 million

“What an easy dungeon! There is already a boss waiting for us right where we go in! Erhm...don’t you think that his HP is a little too much?” Wei Yan Er raised her hammer and walked towards it to try and fight.

“Hey! Stop! If we fight him now, it will be the death of all of us!” Zhang Yang screamed.

Wei Yan Er jumped to her feet and walked back obediently. “Why?” she asked immediately. This was one of Wei Yan Er’s good points, she would immediately try to clear her doubts rather than feign awareness.

“This dungeon has 5 bosses, and Chief Butler Mack is the last one!”

“If he is the last boss to fight, why would he appear at the beginning of the dungeon?” Wei Yan Er asked again.

“The system set is this way to trick players!” Zhang Yang shook his head. In his previous life, many parties were completely wiped out because of this setting. The first thing they saw was this butler, and they did not hesitate to kill it! In the end, they were all wiped out! Zhang Yang elaborated. “Inside the dungeon, every boss we kill will reduce this Chief Butler’s HP by 50% and attack power by 25%. If we were to fight him right now, we would most definitely be reduced to ashes. However if we do fight now and we manage to win, we can get an achievement called “I am the strongest!”

“So...should we go around?” Fatty Han asked.

“Yeah. This entire garden is a huge circle. We are standing right in the middle of it. All 4 other bosses are spread all over the edge of this circle. It does not matter which path we take or which boss we fight first!”

Zhang Yang led the team to the rightmost pathway.

“Please be careful. Walk at the far edge of the pathway. This old fart may be old but his eyesight is still strong as ever!”

The party walked in a straight file towards the far right of the courtyard. Everyone was walking very carefully, not wanting to trigger the boss and when they finally managed to get past him, everyone sighed heavily

“That was scary...” said Wei Yan Er.

Right then, there were 2 NPCs dressed up like maids, with each of them holding broomsticks, sweeping the floor.

[Diligent Maid] (Elite)

Level: 32

HP: 50,000

Nerf – This is the verb to used when a skill or a character is weakened by the official developer. Sometimes when a character's skill is too strong and may cause imbalances within the game, the developers would make changes to anything in the game, Eg. reducing the attack power of Thief or increasing the Mana cost for healers since their skills were too potent in a way that it may cause other players to feel unfairly treated.

Spamming-Spam or Spamming is the verb to describe an act of repeated action. For example, a player could spam the party channel with insults. Here, spamming would refer to the repeated posting. Spamming skills would means the act of casting a skill repeatedly without stopping.